





# CAREFREE PATH OF DREAMS

BOOK 04

*The Plagiarist*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Carefree Path of Dreams

(逍遥梦路)

by

The Plagiarist

(文抄公)

# Synopsis

---

This is the story of a boy who lived a secluded life in the mountains, tending his farm, rearing his fish, and dreaming his dreams. Eh? Did I suddenly conquer all worlds and become the big boss? Or am I still in a dream?

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sparrow Translations @ [Qidian International](#).

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: Two Swords

---

4th Year of Yong An, Da Chu.

Loading Island, Golden Court Lake.

A noble and virtuous character is capable of great things!

Originally, the island was unnamed, however, once it was occupied by Xu Ting to load goods, it was named as such. Such a name reflected his ambitions.

At that moment, a few big ships were slowly approaching the pier.

A group of refugee families disembarked orderly, while the soldiers, evidently experienced, maintained a basic formation at the sides.

The terrain of the island was rather flat, there was a flat piece of land after a short distance away from the pier. On top of it, furrows were already ploughed and there were a few farmsteads.

The farmsteads and furrows were neatly built and evoked the beauty of a well-planned land.

"Sir!"

At that moment, a few scholarly looking men came forward.

"Hmm... doing well! How's the situation now?"

These men were all outstanding scholars in the family, they were literate and knew how to calculate. With them, they formed the backbone of the clan.

Xu Ting looked at the farmlands and took a deep breath, "This is what I call foundation!"

"We seek your approval in enforcing the Baojia neighbourhood administrative system here. Five families would form one unit, with one leader. Duties would also be clearly allocated. If anyone

tried to escape, the whole unit would be implicated. We can currently form hundred of such units and reclaim 3,000 acres of land. Each family has to send out one fit man to join the troop and they would both work on the farm and undergo military training. As the people have both land and sufficient supplies of goods, they are contented and would rarely try to escape..." one of the scholars reported.

"Very good!"

Xu Ting nodded his head, "This time, I have conquered the pirates of 13 Chain Wall. There are 3,000 of them to be deported here, will there be any issue?"

As the place was under military jurisdiction, it was easier to organise and collect information. Hence, after a few moments, the scholar replied with conviction, "The wooden houses are all built, they are just waiting for people to move in. Also, we can reclaim 5000 acres of farmland on the flatlands and at least 800 acres of terraced fields on the hills. When the paddies are harvested, we will be able to feed thousands of fit men!"

This scholar was also a member of the Xu family, as he spoke, his eyes were filled with fervour.

In actual fact, the fit men were elite troops to be!

It was remarkable for them to be able to deploy thousands of troops and even attack other prefectures through the waterway.

Xu Ting was very pleased upon hearing such news.

In all honesty, it was a way for the troops to be stationed there. During peacetime, they worked as farmers, while during wartime, they fought as soldiers. Under military jurisdiction, they did not have to rely on unreasonable borrowing terms from magnates. Even with half the tax rates, it was a good policy and managed to greatly increase the authorities' reserves.

Furthermore, since paddies were harvested there, the yield was

plentiful and it was sufficient to feed even more mouths.

As such, he had the capital to rise to power.

"The 13 Chain Wall was the last resistance alliance of the pirates. After this war, there would no more pirates of such scale in Golden Court Lake. Even if small groups of pirates were to appear, we can eradicate them sporadically..."

As Xu Ting entered the conference room, he continued, "Since I trust all of you all, I will say this directly. The world is in an ailing and chaos state right now, wicked ministers are in governance and military occupied towns are appearing everywhere. Our clan does not seek power or riches, we just want to be content with our lives, but to achieve this, we must have strength."

"This Loading Island is our clan's last base. When the situation is not in our favour, we can retreat here. With the protection of the undercurrents and reefs, we would be safe for at least a while here!"

"To rapidly expand the island's strength, there will be no issue even if there aren't any more pirates. We can go to each district and recruit their refugees, they don't even have to be from our prefecture!"

...

Through eradicating the pirates and having control of the troops, the entire island was already under Xu Ting's control, thus, he was not shy to share some classified secrets.

However, the real core and ambition would never be mentioned.

"Brilliant, Sir!"

However, with just those rationale, the crowd was overwhelmed with emotions.

After all, everyone could see how tumultuous the world was in. Since Loading Island was under the protection of natural hazards



surrounding it and also had fertile lands, once it could be self-sufficient, people would be contented.

"Nowadays..., Wang Qiao's eagerness is growing even stronger. He even began scheming who would be his ministers, he simply could not be bothered to hide his plans to usurp.... The world is in chaos, however, with this base and troop, it doesn't mean that there's no hope for my clan to further progress!" Xu Ting thought.

Xu Ting gazed into the distance as his heart burnt with fiery.

...

"The uprising of people dao has been progressing quickly..., especially within the different nations, there seems to be a presence of demons..." Fang Yuan thought as he looked attentively at Loading Island from the water.

"In Da Qi and Da Liang, either the princes are fighting for the throne, or they have manipulating ministers in the country. Furthermore, the emperors are all not in good health. How could this be a coincidence? Hehe... the demons are truly easily predictable, just that with how much effort they are putting in, it is just for the good of others' causes!"

With the current situation, he could guess that there were already demons wreaking havoc within the high positions of each country, and these demons wanted the people dao's fate energy to diminish.

However, the heavens had made a fool of them!

These three countries were originally not favoured by the heavenly fate and were bound to decline and descent into chaos. It was a survival of the fittest!

When the demons interfered, it had the opposite effect of speeding up the process. Even the demons' higher beings and saints who predicted the heavenly secrets were muddled and had their skandhas messed up. The heaven made a total fool out of the

demons and utterly misdirected them to such an extreme extent!

"I guess the heavenly trend in this realm is more powerful than what I have imagined..."

Fang Yuan's face became solemn as he turned his head away from Loading Island. He then arrived at a cave under the waters.

The horned dragon shook his tail and took on the magical clone of a human. He sat cross-legged and had two swords, one green and the other purple, floating in front of him. Both swords had a dazzling shine and were intimidating looking, evidently different from normal swords.

"Go!"

The moment he pointed his fingers, two surges of magical powers appeared and simultaneously turned into flames as it started to crazily form the two swords.

"These spiritual swords were no small matter! Previously, as it was limited by karma, it was close to being formed!"

At that moment, under the flames of magic, both swords floated unsteadily and continued to dazzle brightly. Sharp noises could be heard from the sword and it was as though the swords were giving their last-ditch of effort in resisting.

"Hehe... the last struggle at the point of death!"

As Fang Yuan laughed, powerful magic surged, and along with karma, it finally removed the remaining few traces of imprints in the spiritual swords completely.

"Swoosh!"

The two swords lost all its radiance and revealed a modest looking body. On top of the swords, there were many primitive patterns.

"Good swords! Indeed, they are such great swords, however, they aren't as simple as other rare treasures. In fact, it seems as though

there's a faint sense of fate energy converging on it. It looks like it has to go through a round of killer tribulations..."

No matter how good a rare treasure was, as long as it could not be kept in the actualised dream world, it was not really valuable for Fang Yuan as he could only use it for a while in his current realm.

Of course, if Xuan Zhen Sect was to find out, they would be enraged.

"After such a long period of investigation, Xuan Zhen Sect should know my background by now? Also, I'm sure they would be back for their spiritual swords..."

Fang Yuan sneered as he made up his mind.

With a wave of his hands, the two swords landed on his hands.

After the swords lost its radiance, the inscriptions on the sword could be seen clearly. There were ancient characters on it. One was named Purple Suo and the other was named Green Qiu.

"Both men and swords have killer tribulations..., the reason why Xuan Zhen Sect forged these two swords was to use it in numerous battles to kill numerous people in order to pass its own tribulation..."

Naturally, Fang Yuan could easily guess the origins of the two swords. Suddenly, he had an idea. His hand beamed with magic and the Purple Suo sword changed its appearance. The Purple Suo sword became a primitive longsword in a scabbard, it was 40 inches long and had an indistinct purple glow. It was evident that the longsword was an extremely sharp and powerful weapon.

"Demons were their opponents, while their counterparts were their enemies..., does Xuan Zhen Sect really still want to support Xu family?" he thought.

Fang Yuan suddenly came over to the waters near Loading Island and disguised himself under the appearance of a normal young man. A layer of mist appeared as Fang Yuan instantaneously

turned invisible, crossed the guards surrounding the island and reached the depths of the island.

...

"Eat more... my birds!"

Inside the dense forest, the daoist priest who fought along Xu Ting was seen feeding his white birds. A tinge of desolation appeared on his face.

Although he was a daoist priest, he had no official sect and did not have any legitimate ancestry. His name was Kong Luo. During a rare encounter with a wandering daoist priest when he was young, he got accepted into his master's sect as a disciple.

Except, such a descent still meant that he had no official inheritance of skills nor denomination. He only possessed the Quelling Bait Technique and the unique ability to raise white birds.

Such lone practitioners often had little or no disciples to pass down their skills and such techniques would become extinct a few generations later.

However, if a rare encounter were to be chance upon, his sect could still rise and be ranked amongst the sects.

Kong Luo spent half of his life wandering with his master before finally settling down at Golden Lake Prefecture. Before his master passed away, by pure coincidence, his master managed to get hold of some heavenly secrets and instructed him to seek refuge with the Xu family. By doing so, he could hone his skills under the protection of fate energy and then further look for opportunities to bring glory to his sect.

At that moment, inside Kong Luo's heart, he was in deep thoughts.

"It's great to practice inside here! With the support of Xu family, my Quelling Bait Technique has already finessed to 2nd Grade. Even master could not go beyond that grade... Nowadays, Xu

Ting's fate energy has been prospering. Furthermore, since he is training his group of elite troops, his ambitions must not be small. If I can support him and gain some of his fate energy, my dao powers will greatly improve!"

"There are so many uniquely talented people in this world, my limited skills are actually nothing much..."

Originally, he was heavily favoured and utilised by Xu Ting. However, as time past, Xuan Zhen Sect began investing more and more in Xu family, especially with their own daoist priests, and hence, Kong Luo was edged out and became dispensable.

As Kong Luo felt that his position was threatened, a despondent and worried look appeared on his face naturally.

"Hiss!"

Suddenly, a scent of blood filled the air and noises could be heard from the bushes. A black-coloured giant snake leapt out. Its eyes were filled with savagery and it pounced towards Kong Luo.

"What? Such a big snake? What a monstrous fiend!"

Kong Luo was terrified. The island was cleared before, hence, it should not have any beasts still living in it. Why was there still such a huge snake?

Kong Luo jumped away immediately and summoned a talisman, "Haste!"

"Puff!"

Sparks flashed as the black snake flinched for a moment before it immediately struck its tail at Kong Luo. Kong Luo was knocked back and began vomiting blood.

"Quick, call somebody!"

The white bird on his shoulder flew towards the village while it made ailing shrills.

Kong Luo did not hesitate even for a moment and fled for his life.

"Am I going to die? No! I still have to revive my sect!"

As he thought of his master's last will, Kong Luo mustered all his remaining strength and scrambled down the hill.

As the hill was not far from the village and since the area was under military jurisdiction, a group of soldiers quickly ran over.

"Save me!"

As Kong Luo saw the soldiers approaching, he immediately used his last breath to shout out loud.

# Chapter 302: Acquisition

---

"I'm so dead!"

The scent of blood filled the air and the snake almost got a taste of Kong Luo's neck.

In a state of panic, Kong Luo tripped and fell.

"Don't you dare hurt him, you fiend!"

The group of people who came over ran towards Kong Luo at the speed of light and quickly formed up with their knives, ready to annihilate the snake.

As a fight was about to emerge, it made Kong Luo felt relieved. "Are these... Xu Ting's bodyguards? I'm saved!"

He took a good look at these people and noticed that Xu Ting was leading them; he felt like he was in luck.

Knowing that Xu Ting's side was filled with skilful people, Kong Luo knew his life was saved.

"Swoosh!"

Sparks flew as blades hit the snake's scales.

Kong Luo scrambled to Xu Ting's side; he finally managed to stand up and looked at the black snake.

The snake was extremely thick and was about 10 yards long. It had fierce serpentine eyes, shiny scales and a flicking forked tongue that was waiting to devour a human.

"Such a humongous black snake, no, black python! What a monstrous fiend!"

Xu Ting's eyes shined brightly. As he saw the big python, he immediately hollered, "We must kill it, else it would harm our troops and farms!"

"Yes, Sir!"

As the two men fighting could not defeat the snake, a few more martial arts experts amongst his numerous skilled subordinates leapt out with their weapons.

Not only that, a few accompanying daoist priests began chanting curses and the fighters were imbued with magical powers. Their strength and vital elemental energy were greatly boosted.

"Black Tiger Claw!"

"Elemental Splitting Palm!"

"Kill it!"

Swords flung as gale like punches were thrown.

Blood spewed out from the black python as numerous attacks landed on it at the same time.

"Thud!"

Amongst the numerous attacks, an arrow flashed past and accurately hit the fatal spot on the python's heart.

"Hhiii...iisss..."

After a few struggles, the python finally succumbed and collapsed.

"Sir, great archery skills!"

After the people around began congratulating, Kong Luo then realised that Xu Ting was wielding a large purple bow. The bowstring was still vibrating when Kong Luo realised it.

"Eh..."

Xu Ting moved closer to the black python but chose to not go too close.

Although the black python's heart was shot and its body was severed into many pieces, due to its humongous body, its vitality was still strong even if it seemed like it could not fight back.

"This snake looks not bad. Pythons are not poisonous and we can



use it to stew soup for our people..."

As Xu Ting looked at the snake's carcass, he seemed to have thought of something and smiled.

"Yes, Sir!"

The soldiers replied excitedly. "The soup stewed from this snake's meat along with some meat from an old hen and a few eggs would be so nourishing..."

A few people went up to the snake and began prepping it.

"Eh? There's something in the snake's tail!"

As a warrior was cutting open the snake's skin, he saw a purple glow in the corner of his eyes. Out of curiosity, he sliced open the snake's tail and acquired a sword.

"Sir..., there's a sword hidden in the snake's tail!"

Being quick-witted, he immediately carried the sword with both hands, kneeled in front of Xu Ting and presented the sword to him, "Looks like this is what the heaven is granting you, Sir! Your life is fated to build a military!"

In this realm, heavenly visions would appear before heroes.

The acquiring of a sword from a black python was indeed a strange and wonderful occurrence.

The sword would be put to great use in the future, it could fight thousands of soldiers!

"Oh?"

Xu Ting was both surprised and delighted.

It was because such a happening was very auspicious and also the fact that the man had a way with his words.

By building a military, he could either be the ruler who unites countries or be the minister who supports; there were lots of leeway for him.

However, if the warrior had talked about how it was pure fate, Xu Ting would have killed him instead.

Hence, he received the sword cheerily, "Not bad, really not bad!"

Many of the surrounding people felt jealous of his praises but could only hide their feelings and proceeded to celebrate.

"Congratulations, Sir, for acquiring the sword!"

"Swish!"

Xu Ting had practised swordsmanship before. As he casually swung the sword, a cool purple glow appeared.

The 40-inch long blade was clear as snow and could clearly reflect his face on it. There was also a tinge of purple that Xu Ting liked. He then ordered someone to duel with him, only to hear a "clang" as the opponent's sword broke in half. The sword was indeed extremely sharp.

"Haha... what a good sword!"

Xu Ting was ecstatic. He observed the sword and noticed the ancient inscription of "Purple Suo" on it.

The more he looked at it, the more he liked it. Immediately, he equipped the sword on his waist.

"In the past, there was a king who killed a water dragon and then ruled the world, now... from how I had acquired this sword, could this be a sign from the heavens too?"

Xu Ting pondered. Regardless, he was not going to bestow this sword to anyone else and was determined to keep the sword for his own good use.

"We will hold a feast tonight!"

As he gave out his instruction with glee, he naturally did not notice a certain daoist priest's panic-stricken look.

"No one's caring about me..."

As Kong Luo saw the big group left, he felt gloomy as he dusted the dirt off his body.

Compared to the countless martial arts experts and other powerful daoist priests, Kong Luo knew he was no match for them and could only take a backseat.

But as he thought of another daoist priest's expression just now, he felt odd. "Why did daoist Qing Xuan have such a furtive look on his face? He seems to know the origins of that sword? But such treasures from such beasts were meant to be powerful in the first place!"

As he watched the crowd rush to attend the feast, he could only think of how powerless he was.

"This time around, I can at least take a backseat at the feast, but what about next year or the year after? As the newcomers laugh, who could hear the old-timer weep..."

His interest waned and he felt as though he did not want to appear at the feast to further embarrass himself.

At that moment, as he looked at the trail of blood from the black python, he suddenly had an idea.

"From daoist Qing Xuan's gaze, this snake must not be normal. Such a beast would not have appeared for no reason..."

He proceeded to walk in the opposite direction and arrived at the hill where he was feeding his birds. He then began searching carefully.

Sure enough, the moment he prised open the bushes, he saw a pathway the snake must have taken. After following it, he reached a cave that had a faint stench.

"Nothing ventured, nothing gained! I will take the risk!"

Kong Luo bravely entered the cave only to realise the cave was clean and had no signs of snakeskin left behind.

Except, at the end of the cave, there was a green light emitted from a small sword.

On the cave walls, there was a chant for a formula inscribed on it. The inscription was not long as there were only a few hundred words, but however, they were beautifully expressed. Upon seeing such, Kong Luo was shocked.

There was no time to waste for Kong Luo to wonder about why no one had ever discovered this place. He immediately began to recite it by heart.

"This is a powerful magical formula, and the spiritual treasure too... they are really gifts from the heavens! The revival of my sect is truly pure fate of the heavens..."

He immediately kept the spiritual sword according to the magical formula and felt stronger at once.

The spiritual sword was a treasure for killing. Thus, his magical techniques did not improve, but obviously, his lethality was vastly superior to before. With this, he could have the confidence and strength to fight alongside other daoists in front of Xu Ting.

"Hmm... that Daoist Qing Xuan..."

Before he strode out the cave, he waved his arms and a green sword essence appeared. The cave walls were scratched beyond recognition at once.

...

"Very well..."

After Kong Luo left the cave, Fang Yuan appeared outside the cave and watched his back view leaving. Fang Yuan was satisfied and thought to himself. "He does seem decisive, looks like he has the potential!"

The two swords had some fate energy converging on it, or to put it in another way, it contained parts of the turning point for Xuan

Zhen Sect. Hence, Fang Yuan could not keep them for long, else it would be detrimental to his fate energy. Not only would Xuan Zhen Sect chase after him, some of the swords' tribulations might even pass over to him.

By gifting the swords, it reflected Fang Yuan's intelligence.

Firstly, these two swords had already been cultivated. By gifting it away, the favour would be returned to him in the future.

Also, it was the perfect plan to give the swords to Xu Ting and a daoist priest from the same clan.

With how invested Xuan Zhen Sect was in Xu family, would they dare to demand the return of the Purple Suo sword from Xu Ting?

Since Kong Luo was also part of Xu family, and the fact that he was now under the protection of the spiritual sword, Xuan Zhen Sect would not dare to start a conflict with him.

After doing these things, Xu Ting felt energised.

He opened his spiritual eyes and saw karma slowly descending from the skies. He could not contain his joy as he knew he reached a key point.

This time, he managed to seize a decent amount of Xuan Zhen Sect's fate energy karma.

"Not only are there people dao karma, there's also heavenly karma! I shall use it to increase my cultivation!"

Fang Yuan made up his mind.

On top of his head, streaks of golden essence gathered and formed the shape of seven shiny golden flowers.

Whereas, the green balls of energy, through mysterious ways, turned in to the realm's energy and swarmed into the actualised dream world.

In the 8 Gates Sword Array, the fire and water swords shined brightly, while on the east gate, lightning struck and the Thunder

Sword formed more than half as it emitted electrifying illuminations.

The 3 swords' luminance rushed to skies and the power of the 3 talents could be vaguely seen.

"More than half of the Sundering Thunder Sword has been formed?"

Fang Yuan looked at his stats board:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Race: Horned Dragon

Essence: 36

Spirit: 36

Magic: 45

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [9 Steps of Dragon Transformation Formula (7th Transformation)], [Weather Controlling Technique (Grade 1)], [Natural Magical Strength (Grade 3)], [8 Gates Sword Array (3rd Sword) (55%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)]"

"The further I progress in the 8 Gates Sword Array, the harder it is to form the swords. However, its might is even more unimaginable..."

A look of joy appeared on Fang Yuan's face as he thought, "Hmm..., by helping Xu family this time, it was simply an early investment. The karma I received wasn't a lot too... Only during chaos where Xu family rises to power is when I will truly gain the most from!"

At that moment, as Xu family still did not officially reign an area, its influence was naturally not as great.

However, once the world entered a state of chaos and undergone big changes, even if Xu Ting were to become a just a duke, he could still influence millions of commoners. Hence, the karma Fang Yuan would receive from it would be exceedingly bountiful.

Fang Yuan was eagerly anticipating for it to happen.

"Nevertheless... even with my strength now, I am still a formidable force to be reckoned with...Seems like some issues in the past can be settled already too..." he pondered as he looked towards the direction of Qi Lake.

# Chapter 303: Evolution

---

Imperial palace, Qi Country.

After the death of the late emperor, the Third Prince emerged from intense rivalry and was succeeding the throne in the wake.

Inside the palace, there was a hint of bloodiness and officials of all ranks shivered in uneasiness. This was especially so for those who were originally from Taihe Hall, as the hall's servants and maids, alongside their in-charge, Senior Eunuch Su, were put to death. Thus, rumours were rife.

"No matter what... I have finally won this time!"

Originally the Third Prince, he now ascended the throne and became the Emperor of Qi. Donned in his royal crown with his hand wielding a pearl ornament, he looked at his officials worshipping below. Though he appeared calm on the outside, he was extremely perturbed on the inside.

"Majority of the guards of the imperial palace and the troops of the imperial city have already submitted to me, the situation should be stable for me now. Since the Seventh Prince and those loyal to him seems unwilling and grudging, I better severely punish them! Hmm, since they did not show up during this ceremony, it would be the best excuse to do so!" he thought.

Unfilial acts and disloyalty were sins he could not tolerate.

The new emperor took a glimpse of the late emperor in his dragon casket. Its ashen face and ghastly stiff palm sent a chill down the emperor's face. Immediately, he turned around and prayed silently. "Father..., I knew you have always favoured the Seventh Prince, but since I succeeded the throne, I will definitely lead Da Qi to power and riches. I will also unite the three countries in this unprecedented rulership! Also, the imperial astronomer told me just now that the north star, Polaris, shined extremely



brightly. This is a sign that I am going to be a great emperor!"

"Our Majesty!"

At that moment, all the officials kowtowed nine times and completed the ceremony.

"Ah, rise!"

As the Emperor of Qi strutted, he suddenly asked, "Where is the Seventh Prince and the Ninth Prince? Our father passed away and they dare not arrive yet? It pains my heart!"

"Your Majesty, the Seventh Prince was punished to reflect in isolation while the Ninth Prince is still on his journey, he is currently near the borders now." a senior minister reported.

"Hehe.... such great excuses, are they questioning my abilities?"

The Emperor of Qi gave a sardonic smile and immediately ordered, "These two treacherous princes violated the virtue of filial piety, even though I could not bear to hurt our relationship as brothers, I have no other choice now. Immediately send the guards to bring these two over to the wake! I will have to question them thoroughly!"

As an elder brother, he could not order violence against his younger brothers, but however, as long as he could arrest and enact soft detention on them, he could have his ways with them.

A few imperial guards heeded the orders and dashed out only to stop suddenly.

"Bang!"

Under the loud noises, the ground tremored and violent bawls could be heard. Not far from the gates, fires could be seen and black smoke rose into the air, bringing a sense of inauspiciousness.

"What's happening?"

As the commotion was so huge, it could even be heard from Jinluan Hall. The Qi Emperor's expression changed at once.

An imperial guard immediately reported, "Your Majesty, the Seventh Prince and Ninth Prince are leading a troop in and they claim that they want to eradicate the emperor's disloyal followers! The eastern gate has already surrendered and they are storming towards the imperial palace now!"

"What?"

The Emperor of Qi felt ill at once and almost vomited blood.

Naturally, there were elite troops and royal guards garrisoned around Qi Country's imperial capital.

The late emperor favoured the Seventh Prince and the Ninth Prince heavily and assigned them to numerous posts, hence they managed to attract many henchmen under them.

The Third Prince's power was honestly much weaker than theirs. It was unexpected for him to succeed the throne and the reason why he could was due to the fact that he bribed the late emperor's loyal follower. It was truly a very risky move.

He did not expect the other two princes to be so resolute and decisive that they dared to lead troops to revolt, and not to mention, influence the guards at the eastern gates to surrender their defences and side with them.

"The Seventh Prince decrees, this military advance will not harm the innocent!"

"The Ninth Prince decrees, however, those who did bad deeds and committed offences will be prosecuted by military law!"

...

The troop marched over with almost no resistance and surrounded the imperial palace.

The Emperor of Qi's face turned pale. He forced himself up the palace walls and saw the sea of troops below. His legs turned soft and he immediately ordered, "Traitors! Zhang Jin, kill them all for

me!"

At that moment, the imperial guard could only reluctantly obey his commands to protect the imperial palace.

However, the Emperor of Qi was still deeply unsettled.

He knew that even if he were to win today, a revolt that occurred immediately once he ascended the throne would severely impact his prestige and might. Furthermore, his followers had already become anxious and terrified; they were bound to not last for long.

"All to listen up, the reason for this uprising is to seek justice for the mysterious death of our late emperor. As his sons and ministers, we have to seek justice!"

A deafening sound could be heard, it was as though spells were used.

All the officials could not help but keep quiet. The actions of the two princes were no different to accusing the Third Prince of poisoning the late emperor and distorting the imperial edict.

"I succeeded the throne justly and honourably. The imperial edict left by the late emperor before his death serves as evidence! How dare they besmirch me!" the Emperor of Qi hollered with extreme wrath.

"If you don't surrender in half an hour, we will not hesitate to storm in!"

However, the two princes outside had reached their point of no return. Even if the imperial edict was real, it had to be denounced as fake. Hence, after a few shouts, they immediately commanded their troops to attack.

"Charge!"

"Launch the catapult!"

"Prepare the scaling ladder!"

In an instant, the magnificent imperial palace became a bloody

battlefield.

Blood spewed as smoke rose.

Fear spread through the commoners in the imperial capital as they quickly shut their doors. Even though the imperial capital of Qi Country was an ancient city with thousands of years of history, it ultimately could not withstand the destruction of war.

The defences of the imperial palace were penetrated through within half a day and the troops swarmed it.

The Third Prince was dishevelled, he had a longsword wielded while his robe was stained with blood. At that moment, he was searching through each palace hall in panic, "Beauties..., my beauties, quick, leave with me! I am still the emperor, even if we escape out of the capital, I can still gather all my loyal ministers to fight back!"

As he barged into one of the palaces, he scared away many of the servants. However, inside the hall, the melodious sound of a guqin surrounded the entire hall.

The person playing the guqin was an absolutely gorgeous lady. She was donned in a concubine's dress and appeared elegantly prim and proper.

"Qing'er, quick, leave with me!"

The Third Prince's eyes filled with lust; he used to love listening to Qing'er play the guqin as he casually relaxed.

However, ever since he began crafting his big plans, he never heard the melodious guqin music again.

"Why should I leave?"

Qing'er smiled gently.

"Eh?"

The Third Prince was startled and he felt as though she had totally changed.

"Sun Xingyu, I've played with you for so long, I'm already bored of you, time to change to another prince to play with..." Qing'er said calmly.

"What? You want to side with the Seventh Prince and Ninth Prince? You sl\*t!"

The Third Prince was enraged upon grasping what she meant.

"I want to kill you!"

With bloodshot eyes, he charged forward with his sword.

"Boring!"

Qing'er yawned. Suddenly, a black shadow appeared and bit off the Third Prince's hand.

"Ahh...demon!"

The black shadow was actually a horrifying looking gigantic rat with eyes as large as copper coins and it emitted a green glow.

"Indeed, it's my fellow demon!"

Qing'er sighed faintly, "After scheming for ten plus years, the plan has finally succeeded. Even though you are the emperor, you have no power and the current situation is against you! How much fate energy would you have left by now? Just die in peace...., don't worry, your brothers will join you soon!"

Although she spoke calmly and expressionlessly, the Third Prince was horror-stricken, "How dare you demons try to ruin the Da Qi Country!"

As long as either the Seventh Prince or the Ninth Prince succeeded the throne, the throne would still be in the hands of the Sun's. But now, the Emperor of Qi had smelled a rat and knew a grand conspiracy was underway.

"Hehe..., after today, the news of the two princes revolting and causing the death of the emperor would spread throughout the world..."

Qing'er seemed to enjoy such a situation and even as the noise of the battlefield outside got closer, she placidly expressed, "After the event unfolds, Da Qi's sovereignty would drop and be severely undermined, war will erupt and who knows how many more people will be killed! The more deaths there would be, the happier I am!"

"De...demon!"

The Emperor of Qi was incensed and the rat demon sank its teeth into his throat.

"Bang!"

Lightning and thunder struck the skies and the giant rat let out a loud shriek. Its body turned black while Qing'er's face turned pale and even retched up a mouthful of blood.

"He was clearly on his deathbed, how could he still have such fate energy protecting him? People dao's fate energy is truly remarkable! Looks like this reflects their uprising..."

Her face turned solemn, she then stood up and toppled the oil lamp.

Fire engulfed the entire palace hall in an instance as black smoke billowed.

In one night, the news of the two princes revolting and attacking the imperial palace causing the death of Da Qi's new emperor spread throughout the world. Immediately, war broke out and the entire Qi Country descended into chaos.

Similar to its situation was its neighbouring country, Da Liang.

Yutong Prefecture.

Alongside the din of battle, huge amounts of troops entered the city and started killing mercilessly.

After besieging the city for months, they suffered great losses as they were unable to successfully breakthrough, hence, they finally

vented their anger through slaughtering.

Outside the city, a ferocious looking general was surveying the scene in the city, his aide then respectfully congratulated, "Congratulations, General Huo, for annihilating this rebel town!"

"Send my command, massacre the entire city!"

General Huo gave a wry smile and immediately commanded, "Anyway, this city is the hub of the Wu rebels. Its commoners greatly benefitted from them and hence, they might not be loyal! It will be better for us to wipe them out!"

With his commands, the troops were roused. However, the officials at his side remained silent.

General Huo was talented in leading troops and wars, however, he was vicious and bloodthirsty.

He was sent to annihilate the rebels and their town, and with this success, it was a great achievement under his belt. However, it seemed like the way he did things was a bit overboard.

Of course, since he had the support to back his behaviour, no one dared to do anything about him.

Few brave and just souls dared to confront him just for the lives of commoners.

At that moment, Huo Qing's eyes turned blood red. As he listened to the unending screams coming from the city, he almost could not suppress his true form and thought, "Us demons would not only ruin the three countries' fate energy, we will not let any heroes emerge from the human race. The military governor of this town was an all-rounder and was also home to dragon energy which I have finally destroyed..."

# Chapter 304: Right Timing

---

Da Chu.

"Congratulations, minister, for your promotion to Prince of Chu!"

Inside the minister's manor, many of his henchmen gathered as joy and laughter filled the air.

While Qi Country and Liang Country were in chaos, Wang Qiao had no leisure to care about the neighbouring countries. He finally seized the rare opportunity to force the emperor to grant him the title of Prince with perpetual title heritability.

Furthermore, by using "Chu" as his prince title, it obviously reflected his rapacious ambitions.

However, Wang Qiao had no fears.

"The garrison guards of the imperial capital are already within my command and these 200,000 troops are extremely skilful elites, no one would be able to defeat them! Furthermore, even the provincial military commanders and imperial guards have pledged their loyalty to me and there's no one left that can compete with me!" He thought as he squinted his eyes.

He knew that even if military occupied towns were to rise in revolt against him, by having the largest lands and the most elite large troops, he would be able to wipe each of them out.

"How many troops have risen in revolt currently?"

Wang Qiao asked suddenly as he sat up straight with a strong demeanour.

"There are three military occupied towns that have sent their troops. Liyang Prefecture's military governor Zhu Tong, Xinan Prefecture's military governor Li Chun and Wujiang Prefecture's military governor Wang Yujun have risen in revolt and started



attacking other prefectures under the accusation that you were planning to overthrow the emperor. Based on my humble opinion, that was merely an excuse for them to expand their strength. These governors are all smart men! They knew if they did not seize the opportunity to rise to power now, when we rise to power, they would have no more chance!"

His adjutant immediately answered.

Wang Qiao clapped his hands and announced, "I will immediately report these three governors' plans to the emperor and an imperial decree will be issued immediately. This will list out their crimes clearly and we can then send troops to suppress them!"

At that moment, since he had not forced the emperor to abdicate and hand the throne over to him yet, he knew he still required the emperor for his plans to succeed.

"Brilliant, Prince!"

His audiences were all impressed.

"Haha... instead of being afraid, I am happy that they are rising up! The power distribution in the imperial capital is very complicated. Since I don't have much wealth nor land to reward you all, if you all defeat these three prefectures, you all will be promoted to nobility, with perpetual title heritability!" Wang Qiao laughed.

Usually, it was hard to gather loyal followers for usurps that did not undergo mass killings as the power distribution in the country were complicated and there were insufficient resources to reward them.

However, since the three military governors revolted, it gave him an excuse to do so.

Once the audiences heard it, especially the military officials, their eyes lit up as though it was on fire.

With Wang Qiao's speech, it undoubtedly promised the reward of

nobility and at the same time, hinted that once the military occupied towns were suppressed, he would immediately force the emperor to relinquish his throne.

Only the emperor could grant titles of nobility with perpetual title heritability and such a hint was already very obvious.

"Reporting!"

Just as the atmosphere was warm, an anxious-looking imperial guard suddenly rushed over. "Prince, a disaster is imminent!"

"Tell me about it!"

A feeling of uneasiness immediately overwhelmed Wang Qiao and made him stood up. He then asked, "What exactly happened?"

"The emperor has suddenly fallen very ill after dinner..., the imperial physician does not dare to prescribe medication!"

"What?"

Wang Qiao's face turned unpleasant at once.

Even though he has already decided to have him dead once he ascended the throne, he still needed his name and authority as the Emperor of Chu, especially at the moment where he was about to send the troops to suppress the rebels. How could he be on his deathbed?

"Prince..."

At that moment, another horse rushed over, "The emperor... has passed away!"

Wang Qiao's face turned pale at once, he suddenly opened his mouth and blood spewed everywhere.

"Prince!!!"

...

5th Year of Yong An. News of Wang Qiao becoming the Prince of Chu and the death of the young emperor spread like wildfire across

the world. There were now 7 troops that had rose in revolt.

After Da Qi and Da Liang, Da Chu has descended into chaos too.

Loading Island, Golden Court Lake.

Twenty large ships were berthed neatly at the pier. Thousands of soldiers remained silent as they gathered to watch the ceremony.

Once Xu Ting heard the news about the death of the emperor, he gathered the troop to commemorate the late emperor and held a rally to pledge loyalty before going to war.

"This Wang Qiao! How ferocious! He murdered the emperor to usurp the throne, what an unpardonable sin! Even though I am not a genius, I still have a 40-inch long sword and thousands of soldiers! I will punish this traitor and fight with him to death! To seek revenge for the late emperor!"

As Xu Ting stood high above on the platform and raised the Purple Suo sword, his voice could be heard clearly.

"Punish the traitor!"

"Punish the traitor!"

The crowds' yells were deafening and could be heard from afar.

"Send down my command! We will deploy at once!"

As Xu Ting gave his commands, the warships steered out of the pier towards the prefectures near Golden Court Lake.

These prefectures were not ruled by military governors; they were still under the governance of the imperial court. Even if there were any power-hungry ambitionists, they dared not openly raise their troops.

However, now that they had such a cause, that might no longer be the case.

Hence, Xu Ting decisively deployed at once so as to grab hold of the surrounding prefectures near Golden Court Lake and increase

his power while the rest were still scrambling.

While the rest had no plans, he had plans, warships and an elite troop. Xu Ting was very confident.

On the shore, daoist Qing Xuan looked at the scene peacefully. His eyes glistened and thought, "The truculence and aggressiveness of the troops are like an inferno..., Xu Ting's fate energy changes thrice in a day, it is about to prosper and the heavenly trend is starting!"

In reality, the heavenly trend was merely a seed.

Without the right timing, the right conditions and the right people as soil and rain for the seed, the heavenly trend would not sprout and grow. Instead, it would brew disaster.

But however, at that moment, the three factors were all right; success was imminent!

"The original magistrate of Golden Lake Prefecture relinquished his position due to his illness. Hence, once Xu Ren took over the position, he garnered the support of all the districts. After ten plus years of gradual influence, things are falling into places and he can now support Xu Ting in his war! With their combined powers, the nearby prefectures will be of no match, and after seizing the entire Golden Court Lake, they would have their foundation to gather sufficient people dao fate energy to succeed. However, my sect is not gaining much from it, many opportunities have been snatched..., d\*mn demons!"

When he thought of Xu Ting's Purple Suo sword, his expression turned even gloomier.

The sword was an auspicious sign. Of course, Xu Ting sent people to spread the news to bolster his strength.

The sword was like a treasure that signified the heavenly trends. For daoist Qing Xuan to ask for it back from Xu Ting was like courting death.

"Also, that Kong Luo was merely an unknown lone practitioner that was not very good. Now, since he had gotten the Green Qiu sword, his power has tremendously improved and he even defeated many of my sect's people. Xu Ting greatly favours him now and they even deployed together..."

Xu Ting could not be touched and neither could Kong Luo.

Xu Ting would be a fool to allow his compatriot to be killed for the sword. Thankfully, Qing Xuan could still benefit from the fate energy gained. However, if he were to anger the dragon energy, he would really be totally dead.

As Qing Xuan mumbled to himself, he felt as though there was a giant invisible net that was enveloping Xuan Zhen Sect.

Originally, it was still possible to gift these two swords as a form of investment.

But now, they had spent too much effort helping others with no benefit for themselves gained. Even the head of the sect became worried and despondent after hearing the rumours.

"The uprising of the humans is a heavenly trend and this Xu Ting has dragon energy within him... but now, with the steps Xuan Zhen Sect have taken, it seems like we have made the wrong moves..."

As Qing Xuan thought of how the heavenly trend was hard to predict, he was awe-inspired.

With the uprising of humans, killer tribulations became rife. As such, many were left dead in the process. Although Xuan Zhen Sect had treasures to suppress fate energy, there were usually no tribulations happening, but as for killer tribulations, how much effect these treasures would still have was really an unknown.

...

Dragon Palace, Golden Court Lake.

Fang Yuan sat opposite Golden Court Dragon God and in front of them was a chessboard. A water screen appeared out of nothing, and the scene of numerous warships departing was depicted.

"Your magical powers are truly an eye-opener!"

As Fang Yuan noticed Xu Ting's prospering fate energy, the Purple Suo sword on his waist and Kong Luo, he could not contain his smile.

"The Golden Court Lake is under my jurisdiction, hence, the water reflective technique could be used. If they leave Golden Court Lake or if his fate energy were to further increase, this technique of mine would be unable monitor them from afar."

The Dragon God smiled and straightforwardly placed a piece on the chessboard, "You are very observant and have planned well from the start. The way you handled the two swords was especially creative, I am very impressed."

Since the Dragon God was very mighty and resourceful, he easily knew about the two swords.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan and the Dragon God were truly on the same side. Compared to those people dao cultivators, especially those who aimed to monopolise fate energy, the Dragon God did not have a favourable impression of them.

With the Dragon God's intelligence, he could easily guess that once Xuan Zhen Sect rose in power, they would go around destroying temples and force these deities to submit to them and have contractual agreements to be their servants.

Even as people dao deities, dragons were haughty as it was part of their natural temperament.

As for his dragon descendant going against Xuan Zhen Sect, the Dragon God was glad to see such.

"With Xu Ting's fate energy, there would be no problem uniting the Golden Court Lake's nearby prefectures under his rule. These

prefectures have numerous resources and its people are settled peacefully, it is truly a great place..."

Fang Yuan placed a chess piece in response and started to mention another area, "After Wang Qiao usurps, it will still take some time for him to quell the rebel towns. If Xu Ting wants to grow further, he has to go along An River and conquer those prefectures all the way up to Qi Lake. Only then would he occupy half the country and be considered extremely powerful."

There were many river systems in the Water Realm.

In Chu Country, Qi Lake, An River and Golden Court Lake were connected and those prefectures near it made up half the country! That made up one-sixth of the human population!

"The An River Dragon God's original form was a poisonous water dragon who loves blood sacrifices. He would definitely not sit back and allow the uprising of humans..., not sure if you are interested in the position of An River Dragon God?"

"The position of An River Dragon God?"

The Golden Court Dragon God thought for a moment and suddenly smiled, "With your extravagance, what requests do you have?"

"I was born in Qi Lake, how about Qi Lake?"

Fang Yuan was not shy as he laid out his conditions directly, "We will help out one another and fight against the sects, it is also for us demons to obtain a lifeline against this heavenly trend!"

"A lifeline?"

The Golden Court Dragon God was puzzled.

"The uprising of the humans is a heavenly trend, however, all races are equal. Even if us demons are downfalling, it does not mean that we should be extinct. Even if the land was meant for the people dao, does it mean that there is absolutely no space for us

demons?"

Fang Yuan smiled as he explained; the Dragon God was moved at once.

"That makes sense!"

The Dragon God stood up and looked into the water screen. Large troops attacked and plundered, gathering large amounts of fate energy. This made Fang Yuan's intentions harder to be comprehended by the Dragon God, the Dragon God could not help but to sigh. "We have always given in to the heavens and the people, and are always misunderstood by the demons. But now, we are in the same boat. This is all I can do and I will let history be the judge! I will not think too much now and after a thousand years, I will see what history has to say!"



# Chapter 305: The Return

---

"Kill!"

Xu Ting's army was unstoppable and consecutively took down both the Seventh Dawn and the Thousand Scarlet Prefectures.

Originally, prefectures and district towns were not allowed to have a large number of troops and only have a few thousand soldiers at most. As such, there was not much resistance against Xu Ting who had plotted for a very long time and had the backing of the pirates and his private soldiers.

Of course, the scenario would be drastically different if it were to drag on for half a year where the big, influential families would have the time to build their own army.

As of now, Xu Ting seized the opportunity and managed to successively take over the towns.

By the 8th month, he had already conscripted 2,000 new soldiers. His originally five thousand-strong troops were rumoured to have 10,000 soldiers now. News had spread to all places that the soldiers had surrounded the Lanze Prefecture City.

The sight of soldiers clad in armour was frightening to behold.

Xu Ting stood on the high ground. With a beckon, around 10 soldiers with loud voices came forward. "Listen well, Wang Qiao is a tyrant. It is my general's calling to take him down. If you surrender immediately, you will not lose your riches and honour. If not, we will destroy everything and it will be too late to regret your decision by then!"

"How audacious!"

A person who looked like an official appeared on the wall. He was clad in magistrate's clothing and scolded them immediately. "Xu Ting, you are just a candidate who had just become a patrol officer, and yet, you call yourself a general. You even attack your fellow

countrymen. If this is not a traitorous act, then what is a traitorous act? I, a palace graduate favoured by the imperial court, will defend against you and not let you prevail!"

There was a slight disturbance within the ranks, especially amongst the new soldiers when the magistrate scolded Xu Ting. However, nothing else happened.

Xu Ting could not help but laugh coldly.

He knew that the elites among his troops were his own private soldiers and pirates. Their strength was absolute. There would be no problem even if his own troops were to revolt against him.

Furthermore, in the name of seeking revenge for the young emperor, the soldiers were still dignified regardless of the position of the person who was scolding them.

It would have been dangerous if his troops were made up of normal soldiers and if they did not have a cause to fight.

'However...this magistrate is up to no good as well. On the surface, he appears to be loyal and devoted. However, I have received information that he secretly wanted to set up a regime and had started to amass his troops to stamp out the dissidents...'

His face took on a cold expression. He waved his hand. "Attack! Take note of this magistrate. Once we have broken into the city, kill his entire family!"

"Understood!"

His army was composed of pirates who were not afraid of anything. They had no qualms about attacking the city and started to push their weapons forward.

When a few catapults were lined up before the city, the magistrate on the wall turned deathly pale and had to be assisted down from the wall.

"Kill!" "Kill!" "Kill!"

The troops shouted in unison. The attack on the city could take place at any moment.

"If we really attack head-on, even if there are not many soldiers within the prefecture city, the citizens can still be mobilized against me, which put me at a disadvantage! Is the preparation within the city ready?"

Xu Ting asked after he tested out the defense of the city.

"My lord, it has been arranged!"

Kong Luo was dressed in green robes and appeared elegant. There were faint traces of sword essence on his body. "Huang and Zhang Families have agreed to open up the gates once night falls!"

"Good!"

Xu Ting was very pleased.

The people within the prefecture city were not made of metal and as such, could be bribed.

Otherwise, in ancient times, without the use of proper equipment to besiege the city, it would take many years to breach the defenses of the city even when the supply of food runs out.

"Hmm, you shall lead the army this time. I will provide assistance!"

Of course, things were different due to the existence of divine techniques.

Xu Ting ordered after he moved.

"Understood!"

Kong Luo agreed after he opened his spiritual eye and realized that Xu Ting was not going to experience any tribulations this time based on his fate energy.

Xu Ting was amongst the troops now and his fate energy was closely linked to the generals. If there were any changes, the

changes would show themselves. Everything was smooth-sailing as of now.

'Damn!'

As the soldiers praised Xu Ting, a few people from the Xuan Zhen Sect were unhappy as they thought to themselves, 'Instigating these two families were originally our sect's effort, why do we need to split the spoils of war?'

However, who would dare to go against the general's order?

Even if they were to vomit blood, they could only nod their head in agreement.

...

Night fell. Huang and Zhang Families each sent out 200 soldiers, coordinated with the outside effort and betrayed the Lanze Prefecture city. The city's defense fell, the magistrate committed suicide by hanging himself and his who family was executed.

Furthermore, those officials who resisted were executed regardless of their backgrounds. The whole prefecture was shaken by the executions and the people quickly surrendered.

At this moment, many influential families realized that military might was the most important amidst the chaos. It was not time to talk about relationships, feelings, families and the likes with a shining knife dangling above their heads, threatening their lives.

In the 9th month, the magistrate of the Luosong Prefecture, the last remaining prefecture around the Golden Court Lake, brought a few hundred officials to surrender after realizing that the tables had turned.

Xu Ting was pleased. After reporting to Xu Ren, he was appointed as a prefecture magistrate. However, he planted a few trusted aides within the troops everywhere he went.

Till now, from the demise of the young emperor to the

declaration of the crusade, he managed to turn the 4 prefectures into military-occupied towns of the Chu Country. The speed at which the operation was carried out was enough to cause onlookers to be dumbfounded.

At this moment, the greatest battle of Chu Country was happening between the allied forces of 10 military-occupied towns and the Chu imperial guards under the command of Wang Qiao. This gave Xu Ting the opportunity to expand his military might.

10th month, 5th year of Yong An.

Xu Ren appointed himself as the 'Glorious Grandmaster' and set up multiple appointments such as registrar and officials to handle the affairs of the prefectures. He also appointed Xu Ting as the Guerrilla Warfare General who was in charge of military affairs.

The officials originated from the feudal states and the system evolved from the ideas of the scholar-officials. They were feudal lords that once possessed acres of land, private soldiers, control the law and are able to impose taxes. They later became members of the emperor's inner ministerial circle and were split into different categories such as Zhong Daifu, Grand Daifu and Jian Daifu. There was no fixed number of officials. They had no fixed duties and were amongst the most distinguished in Chu Country.

It was evident that Xu Ren chose this position as he regarded it to be important. Furthermore, it was civil service post which helped him paved a way for Xu Ting.

"Auspicious energy, gather like clouds!"

On the day the prefectures were set up, almost all the realm energy practitioners came forward to witness the new regime.

"At this moment, the Glorious Grandmaster controls 5 prefectures. Even though he kept the system of prefecture magistrates and district magistrates, it is actually the minor officials who handle the affairs, effectively making the magistrates

mere figureheads. The treatment of the magistrates remains the same. This is indeed a stroke of genius!"

Kong Luo could not help but sigh.

The positions of prefecture magistrates and district magistrates were used to recruit the surrendered enemies.

The influential families surrendered against their wills as they were not firm or they had no other options. As such, they could not be given such a heavy responsibility at the start. Of course, they could not be brushed aside as that would breed hostility.

At this moment, they were regarded as if they were clay buddhas, where their salaries and treatment remained unchanged to show the sincerity while the actual tasks were handled by capable minor officials who lacked the qualification and backgrounds. Due to the integrated system, they were able to cut back on the resources needed.

In the future, when those officials who surrendered were accustomed to the system, the minor officials could be relocated to new areas where they could be quickly promoted.

As Xu Ting alone had the authority over the army, the 5 prefectures were united which was difficult to achieve for a new regime.

"Throughout history, there is always a system to handle matters...It is not strange for the 5 prefectures to operate normally!"

Kong Luo felt a surge of karma which brought along spiritual energy with it. He could not help but feel as though he was floating and exclaimed, "General Xu is vying for the heaven's fate energy and gathered the fate energies of 2 million soldiers and civilians in the 5 prefectures. Even if I were only able to obtain just a bit of the fate energy, I would be able to benefit greatly from it!"

With the help of the Dao Magical Formula, it would not be

difficult for his Breathing Technique, which was currently in the 3rd tier, to break through to the 4th tier in a short amount of time.

According to tradition, those who had reached the 4th tier would be given the title of 'Venerable' and would possess the qualifications to set up Dao orthodoxy as well as a small sect.

It might even be possible for him to make use fate energy as a mean to perfect 5 or 6 levels of Dao Foundation!

"This is an opportunity for my sect to rise. No one, not even Xuan Zhen Sect, can get in my way!"

Kong Luo muttered as his eyes flashed a steely green.

...

"Golden Lake, Thousand Scarlet, Luosong, Seventh Dawn and the Lanze Prefectures...have a population of 500,000 households and 2,000,000 civilians and soldiers. If they were properly integrated, the Xu family's father and son would be able to properly manage 50,000 soldiers without a problem..."

Fang Yuan transformed into a horned dragon and ceaselessly advanced in a stream of water.

At this moment, he naturally felt the benefits of being a horned dragon. The most direct benefit was that the horned dragon was continuously growing as he grew from 38 inches originally to over 3 yards long. A golden-green light flickered on his body and he was increasingly awe-inspiring.

"Crash!"

He pushed through everything in his way as not one water dweller dared to offend him. When he revealed a small portion of his dragon's might, many spirits pledged their allegiance to him and hundreds of fishes followed him. His fame was unmatched.

Even though he was just a young horned dragon, he was still a dragon and as such, he was naturally different from the other

water spirits!

"Xu Ting is very smart. After taking over the 5 prefectures, he immediately reorganized his troops and aggressively develop the navy as he prepares to make use of the An River to bring the battle to Qi Lake. If he does not grasp this opportunity to expand his army and wait for Wang Qiao and the allied forces to finish their battle, things will be different..."

Once he entered An River, Fang Yuan immediately felt at ease as a large amount of spiritual energy in the water surge forth.

"This An River Dragon God failed to understand the right timing...as a demon race, he went against a greater power and had already lost half the battle. Although he had the right conditions, I come here with the Xu Family's dragon energy. He was unlucky, for I have met my benefactor."

In order to reach Qi Lake, Xu Ting had to dispatch his troops through the waterways and as such, the Golden Lake Navy would have to enter An River.

If the Dragon God opposed it, he would be fighting against the heavenly trend and would be killed.

One would be able to receive a lot of help when the fate energy is on his side. If the fate energy was not on his side, not even the hero would be able to save himself.

Now that power was on his side, he should make full use of the opportunity.

"Ah.....where do you come from?"

A few guards poked their heads out. Upon seeing Fang Yuan, they did not dare to offend him and quickly bowed. "Please enter the dragon palace to visit the Dragon God!"

"Haha.....I will not pay the An River Dragon God a visit. Help me convey to him the message to not oppose Heaven's will. If not, it will be too late when all hell breaks loose!"



Fang Yuan would be foolish if he were to battle the Dragon God and give his life up for Xu Ting. He immediately transformed into a streak of golden light and escaped far away.

After travelling for many days, the Dragon God was no longer able to catch him. A big lake filled with spiritual energy appeared before his eyes.

"Qi Lake, I am back!!"

Fang Yuan dove in, his heart filled with emotions.

# Chapter 306: Rescue

---

In the 150-mile radius of Qi Lake, mist covered the vast surface of the lake.

Fang Yuan hid his dragon might and transformed into a carp. As he swam, he felt overwhelmed with emotions.

The Carp Transformation Technique was a must know for dragons, akin to an innate ability. If dragon gods were met with trouble, they would usually transform into a carp.

At that moment, Fang Yuan transformed into a black carp and swam around as if he was on a rampage.

"Speaking of which..., I am still under the Qi Lake Water God's warrant for arrest, but who could ever imagine a carp would have transformed into a dragon in merely ten years?"

The Qi Lake Water God, called Bai Guan, was a python that cultivated into a Water God through the imperial order. He could make waves and form rain. His aides included two powerful demon kings, an alligator snapping turtle and a water buffalo.

Nevertheless, since he could not transform into a dragon, he could not be called a Dragon God and was merely a Water God.

"For a python to transform into a dragon, it must undergo huge tribulations!"

As Fang Yuan thought of that, he gave a wry smile at once, "With the heavenly trend, humans are rising up and demons are not favoured. The number of tribulations the Water God must pass to transform into a dragon is huge and it would be impossible for him do so!"

He could not transform into a dragon without overcoming heavenly tribulations and thus would remain a snake demon!

If only he did not possess the heavenly imperial order nor had the

help of his demon kings, Fang Yuan could have settled him by himself.

"Hmm... and that Li Luan, if Xu Ting's power grows further, she would definitely not let off her father's killer!"

Once he thought of Qi Lake Water God, he could not help but to thought of Li Luan.

Li Luan was the previous Water God's daughter. In order to seek revenge, she stole An River Dragon God's pearl. It was an extremely daring move and reflected how resolute she was.

However, once she met Xu Ting, she fell in love with him. Not only did she gift away the Dragon Pearl, she sent herself in. It truly made Fang Yuan felt how the heavens made a fool of demons.

It was like how the Golden Court Dragon God got too close to the people dao for too long and relied on their beliefs for its own fate energy. Hence, he naturally got affected too.

This was why Fang Yuan chose not to get too close to people.

"I wonder how are those spirits at Lotus Pond are doing..."

Fang Yuan thought of his old haunt and rushed towards to Lotus Pond.

Vivid memories of the reserved Gui Zhong, the cute Luo Zhu and the unlucky crocodile appeared on his mind.

When he arrived near Lotus Pond, he realised something was amiss.

Many water dwellers have fled and groups of water guardians seemed to be searching for something.

"Eh? This seems weird!"

Fang Yuan was shocked as he saw that, "Could it be that another powerful demon has appeared in Lotus Pond? Is it being hunted down by the Water God? If not, what are they doing?"

When he was a black carp, he lived there. It was a remote spot in Qi Lake that did not have much spiritual energy nor powerful spirits. Fang Yuan could not think of why there was such a huge commotion.

Unless, they realised he was arriving and intentionally wanted to capture him. However, that was absurd and baseless.

"Hey! That black fish there! The Water God is trying to capture someone, you better leave quickly!"

One of the water guardians immediately hollered when it saw Fang Yuan approaching and its fierce aura spread across.

"Capturing someone? Who are you all capturing?"

Fang Yuan smiled, and slightly made use of his ability to satiate his curiosity.

"Of course it's that scallop who stole the deity position! The Water God has ordered, whichever water guardian captures that lady and presents the deity position would be promoted to general..."

The water guardian was ferocious looking and wielded a giant steel fork, but spoke uninhibitedly.

After it told Fang Yuan everything it knew, it then suddenly scratched its head, "Why did I tell you so much... wait a minute, you look very familiar!"

"Oh, you don't recognise me?"

Fang Yuan laughed.

The black carp he was currently transformed as was noticeably different from his original transformation; it had shinier scales and a dragon beard.

"I recognise you now, you are the Water God's wanted criminal! You are even more wanted than that shell lady!"

The water guardian suddenly recognised him and was elated,

"After I catch you, the Water God would definitely promote me to a deity!"

It was overwhelmed with greed and without thinking of why such a black carp would suddenly appear there, it charged forward with its fork.

"Looks like it's a transformed water dweller too, its spiritual awareness... is worrying!"

Fang Yuan thought for a moment, the surrounding lake water immediately froze into ice and trapped the water guardian in it.

"Those who don't want to die, scram!"

With his spiritual will, it was as though a hurricane swept across with a tinge of dragon might.

Against the dragon's might, many of the water dwellers fled in terror.

"That scallop, could it be Luo Zhu?"

An unusual premonition appeared in Fang Yuan's mind and made him sped up.

...

Further inside the lake, there were many water guardians making its rounds. They were holding a magical equipment that looked like a bright pearl.

Leading it was a crab general. His whole body was golden in colour and he had four limbs. He was donned in metal armour and looked ferocious and strong.

"The Water God has instructed that we cannot let the shell lady escape or else we would be punished! We have already sealed off the entire Lotus Pond, she cannot run away! Search for her carefully!"

"Yes, Sir!"

Under the possibility of heavy rewards or heavy punishments, the water guardians were flustered and began searching more carefully.

As their search areas shrunk, suddenly, a dazzling red glow effused from a pearl which was spotted.

"It must be here!"

The water guardian who spotted it was overjoyed. The lakebed tremored as silt flew everywhere. Under the strong currents, a giant shell could be discerned.

"Bam!"

The shell was the size of a house. However, when the water guardian attempted to smash it, he let out a blood-curdling scream as his bones got smashed instead.

"Pew! Pew!"

The giant shell started expelling water currents in an attempt to escape, as though it was an undefeatable fortress rushing forward.

However, the crab general had chased after it for a long time, he already knew the shell lady's tricks. With a wave of his arm, a group of water spiders appeared and sprayed colorful nettings over her.

The nettings intertwined to form a huge net enveloping the entire shell.

"Pull!"

"Pull!"

The huge group began tugging and pulling the net.

With this huge strength, it finally stopped the giant shell from escaping as the water currents could not carry itself further.

"Go!"

The crab general waved its arm yet again and the group started to

smash the shell repeatedly.

"How long would this take?"

At that moment, the shell opened slightly, a silhouette of an anxious-looking young lady carrying a pearl could be seen.

The crab general gave an irritated roar as he swung numerous large hammers on to the shell.

"Bam! Bam!"

The sound echoed like the muffled noise of thunder.

A crack appeared on the shell and the face of the shell lady inside turned pale at once. She raised her pearl and squealed, "Stop!"

Immediately, a divine light appeared and swept away the water dwellers, however, it got blocked by the light from the crab general's body.

"Hehe..., you and I are both Qi Lake's deities. We are both under the jurisdiction of my master, Qi Lake Water God, how dare you think you have a technique that I do not know of?"

The crab general laughed out loud, "Follow me back obediently and who knows the Water God might even pardon your crimes!"

"Dream on!"

The young lady bawled out, "Grandpa Gui Zhong died because he obeyed you all!"

"Stubborn fool!"

The crab general snorted, although she was right and he indeed intended to do so, he was still slightly disgruntled being called out.

He immediately raised his hammer and gave yet another powerful smash.

"Bam!"

The lake tremored again as cracks spread across the shell.

"Haha... foolish girl, let's see where can you run to?"

The crab general gave a wicked grin as she saw the young lady gave a panic-stricken look.

However, just as he raised his hammer again, he felt a sudden change in the surrounding currents.

The originally calm lake bottom turned into a vortex as a whirlpool that kept sucking in the crustacean army appeared.

"This is... demonic magic? Who is saving this girl?"

The crab general's heart turned stone cold as he stared at the vortex.

Sure enough, in the eye of the vortex, there was a black fish swimming leisurely.

"Carp spirit? This seems very familiar!"

The crab general paused for a moment before he immediately questioned, "Aren't you the carp who stole the Water God's treasure?"

At the same time, the shell lady trapped in the lake exclaimed, "Brother Fang Yuan?"

"It is Luo Zhu!"

As expected, Fang Yuan was the one who came over.

Fang Yuan was surprised as he saw the shell and its shell lady had grown a lot.

"To cultivate till this level, it must be due to what I taught her, but then, what is with the divine light?"

Although Fang Yuan was bewildered, he did not begin recounting past events.

This was because the crab general's hammer was approaching his head.

"Haha... such is fate, I can't believe this black carp just walked



into the trap willingly!"

The crab general's four arms began smashing in a flurry.

"He is merely a water general?"

Fang Yuan was disappointed at such, "I still thought it would be a demon king..."

He swung its tail and, "Bam!"

Under the loud noise, two hammers flew out.

"Ah... you!"

At that moment, the crab general then realised the black carp in front of him was different, its strange energy made him thought of running away.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan's actions were much faster than his. Just as he was about to turn around, a fiery red sword essence pierced through his head and he burst into flames.

Flaming!

Under the flames, the initially golden crab cooked through and turned red.

"Oh, this crab looks delicious!"

Fang Yuan did not bother about the cooked crab general anymore and went to the shell. He summoned the sword essence and cut the colourful net into pieces as Luo Zhu appeared from inside.

"It's been so long since I met you, you have grown so much!"

As he gazed at Luo Zhu, he smiled and lightly knocked her head like he used to.

Luo Zhu was stunned from the events, tears welled up in the corner of her eyes and turned into pearls as they fell, "You... are really big brother, sobs..., grandpa Gui Zhong has passed away..."

"What exactly happened? Also, why did you become a water deity?"

As Fang Yuan looked at the divine light on her body, he was astonished, he looked at the surrounding and added, "This is not where we should be talking, let's go!"

He then grabbed a slightly golden talisman from the crab's cooked body.

"Yea, I will listen to you!"

Luo Zhu nodded obediently and gave unconditional trust to Fang Yuan.

## Chapter 307: Entrust

---

The lotus leaves swept away and the blue waves splashed.

Under a fragrant aroma, a small boat floated on the lake. Fang Yuan and Luo Zhu sat facing each other and in front of them was a brewing pot of tea.

"This spot is protected by my abilities. The Qi Lake Water God would not be able to discover us here. It has been ten plus years since we met, how have you been?"

Fang Yuan raised his teacup and smiled.

Although Bai Guan was the Qi Lake Water God, he could not meticulously search through every big and small detail in the 150-mile radius of Qi Lake.

Hence, all the powerful demons had abilities to conceal themselves and unless they were really nearby him, it was extremely hard for them to be detected.

"Umm..."

Luo Zhu's eyes welled with tears and began narrating, "After big brother left, many fierce water dwellers came over to Lotus Pond. After searching through many times with no results, they left and never came back... I followed your techniques and cultivated. My pearl gradually became rounder and fuller, while my body grew too. Most of the past ten years were very carefree and worryless for me, except a few months ago where grandpa Gui Zhong suddenly appeared in my dreams. He told me that the Water God was after his life and he was going to die soon, he also said since he and I were fated, he entrusted me with the deity position... Ever since then, those fierce water dwellers appeared..."

After hearing her, Fang Yuan was speechless, "That old green-haired tortoise? Nevermind, I will take a look myself! Don't move nor resist!"

As Fang Yuan spoke, he placed his finger on the area between her eyebrows.

Luo Zhu was dressed in a thin silk gown and radiated with the purity of a deity, her beauty was indescribable.

Facing Fang Yuan, she opened up herself to him.

After all, demons were simple-minded, the two of them had such a strong relationship before and hence, it was natural for her to open up to Fang Yuan.

"Hmm..., crystal clear, strong foundation, the magic is pure...."

Since she was cooperative, Fang Yuan could easily and clearly view such.

Fang Yuan nodded as he viewed, he then shifted his gaze to an imperial order talisman in Luo Zhu's sea of consciousness.

The talisman shined in a mixture of green and red light, and there was a tinge of heavenly energy from it. It was noticeably unique. Furthermore, the imperial order Fang Yuan just obtained from the crab general and the other imperial orders he had seen before paled in comparison; this talisman was vastly superior.

"This deity position seems like it was not formed from people dao's beliefs, it seems to be formed from pure heavenly energy..."

There were huge differences between a people dao deity and a natural heavenly deity. The latter could easily adjust the spiritual energy in its divine territory and its might could not be compared to the formers'.

"No wonder I felt this old green-haired tortoise was hiding something, I can't believe he was secretly accumulating for his deity position..."

Fang Yuan sensed a bit and detected the imperial order deity's territory, "Hmm..., its Lotus Pond and a nearby estuary..., hehe, this essentially means that part of the Qi Lake Water God's area of

power has been cut off! Of course there was animosity! That old tortoise was timid and chose to play safe, who knows, he might even have coveted the Water God's position and got discovered and hence, put to death!"

Then why did he appear in Luo Zhu's dreams and gave her the deity position?

This was because she was the most powerful in Lotus Pond, hence, after the old tortoise, there was no other choice than her since she was the most qualified to inherit the deity position.

"Of course..., he seems to have some plans!" Fang Yuan thought.

Since he saw the imperial order was so close to being cultivated, Fang Yuan gathered his spiritual will and instructed, "Sister Luo Zhu, I want to help you to cultivate your deity position. Remember not to resist no matter what happens in your sea of consciousness, understood?"

"Yea! Just do it Big Brother!"

As Luo Zhu heard how dignified Fang Yuan instructed, she nodded her head solemnly.

"Hah!"

Fang pointed his fingers and three swords emerged with red, blue and green glows, surrounding the imperial order.

Even as the swords glowed, their sword radiance was well kept and there were no signs of sword essence dissipating. It showed that the swords were controlled powerfully.

For a dream master, it was like an innate ability to have such fine controls in the sea of consciousness.

The three swords displayed the power of their three talents, and sealed off the imperial order at once.

Seeing such, Fang Yuan finally stopped holding his breath and laughed, "Old tortoise! You have hidden really deeply! Just that... a

small trace of your spiritual will was left behind in the deity position! To steal my sister's body, you have to pass through me first!"

The imperial order vibrated slightly, however, it did not move.

Fang Yuan then gave a mirthless smile and pointed his finger. A delicate 3 Talents Sword Array appeared immediately and isolated it.

Surges of sword essence emerged in the array and pierced towards the imperial order.

"Fang Yuan!"

The imperial order suddenly moved. Under Luo Zhu's screams of terror, it dazzled brightly and a green-robed elder appeared. It was that green-haired tortoise demon, Gui Zhong.

Gui Zhong was visibly distraught as he looked towards Fang Yuan and asked, "Why do you want to be so ruthless?"

"It is not that I am stone-hearted, it is because you are immoral!"

Fang Yuan scorned, "Originally, I could not be bothered about you cultivating your deity position, but since you planted your elemental clone right before your death, and wanted to replace her soul with yours, I will not let you off for harming my sister!"

"Swoosh!"

The fire and water swords converged as thunder sparked in the middle, it was a force that could not even be resisted by the imperial order's power.

Gui Zhong's body has long died and his elemental clone has already largely disappeared. At that moment, it was just a shadow. No matter how well it had hidden itself, it was not very powerful even if it was discovered.

Suddenly, the shadow dissipated, its face turned aggressive and said, "Ahh..., unless you really want to fight till one of us perishes?"

This is that lass' sea of consciousness, if I detonate the imperial order, she would die and her soul would be gone forever, unable to reincarnate! This is my bad, as long as you let me off this time, I swear I will immediately leave her body and look for another one, how about that?

"How about no! You want to self-detonate? Why don't you try it? I'm sure only you would die!"

Dream masters were the most competent in manipulating the sea of consciousness, when Fang Yuan used his 3 Talents Sword Array, it was all for this. He grinned and said, "I will accept the gift you have sent on behalf of sister Luo Zhu! Go!"

"Swish!"

Lightning flashed.

Although Gui Zhong wanted to detonate the deity position and perish together, suddenly, lightning struck this old tortoise's forehead as Luo Zhu let out a scream.

He was stunned. He then exploded and turned into streaks of black vapour.

"I will just help you completely cultivate this!" Fang Yuan thought as the 3 Talents Sword Array shined mysteriously and slashed the imperial order.

The imperial order totally dissipated and turned into large amounts of golden red runes. Each of them contained heavenly axioms, encompassing some kind of natural power.

"Ah..., in actual fact, all roads lead to Rome, in the end, we are all learning about the rules along the way!"

Fang Yuan pondered, he then waved his hands and the streaks of black vapour originally from Gui Zhong surrounded his hand, as fragmented pieces of memories appeared.

"Big brother..., what are you doing..., I... I'm scared, it felt like I

almost died just now!"

After completing, little Luo Zhu's voice could then be heard.

"Don't worry, come out now and accept your deity position!"

Fang Yuan smiled and dispelled the sword array. As he saw Luo Zhu's Yin spirit, he reached out his hand and dispersed the runes on her body.

"Woong!"

A divine light flashed and immediately, many magical inscriptions appeared on Luo Zhu's body. They were divine techniques granted by the heavens, it could harness the spiritual energy of Lotus Pond and the estuary.

"I... think I just suddenly gained knowledge of many things!"

Luo Zhu paused for a moment. The divine light on her body grew stronger.

"Yea, familiarise yourself with it!"

Seeing such, Fang Yuan exited her sea of consciousness. He saw the Luo Zhu in front of him had aged a few years but did not bother her as her eyes were shut and she was deep in thoughts. The streaks of black vapour on his hand dissipated, signifying that Gui Zhong's last remaining imprints in this realm had totally disappeared.

"This Gui Zhong... I can't believe that there were traces of true dragon blood in him, he was really secretive!"

As he thought of the scenes during cultivation, he mused, "This demon has carefully and profoundly schemed to be a true heavenly deity for a long time and he almost succeeded... Just that the timing was not right and he was found out by the Qi Lake Water God. Hence, he was ultimately met with inexorable tribulations."

Fang Yuan was not very interested in his background, just that he had greatly benefited from a deeper understanding of god dao.



"The real heavenly imperial order was formed by rules, its unique power was sourced from the heavens and earth, hence, there are so many different types of deities!"

"Whereas, for people dao deities, although they made use of the beliefs of people, it was not exactly the same as a heavenly deity. However, they can also ascend to a heavenly deity, as long as they do good deeds and accumulate heavenly karma!"

"When Gui Zhong was cultivating his deity position, he had already used up most of his fate energy, hence, not only was the timing not right, he was met with tribulations and ultimately died..."

"Pitter patter!"

Suddenly, mist appeared on the surface of the lake as moments later, dense raindrops splashed on to the surface of the lake.

"Thank you, big brother, for helping me to cultivate my deity position and removing the hidden danger!"

Luo Zhu opened her eyes and thanked with radiance.

She just realised how dangerous it was just now.

If not for Fang Yuan, the moment she finally cultivated her deity position, Gui Zhong would have snatched her soul and all her efforts would have gone down the drain.

"Now that you have your heavenly deity position, you automatically mastered how to control the weather! This is your fate!"

Fang Yuan was very gratified seeing how she now had her own abilities, "Just remember, in the future, as long as you do more good deeds, do your duties dutifully and don't go against the heavenly trend, there would be no harms nor tribulations!"

"Just that... Qi Lake Water God would definitely not do nothing about this deity position of mine!"

After cultivating her deity position, Luo Zhu understood many things, hence her expression turned slightly sorrow.

The Lotus Pond and the estuary were all part of Qi Lake, which were under the jurisdiction of the Water God. The Water God would definitely not be happy about part of his authority being carved out!

Furthermore, Fang Yuan knew how Luo Zhu was different from that crab general.

The deities under the Water God had the relationship akin to ministers and emperors, it was just a relationship of authority, and hence, these deities were easily commanded and controlled.

Whereas, Luo Zhu's deity position was accumulated from the heavens, it was akin to a military governor having its own rule. Which emperor would allow such?

Hence, the two parties would definitely fight with each other!

"Hehe..., don't worry, I will definitely help you with this matter. After all, this Water God is a nemesis of mine!"

Fang Yuan laughed and then looked above his head.

He saw green and golden streaks gathering and turning into flowers. They rippled as they bloomed auspiciously, revealing its extraordinariness.

Xu family's dragon energy was prospering. The family had occupied five prefectures and their troop was 200 million large. Naturally, the karma gained from it was extraordinary.

Such great progress meant that it was the time for revenge!

# Chapter 308: Tribulation

---

"Name: Fang Yuan

Race: Horned Dragon

Essence: 36

Spirit: 36

Magic: 50

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [9 Steps of Dragon Transformation Formula (7th Transformation)], [Weather Controlling Technique (Grade 1)], [Natural Magical Strength (Grade 3)], [8 Gates Sword Array (4th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)]"

"After this round of harvest, I have fully formed the three swords. Since the thunder sword has been completed, I can now use the 3 Talents Sword Array!"

In the actualised dream world, the thunder sword flashed with lightning, it had a dignified and vicious might.

Also, soon enough, the fourth sword was slowly formed. It was pale green in colour, signifying the ultimate haste.

"The fourth sword, the Modest Wind Sword?"

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself solemnly.

As a dream master at the Illusionary Divine stage, every three tiers was a huge stage. If the fourth sword was formed, not only could he harness the power of wind, thunder, water and fire to cast the 4 Emblems Sword Array, each magical soldier would have its own sword spirit! Once the magical soldier got their spirituality, their power would be way stronger than before! Not only would it

not require control and could attack enemies on its own, it could even become like the Fiery Dragon Child!

"At the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine, it would allow one to actualise spiritual properties in objects!"

"At the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine, it would allow one to actualise a race of beasts and a spiritual land. Its power could even defeat that of True Elementals and True Divines!"

"I am already at the 3rd Tier of Illusionary Divine and it's only a small distance away from the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine..."

Fang Yuan's eyes gleamed, "But of course, before that, I have to settle the foreign evil forces that tainted my dream elemental force..."

If he did not settle the matter and ascended the tier, he would fall into a ploy!

"Let's go!"

He stopped thinking and took a look at Luo Zhu who was beside him, "Let's visit that Qi Lake Water God, Bai Guan!"

The moment he spoke, a loud, thunderous noise suddenly erupted.

Grey clouds loomed while lightning and thunder struck, all the water dwellers in Qi Lake were alarmed. One after another, they floated up to the surface of the lake to look at the unusual scene.

"Hmm..., why does this scene looks so familiar to the one that happened ten plus years ago?"

Luo Zhu was unbelievably shocked, "A dragon transformation tribulation?"

"It is... the tribulation to transform into a dragon!"

Fang Yuan was puzzled. He then looked at the spiritual energy swarming into Qi Lake and sighed, "It's Qi Lake Water God... he is about to undergo a tribulation. I can't believe we are involved in

his people tribulation! Is this a taste of his own medicine?"

There was no doubt that the Water God Bai Guan's fate energy has dropped to its lowest point.

Just as Fang Yuan made up his mind to look for trouble with him, he had brought about his own Heavenly Tribulations for his dragon transformation.

As Fang Yuan had experienced it before, Fang Yuan knew how horrifying it was. Although the Qi Lake Water God had the help of his deity position, even if he made it out alive, he would be seriously injured.

Furthermore, with Fang Yuan in his people tribulation, the Water God would definitely not be able to survive it!

"Unknowingly, I've become the heavenly trend's pawn!" Fang Yuan thought.

He sighed as his fear of this unpredictable heavenly trend grew.

...

On one area of the lake's surface.

In the mackerel sky, indistinct flashes of purple lightning appeared.

Below it, the concentration of spiritual energy that swarmed in was so dense that it looked like a physical entity. The white smog formed shrouded the centre and in it, only a shadow of a gigantic snake could be discerned. One of its scale and one of its eyes could be vaguely seen and it had a majestic and divine aura.

"Brother buffalo, what do you think are the chances of brother Bai Guan passing the tribulations this time?"

On the side, two demons kept a distance from the white smog as they only dared to view from far.

The Heavenly Tribulation was no joke, if they were to help him pass the tribulation, they would definitely be counterattacked!

If they helped, the tribulations would become even more dangerous and in the end, they would all suffer from baleful consequences! Even though they were birds of a feather and were very close, it was not to this extent!

"Brother Bai Guan's power is extraordinary! He used his secret techniques to forcefully delay the tribulations till now. He has already fully cultivated his Water God imperial order. With the spiritual energy from the 150-mile radius of Qi Lake, there should be a 60% chance!"

What the water buffalo said made the alligator snapping turtle pause for a moment before he gestured, "60%?"

The alligator snapping turtle was in disbelief, "The Qi Lake Water God is one of the rare deities amongst us demons! He would have at least a 90% chance of passing the tribulations!"

"That was last time! With the heavenly trend now? I doubt so!"

The water buffalo then continued, "Us demons are downfalling while the humans are rising! The saints in my race have either died or experienced a severe reduction in their cultivation. Now that a demon is at his tribulation stage, it would definitely suffer from the wrath and envy of the heavens!"

This realm's Heavenly Tribulation was a way for the heavenly trend to maintain balance.

As the demons were meant to downfall, these few years, the tribulations the demons underwent were more and more brutal. Out of ten, only one could survive!

Anyway, Heavenly Tribulations could not be delayed easily.

It was already a feat for Bai Guan to forcefully delay it till now.

"If brother Bai Guan becomes a dragon, he will lose all his snake characteristics and be able to control the weather. Furthermore, since he is a deity, even if demons are downfalling, he can still protect our Qi Lake at the very least..." the alligator snapping

turtle muttered.

As the heavenly trend brought about the rise of humans, the demons reacted differently. There were some who resisted, some who gave up and some who escaped faraway to preserve their elemental energy. However, for the few of them, they just wanted to be a ruler of their area, Qi Lake.

"Hmm... those d\*amn humans, if I see any of them, I will eat them up!"

The water buffalo snorted out white fumes as his eyes turned blood red in anger.

"Hehe..., that's right, nevermind about the land near Qi Lake, the waters belong to us water dwellers, don't the humans dare try to occupy it!"

The alligator snapping turtle further added, "Let's not talk about others, now that brother Bai Guan has ten thousands of soldiers and tens of generals, no matter what ships the humans bring over, we will topple them over!"

"As long as brother Bai Guan passes this tribulation, carefree days are ahead of us!"

The water buffalo clenched his teeth.

Suddenly, lightning flashed and thunder roared. The mighty thunder demonstrated its power to determine life or death and even the two demons were extremely frightened.

The Heavenly Tribulation had started!

"Kaboom!"

Numerous lightning and thunder merged together, forming a beam of purple light striking down.

The white smog dispersed at once and within it, a large red-eyed snake appeared.

He roared to the skies, its scales were burnt and blood was oozing

out from it.

"Unbelievable! This is only the first thunderbolt, and its power is so strong?"

The water buffalo and alligator snapping turtle's expression changed at once, "Is this a heavenly punishment? By using secret techniques to change the timing of the Heavenly Tribulations, he is indeed being punished for it!"

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

The Heavenly Tribulation was merciless as it continued without any delay.

At that instance, three purple thunderbolts struck one after another.

"Ahh... as the Qi Lake Water God, help me, heavenly energy!"

Bai Guan hollered, a divine light appeared and shrouded its body, alongside the white smog, forming a layer of defence. However, it only lasted for a fleeting moment before it got destroyed.

After the three thunderbolts, Bai Guan was severely injured, his body turned black from the burns and his wounds were ripped. However, his might became stronger and there was a lump on his head and lower abdomen.

"Ah..., brother Bai Guan!"

The water buffalo and alligator snapping turtle were elated at such. "It was amazing how he could persevere on under such circumstances! He must be transforming into a dragon now!"

"Swish!"

Suddenly, at that moment, a giant shell appeared from far, inside it was a young lady, "Hehe..., I play a part in the jurisdiction of Qi Lake too! Scram!"

She looked pure and holy, with a command of hers, part of the lake's spiritual energy dispersed immediately.



"Ahh..., it's that old tortoise demon's b\*stard!"

"How dare you!"

The water buffalo and alligator snapping turtle immediately charged at her without hesitation.

Not only did the Heavenly Tribulation consisted of thunder, people tribulation was part of it too!

In this realm, no matter how horrible a powerful demon's reputation was, they always had one or two friends on their side who served as protectors!

"You are just a shell lady who obtained the deity position by luck, how dare you disrupt the Water God ascending? Die!"

The water buffalo roared, he then summoned his black cloud and stepped on it.

"Boom!"

It was as though the sky had crashed and fell! A black hoof suddenly appeared in mid-air, compressing the air around it. It made Luo Zhu felt like she could not escape.

Even though Luo Zhu has already become a deity, she still seemed tender and inexperienced facing such a powerful demon.

However, Luo Zhu smiled, there was no hint of fear in her face, "Stupid buffalo, you have fallen into my trap!"

"Swish! Swoosh! Slash!"

Just as she finished saying that, three sword radiance flew out from the giant shell. The three sword radiance had the properties of water, fire and thunder. It charged towards the water buffalo in mid-air and the beam of light formed a triangular shape. It was an array that trapped the water buffalo in it.

In the beam of light, three magical soldiers appeared and displayed its prowess.

The water, fire and thunder sword essence charged to full after a short while, and the water buffalo's shrieks of terror could be heard from within.

The 8 Gates Sword Array of a dream soldier master finally displayed its cruel side in this realm.

"Bang!"

A gigantic corpse of the water buffalo fell from mid-air and blood splattered everywhere.

After the 3 Talents Sword Array has been formed, no matter how powerful a demon would be, once it was trapped in it, it would be killed immediately!

"Aaahh!"

After witnessing the death of the water buffalo, the alligator snapping turtle ran away as fast as he could immediately.

"You want to run? It's too late!"

Fang Yuan guffawed as he wielded the thunder sword and behind him, the silhouette of a horned dragon appeared. Under the divine light, he leapt towards the alligator snapping turtle and captured him."

"Ahh... you are a dragon? Why do you want to kill me?" the alligator snapping turtle asked.

He was terrified by the dragon's might and its demonic strength dropped at once.

"You don't need to know!"

Although those three demons have met Fang Yuan before, the Fang Yuan then was merely a black carp. Who would have linked it together with the Fang Yuan now?

"Have a taste of my sword!"

Fang Yuan was furious at his enemy. With a move of his right

hand, a thunder sword essence struck the alligator snapping turtles back heavily.

"Kaboom!"

With a flash of lightning, numerous burnt marks appeared on his shell. The alligator snapping turtle still clenched its teeth and tried to escape.

Since the alligator snapping turtle had some dragon bloodline in him too, he naturally knew how powerful such a dragon was. Furthermore, the dragon was even equipped with the thunder sword!

The alligator snapping turtle had strong defences, his shell was extremely tough from years of cultivation, it could even survive attacks from humans' magical weapons.

However, under the thunder sword, his shell cracked apart and blood oozed out.

"Good! This thunder sword enacts punishments for the heavens and is the nemesis of all evil demons!"

Seeing such, Fang Yuan was ecstatic.

# Chapter 309: Dragon God

---

Most of the demons in this realm were extremely afraid of tribulations by lightning.

Since Fang Yuan had the thunder sword, it was the number one weapon in punishing them. Hence, demons retreated in fear!

"Your turtle shell is not bad, I will gladly keep it!"

Fang Yuan was confident, with a few strikes of the thunder sword, it destroyed all the alligator snapping turtle's demonic magic and magical equipment.

Turtles were tenacious by nature and the alligator snapping turtle kept trying to escape. To Fang Yuan's surprise, the wounds on the turtle's body were being healed by his own vital elemental energy. Fang Yuan was slightly envious as he exclaimed, "What a regenerating body! Such a body could quickly restore wounds, but what if the damage you received in an instant is more than the limit?"

"3 Talents Sword Array! Go!"

Compared to the water buffalo demon, the alligator snapping turtle's speed was way too slow. It was like a living target for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was done fooling around. He immediately cast his three divine swords and formed the 3 Talents Sword Array.

"Kaboom!"

"Swoosh!"

In the array, flashing thunder, searing flames and frosty ice turned into sword essence and launched at the alligator snapping turtle continuously.

The astonishing sword radiance was like a tempest. Nearing the end, it condensed into a single point and a loud boom could be

heard.

"Back!"

The three divine sword turned into a stream of light and was kept inside Fang Yuan's cuff.

Water from the surrounding filled back the originally exposed lake bed and blood dispersed. There was only a turtle shell left behind, although it had numerous wounds on it, it still remained intact.

"Not bad indeed..."

Fang Yuan smiled slightly and kept the turtle shell.

Luo Zhu was stunned at such a scene, she was left speechless. She was shocked at Fang Yuan's ease in annihilating these two powerful demons. With such power, he must have many enemies!

"Kaboom!"

At that moment, accompanied with suffocating pressure, the last thunderbolt finally struck.

The snake was severely wounded by then.

However, he was no longer a snake.

He had a jade horn on its head and two small claws below his abdomen. While his dragon tail was still unadorned and plain, his body was filled with the characteristics of a dragon. It was evident he had become a white-coloured water dragon!

"The Water God is indeed powerful! He even managed to skip the young dragon period and transformed into a water dragon immediately!"

As Fang Yuan came over to the side and took a look, he was in awe. He knew Bai Guan's current position was higher than his since he was only a horned dragon.

At that moment, the water dragon roared. He had used up all the

tricks in his sleeve and he could only exhaust all his remaining effort to face the lightning tribulations with his body.

"Kaboom!"

Lightning struck and water splashed everywhere.

The dark clouds dispersed and the warm and sunny sunlight appeared.

After the lightning tribulations, what was left behind was a white-coloured water dragon that was nearly cut in half.

Fang Yuan and Luo Zhu went forward and looked into the water dragon's frightened eyes.

"The two of you..."

The water dragon was severely injured, he had used up all his accumulated fate energy and was at his weakest point.

The water dragon almost did not have enough energy to speak, he finally muttered slowly, "...This is unfair...! To transform into a dragon, I had spent so long plotting and it had cost me so much..."

Such a thought caused pearl-like tears to emerge from the dragon's eyes.

"Big brother..."

As Luo Zhu was inexperienced and naive, she was slightly moved by the scene.

"Haha..., don't be deceived by him. Qi Lake Water God, if you still want to live, then hand over the Qi Lake imperial order and your Water Dragon Pearl as vouch!"

Fang Yuan chuckled.

"Never!"

The water dragon's eyes filled with rage and enmity at once, "The Water God position might be discussable, but my life, the Dragon Pearl? Impossible! If I give you my Dragon Pearl, wouldn't I be

under your manipulation forever?"

The water dragon hurled his tail and sent menacing waves across the lake. He was trying to escape by creating confusion.

"Even though he is on his last breath, he is still the Qi Lake Water God. Inside his area, he will recover by a small amount with every second delayed!"

Fang Yuan transformed into a horned dragon and plunged into the waters, "Be still!"

Fang Yuan's Weather Controlling Technique and Water Controlling Technique did not lose to the water dragon's.

"Ah..., I'll fight you!"

The water dragon snorted, he gave up his original plan of escaping through the waters and charged towards Fang Yuan viciously.

"Hehe!"

Fang Yuan gave a wry smile and he suddenly opened his mouth. A beam of lightning appeared and struck the water dragon's body as the thunder sword travelled through the beam and pierced the water dragon in an instance.

"Boom!"

Sparks flew, scales and blood splattered everywhere.

Seizing the opportunity, Fang Yuan used his horn and lunged towards the water dragon's wound caused by the lightning tribulations.

The water dragon let out a scream and grabbed Fang Yuan with his claws.

"Haha..., you think I don't have claws?"

Fang Yuan laughed, the water and fire sword essences appeared at his abdomen and formed the shape of sharp claws, "Water-Fire

Dual Sword Array, charge!"

"Glub! Glub!"

Bubbles and blood rose to the surface of the lake and dyed half of the lake's surface into a golden red colour.

Luo Zhu was stunned at such a scene, but she could not interfere.

"Hruuuuuu, hhruuuuuuu!"

The sunny skies abruptly turned into a sea of dark clouds. Gale winds raged and a storm erupted at once!

"When dragons emerge, the waters are calm; when dragons die, the heavens and earth weep!"

For no reason, Luo Zhu suddenly thought of that sentence and blurted it out loud.

Under the turbulent waves, the severed water dragon was washed ashore. Streams of golden red blood flowed continuously, revealing the pale colour of his flesh.

Bai Guan was literally almost bled dry.

"Nooo!"

Bai Guan's face was ashen as he stammered, "As Qi Lake Water God, I have led ten thousands of water dwellers, why have I fallen into such depths of despair!"

"Although you have never gone against the heavens, you have forsaken your morals for your own benefits!"

The horned dragon emerged from the waters and transformed into a young man donned in a robe. He sighed and continued, "When you killed the previous Water God, have you not thought about how he was so close to transforming into a dragon? Although he was a green snake, his ancestors were true dragons and he was naturally protected by fate energy. After you killed him, you opened a can of worms for yourself. The loss of the Dragon Pearl and the tribulation this time both resulted from



that!"

Bai Guan was stunned at what Fang Yuan said. After a long while, he finally said, "Not bad! Indeed!"

He looked at Fang Yuan curiously, "No one else knew about the green dragon's Dragon Pearl, were you that black carp?"

"That's right, I am!"

"Haha... I guess karma always finds a way!"

Bai Guan laughed, with a shiver of his body, his breath stopped at once. A Yin spirit appeared with a divine light and escaped at the speed of light.

"At such a moment, you still do not understand the order of nature..."

Fang Yuan shook his head and sighed, he then pointed his finger.

A thunder sword essence emerged and caught up the escaping light immediately. Before it could say anything, it was annihilated into pieces.

"If you obediently handed over the imperial order, I might have even gifted you some true aura for you to reincarnate. But since you tried to deceive me with words and then seize the opportunity to escape with your elemental clone to stage a comeback next time, I did not hesitate to annihilate you!"

As long as such heavenly deities had a small amount of elemental clone left, there would be a chance for them to make a comeback.

For example, the Golden Court Dragon God also lost its dragon body in a tribulation, however, since many commoners believed in him and he received lots of offerings from them, he formed his golden body. The golden body was comparable to the dragon body and hence, it was a silver lining for him.

After Bai Guan's elemental clone dissipated, an imperial order was left behind. It was made of pure gold and had a slight green

glow from within. The runes were even hundred times more profound and mysterious than that of Luo Zhu's.

At that moment, the imperial order turned into a beam of light and went to Fang Yuan's hands.

"Eh?"

Fang Yuan kept it and pondered, "Since the past, the Water God position of such great rivers and great lakes had to be dragons. This was because dragons had the innate ability to control weather and were heavenly deities!"

"Thus, even if I gave the imperial order to Luo Zhu, with her cultivation and karma now, it might even harm her! Whereas, for me, it is suitable!"

He originally had some qualms about people dao's deities.

But now, he had a deeper understanding and his mindset had changed, especially towards the Qi Lake Water God's deity position, where it was formed from the natural order of the heavens and earth, which was very beneficial for a dream master's cultivation.

Furthermore, he was just at the horned dragon transformation. If things were to go awry, he could quickly escape.

"I will try being a Dragon God then!"

The golden green imperial order exploded and turned into an abundance of runes which seeped into Fang Yuan's body.

"Kaboom!"

Suddenly, a mighty aura descended as the winds and rain got stronger.

Fang Yuan solemnly emerged from the divine light, he was shiny and ripples of water shrouded his entire body. It could be discerned that he was linked to the entire Qi Lake's spiritual energy.

Luo Zhu was astonished at such a scene.

Last time, as Bai Guan was a white snake, it was still possible for her to harness Lotus Pond's spiritual energy.

But now, as Fang Yuan was a horned dragon, he was a Dragon God, and hence, she could not possibly resist his power.

On the lake, lots of fishes appeared to pay respects and worship him.

"I, Lotus Pond Water God, Luo Zhu, pay my respects to Dragon God!"

Seeing the dignified Fang Yuan, Luo Zhu immediately composed herself and greeted him.

"I now grant you the title of Lotus Pond Water God. You are now my aide!" Fang Yuan announced placidly.

Luo Zhu paused for a moment and felt the uneasy imperial order in her body had calmed down at once. She was elated, "Thank you, Dragon God!"

As Bai Guan was a water snake, even when he became a heavenly deity, he could only be called a Water God.

However, as Fang Yuan was a dragon, he was immediately called a Dragon God. His status had rose immediately.

"Follow me to the Dragon Palace!"

Fang Yuan turned into a horned dragon and swam to the Dragon Palace.

"Great to meet you, Dragon God!"

The demons were afraid of those who were powerful.

When all the water dwellers saw Fang Yuan's divine light and his might as a true dragon, they immediately paid their respects to him.

"I will retreat for three years, any matters in Qi Lake would be

handled by the tortoise guard and Luo Zhu. Unless as a last resort, do not disturb me!"

Inside the crystal-like Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan immediately designated a tortoise guard and passed down the command.

"Yes, Dragon God, I will obey your commands!"

None of the water dwellers dared to disobey him.

"Ok, all of you may leave now, I am sealing the Dragon Palace!"

Fang Yuan waved his arms coolly.

After Bai Guan obtained the imperial order, it took him ten plus years to forcefully cultivate it. As a Dragon God, Fang Yuan still required three years as Qi Lake was still considerably large.

# Chapter 310: Three Years

---

Time flew by in the Dragon Palace.

Three years passed in a blink of an eye.

In the palace hall, Fang Yuan sat on his throne and gradually opened his eyes, "I have finally fully cultivated the imperial order!"

The Qi Lake Water Dragon was a heavenly deity with control over the spiritual energy of the entire 150-mile radius of Qi Lake, a manifestation of its abilities.

Each and every rune and inscription on the imperial order were all sacred texts! It contained arcane and unpredictable powers, and were reflections of the laws that governed the realm.

By wielding knowledge of such laws, one could then possess great abilities and be able to harness the spiritual energy of the entire Qi Lake.

"Although it is just a position and not my own power, it is already very beneficial for my understanding of the laws."

Fang Yuan suddenly thought of the powers the royals held in Da Qian Empire.

Prominent Divine dream masters were naturally of no match to True Elemental spiritual knights and True Divine martial artists. However, if he had the blessing of the heavens in this realm as a dragon, he would be able to fight them.

In actual fact, this was also one of the uses of the imperial order in a larger extent.

Going against such kind of blessings was like opposing the realm it came from and its laws. With Da Qian Empire's natural source, even the Prominent Divine dream masters had to be fearful of such blessings.

"Perhaps..., the purpose of dream masters exploring other realms

was not only to search for the source! It was to occupy and control a realm powerful enough to fight with Da Qian?"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes, the situation of the entire Qi Lake appeared in his mind.

However, there were a few spots covered in mist. It meant that those areas were under the protection of powerful forces or arrays, and were most likely occupied by powerful demons. Thus, they appeared as eye-catching as fireflies in the night skies.

"I guess being able to understand the big picture from a look is part of my power as a heavenly deity?"

Fang Yuan flicked his fingers.

"Woonnggg!"

A force spread across the entire Dragon Palace and lit up the place. The seals used to seal the palace disappeared at once too.

Drums and bells rang as the doors opened to receive the worship of the commoners.

"Sir!"

The tortoise guard and Luo Zhu immediately rushed over and paid respects to Fang Yuan.

"Tortoise guard, bring over the shells ladies and the water dwellers' elite troops to fill the Dragon Palace! As the Dragon God, I will meet my people later! It has to be very dignified!"

Fang Yuan instructed in a majestic and imposing way while holding a jade ornament.

"Yes, Sir!"

The tortoise guard immediately proceeded to do what he was told.

"What's the situation now? What about the spirits?"

Fang Yuan turned and looked at Luo Zhu.

"After you killed the three demons, other spirits were naturally fearful of you! They have already prepared celebratory gifts for you as a sign of allegiance!"

Luo Zhu answered respectfully.

In reality, the moment Fang Yuan obtained the divine position, all these were expected.

Whereas, Luo Zhu did not pay close attention to the matters regarding the humans.

"Xu family's fate energy and mine are intertwined. In the past three years, I could still sense that they were growing well. They have been strengthening their territory till now, and I guess it's time for war..." Fang Yuan thought as his eyes sparkled.

It was the right timing for Xu Ting's troops to be dispatched.

He then calmly ordered, "After this homage, I will be hosting a feast for the officials and the powerful demons! Invite them over!"

"Yes, Sir!"

As the Qi Lake Water God, Fang Yuan's words were all mandates. Hence, they were all immediately obeyed and properly carried out.

As the lake housed numerous kinds of spirits, it made him realise a certain difference. "Oh..., even as the water dwellers in Qi Lake reproduce, there are very few demons. There are only around 20,000 demons, and more than half of them are my army..."

As Fang Yuan realised this, he understood something.

Beasts were beasts and demons were demons, they were two different things!

In this realm, although there were many different species of animals, plants and even water dwellers, those who could become spiritually aware and cultivate into demons were the extreme few.

Unless both parents were powerful demons, their offsprings would be born as beasts and had to slowly learn, even if they were

to have an innate disposition to be demons.

Due to their restricted population size, their foundation would not be as strong and thus, their position as rulers would naturally decline.

This was the heavenly trend and could not be changed!

Whereas for humans, just in one prefecture, there would be tens of thousands of them! Although most were stupid, they could be trained with basic combatant skills, and with a large enough foundation, the potential for cultivation would grow too.

Hence, humans were the rulers of all; They could grasp the heavenly fate energy and were favoured by the heavenly trend!

"Greetings, Dragon God! May you enjoy boundless longevity!"

At that moment, a group of servants and guards arrived and stood at attention.

Large numbers of water dwellers then came forward and worshipped the new Dragon God. They were slightly uneasy at the sight of the Dragon God.

The two previous Water God's of Qi Lake were both snake demons but this time, it was finally a dragon.

Also, the way the Dragon God killed the three demons made them fearful of him.

"As long as you all do not commit any offences under my rule, you all will enjoy a peaceful and happy life!"

Fang Yuan smiled, "Come, follow me to review the troops!"

Outside the Dragon Palace, 8,000 soldiers gathered. They had a hint of demonic energy and yet had some divine light too.

They were amassed by Bai Guan and his predecessor and maintained by the tortoise guard. With the 8,000 of them, it was beneficial for Fang Yuan.



As they felt the new Dragon God's might and divine light, the crustacean army did not hesitate to worship, "Greetings, Sir! I pledge my life to you!"

The tidy formation represented a strong force in the lake. Such a display made other powerful spirits' expressions change at once.

"All of you will be rewarded for your loyalty and protection of the Dragon Palace! Enjoy the feast!"

Fang Yuan appeared elated as he gave his instructions. He then gathered the officers to enter the Dragon Palace to enjoy the feast.

The melodious drums echoed around the palace.

During the feast, numerous servants joyously presented the delicacies and as they caroused, words of respect could be heard continuously.

Fang Yuan sat on his dragon throne with a golden cup in his hands while he smiled looking at the scene.

It was a lively celebration!

This was the Dragon God's enjoyment!

...

At Da Chu, although Wang Qiao had ascended the throne, none of the military occupied towns recognised him as the emperor, and hence, the regnal dating system of the previous emperor continued. It was now the 8th year of Yong An.

Inside Golden Lake Prefecture.

Xu Ting was just in his early twenties, but he already had a strong and vigorous appearance. He had also married his wife, who was a lady from a noble family. She was cultured and refined, a perfect match for him.

Furthermore, they had a son and a daughter.

Compared to his wife, Li Luan was still a titleless maid, which

also caused gossip to spread.

Xu Ting also had a moustache. He looked towards Li Luan and thought for a while but then stopped immediately.

The world was in chaos and there was no time for such relationships!

Xu Ting walked into the room and paid respects to Xu Ren, "Father!"

"Oh, my son has come over, have a seat!"

Xu Ren was very satisfied with this son of his.

"I have followed your orders and finished organizing the troops. They are currently separated into 10 battalions and each battalion has 3,000 soldiers. There are also 20,000 marines and one hundred warships!"

The five prefectures near Golden Court Lakes produced plenty of goods and were not prone to natural disasters. Thus, with slight organisation, their strength easily took shape.

"Hmm, in this three years, we have managed to train the troops and form close relationships with the officials. Now, our officers are already well trained and would be able to hold their own ground."

Xu Ren stroked his beard delightfully, "With such a large troop, we can win a war! Xu He, what do you think?"

A middle-aged man walked forward, he was an officer appointed by Xu Ren to be in charge of commerce. In actual fact, he was the leader of their spies. He paid respects to Xu Ren and Xu Ting, and then reported, "Sir! General! The fake king Wang Qiao was ambushed and killed at Luolong Hillside, and his army of 10,000 men has fallen apart!"

"What?"

The news was earth-shattering, Xu Ting immediately stood up in

shock at first, but the expression on his face turned into joy immediately, "Wang Qiao is dead? Heaven is really helping our family!"

Although the battle was very fierce, Wang Qiao still had an advantage as he had control of the imperial court and the imperial guards. In the past three years, he had already annihilated five military occupied towns. But now, just as he was about to fully succeed, he was met with a sudden death.

With his death, the imperial court had no leader, and with the opposition from the royalties of the original emperor, Wang Qiao's followers were bound to be completely purged.

The five remaining military occupied towns also suffered severe losses to their strength as many of their soldiers were heavily injured or dead. It was a total mess for them to recuperate, occupy more territories and attack the capital at the same time.

If this was not the perfect opportunity, then when would it be?!

"I can't believe it, Wang Qiao just died like that..."

As Xu Ting's biggest enemy and obstruction just died, it made him slightly worried, "Who was the one who planned it?"

Wang Qiao was so close to completing his grand plans but died suddenly. After Xu Ting's initial joy, he felt a chill down his spine as he sensed there was something sinister.

"Although the five military occupied towns proclaimed allegiance to each other, but in reality, the one in charge was still Xinfeng army's military governor, Baili Xuandu!"

"Xinfeng army, Baili Xuandu!"

As Xu Ting uttered his name, he knew he was his biggest foe.

"If I was Baili Xuandu, I would have immediately charged to the capital and forced the imperial court to hand me the title of the emperor!"

Xu Ting took a few steps, his eyes radiating with sharpness.

"That's a good guess, my son!"

Xu Ren sighed as he passed an intelligence report to Xu Ting.

After Xu Ting read through it, he realised Xinfeng army's movements were indeed as he predicted. Furthermore, they had received the backing of two other military occupied towns. It was an urgent matter, Xu Ting said, "This is not good, if our family still wants to rise to power, we have to use two methods! Firstly, I will quickly lead the troops along An River to Qi Lake and conquer all the prefectures along the way, thus, occupying half the country! Also, we have to send spies to the capitals to influence or divide them, as long as Baili Xuandu does not easily conquer the capital!"

"That's right!"

Xu Ren said, "Since you have the will, just do it! Three days later, we will dispatch the troop!"

"Yes, father!"

Xu Ting replied, and his voice was like a warcry.

Inside Golden Court Lake, a shadow emerged to gaze at the spiritual energy ashore and he sighed, "After three years, is it finally happening?"

The shadow was Golden Court Dragon God, he appeared puzzled and thought, "How did Wang Qiao just die like that? Demons must have interfered!"

# Chapter 311: Green Fish

---

Night fell.

The Golden Court Lake sparkled under the moonlight. There were only a few boats berthed ashore that had lamps still lit up.

There was no wind, however, a small boat was floating by itself on the lake. It was a unique sight.

On the boat, there was a gorgeous young lady clad in chiffon. However, her expression was cold as ice and she seemed different from normal people.

"Since I came over personally, why does the Dragon God not want to meet me?"

The lady let out a quiet sigh at an empty spot.

After a long pause, a voice could be heard from beneath the lake, "Divine Demon Queen, ruler of all demons on Da Chu's land, what brought you here personally?"

A shadow appeared underneath the lake. It was the Golden Court Dragon God. He then emerged from the waters and sat opposite the Divine Demon Queen.

"You really do not know? Or are you acting like you do not know...?"

The Divine Demon Queen's eyes reflected the lights from the moon and the nearby lamps. With a cold and emotionless voice, she continued, "The heavenly trend is like a sharp knife! Even if us demons ruled for centuries, we can only tread on eggshells now to stand a chance of survival! I have already sacrificed some of my favourite granddaughters, else, why would Da Chu be in chaos and why would Wang Qiao be dead?"

"Sigh..., the heavenly trend has long been hard to understand, why would you seek trouble? Although us demons are downfalling,

we can still survive in a faraway land in this vast world!"

The Golden Court Dragon God sighed.

"You have indeed become a people dao deity, you don't even any remaining fellowship as demons left!"

The Divine Demon Queen laughed, "Why must humans be the protagonists while us demons have to be at their mercy? Last time..., I saw you let the small carp go near Xu Ting, and I still thought you were being considerate for us demons. But now, after three years, I finally realised you all were befuddled by fate energy and willingly chose to forsake yourself!"

As they spoke, the Golden Court Dragon God's god dao golden body could not be concealed.

Furthermore, she knew each and every movement Xu family made.

However, either because she was apprehensive of the Dragon God's arrangements or she was too focused on Da Chu's capital, she did not do much about Xu Ting. But now, she was extremely disappointed at such.

Although Li Luan had abandoned her demon form and her cultivation to reincarnate into a human, she was still ignored by Xu Ting.

Hence, from that, it could be told that even if demons gave up their powers and compromised, their outcome would still be the same.

After all, different species had different goals in mind!

The Golden Court Dragon God remained silent. As they were both powerful demons and had supreme intelligence, they could understand each other without speaking.

Li Luan getting close to the dragon energy was actually part of the Golden Court Dragon God's probe too.

However, as Xu Ting married his wife and neglected Li Luan, he lost a lot of fate energy, especially those related to the demons.

"But this is the heavenly trend, what can I do about it?"

The Dragon God finally replied, "Even if Xu Ting were to fail miserably and die, another true hero would still rise amongst the humans! His strength might even be greater!"

"That is why I have already schemed! On one hand, I will create chaos, on the other hand, I will kill any potential heroes from emerging. Even though us demons are dwindling, we must make the humans' population dwindle too!"

The Divine Demon Queen indifferently added, "Both Wang Qiao and the previous emperor of Chu had great amounts of fate energy. Now that they are dead, their fate energy has dispersed! Thus, it will be harder to unite the countries and this would be very beneficial to us!"

"I guess you are determined to kill Xu Ting this time?"

The Golden Court Dragon God's eyes turned golden at once.

"The Golden Court Lake is my territory, if it was like the last time, I could still contend with you in my territory! But now, you are going against the heavenly trend and your elemental energy is greatly affected! How much strength would you even have left?"

"Of course I wouldn't strike this time!"

The Divine Demon Queen smiled, "Just that..., out of this Golden Court Lake, how long can you still protect the humans? For the sake of us demons, would you not interfere?"

"I am afraid I cannot obey you!"

After the Golden Court Dragon God answered, he then waved his hand, causing spiritual energy to gather, thus sealing the lake's surface.

"Ahh..., after knowing each other for hundreds of years, I can't

believe we have reached such a situation!"

Seeing how the Dragon God fell out, the Divine Demon Queen could only let out a sigh.

If it was her, she would have definitely made her move and seized such a good opportunity. Since he was already her enemy, she was no longer bound by their fellowship.

Under the heavenly will, one had to fight for every opportunity to survive!

"What a pity..."

The Divine Demon Queen suddenly grinned as she slowly disappeared into thin air.

"An illusion?"

The Golden Court Dragon God reached out to grab her, only to grab a handful of water.

"What an impressive Celestial Fox Technique!"

The Dragon God's expression turned solemn at once, "The demons are already determined to kill the water dragon! Xu Ting is in danger!"

...

An River.

Xu Ting was fully geared as he stood on the deck of an ironclad warship with an overpowering aura.

During this deployment, he sent a total of 50,000 soldiers. Out of the 50,000, 20,000 of them were marines. There was also 100 ships and countless of small vessels.

The vast troop travelled through An River with an imposing appearance.

The districts along the way were all terrified of Xu Ting's troops and they immediately surrendered. Xu Ting's force was



unstoppable.

"Sir!"

A daoist priest suddenly asked, "Since we are passing the An River Dragon God's area, should we host a ritual and provide some offerings?"

"An River Dragon God?"

Xu Ting thought for a moment and remembered, "This deity is vicious and bloodthirsty, why would I host a ritual for him? Am I foolish?"

"General!"

The priest was appalled, "The An River is the An River Dragon God's area, if we pass through his area without paying respects, we will be harassed!"

"Harassed?"

Xu Ting laughed and pointed at the warships, "I have ten thousands of soldiers, hundreds of warships and our troops are so strong! Do you think I am scared of a water dragon? Even if he comes to obstruct us, we will kill him! You think my military law is a joke?"

Although he replied stately, there was something different in his laughter.

It was because he was not the one who came up with this idea. He was reminded by what daoist Qing Xuan and some other daoists recommended.

People dao were strong and self-reliant, they did not have to rely on deities! Furthermore, deities absorbed their fate energy and were detrimental to their progress!

Xu Ting then further added, "Besides, don't I have the help from all you daoists?"

"Sir, not to worry!"

The daoist priest's face turned ashen while Kong Luo suddenly replied, "With us, you will be fully protected!"

"With you and other daoists from Xuan Zhen Sect, there's nothing I am afraid of!"

Xu Ting chortled; he had left out the daoist who questioned him at the start.

That daoist's expression turned even worse as Kong Luo could only glance at him with pity.

Kong Luo understood Xu Ting's temperament, he knew this daoist would be shunned and if he was not cautious with his manners again, he would definitely be killed.

"One less competing daoist!" Kong Luo thought.

Kong Luo then sighed as he turned to look at Qing Xuan.

Daoist Qing Xuan worked hard for three years and was gradually favoured again. After all, this was because Xuan Zhen Sect was a powerful and extensive sect, and thus, there were many areas daoist Qing Xuan could help out in.

However, not only did these daoist from Xuan Zhen Sect marginalised others, they were ardently against deities too. This made Kong Luo bewildered.

Suddenly, the crisp noise of a sword rang from his dantian.

"Eh? There's demonic energy spying on us?"

Kong Luo raised his eyebrows and strode to the side of the ship. With a wave of his hand, a few green sword essences plunged into the waters.

"Glub! Glub!"

Streams of bubbles and blood rose to the surface.

The carcasses of a few water guardians and spirits floated to the top.

"Eh, just a few water guardians... not to bother, continue forward!" Xu Ting instructed.

Xu family rose from purging evil gods and their temples, thus, Xu Ting held no regards for the Water God.

The warships ran over the carcasses with no qualms.

...

"Dead, dead, dead..."

Kong Luo did not realise that his sword essence had missed out a fish!

A large green fish had dodged the sword essence by luck. He was utterly astonished and terrified when he saw his companions' carcasses, he then immediately swam for his life and arrived at a water palace.

"Stop! How dare you trespass the Dragon Palace!"

In front of the colossal doors, the two rows of crustacean army immediately hollered.

One of them, named Prawn Thirteen, curiously asked, "Eh? Aren't you the big green fish under the patrolling water guardian? Where's your general? Do you have anything urgent to report?"

"Dead, dead, dead..."

The big green fish swam around frantically, his spiritual will was in chaos.

"What... this fish is so dense, how could he become a soldier? What an embarrassment to us and the Dragon God!"

A crab general at the side sneered immediately.

"General, please pardon him, although this big green fish seems dense, he is hardworking and he has cultivated really quickly..."

Prawn Thirteen went forward to pacify the big green fish. Finally, the big green fish managed to stammer a few words,

"Dead... dead... so many humans... so many ships! General... is dead..."

"What?"

The crustacean army was surprised and angered, "Who dares to kill the patrolling water guardian! How insolent! Just wait, I will report this to the Dragon God now!"

"No need!" the voice of a dragon resounded.

A middle-aged man donned in a black crown stepped out and behind him were a group of tortoise guards and shell ladies.

"I know everything that's happening in the river, this Xu Ting, hehe..."

Although he had a human-like appearance, there was a black horn on his head. As he sniggered, his mighty aura spread across the area, causing the crustacean army to immediately kneel on the ground and tremble in unease.

"Dead, dead, dead..."

The big green fish was terrified too, however, he quickly swam away and started swimming in circles.

"This fish..."

The An River Dragon God was surprised at such too, "Although he is unintelligent, his loyalty and bravery are commendable!"

The Dragon God pointed his finger and a beam of golden light landed on the big green fish's body.

The big green fish stumbled on the ground and transformed into a strong man. He had green clothes on his body, thick brows, large eyes and an honest looking appearance.

The nearby soldiers were envious of him.

The Dragon God's transformation technique was naturally different from that of water guardian.

Normal transformation techniques merely gave life, the demons formed were disabled and their spiritual awareness was incapacitated.

Whereas the Dragon God's transformation techniques had no repercussion, instead, it increased their intelligence and their bodies would not be deformed. It was a benevolent gift bestowed by the Dragon God.

# Chapter 312: Black Water Dragon

---

An Dragon Prefecture.

This was a huge prefecture surrounding the An River. The magistrate was long influenced and at the sight of the arrival of a huge navy, he paid his respects and provided a campsite for the naval forces to occupy.

Outside the campsite, two persons emerged as ripples formed on the surface of the lake. It was Fang Yuan and the Golden Court Dragon God.

"What do you think about this, Dragon God?"

Fang Yuan had good eyesight and enquired as soon as he noticed the huge naval troops.

"It is fate from the heavens that we dragons do not associate ourselves with the demons. What can we do?"

Hearing him, the Golden Court Dragon God let out a bitter laugh.

In reality, although the An River Dragon God was powerful, both of them did not take him as a threat.

The unpredictable nature of the people dao was more dangerous.

"This must be the doings of Xuan Zhen Sect... the hidden dragon deserves this tribulation!"

Fang Yuan looked ahead and spoke calmly.

"Eh? Are you not afraid that we will get nothing out of it the moment the hidden dragon dies?"

The Golden Court Dragon God was confused. In terms of investment, this young god had invested more in Xu Ting than himself.

"This is just another battle. Even if we lose, we will at most lose some karma points. I can still return to Qi Lake and cultivate in

seclusion... We are gods!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glittered. "Brother Dragon God, don't get yourself manipulated by the people dao's fate and become a pawn!"

Although he had set his sights on the dragon energy, he was ready to give it up and had the determination to do so!

Only with such a mindset would he be able to be unmoved and make sound judgements.

"Ah..."

The Dragon God shook as he felt a chill down his spine. He quickly bowed towards Fang Yuan. "I've made a fool of myself. Thank you for your advice..."

With another laugh, he added. "Who would've known that fate energy would be so powerful! I've only gotten myself slightly involved in it and have almost become trapped in it..."

"To us, it is simply a matter if we notice the problem, that's all!"

Fang Yuan smiled. "As for the other weaker demons, as long as they get themselves involved, they would reach a point of no return. Look at Li Luan... Why, are you intending to help Xu Ting in this?"

"Forget it!"

The Golden Court Dragon God regained his composure. "You're right, he deserves this retribution!"

After all, he was once a demon and now, he was a god. Regardless, he was never a human!

As he came to his realisation and shook off the influence of fate energy, he could quickly regain his composure and calm self.

"Hmm, we have swum the entire river. Almost half of the An River is within the An River Dragon God's control. However, if we combine forces, the An River Dragon God will not be able to defend against us. The true enemy would be the Divine Demon Queen

which you have previously mentioned..."

Fang Yuan took a quick glance around and laughed. "It has begun!"

Amidst the strong current, weird-looking heads popped out from the surface of the river. They were the various species of water dwellers and there were thousands of them.

There was silence everywhere as they made their way towards the big ships.

Of course, with the presence of two Dragon Gods, a small technique was all that was needed to shroud the spiritual sense of the weaker demons, making them unable to detect the Dragon Gods' presence.

...

Although they were in the campsite, guards were still required to look over the ships.

The river was choppy and the cabins on the ships were stuffy. Therefore, it was not an easy job and therefore, the guards were rotated based on their shifts and were rewarded with more food and wine. Of course, those on duty were not allowed to drink but they could keep it for consumption after they had completed their guard duties.

"Based on my combat prowess, who would dare to attack us in this area?"

A sailor walked on the deck and complained to his fellow sailor. "Why do we have to do this?"

"Old Xue, if you were smart enough, you would have been a Lieutenant long ago!"

Most of these sailors were pirates previously and had grudges. Even though they were ruled with fear by Xu Ting, they were secretly unhappy with the higher-ups.



"What are you doing? Go for your rounds!"

As they were laughing and joking around, an officer came out of his cabin with a stern look. "Whoever makes any more noise would be punished to scrub the decks tomorrow!"

"Hehe... Don't be angry, we won't dare to slack!"

The few sailors chuckled as they walked towards the edge of the deck.

"Sigh..... Although these sailors are courageous, it is still a headache to discipline them!"

Witnessing this scene, the officer let out a sigh.

The moonlight illuminated the deck, giving it a touching glow. Unknowingly, the officer took a few steps forward. "What a bright moonlight... The moon is the same everywhere. Sigh... I wonder how is Xing'er doing?"

As he was deep in his thoughts, from the corner of his eye, he could see a glitter.

'What's that?'

He was about to say something, but it was a pity he could not begin to speak.

"Whoosh!"

A spear flew from mid-air and pierced through his chest. It had a reverse hook on its tip and with a tug, the young officer flipped overboard, causing a huge splash.

After a few moments, a deep red hue appeared, dyeing the river red.

"Lieutenant sir?"

The few sailors were in shock. They rushed to the railings and with a few ropes, they tied themselves securely and lowered themselves down.

Beneath them, many figures appeared. They were all in shock as they screamed. "Water ghosts! Water ghosts!"

"Splash!"

Rows of crustacean army floated up and climbed onto the decks as they started a killing spree.

Outside the campsite, the river was pitch black. A huge wave appeared and a whirlwind formed, which was a miraculous sight resembling a dragon spitting out water.

"Kill!"

"Kill all these humans!"

"The Dragon God has given an order! We cannot let a single one live, and we need to destroy their ships!"

A few crustacean generals smiled ferociously and as they stood before their army, the moonlight reflected off their shiny shells, revealing a mysterious shine.

"How dare you demons infiltrate my ships!"

The general on duty hollered. "Kill them all!"

With the wave of his hands, a few highly-skilled soldiers appeared. All of them appeared mighty and they were all clad in armour. They wielded Hundred Casted Longknives and with two swipes, a crustacean soldier was beheaded as his head rolled on the deck.

"Alright... Let's not fear them. They are merely beasts with weird appearances equipped with a layer of armour!"

The Naval Officer screamed. "Defend the ship with all your might... don't forget to send someone to inform General Xu Ting about it!"

"Dong! Dong!"

At this point in time, there was a mysterious tremor coming from

beneath the deck.

"That's not good... Sir, they're taking the ship apart!"

Seeing this, the Assistant General's expression changed.

The Naval Officer had a similar expression as well.

They were already helpless against the crustacean army on the decks. If the ship was destroyed, what would happen if they were to fall into the river, where the enemy would have the geographical advantage?

"As the officer on duty, I must die with the ship!"

With a ferocious look, he plucked his sword out. "Kill! Kill all these freaks!"

...

"What's happening?"

The commotion at the pier was big enough that those on land were aware of what was happening.

After all, Xu Ting had fate energy. Even though the magistrate offered him a banquet, he was determined to rest within the campsite.

As soon as he fell asleep, he was abruptly woken up. After getting dressed, he saw 10 over daoist priest rushing over. Kong Luo was leading them.

"General!"

Kong Luo greeted Xu Ting. "The An River Dragon God is frenzied! He has sent his crustacean army to attack ours!"

At this point in time, cries were heard from the ship and there were flames burning brilliantly on the deck.

As the warship was taken apart, it slowly sank. All of these happenings angered Xu Ting. "Daoist Qing Xuan! Kong Luo! What are the both of you doing? Get there and make the demons

retreat!!!"

After all, he had risen through the ranks due to the navy. Since they did not fight back, Xu Ting was enraged.

"How is this possible?"

Qing Xuan could not believe his eyes as well. "Has the An River God gone crazy? All the soldiers from his crustacean army came from the past hundred years of training. Why would he deploy all of them here? Is he not worried that the demons in An River might stage a rebellion?"

The uprising of the people dao meant that such an attack would be detrimental to the demons.

At least, they would increase the chances and intensity of their tribulations in the future.

Strictly speaking, most of the water dwellers who attacked the ship were mostly injured and it was a huge price to pay.

However, this thought only lasted for a while before going away.

"Since the demons are undergoing tribulations, they must have come to an agreement. The water demons must have talked to the demons on land about this before the Dragon God would decide to take such a risky move!"

Daoist Qing Xuan broke into cold sweat and knew that they were in a very dangerous predicament.

Because of Xu Ting's stubbornness, they had disrespected the An River Dragon God and caused all the troubles that had just happened. He might just have to shoulder all the responsibilities for the day's happenings.

All the fighting had reached a climax as soon as they realised a tornado brewing outside the campsite. "Everything's over!"

"Over!"

Xu Ting was in a daze and did not move a single muscle. It was as

though someone had removed his spine.

If the tornado were to enter the campsite, his efforts for the past three years would go down the drain.

"Indeed an evil dragon. Once angered, it would not care about the consequences to come!"

Outside the havoc, Fang Yuan and the Golden Court Dragon God witnessed the scene and heaved. "If the An River Dragon God were to accomplish what he had set out to do, it would be certain that the next tribulation would take his life!"

"Although the hidden dragon would be met with troubles, it should not encounter such a huge tribulation... After all, it is where the dragon energy is concentrated in the people dao..."

Seeing this scene, the Golden Court Dragon God felt that he should not allow Xu Ting's navy to be destroyed. "How about we help him out?"

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and both of them took a step forward. They transformed into dragons and circled above the campsite.

"Roar! Roar!"

The Golden Court Dragon God only had the illusionary shape of a dragon, but had no physical body; On the other hand, Fang Yuan's dragon body had physical flesh. As they released their dragon's might, the reckless water dwellers shook in fear and became weaker. Those humans who were quicker took the opportunity to escape. Those who were slower merely became a bloodied mess.

"How dare the both of you stop me!"

Amidst the tornado, a black water dragon appeared. Swinging its claws about, it had a ferocious look and there was a red glow in its eyes.

"What an evil water dragon!"

Fang Yuan sighed as soon as he saw it.

Horned Dragons were merely young dragons with the body resembling a snake and a horn on its head.

Water Dragons, on the other hand, had horns and dragon claws as well.

Previously, Bai Guan attempted to transform into a dragon and had 2 dragon claws. However, this black water dragon was a Dragon God for many years and had already grown 4 dragon claws! It was only a step away from becoming a true dragon!

# Chapter 313: Slaying the Dragon

---

"Whooo!"

As the tornado ensued, the winds raged on. Suddenly, a flagstaff broke and the flag was blown up into the air.

In the epicentre of the tornado, a black water dragon was glaring at a horned dragon and a golden dragon on the opposite side.

"This is..."

"Thank you for your blessings, Dragon God!"

Beneath, the leftover sailors, regardless of their rank, were all kneeling down and worshipping the dragons.

"Where did these dragon gods come from?"

Xu Ting witnessed the scene before him, as he clenched his fists, tensed.

"It seems that one of them is the Golden Court Dragon God. I don't seem to recognise the other one, but he seems as powerful!"

Spiritual light spilt out of Kong Luo's eyes as he shook his head. "It is your fate that you have the protection from these two dragon gods!" He congratulated Xu Ting.

"It's too early to conclude! Go forth and assist the naval officers to slay the demons!"

Xu Ting laid out a few other commands. "Also... As for these two dragon gods, remember to give them offerings in the future to show our gratitude..."

He had to put up a show!

At this point in time, the destructive tornado was still out there!

After all, he had already completely forgotten about the Xuan Zhen Sect's involvement with demons.

"Yes Sir!"

10 over daoist acknowledged the order, arrived on the ship and executed their spiritual techniques.

"Spring Returning Spell!"

"Fire from the Heavenly Order, strike!"

"Watch out for my sword, you beast!"

...

With the continuous spiritual spells and sword radiance, Kong Luo leapt around with a lethal green-coloured sword essence around him. Although his strikes were powerful, there was no joy on his face.

He was clear that they were mere distractions; the only ones who would be able to influence the outcome of the battle were the dragon gods.

"The two of you... are traitors! You bring shame to us demons!"

The black water dragon roared. "I am the An River Water God! The spiritual energy of the An River, hear my command, gather!"

A mysterious glow appeared on the black water dragon's body as the winds started to pick up. A huge illusionary shadow of a river appeared behind him, blessing him with unparalleled power.

The advantage goes to whoever was on their home ground!

"Indeed a righteous god! What a pity... you're a tyrant!"

Fang Yuan shook his head and glanced at the Golden Court Dragon God. "Let's do it!"

"Listen to my command, the spiritual energy shall disperse!"

At that moment, two mysterious glows appeared on their backs as well, revealing the imagery of a vast lake. With a roar, the An River became affected and the spiritual energy quickly dispersed.

"It's the Qi Lake Dragon God and the Golden Court Lake Dragon God!"



These two lakes were neighbouring the An River and could affect it greatly. Therefore, as the two dragon gods of the lakes combined their forces, the spiritual energy of the An River was mostly dissipated!

The greatest power a god could ever have was stripped off him in an instant.

Furthermore, under the pressure from both lakes, the illusionary shadow of the An River started to shrink. Finally, it could no longer hold on under the pressure. A black fog appeared and in it the hue of blood and an inauspicious omen.

After the closer look, many restless souls were seen within the black fog. These restless souls came from the live offerings given to the An River as well as the humans being killed by this attack. All of them were dressed in white robes and had blood oozing out of their eyes.

As the An River Dragon God, he had to bear the responsibility if the gods under him were to partake in unethical acts like accepting live offerings.

The restless souls accumulated over all these years had amounted to a scarily huge number. Being released all at once and the fact that the An River Dragon God had to deal with the other two dragon gods as well, he was being cornered with nowhere to go.

"Karma will always come back at the right time!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan mumbled to himself as he gained a new level of understanding for the realm.

"If you follow the heavenly trend, things would be easier!"

The Golden Court Dragon God sighed and took a step forward. He stretched both his palms out. "Disperse!"

"Whooooo!"

A strong gust of wind started to oppose the tornado, weakening

it.

As the people on the ground witnessed the fight, they were all shocked and surprised. A huge calamity like this was so simply put out by the gods.

"Ahh... You two, remember what you've done!"

There were bloody flames burning on the black water dragon's body. As he roared in pain, he released a glow from his scales in an attempt to fight the flames as he tried to escape.

With such a golden opportunity, how would Fang Yuan let it go to waste? "Thunder Sword! Strike!"

"Rumble!"

Thunder roared in the skies and a bolt of lightning struck across. Immediately, it blocked the path of the escaping black water dragon. "Water and Fire are heartless, and the Thunder Sword shall act as the heavenly tribulation. 3 Talents Sword Array, rise!"

"Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!"

3 streaks of swords struck towards the skies from the ground. Icy, fiery and electrifying, they exploded in a split second.

"Young god... What an impressive move!"

Seeing this scene, the Golden Court Dragon God's eyelid started to twitch. If he was the one being trapped by the sword array, he had no confidence in escaping as well.

"Although this array is powerful, it is still not powerful enough to kill a dragon god!"

Fang Yuan appeared calm. "Golden Court Dragon God, please restrict it with your imperial order for me to deliver the final blow!"

"Alright!"

"Bang!"

In the next moment, the 3 Talents Sword Array exploded, revealing a heavily wounded and charred black water dragon.

"Restrict!"

The Golden Court Dragon God appeared solemn. With both his hands, he pressed downwards and immediately, a colourful imagery of believers giving their offerings appeared behind his back. In a split second, the imagery turned into a golden wheel.

This was the Golden Wheel of Offerings, and it had the power of tens of thousands of believers in it.

In terms of people dao, the black water dragon only had heaps of grievances compared to the Golden Wheel of Offerings.

As the Golden Wheel of Offerings slowly pressed downwards against the black water dragon, the black water dragon let out a shriek. The imperial order from within its body appeared; it was golden with a hue of green. On it, there was a spinning glow. As the runes shook, it felt as though something big was about to happen.

This was how easy it would be when going with the heavenly trend.

"Alright!"

The horned dragon shook and took on the form of a human.

With a finger, Fang Yuan directed his 3 magical swords to combine into a single entity, forming a gigantic sword radiance.

In mid-air, it was as though a huge sword had appeared.

The huge sword had an icy body, but there were flames and streaks of electricity on its surface. It felt as though it was worthy of providing a heavenly tribulation.

"Slice!"

Fang Yuan held the sword in his hands and sliced down at the black water dragon.

"Whoosh!"

As a huge glow appeared, the heavens and the earth came together in an instant. Dark clouds formed above and a storm broke out.

As blood spewed everywhere, a water dragon's head rolled onto the floor and landed directly in front of Xu Ting with its eyes opened wide!

"With a single slice, the water dragon is killed!"

Kong Luo stared into blank space and his face was pale.

He realised that this dragon god's cultivation in sword skills was a thousand folds more than his! The dragon god was at a whole new level!

Xu Ting was more shocked than Kong Luo.

"Is that... The Black Dragon General?!"

Looking at his human form, he could recognise Fang Yuan's youthful look.

The only difference was that previously, he was in plainclothes but now, he was decked in a royal outfit and had a majestic look. After delivering the killer blow, he seemed even more powerful than before.

Everything that had just happened made him feel as though he was in a dream.

"Didn't Father mention that he was a black snake, a water god? How did he become a dragon god so quickly?"

Of course, the gigantic water dragon's severed head, the rain of blood and fight made him realise that everything was real, including Fang Yuan's power.

Without thinking, Xu Ting quickly paid his respects. "I am Xu Ting from the Golden Court Prefecture. Thank you dragon gods for your assistance!"

Golden Court Dragon God did not care about Xu Ting.

He was entirely focused on restraining the An River imperial order.

The An River Dragon God was as powerful as him. If not for Fang Yuan's assistance and the fact that they could make use of their geographical advantage, the Golden Court Dragon God had no chance of subduing the An River Dragon God.

The An River imperial order shimmered as though it was unwilling to be restrained. However, as soon as it detected the karma and traces of people dao from the Golden Court Dragon God, it slowly calmed down.

"Thank you, brother!"

With the imperial order, Golden Court Dragon God was elated as he gave his thanks to Fang Yuan.

Although the Golden Court Dragon God had no clue how long it would take for him to absorb this imperial order, he knew that if he could do it, his power would increase by folds.

It was no small matter to be able to increase his power by such a margin.

"This was our agreement, so you're most welcome!"

As he replied, his hands worked as he kept the corpse of the black water dragon.

Seeing this, the Golden Court Dragon God was stunned but did not comment.

Since he had already taken the imperial order for himself, he was in no position to comment if Fang Yuan were to take the corpse. Even if Fang Yuan wanted to loot the entire An River Dragon Palace, he would still allow for it.

"Both dragon gods!"

At this point in time, they finally took notice of the ants beneath

them.

Kong Luo and a few other daoist were heard. "Our general is eternally grateful for your assistance. He would prepare a banquet and wants to invite both of you to join in!"

"Alright, let's take a look!"

Fang Yuan exchanged glances with the Golden Court Dragon God and both of them laughed.

Other than the An River Dragon God, there were no other gods worthy of posing a threat to them in the entire Da Chu. This called for a celebration.

In reality, the demons had miscalculated. If there was only a Golden Court Dragon God backing Xu Ting, the An River demons would still be able to kill Xu Ting.

They had no idea that Fang Yuan would get himself involved and destroy the black water dragon to turn the tables!

With a wrong move, the entire fight was lost.

At this point in time, even if the Divine Demon Queen were to leave her stronghold and come for the both of them, both dragon gods had nothing to fear.

It was a night of celebration.

On the second day, Xu Ting sent both dragon gods off and immediately called his subordinates together for a meeting.

"Reporting! Yesterday, we lost 20 ships, 2,000 Naval Officers and 1,000 other men... We have 17 officers of Lieutenant rank and above found dead!"

A Naval Officer stood out and reported the numbers.

They had incurred losses even before the war. However, considering that they did not lose their entire army, this outcome was still acceptable.

Xu Ting was pale. "The remaining arrangements shall be made by this provincial military commander. Also, I think that... We should build temples for the Qi Lake Dragon God and Golden Court Lake Dragon God in all prefectures!"

"Yes, Sir!"

Kong Luo took a step out and glanced at the few daoist from Xuan Zhen Sect.

"General, I am willing to fork out 1,000 taels of gold and 1,000 catties of ration to assist the army!"

Qing Xuan's face twitched and had no choice but to report.

"Mmm, I shall accept your generosity!"

Xu Ting replied in an official tone. That feeling of animosity shook Qing Xuan, and he could do nothing but let out a bitter smile.

He knew that considering all that his sect had done to fight the demons and gods in the past, it was now hard to salvage the situation.

"Furthermore..."

After all the other subordinates were dismissed, Kong Luo was requested to stay behind.

The young general had a look of uncertainty on his face. "Secretly send some of our guys to the Golden Lake Prefecture... Fetch Lady Li Luan here!"

After all that had happened last night, Xu Ting had figured out that this woman represented a portion of fate energy of the demons. He had to accept and marry her.

"Yes, Sir!"

Kong Luo agreed, and his heart shook.

After many years of cultivation, he also knew about the heavenly

trend.

The downfall of demons and uprising of humans had to be accepted.

Xu Ting had a weak foundation. It would be beneficial for him if he could absorb the fate energy of the demons.



# Chapter 314: Surrounding the Capital

---

"My Lord!"

Li Luan had a pale look. As soon as she entered the room, she saw Xu Ting and softly exclaimed.

"Mmm..."

Xu Ting acknowledged, but his mind was complicated.

After all, their feelings for each other were real when they were younger. However, since they were not suited for each other and coupled with the fact that the daoist priests from Xuan Zhen Sect had repeatedly warned him about Li Luan, he had neglected her for the past few years.

However, hope was not lost.

Immediately, he walked towards her and spoke in a soothing voice. "It has been hard on you for the past few years. I have already written a letter to my father, informing him of my intention to marry you after the war is over..."

"Thank you, my Lord!"

This was a dream come true for her. However, Li Luan was confused as she felt a chill down her spine.

Although the man standing before her was the same man whom she had given the dragon pearl to, it felt as though he was worn out.

Of course, on the surface, she did not display her thoughts on her face. Even Xu Ting could not know what she was thinking and therefore did not suspect anything.

"Very well, you have an old friend that wants to see you. I shall not hold you further!"

Xu Ting waved his hands.

Confused, Li Luan walked out. Following the servants, she arrived at a backyard.

At the pond, there was a small pavilion. In the pavilion, there was a huge green fish jumping about, and it seems as though the fish had a demonic trait.

Of course, what had surprised her was not the green fish, but the person playing with the fish.

"You're here?"

Fang Yuan turned around and smiled.

"You..."

Of course, Li Luan could recognise Fang Yuan. However, the young man gave off a very different vibe compared to last time.

He not only had the vibes of a majestic dragon, he had a powerful spiritual aura. Uncontrollably, tears welled up in Li Luan's eyes. "Is this... the Qi Lake Water God?"

"That's right! I have killed the 3 demons in the Qi Lake and inherited the appointment as Water God!"

Fang Yuan admitted to his doings without hiding anything. With the wave of his hands, the green fish rolled onto the floor and transformed into a well-built man in green robes.

"Come to think of it, the 3 of us had gathered on Xu Ren's ship in the middle of An River. Everything is still the same, but we have all changed. Interesting..."

As he calmly spoke, mysterious dragon vibes were felt from his body. Li Luan could detect that Fang Yuan was now more powerful than her own father was when he was alive as the Qi Lake Water God.

"Also... The An River Dragon God had obstructed the navy and was therefore killed by the Golden Court Dragon God and I. Therefore, the tribulation on you has been reduced!"

Fang Yuan revealed some news.

Li Luan was originally the daughter of the Qi Lake Water God and had bad blood with Bai Guan. In order to take her revenge, she had willingly served under the An River Dragon God and had endured humiliation in order to steal a pearl from the water dragon.

However, she was blinded by fate energy and made a rash decision to gift the pearl to Xu Ting.

Therefore, it was not inexplicable that the An River Dragon God had attacked Xu Ting; both parties were unaware that they were already linked by the pearl.

"Thank you, Dragon God!"

Li Luan could not hold her tears back as she paid her respects to Fang Yuan. "Thank you Dragon God for avenging my father on my behalf and severing my ties with the dragon pearl. I shall swear from today onwards to cut off all ties with Qi Lake, and that shall apply to my family for generations to come!"

"Very good! I like smart people! Alright, that's all!"

Fang Yuan smiled and nodded his head.

The previous Qi Lake Water God was that big green snake with little karma. Therefore, the chances that his future generations could rise up to power once more was slim.

Therefore, Fang Yuan took precautions to ensure that he would not use up his fate energy in all that had happened.

Of course, Li Luan was only a small part of his plan. The crux had yet to unfold.

After dismissing Li Luan, he looked at the huge green fish. "Hey... Little Green, do you remember me?"

"That year... on that ship... black snake... d\*mn it!"

Although the huge green fish was dense, it had a good memory and could recall what had happened many years ago.

"Mmm... The 3 of us are fated, but not just by how we met before!"

Fang Yuan continued after heaving a sigh. "The previous Qi Lake Water God had little karma. Although he died in the tribulation, he had a chance of revival. Unknowingly, even after meeting each other face to face, the father and his daughter no longer recognise each other. What a pity."

After absorbing an entire imperial order, Fang Yuan's body was extremely sensitive. Together with his spiritual sense as a dream master, there was no way he could guess wrong.

This green fish was the reincarnation of the previous Qi Lake Water God! In other words, his soul was now possessing this green fish's body!

Of course, the power of being a god was already transferred to Fang Yuan. Even if he were to regain all his memories of his past life or even restore his cultivation, there was nothing he could do. Regardless, he would still be trouble.

Also, Fang Yuan had taken the dragon pearl which he had prepared as a backup as well. This was how the both of them were related.

"You, get over here!"

Thinking about this, he hesitated no more and called for the fish.

"You're... calling for me?"

The well-built man in green robes hesitated before walking towards Fang Yuan.

"Very good!"

Fang Yuan flipped his palm, revealing 9 drops of dark-red blood. In the blood, there was a hint of gold with a dragon's might.

After disintegrating the water dragon's corpse, all that was left was this dragon's property and the blood of a water dragon.

"Take it!"

He smiled and executed a technique as he pressed the dragon's blood on the forehead of the well-built man.

"Whoosh!"

The 9 drops of blood combined to form the shape of a small water dragon before flying into his forehead.

"Bang!"

The well-built man's eyes turned white as he fainted and fell to the ground.

"I have obtained the dragon pearl and imperial order based on my own merits and have nothing to do with you. Today, I shall trade this dragon's property and dragon's blood to cut off all ties with you! We no longer owe each other anything!"

Seeing the unconscious well-built man, Fang Yuan mumbled to himself.

In reality, this was not only severing ties with him but a plan for something greater.

Once this huge green fish obtained the dragon's blood and dragon's property, it would be able to cultivate at an increased speed and there was hope for it to transform into a dragon in the future. This was how Fang Yuan wanted to end things. If the green fish were to regain its memory of its past life and plot against Fang Yuan for the position of Qi Lake Water God, then Fang Yuan would have no choice but to kill it!

As for the greater plan, it was a plan against the Golden Court Dragon God.

Although he had established a good relationship with the Golden Court Dragon God, Fang Yuan would not trust him entirely and would prefer to guard against him nevertheless.

Now that the Golden Court Dragon God had both the An River

and the Golden Court Lake, he might get greedy and set his sights on Qi Lake!

By then, Li Luan, this green fish and other related water dwellers would become the Golden Court Dragon God's pawn; the chances that this green fish would be manipulated by the dragon god was the highest.

But now, the green fish would be considered related to the Qi Lake Water God as well as the water dwellers in An River for it had absorbed the blood of the An River Dragon God. Therefore, it would be considered related to the An River Dragon God as well!

If the Golden Court Dragon God were to remain unaware of this relationship and continue to manipulate the green fish... the Golden Court Dragon God might lead himself to his own downfall.

Of course, this was only a plan and none of it had happened.

At this point in time, the well-built man on the floor transformed back into a green fish. However, now, its scales had a black pattern. This was the power of the water dragon's blood! Even if Fang Yuan were to personally help the green fish in absorbing the blood, the green fish would still ultimately change its personality and traits due to the dragon's blood.

'This is how the plot will twist. If you become a black fish, you would instead become more acquainted with the An River...'

Fang Yuan's eyes glittered. As he walked to the riverbank, he released the half-green and half-black fish with a smirk on his face.

This was controlling one's fate and riding on the heavenly trend to plan for the future!

...

At the same time, in the royal capital of Da Chu.

The Xinfeng Army's military governor, Baili Xuandu, had led an army of 60,000 to start attacking the city.

He was 30 years old and started out as a small corporal. After rendering his meritorious service, he had gained the admiration of the more experienced military governors and was therefore promoted. They had even betrothed their daughters to him.

This time, 10 military governors came together to fight against Wang Qiao. The most experienced of the military governors died on the battlefield. Baili Xuandu was tasked to assassinate Wang Qiao. As he was successful, he had gotten his revenge and had gained the support of two towns. With his 10,000-strong army, he had surrounded the royal capital and the morale was high.

"Da Chu had no more troops. Against my 60,000-strong army, I believe I can force the Imperial Court to surrender and become the emperor!"

Baili Xuandu's eyes were burning with passion. Seeing the royal family standing atop the city walls, he ordered the machinery to advance. The three generals shouted once more as they did a last-ditch attempt to convince the Imperial Court to surrender.

"Empress Dowager?"

On the city walls, many officials glanced at the young Empress Dowager as they remained silent.

"Hey... After taking care of all of you for the past hundred years, do you guys really want to come together to force us to a corner?"

The Empress Dowager snickered.

Although she was fuming mad, she was still a beauty, which made many of the younger ministers' hearts sway.

'We have been ordered to defend this place with our lives. Baili Xuandu is here for the dragon energy. I must not let him have Da Chu and have his way!'

The young Empress Dowager hugged the young King and thought to herself.

She was originally a demon. After becoming Wang Qiao's mistress, she had hidden from the public. After the arrival of the young king, Wang Qiao had given her an official title. Because of her baby, she was promoted and from then onwards, she had become the Empress Dowager, the true owner of the palace.

Now that she had displayed her anger, the ministers knelt down in unison. "We don't dare!"

"Since you don't dare to disobey, what are you still doing? Protect the city! Wang Xu, I'll leave the city's defences to you!"

The Empress Dowager scanned her surroundings and picked a general. It was someone of the same ethnicity as Wang Qiao.

"Yes, Ma'am! We will obey your orders!"

This person had the control over Wang Qiao's remaining fighting force, which was rather powerful. Of course, most importantly, they would not surrender and would fight to their deaths.

This was because if Baili Xuandu were to enter the city, they would let off everyone except the ethnic people of Wang Qiao in the name of righteousness!

Wang Xu agreed and scanned his surroundings. With a killer look, the rest of them were motivated to defend.

"It seems that we still need to invade the city!"

Outside the city, Baili Xuandu took in a deep breath. "Pass down my command. Whoever reaches the top of the city walls first will be promoted 3 ranks and rewarded 1,000 taels!"

Even though the city walls were tall and hard to infiltrate, they could do so as long as they had the determination and courage!

"Kill!"

In history, those who ascended the city walls first would promote a rank or had an insignificant reward. Now that they would potentially promote 3 ranks, most of the soldiers were motivated



to try their best.

As the catapults swung rocks at the walls, arrows rained towards the walls. The army charged forward and at that moment, they had forgotten the risks of dying.

Beili Xuandu remained calm. He clenched his fists tightly. 'Even if they don't surrender, they would suffer from a high casualty rate. This is the perfect opportunity and I must make full use of it!'

The sunset spilt golden rays on the earth.

'It has only been a day but I have lost over a thousand of my soldiers. However, if we persist for another day, I'm sure we will be able to break through!'

Baili Xuandu's eyes were bloodshot. In the next moment, he could feel a chill down his spine.

"Military governor, look..... at..... north!"

A group of messengers rushed to him and could not even articulate properly.

From a tall platform, Baili Xuandu looked across and noticed a black line charging towards them from the horizon. They were not soldiers or calvaries, but wolves, tigers, leopards and other beasts forming a battalion of beasts! "Demonic beasts!?"

# Chapter 315: King Sun

---

Fenghe Prefecture, Da Chu.

In this prefecture, there was a famous mountain called Xuanping Mountain that housed the Xuan Zhen Sect's headquarters.

Forests on the mountains were lush while dense, fluffy clouds covered the mountains.

On a certain mountain peak, a gust of wind blew away the clouds and a building could be seen. The building housed numerous pavilions and terraces; it was brilliantly structured. Caws of celestial cranes could be heard and spirit monkeys could be seen plucking fruits. It had the look of a grand celestial manor.

"Chirp! Chirp!"

Suddenly, a green bird cut across the sky and flew into the hall of the building. Its shrills were sorrowful and pierced the silence.

The hall was built from pure copper and there were a few altars used to worship deities inside the hall. In front, there were a few elders seating on cushions.

"A message from the green bird? Moreover, it's the most urgent secret information?"

The head of Xuan Zhen Sect was stunned for a moment. He then immediately waved his hand and a clear gust of wind reached the green bird.

The green bird's eyes shined brightly, it was extremely human-like. It then began rapidly reciting, "Elders, disaster! Xinfeng army's military governor Baili Xuandu was met with resistance from the Empress Dowager at the capital. After he refused to surrender, he was attacked by the Demonic Beast Swarm! The 60,000 men strong army toppled in a day and he almost died!"

Although it was only a few sentences, the information and

meaning in them were astounding. The elders' expression changed at once, "Demonic Beast Swarm? The demons have always schemed behind the scenes! This time, they finally displayed their powers in front of everyone?"

"Divine Predictor Elder, what do you think?"

After the initial commotion, Xuan Zhen Sect Head enquired a person.

This person's beard was so long it touched the ground and his face was full of wrinkles. He appeared haggard and looked like a skeleton, as though he was about to die.

"Cough..... cough....."

The Divine Predictor coughed twice before speaking weakly and breathlessly, "I have already investigated each countries' dragon energy. Disregarding Da Qi and Da Liang, inside Da Chu, there are only two rising dragon energies. One is Xu Ting while the other is Baili Xuandu!"

"Although there are some others with slight potential, since they have not risen to power till now, they have missed the right timing, the right conditions and the right people. They can be considered useless now..."

"Although our sect originally favoured Xu Ting and invested in him early on, ever since Xu family have gotten too close with the demons, their fate energy has changed. In this three years, we have gradually favoured Baili Xuandu, but alas, just before we could sever ties with Xu Family and invest in Baili Xuandu, he was defeated! He has fully lost the right timing and there would be no chance for him to rise again!"

"The demons are determined to have us dead!"

A female elder loathingly said, "But there are no other hidden dragons that have not been noticed and killed... what should we do from now on? Fully invest in Xu family or seal the mountain and

retreat?

"We absolutely cannot seal the mountain!"

The Sect Head shook his head, "We are at the peak of the turmoil now and can only move forward with it. If we were to retreat, we will lose out on people dao fate energy, and our sect will slowly decline even if we have the support of our rare treasures..."

"Looks like the Sect Head has favoured Xu Ting, but not only is he not getting closer to us, he is getting more inclined towards the lone practitioners and demons!"

Another elder shook his head, "Previously, Qing Xuan relayed that the Golden Court Dragon God and Qi Lake Dragon God were the ones who saved Xu Ting's troops when he was attacked by An River Dragon God. This shows that they have deep ties..."

"That's not true!"

Xuan Zhen Sect Head laughed, "Too much of a good thing can actually be worse! Although these two Dragon Gods played a huge role, Xu Ting would still be fearful of them. Xu Ting is merely ingratiating them as he needs them for his war, but what happens when the war is over?"

"Brilliant and insightful!"

A few other daoists nodded their head in agreement, "Especially now, there are no more heroes in Da Chu's capital. Even the demons have used up everything! The two sides suffered severe losses. if Xu Ting can quickly send his troops over, he will definitely be able to occupy it!"

"Such a situation will be an easy task for Xu Ting, hence, the chances of him relying on the Dragon Gods would be even smaller! Thus, we must suppress them with every opportunity we have!"

"True!"

Xuan Zhen Sect Head nodded his head, "Since that is the case, go

ahead!"

"All of you may leave now!"

The daoists kowtowed before leaving the hall one by one. Only the Sect Head stayed behind to ponder as he looked at the rising smoke from the incense and its quivering flame.

...

"What?"

The news spread around fast and not before long, Fang Yuan, who was in Qi Lake, caught wind of it too.

"I can't believe it! I really can't believe the demons were so daring to ambush the hidden dragon." Fang Yuan mumbled to himself.

From his source of intelligence, although Baili Xuandu's army was wiped out, the demons suffered great losses as well.

After all, Baili Xuandu was a powerful military governor; he had numerous talented people under him. Moreover, he had the support of his dragon energy.

After the bloody battle, the Demonic Beast Swarm was severely desecrated too. Apparently, outside Da Chu's capital, there was a mountain tall pile of corpses. It was an utterly revolting mixture of humans' and beasts' corpses and carcasses.

"This Xu Ting is really lucky. Perhaps his fate energy has greatly increased since he received the support from the Golden Court Dragon God and me?"

Fang Yuan stroked his chin.

Upon hearing the news, Xu Ting immediately gave up on reorganising his troops. He promptly led his troops towards Qi Lake.

At that moment, the numerous military occupied towns were in chaos after they lost their leader. They either surrendered or were conquered instantly. In just a short period, Xu Ting occupied more

than ten prefectures in the vicinity of An River and Qi Lake; he had already occupied half the country!

"If he can stop the demons from interfering and conquer the capital, he would naturally be able to rule the entire Da Chu thereafter!"

The fight for Da Chu was getting clearer.

Inside Da Chu, there was no doubt that Xu family was the strongest force to be reckoned with. Moreover, they were even stronger than the imperial family.

Furthermore, Da Qi and Da Liang were in internal chaos too. If Xu Ting could unite and rule Da Chu, he could even unite the countries under his rule!

"Hence, Xu Ting would become the number one hated target amongst all demons... this would spell trouble for him..."

Fang Yuan shook his head and looked towards a direction as he pondered. After a moment, he cast a magical formula and a water mirror appeared.

"A group of daoist has just joined Xu Ting, looks like they are from Xuan Zhen Sect... How did I not know that there were so many cultivators in this realm?"

As the Qi Lake Dragon God, he could understand the situation of the nearby prefectures.

As he saw such a scene, he felt solemn.

The reason humans were rising was not only because they were favoured by the heavenly trend, they had also surpassed a certain threshold. Thus, talented people and heroes could continually emerge amongst the humans.

At that moment, Xu Ting was only left with becoming the ruler of the entire Da Chu. Thus, he had the support of many people which made him even more powerful!

Rome was not built in a day! Every contribution mattered!

Once Xu Ting had the support of millions of people, even the Divine Demon Queen would be rather fearful of his force!

"Since his soldiers were severely fatigued from the battles this year, he must strike next year!"

Fang Yuan contemplated, "Xu Ting has two ways to achieve a breakthrough. One is the capital of Da Chu, the other is to continue conquering the remaining military occupied towns... this is all clear!"

Xu family's strength was already sufficient to officially rule the entire Da Chu.

"At such a stage, I guess some people can only be forced to invest more?"

Fang Yuan looked towards the water mirror with a sly smile.

...

At that moment, Xu Ting was in plain clothes and was hiking with a few of his confidants.

"Qiwei Prefecture is the core of the 5 prefectures near Qi Lake. Since Golden Court Lake is too far from here, Father has already prepared to move his office here. He will personally officiate this prefecture and monitor the frontlines..."

They felt relaxed as they hiked higher up the mountains.

Xu Ting casually mentioned, "During the spring of next year, after we finish reorganising the troops, we definitely must launch our attacks and rapidly unite Da Chu."

"Just that... there is still an issue!"

He raised his eyebrows and continued, "Although my father is the Glorious Grandmaster, such a title is still a ministerial position! A minister as a head of state, that is not appropriate!"

"You are right, General, it is time to promote his title!"

The confidants immediately chimed in.

To be the ruler of a country was an opportunity many wanted.

Furthermore, since Xu Ting already planned to attack the capital, the title of 'Minister' was really not apt.

"The Glorious Grandmaster's hard work allowed us to occupy half the country! Promoting his title to King would be very suitable!" one of his followers suggested.

Realistically, with the lands he had occupied, the title of Emperor would be too forced.

"King?"

Xu Ting was moved at once.

Nearby, as daoist Qing Xuan watched the scene, he was reminded of his Sect Head. "Xuan Zhen Sect suffered losses after losses and our progress has been severely hindered... Now, the elders do not even mind utilising our sect's rare treasures to tide this through! This is not for our sect but for the heavenly trend!"

Qing Xuan stood quietly as he waited for his chance.

As they were tired from their hike, Xu Ting took a look at the sun and said, "Time to find a place to rest! After lunch, we will head down the mountain!"

"General!"

Daoist Qing Xuan suddenly called out, "This peak is called King Sun's Mountain, we can visit the King Sun's Court up there to rest!"

"Okay, let's go there!"

Hearing such, Xu Ting was intrigued. Upon reaching the peak, there was indeed a small court. It was styled in a temple-like fashion, it was also rustic and elegant looking, while still retaining



a sense of solemnity.

In front of the court, there was a rock tablet. It introduced the life of King Sun and had a poem inscribed on it. "Although the temple has resided in this mountain for a long time, many have not heard of King Sun. He fought the rebels of Qi Lake, leaving behind his great legacy. A hero of the past enshrined in history, a name not known by many. Although new deeds could not be inscribed, respects could be paid."

"So it's a temple for a king!"

After Xu Ting thought for a moment, he ordered someone to pass him the incense. He then ceremoniously worshipped.

This King Sun was the second prince of the previous dynasty. He was both scholarly and skilled in martial arts. He had even led troops to suppress rebels in Qi Lake. After the eldest prince died, many supported him to be the crown prince. However, he was framed by others and ultimately did not become the emperor. He was only bestowed upon the title of King Sun and not long after, he mysteriously "drowned".

Of course, Xu Ting did not trust what was written in the historical records. He felt a cold sweat as he thought, "The fight for the throne is deadly, even the descendants of emperors died fighting for the throne. What can I even be proud of at my current stage?"

Xu Ting self-reflected as he prayed a few more times.

"Eh?"

Suddenly, the nearby Kong Luo's expression changed. He opened his spiritual eyes and saw streaks of fate energy gathering above the court and entering Xu Ting's head as he worshipped. It signified Xu Ting was meant to be a king!

# Chapter 316: Following the Trend

---

The 9th Year of Yong An, the First Day of the year.

Xu Ren had arrived at Qiwei Prefecture. He had ordered for a Heavenly Temple to be built and had taken up the appointment of King, with the title of 'Wu'. He was now King Wu. On that night, there was a banquet and a ceremony to declare his wife as the Queen. Xu Ting was appointed the Head General and was in charge of military affairs.

On the same day, one of the district leaders had presented a 5 Coloured Lingzhi, which was subsequently recorded in the books.

On the 3rd Month, Xu Ting had officially led his troop of 10,000 soldiers to attack the capital city of Da Chu!

Outside of the capital city, there were miles of charred land and occasionally, bones were seen lying around. It was a horrific sight to behold.

Xu Ting whipped his horse as they advanced towards the capital city. Seeing that the city was just right before his eyes, he could not hold back but chuckle. "Baili Xuandu has returned to his own town and is no longer a threat! The priority now is to take down the capital city of Da Chu and make our occupation official!"

With almost half of Da Chu's territory in their hands, they had the freedom to choose which direction they would want to attack the capital city from.

They could either strike the capital city of Da Chu, or attack from the Xinfeng Army.

Based on Xu Ting's judgement, although Baili Xuandu had control over 6 prefectures in the north, they were but empty shells and was no threat. Therefore, he would choose to surround the royal capital.

After all, the royal capital was where the headquarters were and

therefore, he had to treat it seriously.

Is Wang Xu in charge of the defence of the capital city of Da Chu? He is of the same ethnicity as Wang Qiao. Who would've thought that he would be able to work with the Empress Dowager so closely!"

Xu Ting rubbed his chin and recalled a few rumours that he had heard in the past. "There must be a reason for everything. The royal palace of Da Chu must be hiding some dirty secrets within!"

"Pass down my command, we shall set up our campsite here and officially invade the city tomorrow!"

Thinking about it, he quickly passed down his command.

Although there were a few prefecture districts neighbouring the capital city of Da Chu, these districts were long destroyed and would surrender instantly if they were to set foot in them. It was an easy task to conquer those districts.

At this point in time, his 10,000-soldier army were surrounding the capital city of Da Chu. With a strong backing, this invasion was much different compared to that led by Baili Xuandu. They could afford to surround and contain the capital city and were not afraid to drag the invasion.

With the heavenly trend in place, they did not have to resort to using underhand means to successfully invade the capital city. By dragging the invasion, it was advantageous for the Xu Family.

This was because the way they had executed the invasion was slow but steady. It exemplified the true meaning of the art of war.

"Yes Sir!"

Without hesitation, the instruction was relayed and the campsite was set up promptly. Due to their past experience with demons, they had fortified and strengthened their tents and even had soldiers doing patrol duties. They would boil their water before consumption and were on their guards at all times.

"Previously, the demons had suffered losses as well. Furthermore, I am not Baili Xuandu and I am in no hurry to take down the capital city. Therefore, it is unlikely that there would be any loopholes in our invasion for we are not hasty. The chances of us being attacked are minimal!"

Even so, Xu Ting still sent out a troop of 500 cavalries to perform reconnaissance to make sure that the surroundings were clear of any threats. They were made to report to him every 6 hourly so that they could eliminate any potential threats.

It was nightfall.

There was complete silence in the campsite. Not long after, the only light source was being put out.

"Brother Golden Court, what do you feel about this army?"

From afar, on a plateau, Fang Yuan and Golden Court Dragon God had arrived.

"They are steady like a mountain and are not hasty. They are well-disciplined too! An impressive troop!"

Golden Court Dragon God shook before continuing. "Even you and I are affected by the energy given off by this army. Other demons would surely not dare to approach them!"

"Not just this, but I have seen the energy given off by Xu Ting as well. He has a ring of auspicious energy around him and with the assistance of the water dragon's pearl, he is starting to reveal his dragon entity! He will be a king in the future! In comparison, his father's energy pales!"

Fang Yuan replied. "Xuan Zhen Sect would throw in everything they have!"

"This is where I am confused. After conquering the capital city of Da Chu, Xu Ting would be able to unify the entire Da Chu. By then, what should we do? Should we... leave before things get out of hand?"

Golden Court Dragon God broke the silence.

Hearing him, Fang Yuan nodded his head in agreement.

This dragon god was indeed wise to be able to think of such a step. When the humans rule, everything else would have to give way for them.

After the country is being rebuilt, the brave and courageous generals would have to be contained and nullified. Otherwise, any small trigger might cause a big trouble! It would be a display of might, similar to how Zhu Yuanzhang killed the ministers who had worked hard.

Although there were big changes everywhere, the basic principle of how things work would always remain the same!

Furthermore, there was something more threatening to them! Ministers and generals would require the support of the government and they could be controlled. However, the few gods like them harness power in themselves! If the king could not control them, he would fear them even more!

"With Xuan Zhen Sect sowing discord, we should really think about how to take our leave..."

Fang Yuan did not rebut. Instead, he let out a cold laugh. "Does Xuan Zhen Sect really think that they can expand their influence? Dream on! After clearing out demons and gods like us, the king would target the daoists next."

"Mmm, as long as Xu Ting can successfully invade the capital city of Da Chu, he would be credited for it. Even if we were to take our leave, it would not affect anything. Instead, we might benefit from it..."

The Golden Court Dragon God nodded his head and replied.

As a king, Xu Re would be able to gather dragon energy. They could not only cover up their weaknesses with the dragon energy, they might even strengthen themselves.

"Mm... As demons and gods, we are ultimately not human. However, as long as we understand something, we can still survive!"

Fang Yuan appeared serious as he continued. "The uprising of the humans is the heavenly trend. Humans with dragon energy would rise everywhere in the realm and Xu Ting is just one of them. Although many would pin their hopes on him, he is still not irreplaceable! We need to go with the flow, which is to simply eradicate the evil demons!"

"As long as we can achieve that, we would have followed the heavenly trend. If the people dao's dragon energy decide to wipe us out, we can simply retaliate!"

"You're right, young god!"

Hearing Fang Yuan, the Golden Court Dragon God's heart wavered as though he had understood something important.

Xu Ting was merely a pawn in the heavenly trend and was not representative of the entire people dao. As long as Fang Yuan and the Golden Court Dragon God follow the heavenly trend, nobody could do anything to them.

Furthermore, they would be allowed to strike back if anyone were to touch them.

After all, there would be no more problems once the humans rise up and the true dragons appear among the humans.

"Therefore, this operation would be extremely crucial!"

Fang Yuan continued. "Invading the capital city of Da Chu was initially a mere contest among the humans. However, if any demons were to get themselves involved in the invasion, then we will have to take action! Since we have brought along all our water dwellers with us, it is only a small matter if we have to sacrifice all of them. If the Divine Demon Queen were to stop us, we will still put up our best fight!"

Although the soldiers in the dragon palaces were only good in battles underwater, they could still hold their ground on land; they would merely be a little weaker than they used to be.

However, to Fang Yuan, none of this mattered.

Instead, if the casualty rate of his water dwellers were high, the power of Qi Lake would be weakened. This would be aligned with the heavenly trend and therefore, there was nothing to be pity about!

This was breaking things up into two steps. Firstly, he would continually do good deeds to gain heavenly dao karma. As for the people dao, as long as he did not oppose the heavenly trend, he would not be at risk of anything.

After all, the heavens were cruel. No one could say for sure if the true dragon would come from the Xu Family.

Seeing how Fang Yuan's eyes were glistening, the Golden Court Dragon God shook.

Being so decisive and meticulous as to deal with issues separately in terms of heavenly dao and people dao and having such a deep understanding of the people dao meant that there was no way they could fail!

"With such a potential person among us demons, I have no worries!"

The Golden Court Dragon God let out a sigh and released a signal.

From a big river, troops of water dwellers appeared, forming a military formation.

"Some of the Golden Court Army and An River Army have left behind to take care of the lake and river. I have 12,000 of them reporting here today, and I'll let you command them!!!"

A golden glow appeared on the Golden Court Dragon God's hand and transformed into a dragon scale. With that, he passed the scale

to Fang Yuan.

"Do not worry. Just remember, we are here to attack the demons who are opposing the heavenly trend. We will not touch a single human regardless of the situation. I'll leave all those problems to Xu Ting!"

Fang Yuan glanced at the outline of the capital city and laughed. "Let's go!"

...

On the city walls of the capital city of Da Chu.

The Divine Demon Queen was sitting atop the city walls, looking pitiful. However, the guards beside her were ignoring everything. It was weird.

Upon closer look, the guards had a demonic glow in their eyes. As the torches illuminated their faces, black streaks were seen on their faces.

"Reporting, Queen!"

A lieutenant walked up and paid his greetings. "All the soldiers who are willing to listen to your command have arrived! We have obtained more than half of the defences of the city!"

He was indeed a powerful demon to be able to take up the form of a human! An independent powerful demon!

Of course, with the Empress Dowager's assistance and the few demon spies around Wang Xu, it was possible to possess people in the royal palace.

"Alright, this time, we shall make use of the city walls to destroy and wipe out Xu Ting's army. It would be even better if we can capture him!"

The Divine Demon Queen commanded.

"Yes, Ma'am!"



With a cunning laugh, the lieutenant's eyes glistened.

As soon as the demon lieutenant was dismissed, the Divine Demon Queen looked down at the sea of black beneath the city walls and let out a sigh.

The previous fight with Baili Xuandu had weakened the dragon energy, but her demons had suffered a high casualty rate. She had even lost some of her elite demons.

Humans were able to reproduce and get their numbers up quickly. In a few years, a huge troop of soldiers were arriving once more.

Furthermore, this time, there were many elite and capable people assisting the soldiers.

Looking at her own demons, she realised that comparatively, her demons reproduce slower. Even if she were to multiply their numbers by 10 or even 100, she would still lose out in terms of numbers!

"For the demons, I'll have to make do!"

"The good thing is that I have received news that we have located a few islands far from here. These islands have an abundance of spiritual energy. I have already instructed the weaker demons to relocate there. With this, I can at least preserve some of our species..."

The Divine Demon Queen looked towards the direction of Xu Ting's campsite and gave a cunning laugh. "Even if I have to sacrifice all my demons, I must ensure that I destroy the people dao's dragon energy completely and ensure that chaos will break out for the next hundred years to come!"

She had made up her mind.

"Kill!"

At this point in time, there were shoutings and warcries. The

Divine Demon Queen turned pale. "Jerk, traitors!"

Beneath the city walls, 20,000 water dwellers formed neat rows.

Witnessing this, the Divine Demon Queen was enraged.

She had initially planned to sacrifice all her demons to destroy the people dao's dragon energy and create chaos.

However, if she were to start a war with the water dwellers, regardless of who would win the war, it was their own internal conflict and the humans would be the one who would benefit from their own conflict!

"Roar! Roar!"

Amidst dragon roars, the silhouette of two water dragons appeared. Fang Yuan transformed into a man with a crown. Together with the Golden Court Dragon God, they looked towards the city walls.

"Qi Lake Dragon God, as a dragon, you are an asset to the demons. Why do you want to seek refuge with the humans?"

The Divine Demon Queen had already lost all hope for the Golden Court Dragon God. Looking at Fang Yuan, she was in disbelief.

"Since this is the heavenly trend, how can I oppose it?"

Fang Yuan waved his hands. "This conversation is meaningless! Attack the city!"

# Chapter 317: Vicissitudes

---

Zhang Han was originally an unemployed young adult who loafed and idled around the capital of Da Chu. He came from a poor family and did not amount to much after he grew up, thus, he relied on shady acts for survival.

However, these few years, life in the capital became worse. The capital became emptier and he lost his livelihood. Coincidentally, the imperial army was recruiting and had very low requirements, hence, Zhang Han enlisted.

Zhang Han was doing guard duty at night.

"Recently, many of the lieutenants and generals have changed...Their eyes have a green glow, so creepy looking!"

The cold wind blew and Zhang Han still felt extremely chilly despite wearing his coat. As he shivered in the cold, he thought of the ladies in Chunfeng Brothel.

"Charge!"

Suddenly, shouts could be heard outside the city gates. Zhang Han came out of his trance and was alarmed by the noises.

"There are rebels attacking our city, quickly defend!"

Under the lieutenant's command, Zhang Han wielded his spear and rushed to the city gates. His hands were trembling in fear.

After he climbed up the city walls and looked down, he was utterly panic-stricken.

From the light of the flames, silhouettes of those below could be discerned. However, they were definitely not humans, each of them was oddly shaped and fully armoured. Some of them even had huge pincers as hands and were extremely vicious looking.

"What are you all waiting for? Kill them!"

The lieutenant hollered and a rain of arrows hit the crustacean

soldiers' bodies. However, they were useless as only small sparks could be seen when the arrows bounced off their armour.

"The bow is useless, we have to use crossbows, logs and huge rocks!"

"Boom!"

Huge rocks were thrown from the tall city walls and blood splattered everywhere when these rocks landed.

Even though the crustacean army had scale armours, they could not withstand the logs and rocks crushing them.

"These... these are not humans, they are demons! I quit!"

Beside Zhang Han, a soldier was terrified by the scene and attempted to escape.

"Splurt!"

Blood spewed everywhere as Zhang Han's lieutenant smiled ferociously. With just a slash of his knife, the soldier's head rolled onto the ground.

"Those who try to escape will be killed immediately!"

The lieutenant licked the blood off his knife with enjoyment as he appeared extremely satisfied. The green glow in his eyes sparkled as he further commanded, "What are you waiting for? Continue!"

"Yes, Sir!"

Zhang Han immediately turned his head away as the scene reminded him of the hungry wolf he had seen before when he was young.

The look on the lieutenant's eyes was exactly the same as that wolf's, it was sly and savage looking.

"Kill them all!"

If the 20,000 strong troops were humans, they would have all

died when they attacked the city at night.

However, this time around, it was different. The ones attacking were the water dwellers.

With the support of the two Dragon Gods, the water dwellers bravely rushed forward against the raining arrows and logs. Their hands turned into giant pincers or sharp claws as they arrived at the bottom of the city walls and began climbing up.

"Kill!"

One of the crab generals reached the top of the walls and began hammering the wall with his huge pincers. Moments later, part of the wall crumbled and made way for the water dwellers.

The water dwellers immediately rushed forward.

"Die!"

The lieutenant lunged forward and a black glow appeared on his knife, "Demon Wolf Technique, Moon Sword Flurry!"

"Swoosh!"

The knife was as radiant and as sharp as a waxing moon as it sliced the crab general. A large gap appeared on the crab general's chest at once, tons of blood gushed out and he collapsed onto the floor, revealing his original form which was a tiny crab.

"Hahaha!"

The lieutenant's eyes turned red from savagery as he howled to the moon. Black fur grew out from his face like an evil wolf.

"I'm right, a demon!"

Zhang Han's limbs turned weak. As he looked around, he saw many of them savagely howling. They transformed into dholes, wolves, tigers and leopards and fought against the crustacean army. As he watched the bizarre and motley beasts fought, he thought he was dreaming.

"Ah... haha, that's right, I must be dreaming!"

Even though Zhang Han had seen before the Demonic Beast Swarm that fought against Baili Xuandu's troops, he began to laugh crazily.

Zhang Han then threw his spear onto the ground and walked around aimlessly. Suddenly, a strong man with tiger stripes pounced on him and sank its teeth into his neck. Blood spewed everywhere!

...

While the capital was in chaos, Fang Yuan remained leisurely.

"There are indeed demons in the capital, but how many demons can the Queen possibly gather? 3,000? 5,000? We have 20,000 water dwellers, even if all of them were killed, it is not a pity!"

At that moment, many of the crustacean soldiers were severely injured or had died already. While the Golden Court Dragon God was worried, Fang Yuan was laughing beside him.

"What a cold-blooded and heartless young Dragon God!"

The Divine Demon Queen remained silent as she watched the events unfold.

Although she had powerful abilities, her elemental energy had been severely weakened as she had gone against the heavenly trend. Furthermore, she could not stand a chance against the two Dragon Gods.

"I will remember what happened today! Just you wait!"

Moments later, as she saw more demons were being killed, she could not bear it anymore, she finally let out a sharp shrill.

The demons were alarmed by the shrill and immediately transformed into black vapour as they retreated.

"Heh! The pettiness of women!"

Fang Yuan smirked as he saw such.

If a general could not view the soldiers under him as expendables and became irresolute during the key moment, he had failed as a general.

However, perhaps it was because demons were the ones dying in the brawl, there was no other choice for the Divine Demon Queen.

Nevertheless, Fang Yuan would not let this opportunity slip.

On one side, they had numerous considerations. Whereas, on the other side, they had none. Thus, this showed that victory was already established from the start.

"Send down my command, chase after and kill all the remaining demons! Leave the humans alone and just chase them away will do!"

"Boom!"

As the demons retreated, the defences on the city wall fell immediately. A few crab general pushed open the city gates and a huge amount of water dwellers easily swarmed in.

The night in the capital would definitely not be peaceful.

The ruckus near the city walls was loud, lots of soldiers entered the city. They began searching for the demons and small brawls erupted everywhere.

Occasionally, some of the bold and daring families peeked from their windows and saw some odd sights.

For example, tigers and leopards could be seen dashing away as black vapour shrouded them. Many water dwellers were marching on the streets. It was a truly bizarre sight to behold, a sight that one might not even be able to dream of.

There were scholars who immediately recorded, "King Wu's army attacked the capital at night, the capital descended into chaos. Spirits and ghosts paraded the city walls... the commoners

dare not leave their house. During midnight, they came into the streets, their presence was vivid, their smell was strong! Fishes, prawns, tigers and leopards could be seen!"

"You... are so vicious!"

The Divine Demon Queen was devastated at such and she almost retched up a stream of blood.

"Wipe out the enemy cleanly, leave no chance for them, the heavenly trend cannot be resisted, such are the vicissitudes of life!" Fang Yuan thought of a poem.

Fang Yuan decisively hollered as a beam of lightning appeared on his hand, "Divine Demon Queen! As you went against the heavenly trend, you must be punished!"

"Kaboom!"

Thunder could be heard as a flash of lightning cut across the sky. A large amount of electrifying lightning immediately surrounded the Divine Demon Queen. They then transformed into a sword and pierced towards her at the speed of light.

"Poof!"

Just when the lightning pierced her, it was as though it had pierced a soap bubble.

The silhouette of the Divine Demon Queen burst and disappeared without a trace.

"An illusion?"

Fang Yuan thought to himself, "After I have spent so much effort preparing for this opportunity, she managed to hide! This demon's cultivation is unpredictably strong!"

"The heavenly trend cannot be resisted, such is the vicissitudes of life..." the Golden Court Dragon God mumbled beside Fang Yuan.

After a while, the Golden Court Dragon God then added, "You should know better!"



Fang Yuan did not hesitate and rushed towards the imperial palace.

Da Chu Imperial Palace.

"Ahhhh!"

The young emperor woke up from his nightmare and shouted, "Grandma! Grandma!"

"What's wrong, my grandson?"

At that moment, it was as though the entire palace was empty, the curtains swayed and evoked a sense of uneasiness.

The shadow of a lady donned in a crown appeared and slowly walked into the palace hall. It was the fox demon transformed as the Empress Dowager.

"Greetings, Empress Dowager!"

The young emperor stood up and paid respects. He was only around 6 to 7 years old, his supple little lips were red and his teeth was flawlessly white. He was extremely cute and lovable.

"Ah... my grandson..."

The Empress Dowager went forward and carried the young emperor. Her eyes turned teary as she said, "We are not related by blood, and yet I feel so close to you after spending time with you. I have never felt this way before, even with the previous two emperors!"

The young emperor kept quiet as he sensed what the Empress Dowager said was very important.

"Sigh... although I was instructed to wreak the imperial palace completely... I can't bear to do so!"

The Empress Dowager caressed the young emperor's cheeks as she continued with mixed emotions, "Being so close to a human... is a sin, sigh... my innocent child! I have already killed and sinned so many times, I really don't wish to sin again!"

"Empress Dowager, what's wrong? Don't scare me..."

The young emperor was frightened and started crying. He immediately screamed for help.

Outside the palace hall, it was totally silent. There was not a single soul.

"Krong! Kong!"

Suddenly, the dignified noise of a dragon could be heard.

"Sigh..."

The Empress Dowager could only give a cold smile as hugged the young emperor, "My baby, you must depend on yourself from now on!"

"Empress Dowager?"

After they hugged, the young emperor called her softly. However, there was no response.

He pushed her away slightly and her whole body fell over. Her body was stiff and she had passed away!

Beside the Empress Dowager's corpse, a white glow emerged and transformed into a white-coloured fox. The fox turned back and look, its eyes were filled with emotions. Suddenly, a flash of lightning struck through the palace hall. The white fox immediately collapsed onto the floor, its fur was burnt and it had evidently died.

"Ahhhh!!!"

The young emperor's eyes turned white and fainted.

...

Fifth Month, 9th year of Yong An.

Xu Ting led his troops and surrounded the capital. On the second day, hundreds of officials in the capital urged the emperor to surrender!

It was a new page in the official historical records. As for other bizarre events, it was only detailed in non-official records of history, it was barely mentioned in the official historical records.

In the Sixth Month, Xu Ren moved his imperial court to the capital to prepare for the abdication.

In the Seventh Month, due to uncertain causes, Xu Ren suddenly fell very ill. Three days later, he passed away. Xu Ting then succeeded the position of king. In the Twelfth Month, the young emperor was forced to abdicate. Xu Ting succeeded the throne and formed the Wu Country. He honoured the late Xu Ren as the founding father of the empire and rewarded his officials and generals. He continued to bolster his troops in preparation to conquer the northern part of Da Chu and thus, defeat the last military occupied town of Da Chu. Hence, he would rule the entire Da Chu and step closer to ruling the world.

# Chapter 318: Fall Out

---

The Year of Hong Wu.

The previous capital city of Da Chu had now been renamed to Wu Xing.

Although they had a lot of rebuilding to do, the city was after all a royal capital. With their new Emperor, the lively atmosphere was restored and more and more people came to the city and roamed the streets.

In the royal palace.

The original young Emperor was casually given an appointment of a lord and could no longer remain in the palace. He was relocated to a specific holding in the palace and would spend the rest of his life there.

In the royal garden, Li Luan stared at a plum blossom quietly.

With the accession of Xu Ting, Li Luan was given the title of a spiritual concubine. She was ranked after the Queen and the Royal Concubine, but her servants were comparable to those serving the Royal Concubine. Therefore, the treatment which she received was still rather good.

What shocked her was the fact that Xu Ting had become a completely different man after the passing of his father, Xu Ren.

Although he was still courageous and brave, he became increasingly unpredictable.

"Lady!"

A eunuch rushed towards her in baby steps. "Previously, the Emperor had agreed to accompany you to enjoy the plum blossoms, but now that he is in a bad mood, he will not be coming!"

"I'll respect that decision!"

Li Luan bowed before signalling to a servant. The servant

brought over a piece of gold ingot.

Such a heavy ingot made the eunuch grin from ear to ear.

In such a big palace, everyone had to fight for their own survival and to survive, they had to earn gold or silver.

Although Li Luan felt sorrowful inside, she did not display her emotions. "What is affecting the Emperor's mood?"

The eunuch thought for a while. After all, it was no secret. Without further hesitation, he answered. "I did not get the full story, but it seems like the messenger who was sent to convince the Xinfeng Army to surrender has returned..."

"Baili Xuandu only has 6 prefectures under him. How dare he go against us, with more than half of the country in our possession?"

Li Luan was shocked but did not probe further; the eunuch could not possibly know more.

"There's nothing else!"

After dismissing the eunuch, there was a look of worry on Li Luan's face.

Indeed, not long after, more news came in.

The military governor of the Xinfeng Army, Baili Xuandu, had rejected the offer to surrender. Instead, he had directly contacted the stronger districts in Qi Country and Liang Country with the intention to borrow their troops!

Of course, this had angered Xu Ting. He had decided to muster 10,000 soldiers to settle this once and for all!

This would be the final war for Wu Country!

"Although there is chaos in Qi Country and Liang Country, if they were to unite with the Xinfeng Army, they would be a force to be reckoned with... I should advise the Emperor!"

Li Luan had a solemn look on her face as she mumbled to herself.

However, Xu Ting was the reason why the other countries could possibly unite!

He had enlisted in his small prefecture when he was 10. But now, he was only in his 20s and yet, he had already managed to establish Wu Country! No one in history could match up to his achievements!

If they did not combine forces, this person would take over the entire world!

With this common objective, they were easily swayed by Baili Xuandu's words. In addition, they might have been affected by demons casting spells on them.

Thinking about demons, Li Luan appeared down.

Although she was the concubine of the Emperor, there were many restrictions and therefore, she felt more restrained than she was before. She could only dream of looking for the two dragon gods to discuss their plans.

"In history, demons only appear when the country is weakened! Now, Wu Country is prospering with the auspicious vibes. With the assistance from the powerful daoists from Xuan Zhen Sect, there are restrictions everywhere in the royal palace. All dao techniques are banned and I am not even allowed to send a letter. The dragon gods would naturally not risk their lives to come here..."

Deep in her thoughts, Li Luan took out a squarish napkin and wrote a few lines of words before handing it over to a servant. "Leave the palace and throw this in any river will do!"

"Yes Ma'am!"

The servant respectfully took her leave. Looking at her back view, Li Luan felt uneasy.

...

In the royal study.

Xu Ting now had a moustache and an awe-inspiring look. He looked different than he was before.

At this point in time, in the study, there were a few other daoist talking. "... Therefore, the uprising of the humans is just merely part of the heavenly trend. Emperor, by following the heavenly trend, you can start a new empire!"

"Are the demons really experiencing a downfall?"

Xu Ting was hesitant.

After all, he could only achieve all that he had through the help of demons. This explained his hesitation and scepticism.

Seeing this, the head of Xuan Zhen Sect continued. "Daoist are still human. We are still passionate and loyal. However, we must always be on guard against the cunning schemes of the demons..."

Although the demons had invested fate energy on Xu Ting, the increasingly concentrated people dao's dragon energy had become more prominent. Together with the energy from Emperor Sun, Xu Ting was confident.

Now, he wanted to end the source of all his power!

"Let me think about it..."

Xu Ting was still indecisive.

The head of Xuan Zhen Sect saw this, and his eyes glistened.

He only approached the Emperor because he had the confidence to convince him and the fact that the Divine Predictor Elder had planned everything out for him.

"Emperor!"

At this point in time, a guard requested to see the Emperor as he presented a squarish napkin.

Seeing it, Xu Ting's face was filled with anger. "What audacity!"

How dare she spy on our secrets and help the outsiders! Dragon gods indeed, demons indeed!"

The sect head of Xuan Zhen Sect could not help but laugh inside.

He knew that the spiritual concubine might not have any ulterior motives for delivering the letter, but even so, it was a fact that she was communicating and colluding with outsiders!

Furthermore, she was communicating with a dragon god! This was even more severe.

After all, the previous country, Da Chu, was a prime example of how things could go wrong.

"Pass down my command..."

Xu Ting paced. After a while, he calmly gave his command. "By infringing the rules of the palace, the spiritual concubine will now be demoted to become a servant. Relocate her to Chunnuan Court so that she can reflect on her wrongdoings!"

This was, in fact, throwing her into isolation.

The sect head of Xuan Zhen Sect was secretly elated upon hearing this news.

"Also... Instruct those that are constructing dragon temples across the prefecture to stop their construction. Xuan Zhen, you shall be the messenger. I want the Qi Lake Dragon God and the Golden Court Dragon God to start eradicating all the evil gods and demons!"

Through advice from the daoist, Xu Ting now knew that in order to deal with the gods, he had to first curb the faith towards these gods.

Furthermore, as Emperor, he had the protection of Emperor energy and it would be extremely hard to harm him. Therefore, he had nothing to fear.

"Yes... Yes, Emperor!"



Xuan Zhen knelt down and was overjoyed.

In his consciousness, he could see the silhouette of Kong Luo flashing by.

This daoist was already submissive. He could take the Green Qiu Sword back after forcing the dragon gods into submission.

...

The Fourth Month of the Year of Hong Wu.

Xu Ting had mustered his 10,000-strong troop and was advancing towards Xinfeng Army.

Baili Xuandu could only hastily defend. Even if he were to receive aid from Qi Country and Liang Country, his mental instability would mean that he could not mount a proper defence. At most, he could only gather 50,000 to defend with all their might.

At the same time, the sect head of Xuan Zhen Sect had led a group of elite elders and had arrived at Qi Lake.

"We must take revenge for our late elders!"

As the few elder daoists gathered, their eyes burned with rage as they glared at the imperial decree on Xuan Zhen's hands.

The decree was 3 inches long and 1 inch wide. It was a pure yellow and there were dragon engravings on the scroll of the decree. Around there dragons were decorative clouds, giving the decree a majestic vibe from a dragon.

"We are tasked by the Emperor to do this and therefore will be strengthened by the blessings of the Imperial Court. The soldiers of the Qi Lake are severely injured from the previous battle, so this is our chance!"

Divine Predictor Elder stroked his beard. "I have already shielded us from the detection of the two dragon gods. This is the time to strike!"

"Alright! Let us reduce him to ashes!"

The few elders exchanged glances with a look of hatred on their faces.

"Reduce them to ashes? That's too good of a deal for them. We need to make them agree to become our servants for the next thousand years to come before we shall kill them to eat and make use of..."

"Let's go!"

The few daoists transformed into streaks of light and disappeared from the surface of the lake.

...

Fang Yuan could not detect anything.

At this point in time, he was looking at the big turtle ahead of him and was speechless. "Even though my water soldiers are dead, I am still the Qi Lake Dragon God, an official one nonetheless... How dare you guys go against me?"

There were numerous living things in Qi Lake and there were about 20,000 of them worthy to be regarded as demons!

Among the 20,000, half of them were working in the dragon palace. The other half were lone demons who would not submit to the dragon god.

Seeing that the dragon god's water soldiers were wiped out, these lone demons came out to cause trouble and were vying for the position of water god as well!

Seeing this, Fang Yuan was speechless but secretly, he was ecstatic.

This was the perfect excuse for him to wipe out those who were unwilling to submit to him!

There were too many demons in Qi Lake. Even if he were to kill 8,000 of them, there would be 10,000 remaining. Therefore, he could afford to go on a killing spree. At least, he would have to kill

the leader of the rebellious group of demons.

"You... the heavens are blind!"

The turtle retracted its head and 4 limbs as a voice travelled from the shell. "As the dragon god, why are you helping the humans and sacrificing 8,000 of our demons on the battlefield? Do you think you are worthy of the position?"

"Keke... Is this the reason for your rebellion?"

Fang Yuan appeared calm as the Sundering Thunder Sword appeared in his hands. "Will you ever understand the reasons behind my actions?"

The battle at the capital city resulted in 20,000 water dwellers being killed. However, amidst all the bloodshed, he had gained huge amounts of karma.

With recognition from the heavens, he could undoubtedly continue to be the dragon god!

The rebellion of the water dwellers only gave him a reason to continue his killing of evil demons.

As soon as he swung his sword out, a streak of lightning struck through the shell. There was a shriek coming from inside the shell and a flash which disappeared immediately.

"To think about it, all of these is enough..."

After killing them, Fang Yuan looked at the glow above him and smiled. However, his expression quickly changed. "However... It is worrying as to what is happening to Xu Ting!"

He had progressed too quickly. He should have experienced another setback, but that has yet to actualise. This must be due to the fact that he had the protection of the dragon energy!

To those who invest fate energy in him, it was a depressing thing.

"Does he really think that the whole world is his just because he is an emperor of a mere country?"

Fang Yuan snickered. "I need to let you experience retribution so that you'll understand my power!"

As his spiritual will shook, he became a streak of light and arrived at the lakeside.

A few daoists were standing in a group with scheming looks on their faces. One of them suddenly raised the imperial decree towards the sky and shouted. "This is the command of the Emperor. Qi Lake Dragon God, kneel down before the decree!"

As soon as he spoke, all of them could feel a huge pressure and an unbelievable might.

This was the power of dragon energy, harnessed from half of the entire territory of Da Chu and the citizens living in it!

# Chapter 319: Retribution

---

"The emperor decrees, "As the emperor, all lands are mine and everyone is under me! As spirits, you should respect the dragon energy! Hence, I specially command both of you, Qi Lake Dragon God and Golden Court Dragon God, to immediately assist Xuan Zhen Sect to banish the evil gods' temples!"

The head of Xuan Zhen Sect looked at Fang Yuan and read the imperial decree out loud. He raised the decree and smirked at Fang Yuan, "So how... are you going to oppose the decree?"

"He thinks I am a tool? He wants me to clear the evil gods and the demons but doesn't provide any returns for me? Furthermore, he wants me to submit under Xuan Zhen Sect, does he thinks I am a fool?" Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan could not contain his laughter after hearing such and guffawed out loud.

"How dare you disobey the imperial decree! Die!"

Xuan Zhen and his daoists immediately hollered.

"Roar!"

The roar of a dragon could be vaguely heard. Streaks of green and violet energy gathered in the imperial decree and formed the shape of a golden green dragon. Its might was daunting.

It was the people dao true dragon energy, it could overpower all kinds of power!

Such an energy even made Fang Yuan's god dao divine light dimmed a little.

"Cast arrays!"

Xuan Zhen and his daoists were allowed to cast their arrays as the ban was lifted. Their power was uninhibited and they formed an array surrounding Fang Yuan, trapping him inside.

"Humans will rise as per the heavenly trend while demons will fall! Demon, you shall be suppressed!"

The elderly daoist was very solemn. He then loudly chanted, "The 33rd head of Xuan Zhen Sect invites the fate energy of our rare treasures and ancestors to assist!"

"Woong, woooong!"

After a flash of black light, a small stone pagoda appeared on his right palm.

The pagoda had seven layers, it was carved from black stones and delicately designed. Each side of the pagoda shined mysteriously and was inscribed with runes. It could suppress fate energy!

"Demon Suppressing Pagoda?"

Fang Yuan drooped his eyelids, "You all have even brought out this item! Aren't you all afraid your sect's foundation will be damaged and your sect will then perish?"

That item was Xuan Zhen Sect's secret weapon, it was a rare treasure that could suppress fate energy!

The moment they brought out this item, it meant that they were willing to use their all for Fang Yuan to die.

"We are boosted by the dragon energy and the Demon Suppressing Pagoda, which are also complemented by the 4 Emblems Spirit Locking Array! Whereas, you have gone against the orders and lost your crustacean army, you have no chance of defeating us!"

The Divine Predictor Elder sneered, "Isolate! Seal off! Start!"

Xuan Zhen immediately threw the Demon Suppressing Pagoda.

The Demon Suppressing Pagoda magnified when it reached the peak of the array. It radiated brightly from all sides, streaks of light formed into chains and entered the array as it went for Fang Yuan.

"Oh!"

Fang Yuan's body quivered for a moment. Inside the array, he felt his energy from Qi Lake was isolated away.

The dragon energy suppressed his divine position, the Demon Suppressing Pagoda targeted its body, while the 4 Emblems Spirit Locking Array sealed off his heavenly energy and energy from Qi Lake!

"Should I inflict retribution?"

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself; he had a greater understanding of fate energy.

People dao were strong on their own and self-reliant, whatever Fang Yuan did previously was a form of support! However, once he crossed a threshold, he would immediately be attacked!

Of course, such a predicament was also due to Xu Ting's character and Xuan Zhen Sect's influence. However, these were already trifle reasons.

Nevertheless, as he kept to the baseline and planned beforehand, he would not suffer great losses! He might even survive!

"But... how can I make this the way I want it to be!" Fang Yuan thought.

With such a thought, his gaze turned piercingly cold, "I will not use this opportunity to save my life, I will fully use it to inflict retribution! Anyway, my main reason for coming to this realm this time was to reap as much as I can, why should I care about what happens afterwards!"

"Quickly!"

Although the Divine Predictor Elder and the head of Xuan Zhen Sect did not know what the Dragon God was thinking of, they felt uneasy and hollered to hurry up.

"Haha... it's too late!"

Fang Yuan's eyes burnt like fire and green energy from his head formed into a beam of clear light, causing the array to falter as the beam seeped out. He sent a command through it, "Fate energy, return! Quick!"

"Kaboom!"

Suddenly, the sky darkened. Lightning flashed and thunder roared!

...

Xinfeng Prefecture.

Xinfeng Prefecture was Baili Xuandu's hometown. At that moment, Xu Ting's 10,000-strong army stormed into the prefecture. Numerous district towns surrendered before the battle even started, their power was fearsome.

Inside a tent at the military camp.

"Your Majesty, two more districts have surrendered to us!"

"Your Majesty, numerous generals in Xinfeng Army have secretly contacted me! They are willing to surrender!"

...

Good news kept coming up continuously, however, that was normal as Wu Country held the biggest power.

As Baili Xuan still stubbornly held on to six remote prefectures, he slowly lost his followers.

"Great! With this two prefectures conquered, the capital of Xinfeng Prefecture would be a piece of cake!"

Xu Ting was overjoyed.

The capital was Baili Xuandu's nucleus area, the moment it was conquered, Baili Xuandu would have no chance of rising back to power.

"Pass down my command... reward the whole army with meat!"



With the soldiers full, our strength is even greater and we will annihilate Xinfeng army!"

"Very wise, your Majesty!"

The officials below greatly respected Xu Ting and were elated, they worshipped him at once.

"Kill them!"

Suddenly, the trotting noise of a horse and shouts could be heard from the northwestern side of the military camp.

"Reporting!"

One of the bodyguards quickly reported, "2,000 cavalry soldiers were spotted 3 miles outside the military camp! They seem to be charging towards us!"

"2,000 cavalry soldiers? That's almost Baili Xuandu's entire strength!"

The officials were astonished. However, Xu Ting remained still and commanded, "This Baili Xuandu loves to employ sly tricks, however..... the good always triumphs over the evil! Send down my command, each battalion stay at where they are and prepare for battle! Anyone who steps out of the military camp will be killed, regardless if he is a general or a soldier!"

"Also, disarm and detain all the newly surrendered soldiers, in case they were pretending to surrender!"

"Yes, your Majesty!"

After Xu Ting's commands were relayed, the whole military camp became quiet. Some of the battalions that had some commotion calmed down at once.

"Very wise, your Majesty!"

Some of the generals were very convinced and immediately went out to deploy the defences.

Such an attack was meant to confuse the unprepared troops. However, now that the 10,000 men strong army was not reacting, the 2,000 men strong cavalry could at most attack a few tents before their whole cavalry would be annihilated. Unless another few tens of thousands of cavalry soldiers came over, there stood no chance of defeating this securely defended military camp. They were basically courting death.

To Xu Ting, Baili Xuandu was his wit's end, it was his desperate last attempt.

"Your Highness, look..."

On a hill outside the military camp, the Divine Demon Queen looked at the scene with a few of her foxes.

After the camp was on guard, they saw the 2,000 men strong cavalry let out a roar and charged forward fearlessly instead of retreating.

"Baili Xuandu had already lost his dragon energy, this is his last attempt! If it doesn't succeed, he will die for his cause!"

The Divine Demon Queen's face turned grim and said, "I will cast an array and use the 10,000 Demon Blood Sacrifice to obtain the help!"

"Your Highness!"

The demons were absolutely dismayed.

The 10,000 Demon Blood Sacrifice spell was a taboo amongst demons, it could not be frivolously used. The user would definitely suffer from severe rebound and retribution, with the Divine Demon Queen's current health, she would definitely die!

"I am not doing it to help the humans, but for the demons!"

The Divine Demon Queen sighed and continued, "Us demons are experiencing a downfall; I am finally clear of the heavenly trend. The rise of humans cannot be stopped, whatever we have done

merely added fuel to the fire... the heavens makes a fool out of demons!"

As she lectured, her expression turned even more sorrowful, "But, I rather suffer beyond redemption than let the humans have an easy life... This Xu Ting has one of the strongest dragon energy amongst the humans, if he is defeated, the chaos would continue at least ten years. This will give enough time for us demons to survive and relocate far away! I have already decided, say no more!"

"Your Highness!"

Numerous demons wailed bitterly.

The Divine Demon Queen's face was expressionless, she cast an array and sprinkled some of her vital blood on it.

"I have already collected the resentment of 10,000 demons from Chu Country's capital, now I just need a lead... which is me! After this battle, whether victory or defeat, you all shall quickly retreat. Bring the young ones and escape to a faraway land..."

She sighed and stepped into the array.

Flaming!

Immediately, blood red flames mixed with horrifying streaks of black vapour soared and engulfed the Divine Demon Queen.

Under the cries of the many demons, a blood red beam of light shot up the sky.

In an instant, dark clouds loomed and a raging tempest brewed.

"Huuuuuuu! Hruuuuuuuu!"

The strong gale howled and swept along sands and stones. The wind was blowing from the northwest and brought along numerous dark clouds which covered the entire sky.

Baili Xuandu was immediately delighted, "Heaven is helping me! Charge!"

"Kill them all!"

2,000 cavalry soldiers charged into the military camp with a strong might and a massacre erupted. Whereas the opposing Wu army was blinded by the sandstorm and panic-stricken, they immediately fell apart!

"Demonic Wind! Demonic Wind!"

Inside the main tent, Xu Ting's face turned red and spat out blood as he saw the tempest.

After he spat out that mouthful of blood, his heart felt empty at once. It was as though he had lost something of extreme importance.

"Reporting! Baili Xuandu's army is aided by the raging tempest, our troops are in chaos!"

"Reporting! The northern camp is falling, they seem to be calling for help! They are charging towards our main body of soldiers, General An Jie is currently trying to suppress them!"

"Your Majesty..."

One of his bodyguards came forward and asked, "Should the generals accompany your Majesty to retreat?"

"No way!"

Xu Ting clenched his teeth, "I am the heart of this army, I will never retreat! We will be defeated once I retreat! Send down my command, it is still the same, each battalion stays at where they are! Concentrate on fighting the opponents!"

He thought clearly, even if they had the help of the Demonic Wind, his troops would at most be confounded for at most a while. Afterwards, they would be back to their usual form and be able to defeat the cavalry.

However, Xu Ting had not realised, at the corner of the tent, Kong Luo kept his head down and was in an emotional turmoil. It

seemed that he had activated a certain talisman.

"I am not close to Xu Ting, once Xuan Zhen Sect returns to power, I will definitely be killed! Although I am not close to him anymore, he still puts me at his side, he is testing my loyalty! Now, let's see what Baili Xuandu can do!" Kong Luo thought.

Kong Luo wiped his face with his sleeve, and it was as though his eyes burnt with fire.

"Kill!"

Suddenly, the shouts came closer and closer. It was as though the enemies had eyes that could see through, they were charging directly to the emperor's tent!

"Impossible... how could they be so accurate?"

Xu Ting walked out of his tent. When he saw the shadows of the cavalry and the flames, he almost fell to the ground.

Inside the military camp, all the tents were similar and it was like a maze. How could they easily recognise which tent Xu Ting was in?

However, the enemies had accomplished such! His stubbornness to leave was now a joke!!!

# Chapter 320: The Escape

---

The 2,000 elite soldiers troop went straight for his tent with the aid of the raging tempest.

If Fang Yuan was here, he would surely comment. "This is like the Battle of Okehazama in Japan!"

In the period of war in Japan, the Tokaidos' warrior Imagawa Yoshimoto led 45,000 soldiers to invade the Owari Province. The leader of Owari Province, Oda Nobunaga, only had 4,000 troops and was dealing with internal conflicts when the invasion began.

At that time, Oda Nobunaga led his elite forces to the Battle of Okehazama and with the help of a storm, they managed to take Imagawa Yoshimoto's head amidst the chaos. From then on, the ruler of Tokaido, Imagawa Yoshimoto, disappeared from the face of the earth, giving Oda Nobunaga his reputation!

In all of these, the most important event was taking the enemy leader's head!

Comparing with history, they had similar elite troops, similar aid from nature and similarly, everything laid on Xu Ting.

In the Battle of Okehazama, if Imagawa Yoshimoto did not die, then Oda Nobunaga would have worsened the situation.

It was the same now!

If Xu Ting could survive this counterattack, disregarding Wu Country's reserved army, he could simply make use of his 10,000-strong army here to wipe out Baili Xuandu and company!

"Emperor, quickly leave!"

His personal guard, Xu Jian, shouted with haste. "I'll block them!"

The remaining few guards ran out. However, in a short while, their cries could be heard. After a few slices, their body parts flew

everywhere.

Witnessing what just happened, Xu Ting was at a loss.

Xu Jian was part of the Xu Family. He was always loyal and would willingly sacrifice himself to protect Xu Ting over the years. He had survived many wars and he thought that he would be enjoying his life after this final war. No one knew that he would die here.

"Kill!"

Seeing that the Emperor of Wu was here, all the cavalry units were dumbfounded. Baili Xuandu led his soldiers to break through the defence and surrounded the tent. "Xu Ting... It's been a long time!"

"You're right... It's been a long time!"

Seeing his ministers and servants getting killed one by one, Xu Ting finally snapped out of his trance. "Who would've thought... that you would be the one to kill me!"

Even Emperors were still human and vulnerable!

Even though he might have 10,000 soldiers outside, they would not be able to save him in time!

Xu Ting looked around. He then saw Kong Luo getting up to his feet and killing a few daoists from Xuan Zhen Sect. Although He sort of understood Kong Luo's actions, he was in no position to say anything.

He could only sigh. "Who would've known that I, Xu Ting, would die here!!"

As he saw the armoured guards walking towards him, he broke into laughter. "I am the Emperor! How could I die under your hands, you useless people!"

In that instant, he plucked out his Purple Suo Sword and sliced his neck!"

"Splatter!"

Blood spurted out from his neck as he fell to the ground. His body twitched a little and finally, he was put to an eternal rest.

"Rumble!"

As a purple streak of lightning flashed across, thunder crackled in the skies and a storm started to brew...

...

Qi Lake.

Amidst the thunder, a dragon's roar could be heard coming from the North. Streaks of green and purple formed the shape of a dragon which rushed towards the 4 Emblems Spirit Locking Array.

"Is this... dragon energy?"

As the Divine Predictor Elder screamed, the Demon Suppressing Pagoda shook and started to crumble.

A few old daoists started to spit out mouthfuls of blood. Looking at the Qi Lake Dragon God within, they were shocked.

'Who could know... the retribution would be so intense to the point that Xu Ting has died?'

Fang Yuan caught wind of the news too and was shocked. "Ah, there's intervention from demons!"

If demons did not intervene, Xu Ting would at most suffer a defeat and could likely preserve his life. However, now that the demons did interfere, there was no way he could live!

"To me, this is disadvantageous!"

Fang Yuan let out a bitter laugh.

He could still deal with it using his heavenly karma if he only weakened Xu Ting's fate energy.

However, although unintentional, he had led to the destruction of the people dao's dragon energy. Even if he used up all his karma,



he would not be able to redeem himself.

"This evil demon... what did you do?"

Seeing the dragon energy circling Fang Yuan as streaks of lightning ripped across the sky, the head of Xuan Zhen Sect started to shiver in fear and almost spat out blood.

"This is not good... The dragon energy of Emperor Wu is destroyed. Although we are not the ones who caused it, we are still linked to it. The fate energy of our sect will be affected as well, and we might need to undergo a tribulation!"

As he attempted to predict the future, Divine Predictor Elder spat out a mouthful of black blood.

The head of Xuan Zhen Sect started to feel dizzy.

He had just gone all out to use the treasures of his sect to subdue Fang Yuan, but now, everything had gone to waste! And, in fact, they had to undergo a tribulation!

Did all of these happen just because they wanted to pressurize this dragon god? Everything felt unreal.

At this point in time, there were changes happening to Fang Yuan's body.

"This concentrated dragon energy is extremely pure... Regardless, after reaping the dragon energy from Xu Ting, I'd have gotten more than I can ask for..."

Fang Yuan's thoughts wandered as he thought of other things.

"Now, I can either try to spend all that I have gained to reduce my sins and I might even escape alive from the heavenly tribulation, but what for?"

He broke into laughter as he transformed into his horned dragon form. As he opened his mouth, he swallowed the purple-coloured dragon energy.

This dragon energy was the result of condensing fate energy of

the people dao. However, in reality, it was a form of energy in the realm.

With the assistance of the dragon energy, his horned dragon body started to expand with unsightly bulges appearing on his body. With an explosion, 4 dragon claws with 3 talons each appeared!

A horned dragon was the younger version of a dragon with no claws and a single horn on its head.

However, now that 4 claws had emerged, Fang Yuan had successfully transformed from a horned dragon to a water dragon!

The 8th Transformation of the 9 Steps of Dragon Transformation Formula! The Water Dragon Transformation!

"Why should I be afraid to stack up my sins in this realm? I shall reap a whole lot before leaving and end everything!"

The water dragon was green with hints of gold. As it roared, it flew up into the sky and came before the head of Xuan Zhen Sect. Swiping its claws, it shouted. "Die!"

This was a real dragon's claw. With the power of the dragon energy, he could overpower all kinds of power. This was in addition to his original powers.

No matter how powerful the head of Xuan Zhen Sect was, he could only place all his faith in the Demon Suppressing Pagoda.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

The small black pagoda on his head started to move and released a glow of protection around it. As the dragon roared, the protection shattered like glass breaking.

"Crash!"

Without reservation, the dragon claw swiped at the forehead of the head of Xuan Zhen Sect. The huge power of the dragon struck at that single moment, destroying the soul of the sect head!

"Sect Head?"

Two elders rushed forward. With the flick of his dragon claws, the sword essence of the Water Sword and Fire Sword appeared, transforming them into a block of ice and a pillar of fire.

"Where do you think you're going?"

There were sparks of electricity around his body as he came before the Divine Predictor Elder.

"Evil demon!"

The Divine Predictor Elder shouted. "I will perish with you!"

With a flash appearing on his hand, he had created a few magical talismans which were shimmering as though they were about to explode.

"Whoosh!"

Fang Yuan was quicker than him. With the Thunder Sword flying out, a single lunge through his forehead was all it took to end it all.

"After attaining the Water Dragon Transformation and with my 8 Gates Sword Array, I only have a few worthy threats in this realm and can be considered a divine demon!"

After his killing spree, Fang Yuan started to become worried as he looked at his own stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Race: Water Dragon

Essence: 42

Spirit: 42

Magic: 50

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: \[9 Steps of Dragon Transformation Formula (8th Transformation)\], \[Weather Controlling Technique (Grade 2)\], \[Natural Magical Strength (Grade 4)\], \[8 Gates Sword Array (4th Sword) (1%)\]

Skill: \[Medicine (Level 3)\], \[Botany (Level 5)\]"

Amidst the destruction, the vibes of a tribulation were felt as it filled the air. "Looking at all the sins I have committed, it seems like I won't be able to redeem myself even after killing the sect head! I'm afraid I have to escape!"

Of course, Xuan Zhen Sect's involvement in Xu Ting's death was minimal and yet, they had suffered such a destructive ending. Fang Yuan, the cause of everything, would surely experience something more intense.

As he was killing the daoists, many huge scales appeared, covering the sky. Although the tribulation was imminent, it could not strike at this moment.

Fang Yuan's hair stood on its ends.

After committing such a sin and not using his karma to redeem himself, he would surely experience a tribulation.

Dark clouds started to gather in the skies. This was due to the fact that he had just attained a breakthrough in his transformation and it was the heavens merely responding to it to destroy his spirit.

"Of course... I am stronger than the Xuan Zhen Sect. They cannot run and escape, but I can!"

He had planned to retrieve the dragon energy back to reap the rewards for it. As for the outcome? He had long planned for it.

As thunder crackled in the skies above him, he laughed and drew a circle with his hands. Not long after, a tunnel seemed to have appeared.

"If I leave now, it would be such a waste to let my dragon's body

be destroyed!"

The Yin Spirit of the water dragon appeared as he snapped his fingers.

A streak of fire landed on the body of the water dragon and flames broke out. A golden-green imperial order and a water dragon pearl appeared. This was the essence of a water dragon.

"I cannot remove other imperial orders and other dragon pearls from this world... However, these two objects are strongly related to me... I can attempt to bring them with me!"

As the space in mid-air started to distort, an invisible tunnel appeared.

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan placed his people dao karma atop the imperial order and the water dragon pearl, forming a golden portal.

The water dragon pearl was translucent and it was as though there was a small golden-green dragon within it. It was awe-inspiring and with a single touch, it quickly flew into the portal.

"Rumble!"

As the earth trembled, a streak of purple lightning struck down!

"The heavens are enraged!"

The dragon pearl could smoothly enter the portal, but the imperial order was met with resistance.

After all, it was created by this realm and therefore, it could not simply leave the realm.

"That's alright!"

Fang Yuan's Yin Spirit stretched out his hands and grabbed the imperial order. With a swing, it flew into the sky.

"Kaboom!"

A golden-green screen appeared as it deflected the lightning

strikes from the skies.

"Crackle!"

As the streak of lightning struck on the screen, there was only a small crack; the whole screen was still intact.

"This is indeed the power of an imperial order! It seems like it can withstand 2 to 3 more strikes!"

With a sigh, Fang Yuan hesitated no more as he stepped into the golden portal.

"Buzz!"

With a glow, the golden portal disappeared.

"Rumble!"

In the next moment, streaks of lightning rained down, destroying the screen created by the imperial order effortlessly.

Furthermore, there was a mysterious vibration spreading across the realm and towards the direction which Fang Yuan had left.

...

Da Qian Empire.

Within a cave in the Changli Mountain Hollow.

"Crumble!"

Shattered rocks started to fly about. Fang Yuan looked up into the sky and squinted his eyes.

"Indeed... the seal has yet to be broken. I've guessed correctly!"

He had been very fortunate in his journey in the Water Realm. He had reaped a lot from the realm even when encountering a tribulation.

Of course, the most important was the fact that after spending 10 over years in the Water Realm, only a few days passed in Da Qian Empire. He could still make it!

"They want to sacrifice us and explore the Changli Mountain Hollow for themselves!"

Fang Yuan snickered. "I'll make sure you fail!"

His expression changed as he felt dizziness in his Yin Spirit. "I did not expect such a backlash from the Water Realm... Indeed, by reaping all these energies from these realms, I would either make it or break it!"

# Chapter 321: The Beginning

---

There was a thick layer of fog surrounding the dense vegetation.

Although it was a hollow, it was no different from the outside world.

Seeing the environment around him, Fang Yuan was a little stunned. He went on to pluck a few wild mushrooms, lighted a bonfire and started to roast them. The mushrooms gave off a mouth-watering fragrance.

As he ate the mushrooms, he entered his actualised dream world.

The 8 Gates Sword Array was standing tall and protecting the actualised dream world. 3 swords were already formed, and the 3 swords were arranged in the 3 Talents Sword Array. The actualised dream world had grown in size once more.

Of course, all of these were expected. What had pleased him the most was the green radiance in the middle of the 8 Gates Sword Array, as well as the water dragon pearl.

"This green radiance is the energy of the realm. It is the accumulated heavenly karma which I had obtained from the Water Realm... And the water dragon pearl contains all the dragon essence within it... Most importantly, my previous water dragon body had already fully absorbed the previous dragon pearl which I had stolen from the old Qi Lake Water God. This water dragon pearl is concentrated with dragon properties, so much so that it might even be considered a legitimate dragon pearl!"

Looking at the sealed green radiance in the center, Fang Yuan was extremely satisfied. "With this, I am only a step away from forming the Modest Wind Sword and achieving the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine!"

This risk of being destroyed by the heavenly tribulation and the hasty progress which he made in the Water Realm had paid off!



"What a pity... If all of that did not happen, I could slowly plan and might reap even more benefits if I were to become successful in supporting a true dragon to rule the world..."

With this thought, Fang Yuan became slightly depressed.

As he waved his sleeves, the green radiance started to dissipate as the 8 Gates Sword Array started to absorb its energy. Immediately, a green and long sword started to form.

In his stats window, the progress of his 4th Sword started to increase! From 2%, it jumped to 10%! Then to 20%! To 50%! And finally, to 99%!

As soon as he reached this point, he quickly stopped.

It was not because he had not enough energy from the green radiance. He knew that if he were to achieve the breakthrough, he would attain the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and awaken the spiritual property of the magical soldiers. If that happened, the mysterious dream elemental force in his body might act up against him, which was something unfavourable to him.

Furthermore, if he were to progress so quickly, he would arouse suspicion. It was better to lay low.

"Seal!"

With a single thought, the four types of forces, namely Wind, Thunder, Water and Fire came together... In that instant, the green radiance was once again sealed in the centre of the 8 Gates Sword Array.

"It might be a good idea to remain at this cultivation level and having the freedom to achieve the breakthrough anytime!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head in satisfaction and took a quick glance at this stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 42

Spirit: 42

Magic: 59

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (3rd Tier), Wu Zong (4th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 5) (1%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (4th Sword) (99%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)]"

"Since the stats window can retain my original cultivation level, my current Essence and Spirit have matched up to the level which I had attained while I was a water dragon. The increment in Magic, on the other hand, is due to the progress in forming the 4th Sword..."

"With such stats, I am already at the peak of the 3rd Tier of Illusionary Divine! Even Feng Xinzi is only at this stage... Furthermore, this is the highest cultivation I can attain in which the hollows would still grant me entry!"

In the cave, Fang Yuan ate his roasted mushrooms as he felt a little bored. "Am I just... waiting for things to happen?"

Looking at his stats window, he was lost in his thought. "Hmm... I might be able to make use of this time to train my martial arts!"

As long as his progress bar was there, he could continually train up to improve his martial arts cultivation level. Therefore, he could make full use of his time while waiting.

...

Time was like flowing water. In the blink of an eye, a month had passed.

In the forest, Fang Yuan regulated his breathing while meditating. With every breath, the 4 spiritual meridians on his

back would glow and become more and more defined. Additionally, another meridian was vaguely visible and appeared illusionary.

"Even in martial arts, I would experience a slower progress the higher my cultivation becomes!"

After a long while, Fang Yuan concluded his training. Seeing the small increment in his experience bar, he let out a sigh.

However, after seeing Venerable Longhu and understanding the power of a True Divine, he would not give up on training his martial arts.

"Dream masters would focus on their Essence and Magic while training, while martial artists would strengthen their bodies. Both would focus on different aspects, and in training both, these two vastly different aspects would complement each other!"

Fang Yuan had vaguely figured out the path for his cultivation.

"Whooo! Whoo!"

At this point in time, he could detect that the fog around him was moving. It was thinning out.

"Is the strength of the seal weakening?"

Seeing this, a solemn look appeared on Fang Yuan's face. "The Changli Mountain Hollow is about to become activated!"

On Tianmu Mountain, within a cave.

"The time has finally arrived!"

Elder Smelter, Old Mother of Tianmu and Old Xue were gathering around a sandbox with excited looks on their faces.

In the middle of the sandbox, there was a screen revealing a miniature version of the hollow.

"Let's begin to remove the seal!"

Seeing this, Old Mother of Tianmu quickly gave her instructions.

"With the dream masters inside as blood sacrifice and our attack from the outside world, we can surely find a weakness of this seemingly-perfect defensive seal."

"Of course, we must be alert at the moment of the hollow opening, for the Hidden Dragon Guards might attack at that moment!"

Although Old Mother of Tianmu was standing still, the surrounding space around her seemed to have opened up, allowing rays of light to flood in.

"Don't worry! The highly skilled dream masters of our Divine Lotus Cult and Evil Divine Sect are already in the Jade Capital to keep the fighting force of Da Qian under control!"

A gentle voice was heard. At the same time, two strong forces were suddenly felt in the sandbox.

With such an interference, the fog within the screen started to disperse, revealing the rugged surface of the mountainous range.

...

"The seal is open!"

Fang Yuan climbed up a branch of a dried tree and mumbled to himself as he stared at the retreating fog.

At this moment, from the corner of his eye, he could see a few streaks of light as he silently cursed. He knew that the Old Mother of Tianmu had her ulterior motive for planting him so close to the other dream masters.

"Rumble!"

At this moment, the ground shook. The edge of the forest became visible to the naked eye, and an even larger piece of area appeared before him.

At the same time, Old Mother of Tianmu's spiritual will could be heard rumbling. "Through this test, we can only allow 11 survivors.

The remaining would become a sacrifice to the forest!"

"It's time!"

Hearing her, Fang Yuan's was stunned for a moment.

He knew that he had been tricked by Elder Smelter with a simple mission being tasked to him.

Elder Smelter had evil intentions indeed!

With this thought, Fang Yuan rolled his eyes.

"Brother..."

As soon as the fog dispersed, two dream masters started to approach him. It was a man and a woman. The man was handsome and had distinct facial features. The woman was elegant and seemed like a deity from the heavens.

They approached him with friendly smiles as though they did not hear the announcement from Old Mother of Tianmu. "Where are you from? This place is dangerous! To survive, we have to stick together and work together!"

In response, Fang Yuan smiled and shook his head. "Even if I want to form an alliance, I wouldn't pick the two of you to be part of my alliance... After all, I don't deserve to be friends with dream masters from the Evil Divine Sect and the Divine Lotus Cult!"

"Sister Qing, we have been seen through!"

The young dream master snickered and shrugged his shoulders. In an instant, he had transformed into a person who gave off cunning vibes.

"Our combined Evil Lotus Divine Technique did not affect him a single bit! He must be at the peak of the 3rd Tier of Illusionary Divine, with plentiful Magic proficiency points!"

Interestingly, Sister Qing's expression changed. She took a bow. "I am Qing Meng. This is Ouyang Shu. May we know who you are... Wait a minute, you're Fang Yuan from the Realm Alliance!"

It was as though she had recalled something. "This is impossible... How did you achieve such progress in such a short time?"

"It seems like I'm famous to the point that you can recognise me!"

Fang Yuan touched his own face as he mulled. "Mmm... You recognise me? No worries, this is normal. Are you a reserved Divine Lady of the Divine Lotus Cult? Did Liu Mengmei come as well?"

In reality, Fang Yuan had already made a guess.

Those that were sent here were either hopeless dream masters who would take the risk or had weak backings.

Even if Qing Meng were to be a reserved Divine Lady, she was most likely an insignificant one who had come forth to try her luck.

"Fang Yuan from the Realm Alliance?"

Ouyang Shu was startled as though he had recalled something as well.

"Well well... who would've guessed that the first two people that I would encounter would be dream masters from the two evil sects!"

Fang Yuan remained calm. "Initially, I had my reservations in killing people. However, I don't think I would hold back against the both of you!"

"Hmph! Watch your words!"

Ouyang Shu's face was flushed with fury. "Sister Qing, let's take him down together! After all, he is alone and is a low-tiered Illusionary Divine dream master like us. What can he possibly do?"

"You're an idiot!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan sighed.

In the next moment, he rushed towards them like the wind. With an electric spark appearing in his palm, a Sundering Thunder Sword appeared.

The presence of the wind represented an extreme speed. Although the Modest Wind Sword was not completely formed, it was already powerful enough to stir wind.

Furthermore, thunder could counter most techniques and was the preferred choice against evil!

"Chi!"

Before he could react, there was already a wound in Ouyang Shu's chest. Slowly, he collapsed to the ground.

In a single move, this 2nd Tier Illusionary Divine dream master was defeated!

'Although he is not an elite dream master from the Evil Divine Sect, I can still make use of him to roughly gauge my abilities!'

Fang Yuan pressed the Thunder Sword on Ouyang Shu's neck as he started to think to himself. "Based on my current cultivation level, I am already more powerful than Feng Xinzi. Furthermore, any 3rd Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters would also not be my match. Of course, if Feng Xinzi were to achieve a breakthrough to the 4th Tier, then everything would be different..."

The 4th Tier and 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine were extremely difficult tiers to break through. It was akin to the fish leaping over the dragon's gate.

"You..."

Ouyang Shu was not yet dead. However, as soon as he started mumbling, the tendons in his limbs were already severed.

"Don't you dare harbour any evil intentions before me!"

Fang Yuan warned him sternly and moved his attention to Qing Meng.

This woman had attempted to influence him with her evil techniques. However, even though Fang Yuan's actualised dream world had expanded and the 8 Gates Sword Array was rumbling, he silenced it.

"Do you know someone... called Tian Xiezi?"

As he questioned Ouyang Shu, he was stepping on him.

Dream masters had many techniques to seal or mix up their own memories. Therefore, it was better to directly question him.

"That person is my senior... this is all I know about him!"

Since dream masters were capable of telling if someone was telling the truth, Ouyang Shu had no choice but to spill out what he knew. After all, he was in a dire circumstance.

"Since this is so, then you are useless!"

Fang Yuan quickly made sure that what he said was the truth before thrusting his sword downwards, ending this young man's life.

Since he was useless, what was the point of keeping him alive?



# Chapter 322: The Village

---

"Shing!"

Blood spewed everywhere.

Upon the death of Ouyang Shu, the normal-looking forest started to undergo a transformation.

The ground started to ripple and the roots of the trees started to stretch and climb all over Ouyang Shu's corpse, consuming him.

Fang Yuan could detect the arrival of a force from the hollow. This force sealed the space around the corpse and did not even let his soul free.

"This is how the hollow would consume corpse. Indeed a sacrifice!"

Witnessing this, Fang Yuan was stunned.

"Lord Fang Yuan... I have no bad blood with you!"

As soon as she saw him take notice of her, she forced a smile. "Furthermore... I can help you turn the tables regarding the grudge you have with my sect!"

"Keke... although you are the reserved Divine Lady, I don't think you have any strong backing considering the fact that you are sent here! How dare you be so full of yourself!"

Fang Yuan snickered and struck another sword.

"Rumble!"

Thunder rumbled as the sword landed. However, a Divine Lotus Print appeared on her body, shielding her from the blow.

However, the print started to fade as soon as the sword struck down on it.

"Die!"

A cold look flashed across Fang Yuan's eyes as he took another

step forward. Streaks of electricity were buzzing around the sword.

"You..."

Qing Meng appeared desolate. An unactivated talisman in her hands was destroyed by the streaks of electricity from the sword. Slowly, she fell to the ground and blood oozed out of her eyes, nose, mouth and ears. Without hesitation, she was consumed by the space around her.

"Although she had a magical equipment with her, she is still very weak compared to Meng Lian. She doesn't even have the protection of a powerful dream master's magical clone..."

Fang Yuan kept his sword and shook his head. "Are all of these people really sacrificial goats?"

Scanning his surroundings, he chuckled.

A few spiritual wills started to scramble and retreat. "We have been discovered! This person is powerful, let's retreat!"

"At the 3rd Tier of Illusionary Divine, he is indeed powerful! Not someone I would want to deal with!"

"Oh sh\*t, he's a killer! We should not anger him!"

...

A few silhouettes in hiding disappeared in an instant. Only a few who feared him and respected him remained.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan could not help it but laugh.

When he just entered the hollow, he was only at the 2nd Tier and had yet to form his Sundering Thunder Sword. If he were to encounter this pair then, he would have to use all that he had. Even if he could defeat the both of them, he would not be able to survive the surrounding dream masters who were watching the fight.

However, now, the Sundering Thunder Sword struck fear in all that witnessed him using it.

"I have unintentionally killed. However, the few of you, don't anger me. Otherwise, you will meet your doom! Hmph!"

Fang Yuan flicked his sword and snickered as his voice travelled far and wide.

If he were to do this before he would just be considered crazy. However, now that he had killed two dream masters, his words struck fear.

Seeing the surrounding dream masters take their leave, he paid no attention to them as he rushed towards a building at the end of the forest. "The centre of the hollow would be scrutinised by the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters. I should not forcefully go there, and should instead explore the boundaries and make this journey worth it!"

After unintentionally killing the dream masters, he was pumped with adrenaline.

However, he knew that he was still no match for Elder Smelter. Therefore, he could only let off steam through other means.

"Hehe..... This is really awe-inspiring! Phew!"

In the dense forest, a female dream master had an expression of shock. As she fell to the ground, a man in green appeared behind her. He seemed extremely young and his fingertips were stained with blood. However, he had an intoxicated look on his face. "After finishing this mission, I must pit myself against you!"

...

"Fang Yuan from the Realm Alliance?"

In another location, a pair of twin sisters were combining forces and executing their techniques. Streaks of colourful butterflies were fluttering around them as they barely kept up with their defense. As soon as they heard Fang Yuan's voice, they were elated. "It's a fellow alliance member!"

"Sister!"

The butterflies were colourful and were extremely powerful in defence. They could shield against physical and spiritual attacks.

As soon as the sisters got themselves out of the fight, the younger looking sister asked. "What should we do next? Should we look for that powerful alliance member for help?"

"Let me think about it!"

The older sister was a little more matured, but she could not come to a decision.

The sisters' backing was long gone and they were already ill-treated in the alliance. They were forced to enter this death trial and since then, they were wary of even dream masters from their own alliance and were hesitant to ask alliance members for help.

"It is too low a chance, considering that only 11 can survive among the 31 dream masters..."

The older sister gritted her teeth and hugged her younger sister as her eyes glistened. "Regardless, I must protect you, even if it... costs my life!"

...

At another location, Fang Yuan sped off like the wind with a shocking speed. After a few leaps, he had already left the area which he was previously in, leaving all the other dream masters behind.

"They would be fools to kill others just to complete the mission!"

His eyes glistened. "This massacre is the most dangerous. In the end, the weak would be killed and the strong would eventually fight each other. It is indeed a good plan for me to show off my skills first and avoid the chaos... Should I look for a fellow alliance member in the future? Otherwise, I would still be easily outnumbered and it would be extremely troublesome for me..."

Now that he had left the forest, an empty plain appeared before him.

There were endless rows of plantations; it was a sea of gold, which seemed to be a bountiful harvest.

At the edge of the plantation, there was a glittering building which was golden; it was different from anywhere else in the vicinity.

"Is this... Yellow Grain Rice?!"

Fang Yuan arrived at the plantation and was shocked and surprised.

The grain that was growing in the plantation was a yellow and translucent spiritual rice. The stem of the plant was sturdy and there was an alluring aura coming from the grain. It was the Yellow Grain Rice which he had painstakingly attempted to find!

"This rice had a concentrated spiritual energy. More importantly, it aids in a dream master's cultivation and is extremely rare! I'm afraid that only the 5 Grand Organisations in Da Qian and the Da Qian royal family will be able to plant them in huge batches! Who would've thought that there is an abundance of it in the Changli Mountain Hollow!"

Food was everything!

Even for Prominent Divine stage dream masters who created their own world into a hollow, they could not leave out food as a staple!

Looking at the abundance of rice here, he gained a further understanding of the cultivation of a dream master.

"If there are farms here, there must be people living here as well. They might have relocated from the outside world to here, or they could be a race of wisdom created by this almighty dream master!"

A dream master at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage

would be able to create a race of beasts, while dream masters in the realm of the Prominent Divine stage would be able to create a race of wisdom; a race that would be able to start a civilisation and reproduce for generations to come!

Furthermore, they were not restricted to creating a human race. These race of wisdom might be living things with a single horn, or wings... they could adopt any form and anything was possible.

What else was there to say?

Fang Yuan widened his eyes. As he released his elemental force to form a huge hand, he started to harvest the Yellow Grain Rice and stored it in his Mountain River Pearl.

"With these seeds, I can plant them for myself and consume them in the future. Who knows, they might even evolve special traits!"

Others might worry if they would be able to germinate these seeds. However, with his special ability, Fang Yuan had nothing to worry. "The only thing is... I need to look for a piece of spiritual land."

After a short while, he rushed towards the building but soon, he could sense that something was not right.

It was a continuous stretch of a palace with strong defences, covered with shimmering spiritual prints. However, there were sectors demarcated in it and there were simple carvings on the walls. With an ancient vibe, it was as though the place was full of life.

"This should not be the house of someone wealthy, but... an entire village?!"

Fang Yuan seemed to have understood something. "The continuous spiritual glow around the palace is a huge spiritual array... no! A huge magical equipment! As soon as it is activated, it will become a huge war beast!"

"Whoosh!"

As he was examining the surroundings, spiritual glow started to shimmer at the top of the palace. An icy arrow appeared and shot 100 feet away from him. It was a warning shot.

"There are indeed inhabitants! Did they get the warning and therefore are all hiding in the building?"

Seeing the arrow, Fang Yuan could not help it but laugh.

He would not strike without first knowing his enemies' ability. After giving it some thought, he decided to stay put and stood where he was and waited patiently.

After a few moments, a few streaks of light finally caught up to him. As soon as they saw the Yellow Grain Rice, they were all envious and quickly started to harvest the rice as well. Their actions had enraged many of the onlookers who were staring at them from the palace.

"Have they stopped fighting? It seems like these few dream masters are not entirely stupid..."

Fang Yuan smiled.

The weak dream masters would die at the beginning. Those that were able to survive until now were rather capable.

Furthermore, they would want to satisfy their own greed.

No one would dare to entirely betray their sects and go against the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters.

However, after a prolonged period, before the powerful dream masters would enter to reap the most out of the hollows, it was only natural and human nature for everyone to reap as much as they can to benefit themselves.

"Greetings Brother Fang, I am Ye Shuhua!"

Everyone in the hollow knew of Fang Yuan's prowess; no one would stupidly challenge him.

Two identical dream masters who were twins approached Fang

Yuan. The older sister paid her greetings first. "My sister, Shumin, and I are both from the Realm Alliance..."

"Oh!"

Fang Yuan casually replied them and started to examine the pair of twins.

In terms of the vibes they gave off, these two ladies were only average and could not even compare to Qing Meng. However, they were elegant and their features were on point.

Upon closer look, the older sister was taller and had a determined look on her face. On the other hand, the younger sister seemed gentler and submissive.

'Sigh... the Realm Alliance is really wasteful. How can they send such beauties here as sacrifice... However, to dream masters, they can get any beauty that they can dream of!'

Of course, Fang Yuan would not be simply left at the sight of these two beauties and returned the greeting. "Greetings, the both of you... may I know what you are seeking me for?"

Ye Shuhua started to clench her teeth.

Fang Yuan's polite and calm expression gave her the chills. She realised that their beautiful appearance did not waver Fang Yuan a single bit.

Now that they were surrounded by other dream masters staring at them, her hair started to stand on its ends. "Please save the both of us!"

"Save the both of you? What do I get out of this?"

Fang Yuan examined the palace in front and calmly replied.

"During this death trial, we sisters will listen to all your commands! Although your magical swords are powerful, you might face troubles, right? Although we sisters are weak and are only at the 1st and 2nd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, we can



combine forces and execute the Dream Butterfly Defence to stall time for you!"

"All of these are not enough!"

Fang Yuan shook his head and started to pressure them. "Agree with my condition!"

'Could he...'

Shuhua felt a chill down her spine. However, she stood firm but blushed a little. "Alright! If you can save us, I shall... let you do anything you want to me! However, leave my sister alone!"

"What are you thinking about?"

Fang Yuan started to laugh. "Am I such a person?"

He was unaware that her sister, Shumin, had heard the conversation and started to blush as well. She was utterly embarrassed and did not dare to let out her breath.

Although the dream masters who were silently watching from the shadows were unaware of their exchange, they could vaguely deduce the content of their conversation. Fang Yuan was speechless.

## Chapter 323: Horned Wing Tribe

---

"My conditions are simple. Don't worry, I am not asking you to sell your body to me. Just take it that both of you owe me a favour. If the both of you can survive and leave this place, then think about repaying the favour!"

Fang Yuan gave it some thought before revealing his condition.

No matter how forlorn the two sisters were, they would surely have a better treatment in the Realm Alliance compared to Fang Yuan.

"This of course..."

Ye Shuhua was elated. However, she started to look at Fang Yuan with suspicion in her eyes. "Are you sure you don't need..."

She did not believe that there were people who would not be wavered by seduction.

'No! He might be thinking of having us both! I need to protect sister. She is too naive and might be tricked by others... Sigh... It's a pity that our family is weak. Otherwise, we wouldn't have ended up here. However, this person seems to have a friendly disposition. He might just be telling the truth...'

Fang Yuan had no idea that Yu Shuhua was thinking about all these. With a gentle smile, he continued. "Since it is required in the alliance's agreement, I will temporarily offer protection to the both of you!"

"However, let's set things straight. If we were to meet with troubles which I cannot defend against, then every man would be for themselves!"

"This of course!"

Ye Shuhua nodded her head. "If this is really the case, then we shall just resign to fate!"

The 3 of them came to an agreement. However, in the eyes of the other dream masters, Fang Yuan was merely a person full of lust. 'Fang Yuan is indeed greedy... to take both sisters at the same time!'

"Hmph!"

Ye Shumin could feel that many pairs of eyes were glaring at them. In embarrassment, she looked down and blushed. On the other hand, Ye Shuhua bravely exchanged glares with the other dream masters like a rebellious kid.

"This is... Hey, keep a low profile and don't get us more enemies!"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes. "Also, tell me everything about the Realm Alliance!"

"Yes..."

As soon as Fang Yuan mentioned about the alliance, there was a look of sorrow on Ye Shuhua's face. However, she did not dare to conceal anything. "The Ye Family is a longstanding family in the Realm Alliance and had joined since the commencement of the alliance. Furthermore, we once had a 6th Tier Illusionary Divine stage dream master. Unfortunately, he had passed on from a failure in attempting to break through to the 7th Tier. From then on, it was a downfall of the Ye Family... Our father had the cultivation level of a 4th Tier Illusionary Divine stage and was our protection. However, he had also passed on 3 years ago..."

Fang Yuan listened to them and remained silent.

This was in fact what was happening to many families made up of dream masters.

Although the lifespan of a dream master was extremely long, there were many natural disasters as well. No one could be assured of a smooth-sailing life.

Considering how hard it would be to become a dream master, if a family were to not have any descendants capable of becoming

dream masters, they would surely experience a downfall. From then on, they would become commoners and would have a minute chance to rise once again.

"The Ye Family of the Realm Alliance?"

Fang Yuan sighed for a moment. "I've heard of this name before. It seems like they have a rich history..."

Although this family might seem to be at its lowest point, their connections with others still remain. If he could use them to pull strings, he might be able to get help in settling down in Da Qian.

Of course, the easiest way to integrate with the family is to marry the sisters.

However, he was a righteous man. Why would he resort to such a thing? Furthermore, after all these, all he would gain would be the acceptance into the Realm Alliance as one of their own.

Judging by the sisters' temperament, he could easily guess that something like that must have happened before. In fact, it did not end up well. Otherwise, these two sisters would not have ended up in the hollow.

"In fact, dream masters are rather liberal about this. I don't think Shuhua is a woman of chastity. In fact, she might have ended up here because someone else tried to have both her body and her fortune and therefore ended up in a conflict?"

Ye Shuhua followed behind Fang Yuan. She had no idea what Fang Yuan was thinking about. Otherwise, she might be infuriated to the point where she might kill Fang Yuan.

Now, she was only focusing on executing her duties properly. Suddenly, she spoke with a gentle voice. "My lord, please be careful. All these survivors are rather skilled to be able to survive until now. The one you should pay attention to is Sun Jue from the Source Seeking Sect. He is naturally gifted and has already reached the 3rd Tier of Illusionary Divine at a young age of 23! In fact, he

was not forced to join this death trial, but instead, he volunteered himself!"

"Other than him, there is also Yi Xie from the Evil Divine Sect. He is 59 this year and is the cruelest among all. As for dream masters without an organisation, there is one called Liu Ru. She is a lady but her Magical Binding Technique is shockingly powerful!"

"Mmm!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and glanced towards the direction of Sun Jue.

If what Ye Shuhua had said was true, then Sun Jue must really be talented, or at least stronger than him if he did not have the ability to use the stats window.

'Of course, this person might have a strong backing. His background might be as interesting as mine. Otherwise, it is really hard to explain how he would have such a progress.'

On the other hand, Yi Xie was a handsome middle-aged man with white hair. There was an evil vibe coming from him, which made Fang Yuan subconsciously take more notice of him.

However, as soon as Fang Yuan looked over, Yi Xie could detect it and respond by looking over as well, with a mysterious glare in his eyes.

"Haha... why not come over and have a conversation?"

Yi Xie started to burst out laughing. "I don't think any of us should set our sights on the treasures in the centre of the hollow. However, there must be some treasures in this palace. Why not work together and split the treasures afterwards?"

"Brother Yi of the Evil Divine Sect, I agree with your words!"

Among the lone cultivators, Liu Ru was clad in green robes. With a willow branch in her hands, she nodded her head in agreement.

Although she might appear weak, she must have the ability to be

able to survive to this stage. The situation was at a tensed balance, and any slight commotion would surely result in a chaotic massacre.

"That's right!"

Although there was a huge reward in the centre of the hollow, most other dream masters agreed with Yi Xie. However, everyone looked at each other with much suspicion, as though everyone was thieves.

"If all of us have a common consensus, then why are we wasting time?"

Sun Jue took a step forward. "Those hiding inside, listen up. I'll advise you to obediently open up the palace and give up your treasures, and we will spare your lives. Otherwise... we might just wipe out all of you!"

"The demons from the outside world!"

In mid-air above the palace, a silhouette of a human appeared. He had the appearance of a person from Da Qian, but he had a small horn on his forehead and a pair of green wings. "This is the territory of the Horned Wing Tribe. Please retreat!"

As he flapped his wings, strong gusts of wind started to pick up. He had an extremely strong spiritual will and seemed comparable to an Elemental Opening spiritual knight.

"What's this..."

Fang Yuan was stunned as he looked up.

He had once seen a dream person created by a dream master. However, such races of dream people were extremely rare.

"Brother Fang, are you shocked? Among the dream people, although most of them have the appearance of a human, some Prominent Divine dream masters would interestingly create a different type of human, for instance, crossing beasts with

humans..."

Ye Shuhua started to explain.

Although her family was down and out, her knowledge and experience were still with her.

"Interesting!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan stroked his chin. "We might even see other species of humans in this hollow!"

No one really paid any attention to the warning of this Horned Wing Tribe member.

In the cruel world, it was the survival of the fittest. Who would care about ethics?

Even though these dream masters might look like animals fighting each other, it would be the same situation, or even worse, if the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters were to be in their place.

"You don't seem like you want to accept our gracious offer!"

Sun Jue laughed. Without waiting for Fang Yuan and the rest, he struck first. "Die!"

An invisible wave spread from Sun Jue. The Horned Wing Tribe member was stunned in mid-air. As his eyes turned pale, he started to fall to the ground and infuriated those within the palace.

"How dare you harm our tribe member! We shall kill you!"

"Quickly activate the array!"

"Let's fight these crazy demons with our lives!"

...

In the palace, many silhouettes started to fly around. The males were handsome while the females were beautiful. Some of them even have mysterious tattoos on their face which gave off a spiritual light. Even Fang Yuan had to admit that there was an

alluring vibe coming from the people of this tribe.

"Horned Spiritual Hall, activate!"

At this point in time, many Horned Wing Tribe members were exclaiming as they flooded the palace. Harnessing the power of the array, they collectively formed a gigantic white horn and charged towards Sun Jue.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

As soon as the white horn was formed, a huge restrictive force was felt. Fang Yuan and the other dream masters suddenly felt as though the air around them had transformed into a thick paste of glue and their movements were restricted.

Sun Jue had the same feeling as well.

Against an array created by a race created by a Prominent Divine dream master, the only thing Sun Jue could do was to roar and equip himself with a dark-scaled armour. Transforming into a human beast, he struck his claws forward.

"Rumble!"

After a huge explosion, the white horn crumbled and became sparkles. Sun Jue remained where he was. Although there was black blood flowing from a huge wound on his chest, he continued to laugh. "Although the palace itself is a huge magical equipment, the people in it are useless! This is its maximum power! If all of you don't strike now, when will you strike?"

Since he had already initiated the fight, 10 over dream masters started to join in without hesitation. They started to gather elemental energy from the heavens and earth, creating a colourful glow which struck the palace.

Even though most of the dream masters were holding back and not using their powers to its fullest potential, the combined force was still shockingly powerful.



With continuous streaks of fire and lightning striking the palace, it was as though the palace was about to face its destruction.

"Freeze!"

At this moment, the runes inscribed all around the palace started to glow once more, forming a thick layer of ice as a defensive wall.

"Is this a... dream beast master?"

Fang Yuan casually released two streaks of Fire Sword. Looking at the crazed Sun Jue, his eyes widened. "Indeed... those from the Source Seeking Sect are all crazy!"

In the cultivation of a dream beast master, they would undergo many transformations in the initial stages. In the first 3 Tiers of the Illusionary Divine stage, they would be able to transform into different beasts and would experience an increase in their powers. At the 4th Tier, they would be able to transform into a magical beast!

Of course, the most feared stage of their cultivation was still at the 7th Tier. If they were to achieve the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, they would be able to call upon a thousand animals as troops, and fighting against 10,000 soldiers would be a piece of cake.

"Kacha!"

10 streaks of light landed on the icy defensive wall, shattering it.

After another huge explosion, cracks started to appear on the walls of the palace. The array started to become inactive. As soon as it became completely inactive, there were exclamations of shock.

With a roar, Sun Jue continued attacking in the form of a black scaled beast. He leapt onto the roof of the palace like a meteorite, smashing a hole. With that, his killing spree commenced.

The other dream masters started to enter the palace as streaks of

light with bloodshot eyes. Other than looking for treasures in the palace, they were also looking for opportunities to kill each other.

As flames broke out in the palace, the troubled Horned Wing Tribe members started to wail in despair.

Seeing this scene, Fang Yuan remained silent and refused to take any action.

# Chapter 324: Retaliate

---

"Lord, are you not going?"

Yu Shuhua's eyes glistened. "Don't let them have all the treasures!"

"Sister!"

Yu Shumin tugged at her sleeves, revealing an unpleasant look.

She was young and had matured under the protection of her sister. Therefore, she was still rather naive.

Thoughts ran through Fang Yuan's mind as he revealed a smile. "I'm not greedy. However, I feel that something is not right!"

"Is something wrong?"

Ye Shuhua blinked her eyes.

"That's right... In the world, there are the heavens and fate... Similarly, in the hollow, there should be a higher being's spirit. If that is so, then the Horned Wing Tribe would be the natives and we would be the demons from the outside world!"

Fang Yuan smiled as he recalled his experience in the Water Realm.

"As the invasive species, never mind if we are pillaging off their resources. If we become cocky and go on a killing spree, we would attract too much attention! That's it... You could argue that we are Illusionary Divine dream masters with unparalleled abilities and strong backings from the outside world. However, now that the seal over the hollow is still intact, the stronger dream masters cannot yet enter the hollow, but instead, we are already inside! Notwithstanding the fact that there might be a higher being here, do you not think that there might be other highly-skilled people in this hollow, which has an area as large as 2 regions in Da Qian?"

As soon as he spoke, Ye Shuhua broke out in cold sweat. "Then

what about them..."

"They either think that their backing is strong enough, or they are just letting off steam. Their actions might even be part of their own grand scheme of things... Of course, if we don't join them now, we might have to face their combined powers afterward!"

Fang Yuan snickered.

"Then what should we do?"

Ye Shuhua was frantic. She could neither hold up against being a sacrifice for the hollow or go against the other dream masters if they were to combine forces.

"What else can we do? Let's just leave!"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders and looked beyond the horizon. "It might be too late even if we were to set off now!"

"Eh? Why is that..."

Ye Shuhua glanced at the horizon. A few black dots started to appear and were rushing towards them. They were all members of the Horned Wing Tribe. However, they had 2 pairs of wings on their backs. As they collectively flapped their wings, an intense gust of wind started to form and an invisible wave of energy started to spread outwards.

"Demons from the outside world... how dare you!"

Seeing the damaged palace, the raging flames and the countless corpse of their own tribe members, their eyes became bloodshot. "All of you... die!"

"Whooo!"

As the strong winds ensued, a current of green-coloured wind descended from the skies.

"It's the reinforcements from the Horned Wing Tribe. Timely!"

"They're not just fast but strong as well! They seem to be

comparable to a 5th Meridian Wu Zong, and their bodies are covered in runes, granting them natural abilities to control wind! They might just be as powerful as a 5th Tier spiritual knight! Collectively, they might be on par with a 4th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan sighed once more. "Let's not delay. Move!"

The 3 of them were further from the scene of destruction. However, the dream masters within the palace were stunned.

"Reinforcements from the Horned Wing Tribe? All of us thought that the palace might have hidden treasures for it seemed luxurious. What a pity... we cannot continue our search..."

Yi Xie looked up and without hesitation, he disappeared underground in a black glow.

"Let's kill them to avenge our tribe members!"

Only Yi Xie had such an ability; the other dream masters were left behind, not knowing what to do.

Against the wind current, all of them could only defend. As soon as they realised what was happening, the roof of the palace was already blown apart. A few 4-winged Horned Wing Tribe members were looking down from above with menacing glares.

'D\*mn it... this spiritual aura!'

A few dream masters quickly composed themselves. "4th Tier of Illusionary Divine? If all of us combine forces, we might just be able to take them down!"

However, a few dream masters with quicker reactions had already executed their own techniques to escape. How would there be enough dream masters to combine forces together?

The remaining few dream masters were surrounded and attacked. Their bodies were torn apart.

Some of them cried out loud before their demise. "I am from

Baize Mountain. How dare you do this to me! Are you not afraid that your tribe might be wiped out?"

However, all effort was futile in front of an enraged group of Horned Wing Tribe members. They were still killed.

As they died, their blood and corpse were quickly absorbed by the space around them, which made the entire place appear red.

...

"We have 20 sacrifices, and that's enough!"

Old Mother of Tianmu, Elder Smelter, and Old Xue glanced at the blood-red sandbox and were elated. "Let's combine forces to break the seal!"

"Rumble!"

An invisible force broke through from mid-air and descended. Even the hollow was shaking from the intense force.

"The sacrifice is complete. It is only a matter of time that we will be able to reap the rewards from the hollow and destroy the seal. However, we still need some time. In fact, about half a day's time..."

The few highly-skilled dream masters remained neutral.

The hollow was the ultimate goal! How much can the weak dream masters reap from the hollow in half a day's time? It was insignificant!

"The only thing we need to be cautious of is the Hidden Dragon Guards!"

A spiritual will spread across the mountains. "The Divine Lotus Cult and the Evil Divine Sect have passed down news! Although they have successfully created chaos, they were quickly suppressed. It was as though the royal family knew what was happening!"

"Tianmu Mountain is the fruit of my labour. I have put in place

38,000 Green Wood Magical Seals. Even the Hidden Dragon Guards will take a long time to break through all those seals and locate us..."

Before she could complete her sentence, there was a rumbling sound! The entire cave shook.

"What's that?"

Her expression quickly changed. From mid-air, a few black silhouettes appeared. "Greetings... all of you!"

"D\*mn it!"

Old Xue exclaimed as an illusionary shadow of Sen Luo Hell descended upon the cave.

Tongues of flames were everywhere, and the ground was filled with bones!

In a moment, the cave had transformed into hell! This was something only a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master could achieve!

"Indeed, the Changli Mountain Hollow!"

As the few silhouettes surrounded the sandbox, they broke out into laughter. "Our master has always been meticulous. Do you think you could hide from him using your childish tricks...? Have you asked us for permission?"

Amidst the laughter, the space in mid-air suddenly opened up, allowing a huge black hand filled with curses written all over it to stretch in.

"Ghostly Magical Palm?!"

Elder Smelter exclaimed, and there was fear in his words. "Who would've thought that you Hidden Dragon Guards would invest so much!"

As he spoke, his body glowed and immediately, 9 fiery dragons appeared and flew towards the weird-looking hand.

"Rumble!"

As the flames landed on the weird-looking hand, it started to catch fire. The temperature started to rise and the rocks around the cave started to melt.

However, the large hand was unaffected by the heat. Instead, it continued to stretch forward.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

Amidst the hellish environment, be in flames or bones, everything was crushed as the hand surged forward.

Finally, the 9 fiery dragons revealed their true physical form. Clutched by the hand, they exploded one by one and turned into a green smoke.

"How dare you!"

Seeing that the weird-looking hand was going for the sandbox, Old Mother of Tianmu roared. A sun appeared behind her and its rays shot down towards the hand.

"Chi! Chi!"

Like how hot oil would sizzle when in contact with water, the weird-looking hand stopped in its tracks. The curses all over the hand started to disappear and the flesh of the hand started to melt, revealing a pale-white skeleton.

"You dream masters have already become the lackeys of the Imperial Court and deserve to die!"

Behind Old Mother of Tianmu, many void spaces started to open up, revealing a hidden force within the spaces. In an instant, they transformed into a chain and held the huge hand before ripping it apart.

"Crrrrk!"

This was akin to many dream masters combining forces. Even though everyone only contributed a little, the end result was



devastating.

The weird-looking hand split and disintegrated into ash.

"Hehe... Don't try to hide from me, the few of you! Changli was, after all, a Prominent Divine dream master! Furthermore, he has done a lot of research regarding the realms of dream masters. How will we, the royal family, let the few of you take his hollow for yourselves?"

A silhouette spoke with a hoarse voice as it glared at all of them.

Behind the silhouettes, the space started to become unstable. The Green Wood Magical Seal started to break down, as though something mysterious was 'squeezing' its way through.

"The Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards?"

Old Mother of Tianmu appeared stunned. "The Imperial Court knew about everything! There must be a spy among us!"

...

"Eh? This hollow..."

Although Fang Yuan did not know what was happening outside, he could vaguely feel that something was wrong.

The Ye Family sisters raised their heads. The originally clear skies were now tainted with a hue of red. Not just that, there was the vague rumbling of thunder. The sky started to vibrate continuously as though it was about to be ripped apart.

"This must be due to something big happening outside... but it is none of our business!"

Fang Yuan continued casually. "Instead of wasting our energy looking at the sky, why not start to collect some resources for ourselves!"

As his sword light shimmered, streaks of lightning responded around him in a second.

"This direction..."

However, Ye Shuhua noticed something different and became curious. "That is the direction in which the 4-winged Horned Wing Tribe members came from. Are you intending to ambush their nest?"

That's right!"

Fang Yuan laughed. "If that small village could arouse the greed of Sun Jue, what do you think would lie at their nest?"

After rushing for a few hours, new plots of plantation appeared before them. In the middle of it all, there was a huge palace. It had the same vibes as the palace before but was many times large. It could be considered a town.

Considering the fact that they had deliberately concealed their tracks, they were still undetected by the Horned Wing Tribe and could even see some of the tribe members farming in their plantations.

"Now that the seal has yet to be lifted, the both of us have a secret technique, with the help of a magical equipment, which will allow us to detect the spiritual aura of the area around us!"

Ye Shuhua turned around and commented.

"Oh?"

Fang Yuan's heart wavered a little as soon as he heard her. Their rich family heritage indeed left valuable techniques behind for them. Even the value of such a technique would be quite high. "Then I'll have to trouble the both of you!"

"No worries, it's something we ought to do!"

Ye Shuhua placed her left palm together with Ye Shumin's palm. On her right hand, her thumb and index finger came together, forming a rune which shimmered as though it was a butterfly flapping its wings.

As the same time, a mysterious wave of energy spread out and slowly, it died out.

"Congratulations!"

After a moment, Ye Shuhua opened her eyes. "The strongest member of the Horned Wing Tribe in the vicinity is comparable to the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. However, they are quite a number of them, 15 to be exact! 10 of them are stationed around the palace, guarding at their posts!"

As she shook her finger, an average-looking flat image of the hall appeared in Fang Yuan's eyes

"What's this?"

Of course, Fang Yuan did not entirely believed her and used his own methods to gather information. Although he could not receive information as detailed as the sisters, he could still roughly sense the situation. "Alright, let's go there!"

# Chapter 325: Ancestral God

---

In the side hall.

10 2-Winged Horned Wing Tribe members sat in a circle, guarding the centre of the hall. All of them had looks of worry on their faces. "Ancestral God had warned us about the invasion of demons from the outside world. How do you think things would turn out, now that our tribe leader had led reinforcements to aid the other tribe members?"

"Our role is to guard the Ancestral God Hall! With this hall left behind by our Ancestral God and the array in place... Even if any evil demons were to attack us now, we would still be able to hold up until tribe leader and the rest return."

...

The 2-Winged Horned Wing Tribe members communicated with each other through telepathy and most of them were, in fact, composed.

To them, since they had already lived in their own world for the past 1,000 years, they would assume that this would be their way of life for the future.

Furthermore, they had the protection of the Ancestral God.

"Whooo!"

However, at this point in time, a thin fog started to appear within the hall.

A few Horned Wing Tribe members were stunned, while a few others started to pass out.

The techniques of dream masters were targeted at sentient living things. Therefore, these tribe members would also be affected by it.

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, there was a huge rumbling in the hall and a golden glow started to appear.

As soon as the fog came in contact with the golden glow, it dispersed quickly like how snow would melt under sunlight.

"This is not good... we're being ambushed!"

One of the Horned Wing Tribe members shouted hysterically and roared. However, it was already too late.

"Whoosh!"

A streak of sword radiance suddenly appeared before him. As it shimmered, it sliced down, bringing with it an intense wind and streaks of electricity!

"Bang!"

With a single slice, this tribe member had its wing sliced into two as it exclaimed and retreated.

"Is this an elder?"

"It's an enemy!"

"It's one of the demons! Quickly activate the array!"

The remaining Horned Wing Tribe members were frantically running about. Seeing this, Fang Yuan smiled and flicked his finger. "3 Talents Sword Array, rise!"

"Rumble!"

A huge sword array appeared and 3 streaks of pillars with sword energy rose up towards the sky. There were inscriptions on each pillar, and there were essences of water, fire and thunder in all of them.

This array could be used to trap one person, as well as a whole group of people!

In the sword array, 7 to 8 guards of the Horned Wing Tribe were trapped as they hollered.

"Even 3 dream masters at the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would need some time before they can break out of my 3 Talents Sword Array!"

Without looking at them, Fang Yuan barged into the hall.

"Bang!"

As the door gave way, the interior of the building came into view.

This palace was extremely big. There was an altar full of offerings in the middle, and on the altar, there was a tablet erected for a god. There were curtains draped around the altar, but that was all he could see. In the surroundings of the hall, there were a few large doors which seemed like storerooms.

"How dare you, demon! How dare you show disrespect to our Ancestral God!"

The remaining Horned Wing Tribe members were frenzied as they rushed towards Fang Yuan. Even those who were heavily injured did the same.

"Ancestral God? I'm not interested!"

Fang Yuan let out a sigh as 4 spiritual meridians started to form behind his back. As he shouted, the level 7 elemental power in him exploded from his body. "Scram!"

With his cultivation level as a dream master at the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and a martial artist at the 4th Meridian, the entire space around him came to a brief halt at the moment where he released his power. A vague and illusionary fist appeared before 2 of the tribe members. In the blink of an eye, both of them had flown backwards and blood spewed from them.

"I can only take them down because of the element of surprise. However, I can at most hold on for another 30 minutes. Once the 3 Talents Sword Array is broken, I will have to be on my way!"

As thoughts whizzed through his mind, Fang Yuan took no notice

of the statues in the centre of the hall as he rushed straight to the storerooms.

There might be treasures there! However, Fang Yuan knew for himself that he did not have the ability to take too many risks. Therefore, it was wise to quickly reap some treasures for himself.

"Bang!"

Although there were protective runes all over the door, Fang Yuan paid no attention to it. As his hands shook, the level 7 elemental power in him exploded, decimating the door.

"Eh? This seems like a storeroom which stores Yellow Grain Rice. This amount is enough for a few hundred people to consume over a year... For a normal dream master, this supply would be able to last him for a few hundred years... I'll take them all away!"

As the Mountain River Pearl glittered, sacks of Yellow Grain Rice were transferred into the pearl. There was a great feeling of satisfaction in his heart.

Although he was quick, he had already spent 15 minutes in the storeroom with rice. He could sense a crashing sound from the 3 Talents Sword Array outside and straight away, he knew that the Horned Wing Tribe members had already realised that they could not defeat him one on one. Now, they were combining forces to destroy the 3 Talents Sword Array, accelerating its rate of destruction.

"Des.....troy!"

Without hesitation, Fang Yuan broke through another storeroom door. Inside, it glittered everywhere. There were piles and piles of elemental crystals, thrown onto the ground like miscellaneous items. There were a few rows of wooden shelves as well, and the crystals on the wooden shelves gave off a mysterious glow and seemed to be vibrating a little.

"They're all good stuff! I'll take them!"

With the wave of his hands, the few wooden shelves disappeared. After which, he started to collect the elemental crystals.

The spiritual energy within the hollow was concentrated and therefore, the quality of elemental crystals here was rather good.

However, Fang Yuan was only halfway done in collecting all these treasures when 3 streaks of light flew towards him and entered his body. They were his 3 magical swords.

"My 3 Talents Sword Array is already broken? They are indeed comparable to 10 dream masters in the Illusionary Divine stage combining forces! I cannot belittle them!"

He quickly stopped his looting and rushed out.

"Water and Fire, be heartless! Thunder, kill! Explode, my Level 7 Elemental Power!"

"Rumble!"

With the combination of his martial arts and sword essence, an intense explosion immediately blew a hole in the roof of the palace. A green current of wind started to circle Fang Yuan and soon after, it shot up into the sky as well.

"Ancestral God..."

The Horned Wing Tribe members who were late to the commotion broke down immediately. "Please punish this sinner!"

"Mmm?"

Amidst their prayers, the curtains around the altar were lifted, revealing a silhouette of a human.

A golden glow started to descend and slowly started to transform into flames.

Fang Yuan glanced at the statue and was utterly stunned.

The statue was donned in a golden armour and had a dragon's head, but a human body. It was awe-inspiring but very different



from the Sage Changli that he had imagined!

"Who is this statue? Why does he look like a dragon? Wait a minute... no one said that Sage Changli had to be a human..."

"Roar! Roar!"

The might of the statue exploded and with it were the godly powers which governed the hollow! It was a dragon's might!

"How can such a mere statue have such a might! Even the true dragons in the Water Realm cannot compare to this!"

Fang Yuan quickly retreated. Suddenly, he realised that 10 members of the Horned Wing Tribe had started to activate a certain array. In mid-air, a golden glow transformed into a golden dragon's claw with 5 digits. The claw swiftly struck at him.

"This is a real dragon's claw!"

In a moment, Fang Yuan felt that his entire surroundings froze. There was a chattering sound heard, and his expression quickly changed.

At this point in time, in his actualised dream world, an object had responded as it let out a faint dragon's roar.

"Eh?"

In a split second, Fang Yuan quickly reacted and retrieved the water dragon pearl from his actualised dream world before shielding himself with it.

"Roar! Roar!"

Dragon roars were heard as the illusionary shadow of a small golden-green water dragon appeared. It had a small horn on its head and had 4 dragon claws from its body. Every claw had 3 digits and the dragon's tail was dull-looking. This was the figure of a true water dragon.

As soon as the energy of the water dragon appeared, the golden dragon claw hesitated in mid-air before lightly striking at Fang

Yuan.

Amidst the golden glow, Fang Yuan flew backwards.

"This dragon god..."

In a green hurricane, Fang Yuan wiped the blood stains from his mouth. He was in his actualised dream world.

The water dragon pearl was still there. However, the water dragon in it had become smaller and there were a few visible cracks on the surface of the pearl.

This was the result of his opponent giving him mercy!

"Dragon God or Ancestral God... which one was it?"

Fang Yuan remained confused. "Sage Changli has already passed on, and this is a fact. Could the Ancestral God be the spirit of the hollow, since it could possess such a might? Or could it be a spiritual object which the Sage might have collected when he was still alive? Anything could be possible... Such a powerful being like the Sage might be able to leave his consciousness around even after his death to continue to harness his power and might..."

"However... it is already a fact that he had become a true dragon. Fortunately for me, I have a water dragon pearl which seems to come from the same source. With that split-second of hesitation, I was able to escape with slight injuries... From this, I am sure that this Ancestral God is only a consciousness and does not have a mind of its own..."

Without further ado, he quickly made his way to the meeting point to rendezvous with the Ye Family sisters.

...

Shortly after they had met up, there was a soft voice in the winds.

"Hehe... Both of you girls should follow me. What does that youngster know? Does he know how to treat the both of you

right?"

It was Yi Xie's voice.

No one knew what special technique he had executed for him to be able to track them all the way here and intercept them.

Transforming into a black fog, he surrounded the sisters and started to speak in a lustful voice. "Although Fang Yuan's magical swords are powerful, he has recklessly attacked the headquarters of the Horned Wing Tribe. By now, he should have been heavily injured. Why would I fear him? Hehe... All these headquarters would surely have the protection of their own gods. This is a top-secret piece of information and I'm sure the both of you are clueless about it! This is the difference between a long heritage and a strong foundation... I believe that even your Ye Family would meet your ultimate downfall!"

"Stupid Yi, you seem gentlemanly, but do you really think the both of us are clueless as to your cultivation methods?"

A glittering butterfly started to flap its wings amidst the black fog, protecting the two girls. With a voice filled with hatred, Ye Shuhua shouted. "Even if we have to die, we will not submit to you!"

"If you are rejecting my kind offer, then I shall have to force you!"

Yi Xie's eyes glistened. "Even though the both of you might still be virgins... let's see how long can the both of you last after experiencing my Colourful Lustful Fog!"

As he spoke, his black fog quickly transformed into a colourful glow.

In the colourful fog, the girls' expression started to change. Tears started to well up in their eyes as their breathing became rapid. Their faces slowly became flushed, as though they were intoxicated.

"How dare you!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan was enraged as he quickly sliced the Sundering Thunder Sword towards the fog.

"Whoosh!"

With a few streaks of lightning, the fog dispersed.

"Eh... how could you have retreated with no injuries?"

Yi Xie was still the handsome middle-aged man he always was. Seeing that something was not right, he continued to execute his technique and in addition, he pointed a finger at Fang Yuan. "Rise!"

"Rumble!"

The black fog started to thicken and black statues began appearing around Fang Yuan. They were ferocious looking and their eyes were bloodshot.

"Roar! Roar!"

Amidst the roaring of beasts, a mysterious array was formed.

"Forming an array with his thoughts! A dream array master?"

Fang Yuan still had to spend effort in arranging the swords into the array. However, with the snap of his fingers, Yi Xie had created an array without any effort in making arrangements. This was the special ability of dream array masters!

"That's right... My 4 Evils Ultimate Array can undergo 72 changes. Even if you might break it, I still have the 8 Ghosts Sealing Array and the 9 Child Ghost Mother Array waiting for you. How long do you think you can last?"

Yi Xie was indeed powerful, and he let out a cold laugh. "I can feel that you seem to be hiding a lot of things. I shall kill you before slowly searching your body..."

# Chapter 326: Evil Force

---

"There's something with me that attracts you?"

Fang Yuan's expression changed as he summoned, "3 Talents Sword Array, arise!"

"Chi! Chi!"

The water, fire and thunder swords emerged as a sword array was summoned within the 4 Evils Ultimate Array.

The sword essence was piercingly fierce and threatened the evil spirits. The black-coloured beast was enveloped in it at once and turned into powder.

"Using an array to defeat an array?"

Yi Xie was slightly amused and sneered, "Such a half-baked array and you dare to display it?"

"Heeheehee!"

"Hahaha!"

On Yi Xie's body, 9 streams of black energy appeared and turned into ghostly spirits of babies which laughed eerily non-stop. The 9 spirits dived into the black fog.

Immediately, another powerful array was cast, it was the 9 Child Ghost Mother Array!

Although Yi Xie was belittling Fang Yuan, he was actually wary of him and immediately displayed his killer move!

"Be careful..." Ye Shuhua warned.

Within the colourful butterflies, Ye Shuhua's determined voice could be heard, "This array is very sinister and powerful, it is formed from 9 tainted spirits! It can severely corrode and damage magical equipment!"

"There's no point talking now!"

Yi Xie chortled, streaks of black-green energy appeared and corroded the sword essence. It had even spread to the sword's body itself.

"Thunder sword!"

Fang Yuan made use of his spiritual will and the thunder sword coruscated with lightning. The black-green energy was purified from the thunder sword. However, the water and fire swords were not able to withstand the black-green energy.

"Last time, when the 3 Talents Sword Array was broken, the body of the divine swords were also damaged? Thus, if I explode the sword essence, these filths would be gone at once..."

Fang Yuan knew that the swords were powerful as they had previously fought against 10 Illusionary Divine dream masters and were also attacked by dragon claws before. However, Fang Yuan had a sense that the swords' powers were no longer at their strongest.

The most obvious clue was the fact that the dream elemental force in his actualised dream world was depleting at an alarming rate. It had already dropped to a very critical level.

"Doesn't matter if it's a normal dream master, a dream master at the Illusionary Divine stage or a dream master at the Prominent Divine stage, their main cultivation was to forge magical energy through harnessing dream elemental force from the dream realm to create numerous things... At this moment, I can't believe my dream elemental force has become insufficient!" Fang Yuan thought.

Since he had fought with so many similarly powerful people, this naturally happened.

"If I explode the three swords now, I still can break out of this 9 Child Ghost Mother Array and escape with the power of the Modest Wind Sword... Whereas, for the Ye sisters, they can only

rely on themselves!" Fang Yuan came to the conclusion of escaping after pondering for a moment.

"Once I recover, Yi Xie will be no match for me!"

He waved his right hand and an illusionary green-coloured windy sword essence appeared. It was agile and nimble.

"3 Talents Sword, explode!"

If they were normal magical soldiers, Fang Yuan would have greatly cherished and valued them.

However, for dream soldier masters, once they were successfully formed, even if they were damaged, they could easily be recovered with dream elemental force. Thus, Fang Yuan was naturally not parsimonious and used this move readily.

"Kaboom!"

"Kaboom!"

"Kaboom!"

The three swords exploded and a shocking red and blue light mixed with lightning dazzled as they spread

"Ahh... I will fight till the end, 9 Child Ghost Mother, appear!"

Yi Xie's hair was in a mess. He bit his tongue and spat out a mouthful of vital blood.

In the array, 9 ghastly green ghost babies appeared and combined into one, forming a horrifying and disturbing shape which surrounded Fang Yuan.

"Heeheeee!"

Once the Ghost Mother appeared, a destructive and baleful force could be felt. The astounding sword essence shot to the skies.

Flame, frost, lightning...

An agglomeration of ripples spread across the surroundings and even ripped a layer off the ground.

A mushroom cloud rose and once the dust settled, a large crater was left at the original spot.

Although the Ye sisters' butterflies were powerful and they were not at the centre of the explosion, they were still flung far away. Their butterfly defence was broken and both of them were unconscious.

"Dead? Unlikely!"

Fang Yuan tensed his lips, walked forward two steps and looked at the centre of the crater.

"Bang!"

The upper layer of soil blasted off and Yi Xie emerged from it. The corner of his lips was bleeding and his shirt was broken, he was extremely ravaged.

"Things are bad..."

Fang Yuan became tense as he saw Yi Xie.

Although Yi Xie appeared ravaged, it was merely minor injuries for him. Whereas, Fang Yuan had already used up all his moves.

"Time to leave!" Fang Yuan thought as a green-coloured wind appeared beside to bring him away.

"Don't think about escaping!"

Yi Xie's eyes were bloodshot, he turned into a stream of light and charged forward. With a wave of his hands, a black rope appeared. Yi Xie was relentless; he was determined to have Fang Yuan dead.

"If we were to fight, even though my dream elemental force is almost fully depleted, my Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique has not been used at all yet..."

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes and challenged, "Since you are courting death, I will let you die!"

Even if he was forced into such a predicament, he could still



breakthrough to the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine in the middle of the battle by using the heavenly energy which he kept in his actualised dream world!

This was his last card up his sleeve, it was not supposed to be easily used.

But since Yi Xie was courting death, Fang Yuan decided to kill him.

"Hand it over!"

Yi Xie roared, "I feel... there's something I want in your body! It's even clearer now! Once I have it, I will definitely be able to advance to the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine!"

"Advance to the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine... could it be..."

Fang Yuan felt uneasy and looked at his own body.

He just realised there was a layer of dark red glow on his body.

In his actualised dream world, as the dream elemental force was almost fully depleted, streaks of evil forces appeared and became stronger. They had a dream-like power.

"The evil force from the Illusionary World of the Three World Mountain!"

Fang Yuan's expression turned awful at once, "After I depleted my dream elemental force and lost the power of my divine swords, this happens?"

"Smack!"

Fang Yuan could not spend so long thinking, his eagle claw grabbed the black rope and his palm was scalding hot. It was as though it was being seared by flames.

"Hand over the thing now!"

Yi Xie screamed crazily as he whipped the black rope.

An evil devouring force reached his palm and was incredibly

corrosive.

"What an evil weapon!"

At that moment, even Fang Yuan's martial art elemental force could not protect Fang Yuan's palm. Under the corrosive force of the black rope, both his palms rotted and blood oozed out.

"Heehee... this Soul Devouring Rope is powered by my dream elemental force. Once it sticks to its prey, the prey will definitely die!"

Yin Xie laughed wickedly, "If you don't want to turn into a pile of pus, quickly hand over the thing I want!"

"You want it? Fine, I will give it to you!"

A ruthless energy grew from the bottom of Fang Yuan's heart which caused him to gave up on trying to escape. He suppressed his thoughts of breaking through and the blood-red glow on his body became even stronger.

"This evil force is like a nuisance to me, but since you want it so much, I shall give it to you!" Fang Yuan guffawed as his voice turned darker.

In an instant, a layer of bloody glow emerged from Fang Yuan's palm and Yi Xie's dream elemental force disintegrated at once. The blood-red glow spread along the black rope and reached Yi Xie's palms.

"This is... heavenly evil force! You have Heavenly Evil Dream Elements in your body?! Ahhh..."

Yi Xie let out a bloodcurdling scream as both his hands wizened at once, it was as though his blood and flesh disappeared in an instant.

"Let go... quickly let go!" Yi Xie shrieked as he was panic-stricken.

Whereas Fang Yuan had accurately felt this evil force's joy, it was as though it finally found its delicious prey and was greedily

devouring the opponent's everything.

"Spare me... spare my life..."

Yi Xie's eyes were filled with terror. He could not let go of both of his hands as he instead became the Soul Devouring Rope's sacrificial offering. Slowly, his arms, shoulders, chest, et cetera wizened.

Once the flesh on his cheeks disappeared, he became a blood red skeleton.

"Crackle Crackle!"

A bright red blaze engulfed his corpse. Immediately, the entire dream master was gone. Even the hollow could not snatch it in time.

"Heavenly evil force? Heavenly Evil Dream Element has become stronger?"

Before Yi Xie perished, Fang Yuan wanted to stop. However, the evil force was so strong and adherent that it could not be let go.

At that moment, once the flames extinguished, Fang Yuan felt that an evil force stronger than before had returned to him. Furthermore, it felt extremely filling.

The evil force entered his actualised dream world and settled down. Streaks of mercury-like dream elemental force appeared and the dark red streaks could no longer be seen.

"Horrifying!"

Although it defeated his powerful opponent and even recovered his injuries, Fang Yuan was not even slightly happy at it.

"This elemental force is indeed a type of dream elemental force. Heavenly evil force? Too bad Yi Xie has already died, if not, I could have asked him..."

He felt that this force did not rely on his actions and had its own will.

Obviously, Fang Yuan could not allow such an uncontrollable force to be present in his dream world, especially one that came from a dead person!"

"Once I leave, this hidden danger must be settled immediately!"

He glanced at the battlefield. Yi Xie was long gone, his flesh and elemental force were fully devoured and there was not even a piece of cloth left behind. The only thing left behind was the black rope.

At the side of the battlefield, the Ye sisters were still unconscious. The elder sister held on tightly to a piece of jade. The jade had a layer of clear glow to it which forcefully protected the sisters.

"Unconscious until now? It is a form of blessing!"

Upon a closer look, Fang Yuan realised they were really in a coma. He sighed as his intentions to kill them faded.

What happened earlier on was too bizarre. If these two ladies saw it, he would have to kill them both. However, since they were unconscious, he no longer had to.

"Hmm... the two of them are fine, just that their sea of consciousness were disturbed when I exploded my magical soldiers just now. If they were outside, I can just leave them to sleep and recover, but inside here..."

Fang Yuan took the jade and formed two flowers made of water. He sprinkled the water onto the two sisters as two streams of dream elemental force transferred to them.

The two ladies were not severely injured and these were enough.

"Ahh!"

Ye Shuhua shrieked and opened her eyes, she scratched her head and said, "My head hurts... where's Yi Xie?"

"Sister!"

Ye Shumin hugged herself and said, "Why am I wet? It's so cold!"

"You..."

Ye Shuhua rolled her eyes at Fang Yuan. She realised both of them were revealed to Fang Yuan. She quickly blocked her sister's body and shrieked, "No looking!"

## Chapter 327: Hidden Dragon

---

Ye Shuhua didn't say anything at first, hence Fang Yuan didn't really notice much.

However, after taking a good look, he couldn't help but nod to himself, "Not bad, not bad, they're of a decent size. Especially the sister.....I never thought..."

"You..."

This time, Ye Shuhua was so angry to the point that she didn't bother hiding her skills. She started to circulate her energy to dry her clothes outright. When her gaze turned to her surroundings, which were in a bad state, she was shocked, "You chased Yi Xie away?"

"Not chased away, killed!"

Fang Yuan revealed the black rope in his hands.

"I never thought... I really never thought..."

Ye Shuhua's eyes were filled with shock, "This Yi Xie is rather famous among those in the 3rd Tier of Illusionary Divine Stage. He can form arrays with his mind and also has the assistance of 9 Child Ghost Mother. In the past, he fought against someone in Illusionary Divine Tier 4 and managed to retreat successfully. Who knew that he would die in your hands!"

"I was just lucky!"

Fang Yuan waved it off, " we'll leave as soon as possible once you've partially recovered. There has been too big a commotion here. It's too dangerous!"

"Ok!"

Although Ye Shuhua didn't know that they had already fulfilled the required numbers for the blood ritual, she could remember the mutual deception they had gone through. Hence, she had no trust

for dream masters, possibly even less than for members of the Horned Wing Tribe!

"This time I managed to get a great haul so it's still good enough. After this, I'll find some cave to hide in and quietly wait for a powerful being to take control of this Hollow!"

"Pui!"

Right after Fang Yuan finished his sentence, Ye Shuhua couldn't stop herself from saying, "Find a cave... to hide in?"

"In front of powerful beings, we are all just ants. In order to live, so what if I hide in a cave? I'm only afraid that when the time comes I can't even hide in one!"

Once he was done, Fang Yuan swiftly left with a disappointed expression on his face.

On the other hand, the hairs on Ye Shuhua's arms instantly stood up and she gazed towards the skies.

The blood-red hue had already covered most of the sky while small black cracks began to appear and spread outwards.

"This... This isn't taking control of this Hollow; it's tearing the place apart right?"

Her lips slowly parted and disbelief appeared on her face, "Why is this happening?"

"I'm afraid it can't be helped!"

Fang Yuan remembered that Tianmu Mountain was just nearby and a serious look flashed in his eyes.

...

Da Qian World, Tianmu Mountain.

The originally grand peak had already been split through the centre, almost as though as something had squeezed it to the point of breaking.

In the skies, cracks started to appear and spread, reflecting the situation in the Hollow in it.

"The sky is cracking! The sky is cracking!"

At the nearby large city, people said their goodbyes and left, gazing towards the sky. Some knelt and prayed while others fled towards the Jade Capital with fear written all over their face.

Cultivators were also among them.

Everyone knew that cultivators were much more knowledgeable, but at this point in time, they were even more afraid.

With this sort of situation, some higher powers must have clashed with each other. One did not have to look far for the horrific example of what happened to the Divine Lotus Cult, hence who would dare to gamble with their lives?

Thus, they brought their whole families, including all young and old, to flee to the Jade Capital.

Three beams of light appeared above the clouds and they looked towards a large, grand, and almost demonic figure with expressions of fear on their faces, "Lord Hidden Dragon? Are you going to start an all-out war with us?"

The Old Mother of Tianmu asked with an ugly look on her face.

"Just the likes of you can't represent the Five Great Alliances!"

Lord Hidden Dragon only appeared as a shadow but it could cover the entire sky and sun and had an oppressing aura. Its voice had an unusual charisma about it, "For someone at my cultivation level, what's the purpose of lying to you? Your five great factions only begrudgingly joined forces for this Hollow, and the Prominent Divine Stage dream masters will only sit in the back lines at the very most, not even coming to the front lines!"

"Indeed... After you defected to the Imperial Court, you've become more shameless than before!"



Elder Smelter and Old Xue looked at each other, speechless.

Lord Hidden Dragon, the Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards, was a true Prominent Divine Stage powerful being! To others, he could be called the creator! A Sage!

However, for a Hollow, he actually sent a magical clone over.

If they knew about this in advance, they would have asked the top experts in their ranks to attack!

But now it was too late!

'Although I have the ability to cross worlds, I cannot be disturbed while doing so... Now that Lord Hidden Dragon has personally come forward, releasing energy from a distance has become impossible!'

Elder Smelter's mind moved quickly, "It's just a Hollow, so why does it seem like the Imperial Palace will stop at nothing to obtain it?!"

Producing a Prominent Divine Stage expert required aptitude, determination, and luck. It would already be very good to be able to produce a dream master at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine Stage even with the complete inheritance of Sage Changli, much less if one only had a Hollow.

At this moment, Old Mother of Tianmu and co. looked at each other and reached the same conclusion, "No matter what, the Imperial Court must not obtain this Hollow! Even if we destroy it!"

"I'm afraid that there are secrets that I have not decrypted in this Changi Hollow!"

Elder Smelter roared, "Let's attack together. Our opponent is just a magical clone. I don't believe that he would come here personally!"

"You guys..... really want to fight me? Are you not afraid that you will die here?"

Lord Hidden Dragon grinned, "Don't forget, we're close to the Jade Capital! Even if you ask your alliance for help now, which of our sides will arrive faster?"

This was the geographical advantage.

Old Mother of Tian Mu and co. were stunned. They couldn't think of anything else other than hate on the appearance of the Changli Hollow at this location

"Dao Friend Hidden Dragon... Why do you have to appear in person for this small fight between the young ones? Wouldn't that be a little embarrassing?"

At this moment, a crisp voice echoed down from the heavens. Rainbow coloured clouds appeared with the silhouette of a green imperial chariot above them.

Dragons and phoenixes danced and two rows of servant boys and girls played the drums and blew reed pipes. Purple energy shot towards the heavens, reaching thousands of metres high.

"It's another magical clone of a Sage!"

Elder Smelting and Old Xue stared at one another with a suspecting look in their eyes.

"So it's Lord Yin!"

Lord Hidden Dragon chuckled, "My imperial court might have large territories and great industries, but its expenditure is great as well, so I can't do things as extravagantly as you do and have to be a little more prudent... You want to fight over this sort of small benefits with me?"

"Originally... I was going to pass on this Hollow to give you some face. However, great intelligence may appear to be stupidity. On the surface, you seemed to be insulting yourself, but actually, you were insulting others, so I must come to fight with you over it!"

When Sages hatch schemes, while they did not know the past and

future completely, they could get a clear idea of the general flow of events.

The ploy of baiting one's opponents with a show of weakness wouldn't work at all.

Lord Hidden Dragon remained silent, this being the first time he felt that things were steering beyond his control.

"Lord?"

Two figures behind him asked. Despite being at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine Stage, they were just insignificant servant boys.

"Inform King Qian to assemble the men and get ready for an all-out war!"

Lord Hidden Dragon directly sent out the message, "This Hollow is extremely important. Even though all dream masters research into the mystery of the source, Sage Changli, who has not reveal his knowledge in this area, is possibly the person closest to the truth. This previous information must not be obtained by the enemy!"

"Source... The source of dream masters' powers, that world of the legends?! Sage Changli actually found traces of it?"

The two figures only then realised what was going on, and a chill ran down their spine, "We understand!"

...

Rumble!

Mountains collapsed and the ground split open; floodwaters clashed against molten lava!

Inside the Changli Hollow, the ground cracked, earthquakes, hurricanes, volcanoes... All sorts of natural disasters burst forth in an instant, giving everyone the impression that the end of the world had come.

In reality, to this small Hollow, it was really armageddon!

"Go!"

A rock the size of a small hill landed and the Ye family sisters stared at it blankly without daring to make a single step.

In that crucial moment, Fang Yuan's body turned into lightning and he grabbed the both of them while flying out of the affected area.

Rumble!

Behind him, a loud noise rang out. Shards of rocks flew everywhere, each of them not weaker than the hundred kilogram rocks used for sieging a city.

"Kill!"

Fang Yuan's eyes turned cold as he calculated where to step. Waving his hands, two streams of fire and water sword essence were produced, which cut the giant rock into two.

Crack!

Web-like cracks appeared on the surface of the ground, and underneath them, dark red lava bubbled as though as it was a frothing river.

Suddenly, a pillar of fire shot into the sky, bringing with it a fountain of lava. This ignited the plants around, causing a giant forest fire.

"This.....What is going on?"

Once the three of them fled to the edge of a large lake, Yu Shuhua asked in a shocked state.

"The Hollow is collapsing. Can't you notice something this obvious?"

Fang Yuan was frustrated as he retorted with a question of his own.

"Impossible!"

Ye Shuhua shook her head, "Even if others started fighting with the royal family outside, the many lords don't have the power to destroy the Hollow...Unless..."

"Unless it's a creator, a Sage that made a move!"

Fang Yuan coldly replied.

"Elder sister... I'm so afraid!"

At the side, Ye Shumin grabbed her elder sister's sleeves tightly while she was distraught.

"Since the Hollow is collapsing, these calamities are simply an appetiser.....The true test has yet to come! Regardless whether it's the wind of destruction or the spatial tears, we'll die if we meet either of them!"

Giving out a long breath, Fang Yuan added on, "Now our only hope is that the Prominent Divine Stage powerful being's side will emerge victorious quickly and take control of the Hollow completely, then perhaps we might have the chance to live!"

"Impossible!"

Ye Shuhua gazed at the frothing surface of the lake while smiling bitterly, "This Changli Hollow is very close to the Jade Capital so the Imperial Court has the geographical advantage while out Five Great Alliance can't even maintain an appearance of peace for long. Perhaps they are even in conflicts with each other, hence it's impossible for them to be united. Otherwise, would there still be any issues with the Imperial Court?"

"That's bad!"

Fang Yuan guffawed, "The Sage is like a giant crocodile and if it swallows this piece of fat meat by taking control of the Hollow, we will be reduced to powder!"

"This is the worst case scenario, so what we experience shouldn't be that bad right?"

Ye Shuhua meekly asked. Even she did not have much confidence in her question.

.....

"Demon!"

At the center of the Hollow, in a cluster of buildings that were over a hundred times more majestic and beautiful than anything that existed before, six Horned Wing Tribe members were jolted awake. They gazed at the breaking sky, roaring in rage.

Their figures were tall and perfect with four pairs of wings on their back. The feathers on their wings had a slight tinge of gold and their horns looked like they were made of pure gold.

As the sound waves propagated, a terrifying amount of energy spread outwards, stabilising the palace of many kilometres in radius.

"The Hallow is shattering. The grand tribulation that the Sage prophesied has come!"

They looked at each other, and all of them were very determined, "The treasures that the Sage left behind must not be taken by the demons from the outside!"

# Chapter 328: Influence

---

"There's no other choice, we can only awaken the Ancestral God as our last form of resistance! Once the hollow falls apart, we shall each escape with a portion of the treasures!"

As the key leaders of the hollow, these members of the Golden Horned Wing Tribe immediately understood what was happening and planned accordingly.

"Kaboom!"

A gigantic hexagram appeared on the ground, its centre was the palace's Ancestral God Hall.

Immediately, a serene aura could be felt. It was as though something that was in 10,000 years of deep sleep had suddenly awoken.

"Ancestral God, please complete your last duties!"

Six members of the Golden Horn Winged Tribe kneeled down as tears flowed down their faces. In an instant, they turned into six streams of meteors and flew into the horizons.

"Don't think about leaving!"

Suddenly, the world paused for a moment.

Even the destruction of the hollows seemed to stop for a moment.

In the skies, numerous cracks merged together and formed into the shape of a door.

A dainty jade hand emerged from this gigantic indescribable door.

Just with this palm, the door seemed to collapse as it could not withstand it.

The jade white hand pointed lightly and one of the golden meteors was stopped. The Golden Horned Wing Tribe member in

it bellowed, "Demon!"

As it bellowed, numerous golden flames blazed from its body which formed a small sphere.

However, in an instant, the jade white hand broke space-time and appeared beside the Golden Horned Wing. Even as it tried to escape or defend, it was all useless, the jade white hand touched the area between its eyebrows.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

He floated in the mid-air and suddenly, his body cracked like it was made out of porcelain. Between the cracks, a golden liquid slowly seeped out.

"Boom!"

Under the explosion, this Golden Horned Wing Tribe member turned into powder.

A bit of light emerged from its body and was grabbed by the jade white hand immediately. The jade white hand was elated and went for the other golden coloured meteors at once.

"Where do you think you all are going!"

A green lightning split the skies as a similar green-coloured arm emerged from it. The green arm grabbed one of the meteors and crushed it into pieces.

"Ancestral God!!!"

The remaining four meteors let out a sorrowful wail.

"Roar!"

The palace below crumbled as a bedazzling and bright golden light shot up to the skies and turned into a golden dragon.

Its antlers resembled those of a stag, its neck that of a snake, its belly that of a clam and its scales those of a carp. There were four claws on its abdomen and each claw had five toes. There was an



inverse scale below its neck, it was indeed a five-clawed true dragon!

As it saw the hollow crumbling and turning into ashes, coupled with the grisly sight of the two dead members of the Golden Horned Wing Tribe, it let out a loud roar.

"Woong! Wooong!"

Large amounts of power from the hollows gathered around its body which formed large heavenly clouds.

The dragon was interconnected with the surroundings!

Once the five-clawed golden dragon appeared, the whole hollow momentarily went back to normal. It displayed its shocking might.

At that moment, the true dragon's eyes had a hint of blood-red in it as he looked at the owner of the two huge hands.

"Eh... just a transformed spirit of the hollow! What's there to be afraid of?"

The two huge hands sent out a wave of force, it obviously did not undermine the true dragon.

The spirit of the hollow had complete authority over the hollow, it could harness the energy of the hollow to suppress outsiders. Even Illusionary Divine dream masters at the 7th Tier would be wary inside the spirit's home ground.

"The spirit of the hollow's power is only limited to inside the hollow, the hollow is crumbling, what's there left?"

A fearsome force from the outside was tearing apart the hollow, Changli Mountain Hollow was collapsing at an even faster pace.

"Roar!"

The true dragon was majestic, its body was protected by the heavenly clouds. It blocked the two huge hands and allowed the remaining Horned Wing Tribe members to evacuate.

"Ancestral God... hollow... tribe members..."

The four remaining Golden Horned Wing Tribe contained their tears as they could only fly farther.

"Kaboom!"

Suddenly, black fog gathered at one point of the horizon and turned into a huge black-coloured hand. Its fingers were like mountains and grasped one of the Golden Horned Wing Tribe member, "The two of you are too slow! Since I am here, I have to rip this hollow apart!"

"Kaboom!"

The moment the voice spoke finished, a tremendous force from outside caused part of the hollow to immediately disintegrate, it was as though it was bitten off.

"Roar!"

One of the heavenly clouds on the five-clawed golden dragon's body disappeared.

As it faced the three humongous hands that covered the skies, his power slightly weakened.

"Haha... small dragon, you better obediently surrender and call me master! I may even spare your pathetic life!"

A terrorising thought emerged and viciously suppressed the true dragon.

Suddenly, the five-clawed golden dragon's eyes fully turned blood-red. He turned in a circle and encircled the three huge hands, there was a destructive atmosphere in the air.

"D\*mn it! This spirit of the hollow would rather self-destruct for his cause!"

A slightly exasperated voice could be heard. Immediately, a shocking explosion happened.

The explosion shot to the skies, the wave of destruction was extensive and cracks appeared in space. Only a few meteors were intentionally protected as they were sent out of the area to beyond the horizons.

As the hollows trembled, blood rain fell from the skies signifying the sorrows of the land.

Immediately, it was as though the hollow lost its core strength that kept it together. Large fissures emerged as the entire hollow began to break apart and disintegrate.

...

"This... What's happening?"

Even Fang Yuan and the Ye sisters experienced the impactful force.

The blood rain also brought about a feeling of inauspiciousness.

"Blood rain falls from the sky evoking the sorrows of the land... the spirit of the hollow has died..."

Ye Shuhua's face turned ashen at once, "If he was merely subdued, this wouldn't happen... Indeed, it was a brawl between the sages..."

Those below the Prominent Divine dream masters were merely nobodies, she obviously had no confidence in surviving.

"You forgot the most important thing! Once the spirit dies, what will happen?"

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth.

"The hollow will disintegrate?!"

Once Ye Shuhua spoke, an earthquake more than ten times stronger than the previous ones could be felt.

Furthermore, this time around, not only did the lands crumbled, space too!

The obliterating storm began to brew in the hollow.

Space was shattered into pieces as pieces of land was being thrown into the storm of chaos.

"Dead, we are so dead!"

Ye Shuhua despaired as she looked at such a scene.

"There is actually a solution..."

Fang Yuan stared into the fathomless void and he had an idea, "We can't wait for this entire land to be ripped apart by this space obliterating storm! We have to jump out first!"

"You are saying... true form dream traverse?"

Ye Shuhua was clever, she immediately understood.

"Indeed... if this was like the usual, once we dream traverse with our true form, if there were no coordinates of other realms nor protection from rare treasures, we would be turned into powder! Whereas this Changli Mountain Hollow is different since it is not a realm but a part of Da Qian Empire, there is a huge possibility that we would be sent to Da Qian. I think there's a 70% chance of success that is worth a gamble!" Fang Yuan rapidly suggested.

The hollow was crumbling, they would have died if they stayed there. If they took the risk, they still had a chance of survival.

"I guess that's the only way!"

Ye Shuhua clenched her teeth, "We'll do it together!"

"Of course..."

With the protection of the sword essence, Fang Yuan also fully utilised his Golden Metal Body as they went against storm and arrived at the verge of the land.

At that moment, the boiling lava had already disappeared. What was left was only the silver coloured storm.

Rocks, water currents and even living things were all sucked into

the storm. The destruction left behind an eerie silence.

"We must avoid the closest storm and throw ourselves into the calmer void further away!"

Ye Shuhua hugged her sister and clenched her teeth.

As she was talking, a loud boom could be heard as the land they were on tremored heavily and separated away towards the void.

"There's no more time, hurry!"

Fang Yuan whipped out his sword and carved out a piece of rock. He and the Ye sisters rode on top of it.

"Huuu! Hruuuu!"

Pieces of this huge rock melted away as it met the storm.

Fang Yuan held the sisters tightly as he suddenly jumped and turned into a stream of sword radiance. He dashed across the storm quickly and entered the dark space.

Immediately, a terrifying force surged and torn apart the three of them. It was like a powerful torrent which caused them to be unable to control their own bodies.

In an instant, the three of them were separated inside the turbulence.

"The void's turbulence is indeed horrifying, it is a totally different feeling from what an elemental clone would experience..."

Fang Yuan felt the weightlessness and as he felt powerless inside the void, it made him clenched his fist and thought, "One day... I will make sure even this void cannot restrict me!"

Moments later, a powerful force could be felt.

He opened his eyes wide and saw a golden meteor entered the void rapidly.

"That's..."

Inside the golden radiance, there was a Golden Horned Wing Tribe member which had four pairs of golden wings.

"Two pairs of wings was equivalent to an Illusionary Divine dream master at the 4th Tier... then this winged beast?"

Fang Yuan's hair stood at once.

However, this member of the Golden Horned Wing Tribe did not bother about Fang Yuan at all. It was using all its strength to flap its wings and fly away, it was as though it was escaping from being killed.

"You... can't escape!"

All of a sudden, Fang Yuan saw a jade white finger chased into the void too.

There was only one finger, however, it was akin to a sculpture that was beautifully carved out of jade. Its might was fearsome, it even caused the void's turbulence to retreat.

This was evidently one of the jade white hand's finger. However, he did not know why only one finger was left.

"The treasures left behind by the sage cannot be taken by the evil demons!"

As the Golden Horned Wing Tribe member hollered, its facial expression was even more resolute and determined.

"It's useless!"

The jade white finger shook lightly and appeared right in front of it.

"Die!"

Even the void's turbulence moved aside as the powerful force resonated.

"Ahh... I will fight till the end!"

The Golden Horned Wing Tribe member howled. The horn on

his head was lit in golden flames and its whole body turned translucent as a beam of light emerged.

"You..."

Suddenly, a shocking explosion could be felt.

Even though Fang Yuan was not at the epicentre, he spat out a mouthful of blood at once, "Perish together? Wait a minute..."

He thought of something and immediately took out the water dragon's pearl. As he focused his elemental force into it, a green coloured water dragon appeared.

After the explosion, a mysterious glow that appeared tried to escape out of the void. However, due to the influence of the pearl, it entered the water dragon's pearl and stayed there.

"It's successful!"

Fang Yuan was relieved, however, he was immediately thrown deeper into the void's turbulence.....

# Chapter 329: The He Family Caravan

---

The sun was setting and the wind was chilly.

As the surroundings became dim, the crows cawed upon a tree as they glared at a person beneath the tree, as though they were waiting for him to rot so that they could feast on him.

The person flipped over. Although there were blood stains on his face, he appeared young. Suddenly, he opened his eyes and released a streak of white energy from his mouth.

"Whoosh!"

"Caw! Caw!"

The crows shook and a few feathers fell off. They quickly flew away in shock and would not dare to return.

"Mmm... Although I am injured, I am rather lucky not to have died!"

This person was Fang Yuan. As he examined himself, he realised that he was severely injured.

"The 3 magical swords are long destroyed and I will need a lot of dream elemental force to rebuild them. My physical martial artist body has been injured as I travelled through space. I can't even move a muscle now!"

He gathered the last of his energy and started to absorb the elemental energy from his surroundings, initiating his recovery.

"Forget about the 8 Gates Sword Array. This is not the time to use my reserved heavenly energy to achieve a breakthrough. I can slowly recover in the near future. This place seems not too far from civilization. I should prioritize the recovery of my physical body and regain some energy to move before thinking of anything else..."

Although the hollow was dependent on Da Qian Empire, the



disruption and chaos within the hollow would mean that he could possibly end up somewhere else other than Da Qian Empire.

However, from the spiritual energy around and the geographical features which he could see, the chances that he was in Da Qian Empire was very high.

"The problem is that I don't know where I am, and I don't know about the fight at Changli Mountain Hollow..."

With this thought, he recalled the ultimatum between the Golden Horned Wing Tribe and the finger of the jade white hand and how he had benefited from it.

"That mysterious glow might just be the essence of the entire hollow. It was really lucky for me to have absorbed it... Both parties had fought to their deaths and in all that chaos, even the Prominent Divine dream masters would not be able to know. And if anyone attempt to predict what had happened, it would be laughable. The technique of a dream future master would require extreme details before they would be able to make an accurate prediction. Now that everything is in a mess, they would be extremely lucky if they could even start the prediction in the right direction..."

"Of course, to ensure my safety, the only way is to quickly increase my cultivation level!"

With a high level of cultivation, one would be able to resist the predictions of dream future masters even without the use of secret techniques or magical weapons. Furthermore, logically speaking, if one had a high level of cultivation and if the dream future master were to attempt to predict one, he would instead experience a backlash!

"Gallop!"

On a path, galloping of horses was heard. A caravan slowly made its way towards Fang Yuan.

"Head, a person is lying beside the road!"

A front scout quickly came over and shouted his findings. "He still has a breath. With all these abrasions on him, could he have fallen off a cliff?"

"He is just a mere vagrant. No need to pay any attention to him!"

The head of the caravan came over and glared at Fang Yuan as though he was a dead man.

Fang Yuan felt indifferent towards him.

After all, in this world, there were very few good and bad people. The majority were neutral. Since they were strangers, the head of the caravan had no obligation to help him and would, therefore, prefer to avoid trouble. This was only logical.

'I cannot remain here, lying by the roadside...'

Fang Yuan thought to himself as there was a mysterious look in his eyes. He was prepared to drop hints to make the person before him change his mind.

"Wait up!"

As a carriage approached, a young man around 15 years old came out of it. He was wearing a silk robe and his face was full of life. It was evident that he came from a rich family and was brought up with a silver spoon.

Seeing Fang Yuan, he quickly exclaimed. "We should save him. After all, we are saving a human life. Just take it that our family is accumulating good karma!"

"What a kind heart, my master!"

As soon as their Young Master spoke, no one would go against him. Two men started to approach Fang Yuan. "Oh... he's still able to move?"

"I'm afraid that my internal organs are damaged and I cannot move at the moment!"

Fang Yuan replied with a bitter smile.

"Let's free up a carriage for him to lie down! We'll let Old Zhang take a look at him!"

The consultant instructed a few men to carry out his instructions as he had a worried look on his face.

As the caravan took a short rest, they quickly resumed their journey. Fang Yuan laid in the carriage and felt a little dizzy from the suffocating confined space. As he focused, he could vaguely hear the conversation that was taking place outside the carriage.

"Young Master, you're rather reckless this time.... If he was a passer-by who fell and injured himself, then all is fine. However, Old Zhang had concluded that his limbs were fine and that he had sustained internal injuries! This means that he is likely to be a martial artist! Although we have a Wu Zong in our family, it is ultimately unwise to get ourselves into unnecessary trouble..."

The consultant spoke in an extremely soft voice. He could never imagine that Fang Yuan would be able to hear what he had just said.

"Uncle He, I've thought of this as well... However, it must be fate that we encounter him! Who can explain fate? Who knows, we might need his help in the future!"

The young man's voice was heard. He did not rescue Fang Yuan out of kindness, but although he might be thinking of making use of Fang Yuan's help in the future, his act was good enough. Fang Yuan remained indifferent and continued to focus on his breathing.

"Since I am being rescued, I don't have to recover in a rush. I should slowly restore my foundations first to get rid of any hidden injuries which I might not have detected..."

From all the fighting that he had gotten himself involved, to the chaotic scene before the hollow collapsed, all of these were

insignificant to Fang Yuan. He had only sustained all these injuries because of the ultimatum between the two parties and the pressure that he had undergone from forcefully re-entering Da Qian Empire.

"Lord, it's time to eat!"

After half a day, the carriage doors opened. A servant with a bun on her head served a box of food. "I'm Little Ju! Young Master has instructed for me to bring you food!"

As he opened the box, the fragrance of food filled the air. It was porridge with minced meat, and just the smell of it was enough to make anyone salivate.

"Are you... really unable to move your hands?"

Little Ju looked at Fang Yuan and was on her guard.

"It's not that. I just feel an excruciating pain whenever I move my hands, and I would feel pain in my entire body as well..."

Fang Yuan appeared helpless.

"Alright then!"

Hearing him, Little Ju had no choice but to assist him. She picked up the spoon, scooped up the porridge, blew at it to cool it down before feeding it to Fang Yuan.

"Thank you!"

Although it was forced, Fang Yuan smiled. He could not tell her that all he needed was elemental energy from the surroundings and did not require food. However, he still needed physical food for his physical body to recuperate and therefore, he had no choice but to eat.

'Although this is normal rice and not spiritual rice, the meat is extremely nourishing and it is not too bad...'

After two bowls of porridge, he could feel warmth in his stomach. He started to feel more comfortable. "Anything else?"

"Hehe... this meat is the flesh of a spiritual beast and was specially prepared for Young Master. You've already benefited, so what more do you want?"

Little Ju started to keep the cutlery and took a towel to wipe Fang Yuan's face. After cleansing him, her face was red with embarrassment. "Who would've thought that... you would look so charming?"

'Is this servant thinking too much?'

Fang Yuan secretly rolled his eyes. His appearance was average but he was young. Furthermore, he had experienced a lot and therefore seemed mature for his age. It was not something that Young Master could have.

"What a pity..."

Little Ju seemed to have recalled something. With a sigh, she took the food box and left.

'Is it a pity that I am not your Young Master? That's true too... Servants would want to have the opportunity to get in bed with their young masters and help them give birth to a few children so that they could rely on their children once they become old...'

Fang Yuan felt that it was rather interesting to think about how the servant's emotion had changed.

Since the time when he had learnt martial arts and started on the path to becoming a dream master, he had distanced himself from the lifestyle of normal humans.

"Hey... Let me tell you guys. The person which Young Master rescued is quite decent-looking..."

"Could you have fallen for him, Little Ju!"

"Pui! That's not true... I think you're thinking too much!"

Outside the carriage, chatterings were heard. The few servants sounded bold, which made Fang Yuan speechless.

...

It was nighttime and the caravan was silent.

Fang Yuan laid lifelessly on the carriage. Suddenly, he could feel the elemental energy in his dantian gathering, making him feel elated. "I just need another day for me to restore enough energy for everything to become as they were before!"

Suddenly, a hoarse voice was heard. Fang Yuan froze before he started to snicker.

As the doors to the carriage opened, a black figure entered. It had the appearance resembling a monkey and seemed to be in his thirties.

The figure was moving about at first. However, as soon as his eyes came into contact with Fang Yuan's eyes, he froze.

'I wanted to steal from him while he is still paralyzed. Brother Zhang has told me that although his clothing seemed tattered, he has a lot of valuables with him... Who would've thought that he is awake?'

After a while, the black figure smiled. "What now? Why not you try moving? Or shouting? Our caravan deserves a reward for rescuing you. It is only reasonable for me to take my share..."

As he threatened Fang Yuan, the black figure stretched out his hands towards Fang Yuan.

"You're courting death!"

Fang Yuan let out a gentle laugh. Was he really incapable of doing anything considering that his physical body was paralyzed?

The cultivation of a dream master focused on the mind. If the caravan had ill intentions towards him, in the end, he would not be at the losing end.

At this point in time, two streaks of glow shot out from his eyes and entered the eyes of the skinny person in front of him.

The person was stunned and had an unpleasant look on his face.

Against the bewildering technique of a dream master, even if it was at the most elementary stage, normal people would still become stunned and vulnerable.

"Your name?"

"Sun Ergou!"

"How old are you?"

"33!"

"Who is the owner of this caravan? Where is your destination? And... which region are we in?"

...

Since a lab rat came to him voluntarily, Fang Yuan generously accepted Sun Ergou's assistance as he continued to grill him for answers.

With a straight face, Sun Ergou spit out everything.

After a while, Fang Yuan waved his hands and allowed Sun Ergou to leave, as he smiled to himself. "Indeed, we are back in Da Qian!"

Through the information he had obtained, Fang Yuan now knew that he was in the Cloud Region of Da Qian. It was already thousands of miles away from the Jade Capital. He was fortunate enough to have not ended up in the oceans or vast deserts.

Furthermore, this was the He Family's caravan. The true purpose of the caravan was to send their young master to learn martial arts. They had performed a few trades along the way and were headed for the Golden Sun City.

"Did the young master of He Family... display traits and potential of becoming a dream master?"

This would surely be a big thing in their family. The entire family had shown their support. This caravan and a few shops in

Golden Sun City would chip in to pay for their young master's training.

Fang Yuan remained silent. He did not pay particular attention to the young master's potential previously.

"In conclusion... there's nothing much!"

As he sighed, he recalled the crumbling hollow.

"The pieces of the crumbled hollow are beneficial to the dream masters at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Of course... that intense destruction does not seem to be them dividing their share equally, but seemed to be more of a self-destruction by the hollow! Even Sages might not be able to completely contain the hollow... With the pieces of the crumbled hollow exploding in all directions, there might be a few pieces entering Da Qian, and they might form spiritual lands or perilous lands or of their own. I wonder which fortunate or unfortunate person would stumble across these lands..."



# Chapter 330: Compensation

---

"Demon! Die!"

A member of the Horned Wing Tribe exclaimed as he rushed down.

"I'll kill you!"

On the brink of death, Ruan Junxian gave a cold look as he left his left arm in a vulnerable spot.

From his right hand, spiritual soldiers started to appear and entered the tribe member's chest.

"Chi!"

Blood spurted everywhere.

"It seems like you mutated people can bleed as well, and your blood is also red!"

Ruan Junxian was breathing heavily. The member of the Horned Wing Tribe fell and with its dying breath, it mumbled something. "Demon... I curse all of you!"

"It's the survival of the fittest! If you have the ability to curse me, I'll die with no regrets!"

Hearing the tribe member cursing at him, Ruan Junxian took in a deep breath. With another slice of his sword, he had beheaded the member of the Horned Wing Tribe.

"I believe this is the 3rd day since I have entered this secret place!"

Looking at the surroundings, he let out a sigh.

After becoming a Wu Zong, he had left Longhu Mountain. However, he did not return to his family, but instead, roamed the land in search of opportunities.

After leaving a region, he arrived at this county and had

encountered something big.

The White Sun Star had fallen onto the surface of the region, directly altering the geographical features of it! A thousand miles of flatland had instantaneously transformed into a mountain range! In addition, there were scattered plots of spiritual land!

Naturally, the cultivators among the county would gather around the mountain range. They had engaged in a frantic search for resources and territory within the mountains.

He was competing with them as well. However, along the way, he started to encounter the mutated race.

"Or should I say... dream people! A new race created by a dream master in the Prominent Divine stage..."

Ruan Junxian's eyes widened. "Based on my investigations, the division ahead is defending a Divine Tree. The 'Qinghua Spiritual Fruit' which had grown on the tree was rumoured to be able to increase one's intellectual powers and increase one's magical proficiency. It is a well-known treasure of the dream masters! If I can obtain that fruit, I would be able to cultivate as a dream master!"

After seeing Elder Smelter's might, he started to doubt the path of cultivation of martial artists and spiritual knights.

In order to make a name for himself in Da Qian and to protect his family, there was only one thing he could do: become an all-mighty dream master!

No matter how high the cultivation some spiritual knights might be, the nature of their powers would still remain the same.

"In the past 3 days, I have caused chaos in the surroundings and have gone on a killing spree against this mutated race. They must be the most highly skilled things in the entire division... After their entire defence have been weakened, I will be able to take them on!"

Although he was injured, there was a burning passion in his eyes.

"4 days! I can spend another 4 days at most! Once the powerful organisations find this place and send their highly-skilled people, I would not be able to take anything for myself... I shouldn't be too greedy. After getting the spiritual fruit, I will leave immediately!"

Thoughts ran through his mind as a look of determination appeared on his face.

...

In the Dream Realm.

After recuperating, Fang Yuan started to communicate with the realm.

His figure appeared on the streets. It was illusionary and appeared weak.

"In the Dream Realm, one's appearance would be dependent on one's mental strength and spiritual will..."

He sighed silently before looking at his inscription plate.

On it, many messages were blinking. Most of the messages came from 3 sources: The Realm Alliance, The Ye Family sisters, and Liu Mengmei!

"The Ye Family sisters are fine? It seems that they are rather fortunate as well..."

After replying to their messages, he took a look at Liu Mengmei's messages. This lady was indeed conscientious. She claimed that she had already slowly reduced the Divine Lotus Sect's grudge against him and had already exchanged for the complete version of the 9 Smelting Technique. All that was left was for Fang Yuan to meet up with her to collect the recording.

Fang Yuan sighed as he thought about how she had helped him.

All that was left were messages from the Realm Alliance.

"Hehe..."

At the thought of the alliance, Fang Yuan chuckled.

Previously, Elder Smelter had sent him as a sacrifice by using a delivery mission as an excuse. This was infuriating for Fang Yuan.

"If they do not offer me any compensation of sorts, then it is not worth it to continue staying in the Realm Alliance!"

Although the agreement was to train him up and that he had benefited quite a lot from the hollow, the alliance was still too overboard in doing this to him.

As soon as he saw the person contacting him, he was surprised. "Who would've thought that he would represent the Realm Alliance to contact me!"

After a moment of silence, he replied to the message.

"Haha... Brother, you have finally returned! I've been worrying about you!"

Not long after, a middle-aged man in green robes appeared. His body was surrounded by a colourful pill's essence. It was Feng Xinzi.

"Haha, I want to congratulate Brother Feng for finally achieving what you have wished for, which is the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine!"

Fang Yuan greeted Feng Xinzi.

The person in front of him was Feng Xinzi, who had placed himself in isolation.

His spiritual aura had become much more mysterious than before, and the pill energy around him had a hint of spiritual property. It was obvious that he had already achieved a breakthrough and had entered the 4th Tier!

The 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine meant that one would be able to create spirituality and was a significant stage on its own.

After crossing this stage, Feng Xinzi would become one of the

most powerful dream alchemy masters in Da Qian.

"Furthermore... he had achieved his breakthrough in a peaceful environment. However, I would need to risk my life outside. This is the difference in our predicaments..."

Fang Yuan silently sighed to himself.

There was a surging energy at Feng Xinzi's forehead. It seemed like after his breakthrough, he had an equivalent rise in his rank within the Realm Alliance. He not only had the increase in his level of rights but also had some unofficial rewards.

"I owe this to you!"

As Feng Xinzi spoke, he walked with Fang Yuan and both of them arrived at the Realm Alliance Mountain. Casually, he opened a small hall, boiled some water, prepared tea and invited Fang Yuan to sit. "All thanks to the alliance, I have advanced to become a 5th Leaf Cultivator and with that comes added convenience!"

Even if he did not reveal this to Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan would have found it out on his own and therefore, there was no need to hide.

As he poured a cup of tea for Fang Yuan, he smiled. "I was previously unaware of what happened at Changli Mountain Hollow. Fortunately, you are a lucky person. Not just that... you seem to have luck in other areas as well! The two beautiful sisters of Ye Family seem to be very interested in news regarding your whereabouts!"

Feng Xinzi smiled, teasing Fang Yuan.

Very quickly, his expression changed again. "To speak the truth... the Ye Family is a powerful family with a heritage stretching back to many years ago. Although they have fallen and have encountered difficulties, the two sisters are still worthy of being your wife. Which of them would you prefer?"

'Indeed... As one rises up the hierarchy, one would always talk

about worthy of marriage. Are they for real...'

Fang Yuan remained calm. "I only helped them because they are also members of the alliance. I have no feelings for both of them. As for what had happened, what does the alliance intend to do?"

Hearing him, Feng Xinzi sighed.

At this stage, all of them would only talk about their interests and would not pay any attention to all that didn't matter. If he were to continue being hypocritical, Fang Yuan might just leave.

To make matters worse, Elder Smelter had also assigned him a mission of his own. This meant that Feng Xinzi was conflicted.

"Take this... as a rare opportunity! Of course... whatever is yours will be given to you by the alliance! The alliance will credit you with 1,000 contribution points and increase your level of rights by 1, advancing you to become a 3rd Leaf Cultivator. How's that?"

Feng Xinzi remained silent for a while before laying out the conditions.

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head.

To think about it, what else could he do? If he were to remain unsatisfied and complain, he would turn the relationship with the alliance sour and his reward might even be reduced. He knew that there was a darker side to the alliance!

The only thing he could do was to remember this day and take his revenge in the future!

"Very well!"

Feng Xinzi let out a heavy breath. It was already considered good for him to treat Fang Yuan like this.

As for what would happen in the future, Feng Xinzi did not give any thoughts about it. Even if the person before him was a talent, he would still have to train for a long time before achieving the 4th

Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage! To take things further, it would not be as simple as being talented for him to achieve the 7th Tier.

With the wave of his hands, a streak of message appeared in mid-air. It quickly flew into Fang Yuan's inscription plate and the transaction was automatically completed.

'Are you showing off?'

Seeing this, Fang Yuan rolled his eyes.

"Another thing..."

Feng Xinzi took a sip of tea from his cup and took quite a while before he could speak. "Brother, did you gain anything from the hollow while you were in it?"

"Hmm?"

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes. "Don't tell me the alliance wants a share of it..."

"This..."

Feng Xinzi let out a bitter laugh.

According to the plan, Elder Smelter would not care about the rice that Fang Yuan had taken.

However, no one knew that the tables would turn. With the involvement of the Imperial Court and a whole bunch of Sages taking things into their own hands to split up the treasures in the hollow, together with the self-destruction, the few elders including the Old Mother of Tianmu, Elder Smelter and the rest ended up with scraps of leftovers.

With this, they became jealous of the rewards that the alliance members had reaped from the hollow.

Although Elder Smelter did not care about the rewards which Fang Yuan gained, his faction had many other disciples jealous of the reward!

"Brother, please be assured that the Realm Alliance would not be so unreasonable!"

Feng Xinzi blushed with embarrassment, but he had to speak the truth. "Elder has stated that this time, how much you would like to trade would be up to you. However, a few disciples in the realm require their share of Yellow Grain Rice... Your goodwill will not be forgotten."

"If it is a trade, what am I trading it for?"

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin and appeared calm.

"They are all here!"

Feng Xinzi took out a piece of paper. After reading through a few lines, Fang Yuan started to snicker. "I don't seem to see the sincerity... if this is all, then I think there is nothing left to be discussed!"

"Brother, please don't be angry!"

Feng Xinzi knew that the people from the alliance were trying to take advantage of Fang Yuan. "You can lay out your conditions!"

"I will need a piece of spiritual land larger than 60 hectares and the spiritual energy there would have to be more concentrated than normal... Also, after finishing this mission, I would not want to be forced to accept another mission from the alliance for the next 10 years to come!"

After thinking about it, Fang Yuan quickly laid out his conditions.

"Spiritual land? Missions?"

Feng Xinzi was stunned for a moment before he started to smile. "If you dare to request all these, you must have quite a lot of rewards, right?"

"Not too much, but still acceptable..."

Fang Yuan reported a number.



"Alright!"

Feng Xinzi gritted his teeth. "We can give you the spiritual land, but it is too unreasonable for you not to accept any missions for 10 years, and the alliance would lose its reputation. I have a solution to this. I can assign you a guarding mission. These type of missions are extremely easy to fulfil and can earn you quite a lot. You can do this mission for 10 years while you cultivate in peace..."

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan's heart wavered. He did not see a mission of such a nature on the Realm Alliance's rock tablet before. It seemed like it was an under-the-table mission. "I am at Cloud Region. Assign me a nearby mission, as well as a nearby spiritual land!"

"Alright!"

Feng Xinzi quickly agreed. Fang Yuan nodded his head and went offline.

After a moment, Elder Smelter entered the hall. "How was it?"

"This person is rather smart. The number that he reported was close to our estimate. At most, he would keep a few catties for himself, and that is only human nature..."

Feng Xinzi took a bow as he reported.

# Chapter 331: Guardian of the Prosperous Land

---

Golden Sun City.

The caravan entered the city and stopped in front of a mansion. With a few shouts, the goods were being shifted. A few consultants were staring at the helpers as they shifted the goods.

"Lord Fang, are you feeling better?"

A few days before they had arrived, Fang Yuan had already regained the ability to move. He occasionally left the carriage to take a walk and talk with the people of the caravan. By now, he was already rather familiar with the head of the caravan.

The Young Master of the He Family was He Qing. He had a young mindset but was also shrewd for his age. However, that was all.

"Hmm, thank you, Lord He, for your assistance. I must leave today. Your kindness will be rewarded in the future..."

Fang Yuan smiled.

To him, He Qing did not save his life, but rather, assisted him in times of difficulty. Although his intentions were slightly ill, he did not let his heart rule his head. Therefore, Fang Yuan would still repay him for his efforts.

"Lord, are you leaving?"

He Qing was shocked. "Did we treat you with disrespect?"

Based on his observations for the past few days, he realised that Fang Yuan was not a normal person. Sun Ergou's encounter was the best evidence. Therefore, he had plotted to establish good relations with Fang Yuan.

Although Fang Yuan was young, he was matured. His foresight, demeanour and the way he spoke was vastly different from a

normal young man. Therefore, He Qing had unknowingly gained respect for him.

"Fate cannot be forced upon. Furthermore, I cannot trouble you for any period longer than this... This Golden Sun City seems rather hospitable. I am deciding to stay here for a period of time. After I have settled down, I will write a letter to you... With this, I shall wish you all the best in joining the Three Suns Sect!"

"Thank you for your well wishes!"

He Qing respectfully sent him off. As he looked at Fang Yuan's back view, he felt as though he had lost something important.

"Young Master?"

A consultant approached him. "The various goods have been shifted into the storeroom. The checks have been completed. Together with the few times that we have traded along the way, we have a total of 50,000 elemental crystals. This is the accumulated amount that your family have given you. We have already prepared the gifts for your future fellow disciples, master and those that you might need to establish relations with!"

"Mmm, alright!"

He Qing snapped out of his trance and had a cold look in his eyes. "And... what about Sun Ergou?"

"I have followed your orders to chop off one of his limbs, as a punishment to warn the others!"

The consultant immediately replied and broke into cold sweat.

Based on his Young Master, the person which they had rescued was likely to be a spiritual knight. Therefore, they could not afford to show him any disrespect.

"Also, Little Ju has been promoted to become the head of the servants. Her pay has been increased to 10 taels per month!"

He Qing heaved a huge sigh. "Although he might not remember

us, we should still remain hopeful... there is nothing wrong with being prepared!"

"Young Master, you're wise!"

Consultant He took a bow and gained respect for this young master.

The He Family had risen 7 generations ago. Although they were not considered the most senior of families, it was already considered a gamble for them to send their young master to seek a dream master as a master.

Seeing the conscientious young master was like seeing hope for the family.

As long as he manages to become a dream master, their family would be able to progress by leaps and bounds!

...

"Three Suns Sect in the Golden Sun City... He Qing is rather fated to have met me!"

As Fang Yuan went on his way, there was a mysterious smile on his face.

Although the Three Suns Sect was well-known in the city, it was, in reality, only a small sect with a thousand followers. They had 10 Wu Zongs and 5 spiritual knights in the upper management and a dream master as the sect head. This dream master was likely to be a dream master at the 5th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

Among big sects across the regions, it was only common for these sects to have at least a True Divine, True Elemental, or a dream master at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage before the sect could be considered stable.

Of course, being a small family, it was already quite a thing for the He Family to be able to attempt to join the Three Suns Sect. They would rather be the weakling amongst the strong than be the

strong among the weaklings.

"He Qing was aiming at joining the direct disciples of the sect. It would be meaningless for him to become an outer disciple, inner disciple or even a core disciple... He would have wasted his potential in becoming a dream master..."

"However... the head of Three Suns Sect is also a member of the Realm Alliance. The Three Suns Sect can be seen as the exterior influence of the Realm Alliance... I shall spend some effort and help him out as a form of repaying him for his kindness!"

As soon as he found himself an inn, he entered the Dream Realm.

"I am heartened to hear that you, my husband, are alright! I have bought the 9 Smelting Techniques and have hidden it in the Dream Realm for you to retrieve..."

As soon as he looked at his inscription plate, he saw Liu Mengmei's reply and an indication of a certain location.

After all, she was still a reserved Divine Lady of the Divine Lotus Cult and had to consider the fact that onlookers would be looking if she were to meet Fang Yuan face to face. However, she had described a path to the location of the 9 Smelting Techniques and had assured him that it was completely safe.

After receiving the information, Fang Yuan did not think further and rushed on the streets. Soon after, he turned into an alley.

The buildings in the Dream Realm were districts which were split up by the Realm Spirit based on how much contribution points they were paid for. This dark alley was extremely deserted and at the end of the alley, there was a wall. At the corner, there was a dark-coloured mark.

"This is the so-called black market. If it is as such in the realm of dream masters, I can safely assume that the goods being traded on the black market are nothing proper..."

As he pressed against the dark-coloured mark, the wall in front of

him started to cave in, revealing a hidden pathway.

The pathway was extremely short. As soon as he walked to the end of it, he saw a small shop. There was no signboard and the door was aged, as though it would crumble at any moment.

Without hesitation, Fang Yuan took a step in and looked at the counter.

This shop was like a grocery store as it displayed many items on the shelves. However, none of the items had a description of its usage, and it was up to one to deduce the purpose and function of these items.

As Fang Yuan scanned across, his attention was drawn to a crystal box on a small purple carriage.

"I've seen this in the recordings before. It is known as the Purple Blood Carriage and can fly in the skies at an extreme speed... However, the process of making it is extremely inhumane. If I remember correctly, one of the ingredients includes the blood from 49 pregnant mothers. Furthermore, these pregnant mothers need to have a certain level of cultivation and be suited before the blood is drawn from them..."

It was obvious that this shop not only sold improper goods but restricted goods as well.

"Keke... here comes another customer!"

An old man slumped on the tabletop of the counter and exclaimed weakly.

His skin was pale and he had countless wrinkles. From the looks of it, he seemed to be in his nineties. His white hair was long and appeared lifeless.

As soon as he saw Fang Yuan entered, there was a green glow in his eyes. However, he did not seem any more interested.

"I'm here for something!"

Fang Yuan took out his inscription plate.

"Ah, I see it's you!"

The spiritual aura coming from the inscription plate made the old man shake. He stood up lazily from the counter. "Give me a moment!"

He casually walked into the storeroom behind. Not long later, he carried a red box out. "This is the item that your friend had left behind. The seal on it is still there, you can take a look!"

On the surface of the box, there was a red talisman. The spiritual aura on the talisman was extremely familiar. It was indeed from Liu Mengmei!

If someone else other than Liu Mengmei and himself were to open the box, they would burn and die. Only 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters would be able to resist the backlash from breaking the talisman.

"Your friend has already paid for the service to safe keep this item!"

The lifeless-looking old man pushed the box towards Fang Yuan before lying on the table top and drifting off into a deep sleep.

"Many thanks!"

Without another word, Fang Yuan took the box and left.

Although the old man appeared lifeless as though he would die the next moment, Fang Yuan could detect his spiritual aura and knew that his cultivation level was even higher than that of Feng Xinzi!

How could any normal dream master open such a black market?

Before he became stronger, the most he would do was to make use of such black markets. It was unwise to dig up more information about such black markets.

...

As he walked along the streets, he realised that other dream masters had colourful protections around them. Looking at the fog around him, he smiled. "I'm really fearful of death... Unfortunately, I'm not strong enough to do without this protection yet!"

He quickly found a corner before tearing the talisman on the box. With a tear, the talisman burst into flames.

In the box, there was a fragrant-smelling napkin with the embroidery of mandarin ducks on it. Following a certain technique, Fang Yuan could access the technique within the napkin using his spiritual will.

"Considering my level of rights in the Realm Alliance, it is extremely hard for me to obtain the complete version of the 9 Smelting Techniques..."

After reading the first few sentences, Fang Yuan nodded his head in satisfaction.

The techniques recorded in the 9 Smelting Techniques were exquisite beyond words. Not only could they get rid of foreign entities within elemental forces, they also had the effect of purifying one's elemental force.

Of course, this was only limited to the elemental force of martial arts and spiritual knights. As for dream elemental force of the dream masters, it had little effect.

"It's rumoured that there is a continuation to this recordings. It is known as Red Night. I am still in the process of helping you get it..."

Behind the recordings, there was a line of writings, which made Fang Yuan sighed. "She is really treating me very well... I would not have such a treatment at the Realm Alliance... Of course, if the world were to be void of all love and feelings, I'm sure she would not hesitate to take a knife and kill me!"



After remembering the technique recorded in the recordings, Fang Yuan destroyed the napkin in an attempt to destroy all evidence. Soon after, he arrived at Realm Alliance Mountain.

"Brother, you've arrived!"

The treatment which Feng Xinzi had received was obviously improved. He now had a standing for himself in the hall of the Realm Alliance. "I have settled the mission which we have talked about previously. Also, take a look at this spiritual land!"

Immediately, he waved and a golden glow appeared. The glow came together to form a leaf with runes on its surface. Rows of words started to form, and there was a huge overload of information.

"Mmm... The guardian of Golden Sun Prosperous Land?"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan's expression changed.

He did not tell Feng Xinzi his exact location. Never would he have thought that he would receive a mission so close to his actual location. It was such a coincidence.

"The alliance assigns you to be the new guardian of the Golden Sun Prosperous Land. Now, go forth and take over from the previous guardian to protect this piece of prosperous land for... 10 years!"

Feng Xinzi smiled and gave a look of 'you've-earned-such-a-good-deal' to Fang Yuan.

"Prosperous land?"

As Fang Yuan gave it a deep thought, he heaved a heavy sigh as his eyes glistened. "Does this mean that other than dispatching batches of resources every year as instructed by the alliance, I will be in charge of everything else? And that in addition to all that, I would have another 60 hectares of spiritual land to myself?"

"Hmmm... you can put it that way!"

Feng Xinzi nodded his head. "After 10 years, whatever you've gained from this 60 hectares of spiritual land will be yours. You can do all the farming by yourself or you can assign it to the guardian of the prosperous farm. However, you'll have to pay him base on how much work he would do."

"This is not too bad!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head. "Alright, prepare to receive the resources!"

In truth, the Realm Alliance would not try to take advantage of him over this. Otherwise, the alliance would lose its credibility and cohesiveness.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan still had other people that he could rely on. He could even ask the Ye Family sisters about anything regarding the alliance.

"That's good!"

There was a look of happiness on Feng Xinzi's face. "After taking over, you shall assume your duty. As long as you do not disregard your responsibilities as the guardian, you can do whatever you like..."

'Are you allowing me to take all of that for myself? To do anything I want with it? No wonder you said that it was a well-paying job!'

Fang Yuan thought to himself.

All he needed to prove his new identity was this golden leaf with the inscriptions on it and the inscription plate he had in the Dream Realm. With these two objects, he could do away with all the hassle.

# Chapter 332: Hindrance

---

"Although I have the evidence as a license to take over my new role, I better recuperate first..."

The handing and taking over was officially endorsed by the Realm Alliance, the possibility of something going wrong was very small. Therefore, Fang Yuan decided to recuperate his strength first as power was the only way one could gain a footing in Da Qian Empire!

Inside the inn, Fang Yuan occupied his own room and courtyard. He sat on the floor cross-legged and absorbed elemental energy from the heavens and earth to recuperate his body.

In his actualised dream world, streaks of magical energy spread across and dug into the dark spots for an awesome energy, as they then turned into a mercury-like dream elemental force. The dream elemental began to restore the 3 swords in the 8 Gates Sword Array.

"After the 3 swords self-detonated, it required a huge amount of dream elemental force as a foundation for its restoration. Luckily, I no longer have the difficulting of gathering dream elemental energy unlike previous times, if not I would have vomited blood..."

Fang Yuan looked at the green energy in the core of the 8 Gates Sword Array and shook his head.

Although he could immediately recover if he utilised this source, that was a reserve for him to breakthrough to the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine. It could not be easily used.

Unless he was met with a critical life and death situation, it could not be used, else it would be a reckless waste.

His eyes twinkled and he then looked at his stats board:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 20 (42)

Spirit: 20 (42)

Magic: 33 (59)

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (3rd Tier), Wu Zong (4th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 5) (50%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (4th Sword) (99%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)]"

"My stats have dropped really hard due to my injuries, but a portion of it has already been recovered. It will now be faster for me to fully recover. Furthermore... the training these few days and the void's turbulence seemed to improve my Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique..."

For his injuries to recover so quickly, perhaps his fixed stats played a part too.

Fang Yuan spiritual will moved as he knew that there was a huge potential in his stats.

He did not care about that for now and looked at the water dragon's pearl.

The resources he dealt with the Realm Alliance previously were actually nothing much. This was the real gains!

"Furthermore... although Yellow Grain Rice is difficult to grow, that might not be the case for me!"

Fang Yuan started from botany in the past, although it was not very useful in Da Qian since he had his own spiritual land now, he could further improve himself!

Also, what was so special about that item the Golden Horned

Wing Tribe member was protecting with its life?"

Fang Yuan gazed into the water dragon pearl.

Although the pearl was an essence of its dragon form, Fang Yuan felt he could not fully control the pearl at that moment.

Inside the pearl, the golden-green water dragon was squeezed to a side. The foggy grey glow occupied most of the space.

"What exactly is the treasure left behind by Sage Changli? A technique? An inheritance? A treasure map?"

Through contacting the water dragon within, Fang Yuan could sense that there was a vast sea of knowledge. However, he could not have a share of it currently.

"With my current spiritual will and cultivation, I would be crazy to read the Prominent Divine dream master's knowledge memory! Furthermore, I could even be encroached and become schizophrenic..."

It was not overboard to value and regard a Prominent Divine dream master so highly.

However, leaving such a delicious piece of meat untouched was not Fang Yuan's style too.

Fang Yuan thought, "Thankfully, this Sage Changli was close to dragons and his knowledge was attracted to my water dragon pearl. I can use the energy of the water dragon inside to absorb a bit of the knowledge every day. With this layer of protection, I will start from the outside and slowly dive deeper... This is equivalent to having a teacher teaching me daily..."

Fang Yuan's path as a dream master mostly relied on self-study. With this rare collection, he was elated as he could improve his shortcomings.

...

Three Suns Sect.

"Smack!"

A masculine looking youth with thick eyebrows and white clothes threw the valuable treasures onto the floor and sneered, "You think you can enter my sect just with your pathetic background? Dream on!"

Opposite him, He Qing's face swelled with anger, he was infuriated and clenched his teeth.

This youth was the eldest disciple of the Sect Head and was an Elemental Opening spiritual knight! He Qing's current position and standing was no match for him.

Furthermore, He Qing could see there was a hint of jealousy hidden deep inside this youth's eye.

"As he is a spiritual knight, he cannot succeed the legacy of the head of Three Suns Sect. Thus, he is being a hindrance and a prick to me since I came over to be apprenticed... detestable!" He Qing thought.

Although He Qing was furious, he remained silent and did not utter a single word. He bowed to him and left.

"What a pity... if he provokes me again, I'll make sure I'll give him an unforgettable surprise!"

As the youth watched He Qing left, he felt sullen.

Although he was talented, he could not become a dream master and therefore, he could not succeed his master's legacy.

As he saw someone who was qualified to do so came over, he naturally felt unhappy and intentionally hindered He Qing.

"After all... I am Master's nephew by blood, even if I go overboard once in a while, it's nothing much... Although this He Qing is intelligent, his foundation is not strong enough. This is also my way of testing him on behalf of Master."

As the youth mumbled to himself and gazed into the darkness, he

justified himself in his thoughts.

In a quiet room deep within Three Suns Sect.

A screen of light appeared in front of a daoist which displayed whatever was happening.

The daoist had red cheeks and three long strands of beard which swayed with the wind. He was closely observing whatever was happening outside and whatever was inside his nephew's mind.

"Legacy... hehe, dream masters live a long life and it's not something you can understand! Perhaps I might even be the one that attends your funeral!"

For dream masters, whether they were accepting disciples or whatever this nephew of his was struggling about were merely inconsequential matters to them.

This was their feeling as they sat high above them and watched these nobodies fought.

Despite so, the daoist felt slightly unhappy.

Just because the eldest disciple was the master's nephew, he tended to go overboard in handling matters...

...

"Young Master, what should we do next?" Consultant He asked worriedly as the He family walked out the Three Suns Sect.

Dream masters were secretive and did not meet people easily, they would barely communicate with commoners. The Three Sun Sect was a contact that the He family arduously obtained.

However, due to the hindrance from one of their disciples, they could not even meet Three Suns Daoist. Thus, they were naturally perturbed.

"What else can we do? We just have to slowly wait for another opportunity! That youth is just one man, Three Suns Sect is not a one-man show! Once I can meet the head of the sect, I still stand a

chance!"

He Qing gave a mirthless smile.

He did not think of looking for other masters.

Dream masters were not so easily found and they did not accept disciples so easily. Even if He Qing could not enter a sect, there were still many things he could do due to his talents.

The group of them despondently returned to their manor in Golden Sun City.

"Young Master!"

Little Ju was waiting at the gates and excitedly went forward when she saw them arriving. However, just as she saw about to speak, she saw the group's sullen faces and decided not to say anything.

"What's the matter?" He Qing composed himself and asked.

"It is about Fang Yuan! He settled down at Green Cloud Inn and wrote us a letter!"

"It's him?!"

Although He Qing was in a bad mood, he was slightly moved at once, "Ok, prepare some gifts and I will go meet him! Two brains are better than one, maybe he will have some ideas!"

Although He Qing thought Fang Yuan was a spiritual knight but was not certain of his cultivation, he knew Fang Yuan could open some doors for him.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan was wise and experienced, perhaps he could give him some other opinions?

...

In a courtyard inside Green Cloud Inn.

A lush fig tree stood tall inside the courtyard.

Fang Yuan wore linen clothes and was enjoying his tea happily



under the tree.

"Lord, you are indeed relaxed, I am so envious!"

With the aroma of the tea, He Qing's previous vexation, fear and numerous negative feelings were dispelled at once.

He was even more respectful towards Fang Yuan now and called him Lord.

"It's nothing much..."

Fang Yuan sipped his tea and smiled.

As a dream master, one had to pay attention to his own soul and self-cultivation. Dabbling in literature, wine, tea and such were ways to purify one's own thoughts.

Meditative tea ceremonies had the same effect too.

Furthermore, that was his own method of training himself. Compared to other dream masters' ways, that was more appropriate for himself.

"Just that..... this person in front of me is a commoner, I don't have to give him the Questioning Heart Tea..." Fang Yuan thought as he raised his teacup.

In Da Qian Empire, spiritual items that could increase magical energy were very rare. Although Fang Yuan was not afraid to reveal, it would be troublesome for him to suddenly reveal his identity.

"Of course... just the Questioning Heart Tea alone would not be very useful. It must be accompanied by a meditative tea ceremony to maximise its effects!" Fang Yuan thought.

As numerous thoughts flashed passed Fang Yuan's mind, he smiled and asked, "Things didn't go successfully at Three Suns Sect?"

"Indeed... although my family had paved the way for me, we were hindered by their master's eldest disciple, Yang Zhantang!"

He Qing sighed as he recounted the unlucky events that happened just now.

"Although I will not interfere with your personal matters since we are fated, I shall help you persuade them!"

Fang Yuan had his own way of settling things.

Spiritual items could not be easily gifted away, however, relaying a message for others was different as it only required him to be thick-skinned. Furthermore, it could help him familiarise with the strength of the dream masters in Cloud Region.

"Ah! Thank you very much, mister!"

He Qing was extremely grateful and bowed to Fang Yuan.

"It's okay, it's just fate..."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and his magic-splitting arrived in the Realm Alliance Mountain in his actualised dream world.

"Searching for... Three Suns Daoist!"

"Ting! He is a member of our alliance. He is a 3rd Leaf Cultivator, you are able to contact him!"

A response was received on the stone tablet immediately.

"Three Suns Daoist?"

"Yea, you are?"

Using his identity inscription plate, a spiritual will immediately responded.

"My name is Fang Yuan. After a recommendation from Elder Smelter, I am the new guardian of Golden Sun Prosperous Land!"

Fang Yuan did not hesitate to make use of Elder Smelter's name. After all, these were some of the benefits of joining the alliance.

"Oh so its Fang Yuan, we will be close neighbours!"

The spiritual will felt more intimate at once.

"Ah, it's just that, I have a matter..."

Fang Yuan told him everything. After a brief pause, he responded, "Since it's a recommendation from my fellow alliance friend, I will meet him!"

"Great!"

Inside the Inn, Fang Yuan waved his hands and told He Qing, "Settled! If you request to meet him again, your wish will be fulfilled!"

# Chapter 333: Taking Over

---

"Ah... Is it completed?"

He Qing was stunned. He had only just asked for assistance moments ago. All Fang Yuan did was close his eyes for a few moments before telling He Qing that everything was done and that he could directly visit the Three Suns Sect once more.

'Is he trying to trick me?'

He Qing was speechless. Seeing how awe-inspiring Fang Yuan was as he waved his hands, He Qing did not dare to utter a single word as he walked out, confused.

Thoughts ran wild in his mind. In a few moments, he came to a conclusion. "Regardless, I must try a few more times to show my sincerity... As for this place, I shall dispatch a few servants to serve him and we'll see what to do next after knowing the outcome..."

With that, he ordered his housekeeper to prepare gifts once more and headed to the mountain again.

...

Three Suns Sect.

"Zhantang, go to the gates. If you see He Qing, bring him to me!"

Three Suns Daoist, who was in meditation, opened his eyes and mumbled.

"Master?"

Yang Zhantang was confused. He did not know what had just happened.

This person has a backing. It is the request of the guardian of Golden Sun Prosperous Land for me to meet him. Furthermore... we've received quite a lot of gifts from them. If he has the potential, we can allow him to join us!"

Three Suns Daoist stroked his beard as his eyes glistened. "Why... are you unwilling?"

"I don't dare!"

Yang Zhantang shuddered. He knew that his master had found out about his doings. Uncontrollably, he knelt down and asked for forgiveness.

"I know what you are thinking. Do you really think I will hand everything down to an outsider?"

Three Suns Daoist shook his head with an impatient look. "The appointment as head of the Three Suns Sect is yours sooner or later. However, looking at your attitude and personality, you still need to undergo training. If you are so unforgiving of others, how can you achieve great things in the future?"

"Master... Uncle!"

Yang Zhantang was relieved and shocked at the same time as he almost teared up. "I'll go out this instant to invite my junior!"

With that promise, he knew he had to change for the better and assume the role of a senior.

"Keke..."

Seeing his silhouette leaving, Three Suns Daoist revealed a mysterious smile.

He was speaking the truth, However, it would be after his death. Seeing how things were, if Three Suns Daoists' nephew disciple could not achieve the 4th Tier of a spiritual knight, he would have to spend his whole life as a disciple, serving his master.

"There's no other choice... a dream master lives for far too long, and I was fortunate enough to have obtained a large amount of Life Redeeming Pills... Everyone wants to take over me, but no one knows that I will live longer than all my disciples. Therefore, I am not lying to you... However, Fang Yuan seems to be hinting that

this is the intention of the Smelter's faction! Regardless, I shall just agree to his request for the sake of the alliance..."

To him, it was perfectly alright to have another disciple. This was how carefree a dream master could be.

Furthermore, he would have the chance to squeeze his new disciple dry. After accepting He Qing for the sake of Fang Yuan, he could thereafter reap benefits from him.

This was what he was planning for all this while.

Everything was merely returning to the original plan.

...

"After helping He Qing this time, it's time I should go and take over my plot of land..."

By requesting a favour for He Qing, it was enough to repay all that he had done for Fang Yuan.

Furthermore, at this point in time, his physical body had recovered completely and the 3 swords in his actualised dream world were fully restored. He had restored his peak condition and was about to leave to claim his rewards.

Throwing a gold ingot on the counter, Fang Yuan left the inn.

Outside, a few servants were looking about. Ignoring them, Fang Yuan walked straight out.

They were like blind people. Although they had opened their eyes wide, they still could not see Fang Yuan and were still attempting to look into the inn.

Golden Sun City was in the centre of Cloud Region. People from all around the region came here to trade and it was a bustling city.

In the vicinity, there were a few mountains and valleys. According to the Fengshui of this place, it was a favourable location to gather auspicious energy.

Therefore, the Three Suns Sect has chosen this place to set up the sect. Similarly, other sects had followed suit.

Golden Sun Mountain.

In the dense vegetation, Fang Yuan rushed inwards like the wind. As he entered the depths of the forest, he arrived at a place where no hunters or herb pluckers would ever dare to venture.

In the deep mountains, there was an unpleasant stench. Mutated beasts roamed the area and many species of flowers and grass were competing to grow. The entire place was an indescribable danger.

"The Realm Alliance, Baize Mountain, Divine Lotus Cult, Evil Divine Sect and Source Seeking Sect... Even the 5 most powerful organisations of the dream masters are but empty shells, feeding on a foundation and a source of energy. Where does the foundation come from? The Hidden Dragon Guards of the Da Qian depend on the royal family, and on that note, the 5 Grand Organisations would have lost out. However, they can create their own prosperous land filled with spiritual energy... Of course, most importantly, they will have to feed on the spiritual lands created by 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters or the hollows created by the Prominent Divine dream masters! These scattered prosperous lands and spiritual lands are thus created in the process, but are meaningless to them!"

As he continued on his way, Fang Yuan slowly digested the information which he had previously obtained from the Realm Alliance.

"Of course, the great powers would belong to their own factions. As soon as the hollows or spiritual lands are created, they would first use it to benefit members of their own factions and this is only normal... To new members like us, it would be extremely hard even to help them manage these publicly-available prosperous lands!"

Since he was not a direct descendant of a powerful being, it

would be even more difficult for him to access such a land. However, things were different now that he had traded for one such piece of land.

Arriving at a valley, the fog started to thicken. However, as a dream master, he could quickly tell that this fog was not made out of water droplets, but instead, created by a dream master.

"This is indeed the location of the Golden Sun Prosperous Land..."

With a smile, Fang Yuan walked into the valley.

"Buzz!"

As soon as he entered the valley, the surroundings started to change. The white fog slowly ascended up and transformed into a bewildering fog. Amidst the fog, a colourful talisman flashed, revealing the fact that this was an extremely powerful array.

"Where have you come from? This is the Realm Alliance's Golden Sun Prosperous Land. If you are an outsider, please take your leave!"

A thunderous voice was heard coming from the inside of the valley.

"Mmm, is this the 99 Golden Suns Gigantic Array? It is able to protect the prosperous land, nourish the energy in it and has the effect of misleading and trapping trespassers. Of course, most importantly, it is being strengthened by the main array. Although you might have the rights to control the array, you cannot be considered the owner of the prosperous land, but a mere manager."

Fang Yuan nodded his head and took out a piece of golden leaf.

"Buzz!"

As the golden leaf glowed brilliantly, the fog started to disperse. A string of messages appeared and flew into the array.

Within moments, the fog had dispersed completely, revealing a



piece of prosperous land. In the middle, there was a small mountain which had a faint glow coming from it. Nothing seemed normal here.

"Oh, it's the new guardian!"

A streak of light shot down from a building and an old man with a long beard appeared. He started to examine Fang Yuan.

The missions to become guardians were all lucrative missions. Furthermore, this person was allocated 60 hectares of spiritual land for his private use. He seemed to have a strong backing, but the old man could not guess which faction he was from.

"Greetings, Brother Jin!"

Fang Yuan held the golden leaf in his hands. As soon as he saw him, he could roughly guess that he was a dream master at the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Compared to himself, his old man was much weaker. If he did not have the protection of the array, he would become very vulnerable.

"Haha... Brother Fang, please give me a moment. I shall bring my manager over to facilitate the process of handing over!"

The previous guardian was Jin Xing. He was aged and had a friendly disposition. However, as a fellow 3rd Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, Fang Yuan could tell that he was unwilling to go.

After all, this mission was a lucrative one. Now that he had to hand over, he would have no idea what the alliance would assign him next.

However, this was none of his business. Fang Yuan came straight to the main hall and ordered for the commencement of the banquet.

"I am about to hand over. This is your new guardian and your new head. Hurry and pay your respects!"

Jin Xing clapped his hands and a group of people entered the hall to pay their greetings. "Greetings, master!"

"This life... is indeed luxurious! Are there over a hundred people here? To have all of them serving me would make me feel like a king..."

With that, the servants started to serve up delicious wine and food. Dancers draped in loose clothing revealed their voluptuous figures as they danced around the hall.

"Here! Let's toast to your achievements!"

Jin Xing raised his cup and toasted Fang Yuan.

"Thank you!"

Fang Yuan drank a cup of wine and smiled. "We've finished the wine and the banquet. Should we discuss how to take over things, especially the stocktaking of the storeroom?"

Jin Xing went pale.

Although this dream master was young, he was not foolish.

In history, when handing over, the storeroom would always be the utmost priority. If there were any miscalculations, the records would go wrong in the future.

Seeing his expression, Fang Yuan smiled to himself. He knew that this old man had taken a lot for himself. However, he was alright with this. As long as it did not affect him, he would not pursue the matter. However, what would matter would be the old man's attitude.

"Of course, naturally..."

After a brief silence, Jin Xing smiled and ordered for the records to be brought over. "Golden Sun Prosperous Land was discovered by our alliance 500 years ago. Since then, they have set up a gigantic array to protect it and have transformed the surroundings into 900 hectares of spiritual farm. Of course, among these 900

hectares, 60 hectares are now yours. We also have 127 servants and 562 other people living here. All these people here are literate and practice martial arts. We have 300 of them who had obtained inner force and 2 Wu Zongs..."

As for spiritual knights, Jin Xing would naturally bring them along with him.

"This prosperous land mainly produces aged gold on the mountain peak. Every year, we would be able to produce 500 catties of it. As for the spiritual farm, we would produce 20,000 catties of spiritual rice annually, together with spiritual fruits and spiritual vegetables... We have already transferred the produce to the alliance this year. Right now, we have 3,000 catties of spiritual rice and 20 catties of aged gold in the storeroom. You can have everything else for yourself, Brother Fang!"

"Mmm!"

Fang Yuan received the records. Although he was doubtful, he silently nodded his head.

This previous guardian was rather considerate not to have created a mess for Fang Yuan to deal with. Of course, this might be due to the fact that Fang Yuan's backing was powerful. Otherwise, no one knew if he would give the same treatment to someone else.

"Although there are some mistakes in the records, no worries! Let's just leave things as such!"

After a short moment, although Fang Yuan had spotted some errors in the records, he did not pursue it.

After all, these insignificant resources were not enough to arouse his interest. Seeing that the previous guardian did not leave a mess for him to settle, he decided not to pursue and press him further.

"Alright!"

Jin Xing was elated. In reality, this was an important mission. Although he had kept some of the resources for himself, Fang Yuan

did not pay any attention to all that he had taken.

Seeing how magnanimous Fang Yuan was, he admired him in his heart. "Although I have a few connections and wealth stashed away, I still cannot compare to this direct descendant who is indeed generous!"

# Chapter 334: The Deal

---

The bigger scheme of things had been settled. All that was left were but the small details.

With Jin Xing by his side, Fang Yuan patrolled the spiritual lands and warehouse. He left the message on the other party's inscription plate and the deal was thus formalised.

The whole 99 Golden Suns Gigantic Array roared on. The level of rights had shifted, and the transition from old to new was completed nevertheless.

Jin Xing did not stay long and left after saying goodbye.

After all, he was the previous master and staying on would make him feel awkward.

"Would I be calling the shots on this prosperous land within 10 years?"

Fang Yuan sat in the hall and suddenly remembered his spiritual land on the Green Peak.

"Now that I'm here at Da Qian, I need a temporary place to settle down in!"

"Greetings master!"

At this point, the whole management team entered and fell to the ground in a deep bow. They looked frightened.

After all, the guardian had complete control over them and they had no means of retaliation. The guardian could easily suppress their combined strength of around five hundred.

"Mm, you may all rise!"

Five hundred men were probably not enough to farm a thousand hectares of land and to work a gold mine. But it was different if the five hundred men included three hundred martial artists who had broken through the cultivation levels and two Wu Zongs.

Only the dream masters of Da Qian would employ martial artists to become miners and farmers.

"The servants Meng Tian and Meng Guang, at master's service!"

The two Wu Zongs stood up straight with their hands clasped, their eyes staring ahead unflinchingly.

On the Yuanwu mainland, the both of them would undoubtedly become overlords. Even in the Da Qian world, they could obtain significant wealth. However, in this situation, they were but servants who took orders without question. This was indeed very strange and a huge pity.

"The spiritual energy in Da Qian has always been dense to the extreme. The Golden Sun Prosperous Land is so, with elemental energy so thick that it might fall as spiritual rain. Living in the prosperous land would increase one's longevity and even lead to a higher probability of achieving breakthroughs..."

Fang Yuan glanced about and pointed casually.

"Since it has always been you two in charge, you shall stay in your appointments!"

"Thank you, Master!"

The two Wu Zongs were pleased and bowed repeatedly.

After all, they had gained the approval of their new master, and their authority had been cemented.

Meng Tian was in charge of agricultural affairs while Meng Guang was in charge of the mines.

"Mining will carry on as per normal. What about the spiritual fields?"

Fang Yuan knocked on the armrest of his chair.

"What kind of spiritual rice are we growing these days?"

Meng Tian immediately replied.

"Master, it is the Qinghua Rice!"

The Qinghua Rice was a spiritual plant of the Mystery Grade and regular consumption would build up one's elemental energy. It was good for spiritual knights.

But it was still a lesser crop compared to the Yellow Grain Rice.

"Mm, I do not care about the other fields, but set aside one hundred mu of land from my own one thousand mu for the cultivation of Yellow Grain Rice!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin as he gave his orders.

"Yellow...Yellow Grain Rice? Master, I'm afraid that this cannot be done!"

Meng Tian was flustered.

"The Yellow Grain Rice requires farmlands of very high fertility, and the Golden Sun Prosperous Land does not satisfy the requirements. Also, Yellow Jade Fertiliser will have to be used monthly, and we are lacking in this resource, not to mention the technical expertise..."

Meng Tian was an honest man who did not mince his words, and several of his colleagues standing by rolled their eyes at him.

"I know all of these...but this is my private land, and your concerns are uncalled for!"

Fang Yuan might have been suppressing dissent, but in truth, if the Yellow Grain Rice could be cultivated casually, the Realm Alliance would have no need to put in their trade requests.

Perhaps only the master of the Hollow had the means to satisfy the various criteria.

But Fang Yuan himself was different!

He had advanced botany skills, and this was his chance to innovate. Besides, he might even be able breed plant types of a higher quality.

"Your servant knows his mistake!"

Meng Tian had broken out into a cold sweat after hearing Fang Yuan's reply and apologised profusely.

"Never mind...the arrangements of the tenants can go on as usual. But I will convert my 6 hectares of land into an experimental field!"

"Yes, Master!"

Meng Tian and the other workers were perplexed. Was master intending to go down into the fields himself? But...

...

A tea room in the Realm.

"Many thanks for helping us out in the Hollow, Brother Fang!"

The Ye sisters sat down with their legs crossed.

"How can we ever hope to repay your kindness? Let us offer you some tea as a form of gratitude!"

Fang Yuan glanced at Ye Shuhua. She was dressed like a martial artist while her younger sister Ye Shumin was in her lady clothing. They both looked stunning in their own ways.

"That day, when you got lost in the void, I was worried that Brother Fang might have gotten into trouble. But I also know that luck is on your side and that you will always be able to turn things to your favour."

Ye Shuhua's features were gentle and she gazed at Fang Yuan with an expression laced with complex emotions.

"Hehe...I am indeed fortunate!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose.

"Have you found the things that I need?"

"The information that you require about the Golden Sun Prosperous Land and other things are all here!"



Ye Shuhua smiled and passed him a jade disc. Although the Ye family was in dire straits, they were still able to gather information easily. However, she could not resist giving him a caveat.

"The cultivation of the Yellow Grain Rice has stringent requirements. Unless you grow them in the Hollow, you will sustain losses. Only the Da Qian royals can afford to bear that kind of expenditure...I would suggest that you make other plans!"

"But...this should be worth a try anyway!"

Fang Yuan naturally would not admit that he was confident of succeeding. He had revealed the fact that he knew the secret technique to growing the Yellow Grain Rice.

Ye Shuhua forced a smile.

"Then I wish Brother Fang all the best in your endeavours!"

Cultivating Yellow Grain Rice was not an impossible task. Dozens of dream masters had tried to before. But the effort required was more than the potential returns. Nevertheless, Ye Shuhua saw that Fang Yuan had made up his mind, and she let him be.

'He is a proud man and needs to suffer before he comes to his senses...'

The three of them walked out of the tea room. Ye Shuhua kept the smile plastered on her face.

"Guardian of the Prosperous Land is indeed a good appointment. But to stay in the position requires one to take note of several things. The rock tablet of the Realm Alliance also records relevant learning experiences. You have to check it out!"

Engaged in pleasant conversation, they arrived before the rock tablet of the Realm Alliance.

"Hmph!"

Fang Yuan immediately noticed the jealous stare of a young man in nice clothes. The fact that he did not rush forward immediately

showed that he was still rational.

"Hmm?"

Fang Yuan looked around and settled his gaze on Ye Shuhua.

"Have you gotten yourself into some kind of trouble?"

'Yes...'

Ye Shuhua leaned in closer to Fang Yuan and contacted him mentally.

'Help us!'

It was then Fang Yuan realised that the sisters each held onto one of his arms. Their grips were tight and he could feel their soft and warm bodies.

'What can I get out of you two using me as a shield? I'll get angry if there isn't a good deal. Don't think that I wouldn't dare to slap the two of you in public. If I do that, everything would be resolved.'

Fang Yuan adopted a cold countenance.

'What do you want?'

Ye Shuhua clenched her teeth in silence. She had not thought Fang Yuan to be this ungentlemanly.

"Get the Red Night 9 Smelting Technique for me, and I'll deal with him for you, regardless of whoever is backing him up!"

The young dream master was not even at the illusionary divine stage of training, but the Ye sisters were still so wary of him. He probably had a powerful backer.

But Fang Yuan had a backer too.

When power is not made use of, it expires. Fang Yuan was not on the best of terms with the Elder Smelter, and he needed another plan.

"The Red Night 9 Smelting Technique?"

Ye Shuhua was shocked by his demand but she gave in anyway.

"Fine!"

"Sign the Realm Spirit Contract or I won't believe you!"

"Fine!"

After Ye Shuhua agreed to his demands, Fang Yuan immediately pulled the Ye sisters close to his body and shot a challenging stare at the young man.

"You..."

The young man's face turned as red as a beetroot. He looked as though he had suffered all the injustice in the world and turned around to leave.

"You can let go now!"

Ye Shuhua's cheeks were flushed and she exclaimed hurriedly.

She did feel a slight attraction to Fang Yuan but it was extremely awkward to be in this situation with him, especially with her sister present as well.

"Haha...maybe you can tell me about his background now?"

Fang Yuan breathed his question into Ye Shuhua's ear. Although he did it unthinkingly, he was making her nervous.

"His name is Li Bai. His grandfather is a dream master of the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and has some power in the Alliance, that's all...he thinks that with the amount of influence he has, he can possess us..."

Ye Shuhua glared at Fang Yuan before continuing.

"Don't worry, you won't be killed!"

"But it is still a troublesome matter! Remember to send me the payment..."

Fang Yuan then let go of the Ye sisters with a gentle smile on his face. It was as if he had become a different person.

"This fellow..."

As she watched Fang Yuan walk into the distance, Ye Shuhua did not know what to feel.

"This is a wily person. He becomes a monster when self-interest is involved. A pity, but he is not a good match for us..."

As she heaved a sigh, she noticed that her sister was blushing and she became flustered.

"Sister, don't tell me that you've fallen for him? Don't be naive. Just because he saved your life once. You will regret this..."

Ye Shimin bit her lip and questioned her sister instead.

"But sister...isn't he the only person who can help us regain the honour of our family?"

"You..."

Ye Shuhua was surprised and a strange look came over her face.

To think that her sister, a lady sheltered from young, had grown up so quickly following the incident in the Hollow.

...

"Seems like there is another way to mastering the Red Night 9 Smelting Technique. To think that the Ye Family is this resourceful...she actually agreed so readily. I was expecting bargaining to be involved..."

In truth, although Liu Mengmei was already conducting a search, Fang Yuan wanted an additional form of assurance.

The heavenly evil force in his dream elements was no simple matter. No matter the potential opportunities contained within, to him, a force that cannot be controlled should be destroyed immediately.

"Also...we can't let Liu Mengmei do everything. Too large a goal would lead to too much activity. If we expose anything, everything

will be for nought..."

Fang Yuan's body dissipated, and he returned to the real world.

When he walked out of the hall, the fragrance of the spiritual fields interacted with his senses. In the mist, he could see some of the farmers working hard.

Fang Yuan overlooked the scene and exhaled contentedly.

# Chapter 335: Yellow Grain Rice

---

Within the Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

A protective array rose up into the skies, enveloping the entire 6 hectares of private farmland.

Elemental energy started to fall towards the farm in the form of spiritual rain, nourishing the ground.

This was the Spiritual Gathering Array, personally cast by Fang Yuan. He had only cast this array over his own private farmland, but since he was the guardian of the prosperous land, no one could say anything.

Of course, Fang Yuan knew the reality.

Although the array might seem like it was gathering spiritual energy, it had a hidden effect of sealing the area as well. After all, he was preparing the farm to sow the seeds of the Yellow Grain Rice and therefore, it had to receive different treatment from the other farms.

"With this array, if any of my servants dare to trespass my private farm, I shall kill them instantly. This is only reasonable, for I had already given all of them a warning!"

Fang Yuan thought to himself silently. "This farm is dedicated to collected the plants which would evolve special traits. When I obtain the complete plot of spiritual land, I'll then attempt to plant it in large scales.

"At my current stage, it is sufficient to eat Yellow Grain Rice alone!"

Although he had given up most of his Yellow Grain Rice to the alliance, he had nothing to worry about for he still had the seeds!

"The remaining Yellow Grain Rice that I have now can be used to sow in the 6 hectares of the farm as well as provide for a few of my

meals! This way, I can try them first!"

As Fang Yuan arrived at the kitchen, he ordered for the servants to leave before cooking an entire pot of Yellow Grain Rice for himself.

Once the rice had been thoroughly cooked, the fragrance of it made him twitch his nose uncontrollably.

"It is recorded in : The Yellow Grain Rice is large and thicker than usual rice. Harvest is little and it cannot withstand dry conditions. Therefore, it is extremely rare. It is fragrant when cooked as is regarded as food for the deities! In reality, since it has dream properties, it is best suited for dream masters to consume!"

He filled his entire jade bowl with the rice, used his chopsticks and ate a mouthful of it.

"Fragrant and of good texture!"

Considering all that he had gone through before, Fang Yuan had already tried most delicacies! Therefore, his palate was not something that could be easily satisfied!

But now, as he swallowed the Yellow Grain Rice, an indescribable soothing feeling started to rise from his stomach, making its way to his heart.

"This rice is soothing and is perfect for me to replenish my elemental energy..."

Fang Yun silently allowed himself to experience the warm and soothing feeling in his dantian. As the warmth gathered, it was like a stream of hot spring water flowing through his entire body. Finally, it became a stream of energy which flowed along his spine all the way up, entering a whole new dimension in his body which he had never known about.

"It is indeed rare to come across spiritual objects which would aid in the increase in magical energy... Most importantly, it is neither of Heaven Grade or Earth Grade, which would allow me to produce

them in large quantities. This makes it even more valuable!"

In his actualised dream world, streaks of yellow glow appeared. It was as though something had triggered within the actualised dream world. His magical energy was swiftly restored and mighty force within started to calm down.

In the yellow glow, his magical energy started to combine with his mighty force, resulting in a mercury-like dream elemental force which quickly started to fill up in the actualised dream world.

"Mmm... If I can consume Yellow Grain Rice every day, I can restore my dream elemental force 3 times quicker than before!"

As his True Spirit witnessed the restoration of his dream elemental force, he was relieved and nodded his head. "Needless to say, there is still the benefit of absorbing hints of dream property from the rice. It will be rather significant if I absorb large quantities of dream property... this is great!"

In the outside world, he did not hold back. The appetite of a 4th Meridian Wu Zong was huge. Instantly, he cleared the entire pot of spiritual rice before rubbing his tummy in satisfaction. He was now prepared to head to the farm and move about to aid in the digestion of the rice he just ate.

Once he had left, his spiritual will shook. He realised that 2 servants were rushing into the kitchen. They were greedily sniffing the air and fighting over the metal pot.

"Are they really fighting over the water used to wash the pot..."

With that thought, his mind shook. He looked away and arrived at the farm.

"Mmm... The ground is nourished enough. This is much better than any plots of spiritual land in the mainland!"

He grabbed a fistful of soil. The soil was black and loose. It was shimmering as though one would be able to squeeze oil out of it if they decided to do so. Furthermore, there was a thin white layer



above the black soil.

This was not a white layer of snow frozen from liquid water. Instead, it was actualised from elemental force. This was comparable to fragments of elemental crystals and was formed from his very own Spiritual Gathering Array.

"This soil might just be comparable to that in the hollow..."

Thinking about the environment in this prosperous land, he started to think about the environment in Changli Mountain Hollow and shook his head. "Even after the passing of the Sage, the environment there is still much more superior compared to the outside world."

Considering the well-nourished soil in the Golden Sun Prosperous Land, it was possible to plant the Yellow Grain Rice. However, it was inevitable that he would use more resources to produce the harvest of Yellow Grain Rice, much more than he could have harvested. Therefore, a loss was inevitable.

"Taking into consideration the current environmental conditions, I must produce a variant of Yellow Grain Rice which has the least requirements to grow."

Fang Yuan's idea was simple. This 6 hectares of the farm was an experimental farm. He would surely be able to produce Yellow Grain Rice. However, he was gambling on the chances that such a variant would be evolved.

If he could create an evolved variant with a higher grade, that would be even better. However, it was not a must to create it. All that he would look for was variant which could adapt to the current environment.

Once he had the seeds of this variant, he would be able to produce the rice in large quantities in the future when he would obtain the entire plot of his private farm.

"Furthermore, if things did not go as smoothly and if the Yellow

Grain Rice is extremely hard to evolve any special traits, considering my level in Botany, it is still possible for me to successfully produce a new batch of Yellow Grain Rice. At least, I would still harvest back whatever I had sowed..."

He took a glance at his stats window:

"Botany [Level 5] ----- You're now a master in the Botany Realm! Any plants planted by you would not only awaken but also develop special traits, the maturity period would also shorten based on the conditions!"

With that, he grabbed his hoe and started to sow the seeds of the Yellow Grain Rice.

Because of this secret, he could not ask someone else to do it. Furthermore, in order for there to be any chances of special traits evolving, he had to do it personally.

He would harvest whatever he had sowed. This was always the law of nature.

...

"Fang Yuan! Fang Yuan!"

In Realm Alliance Mountain, within a side hall, Li Bo clenched his teeth. As he read the intelligence he had gathered, he started to grit his teeth. "He is just a half-arsed dream master who had gotten lucky to become a dream master in the Illusionary Divine stage. How does he dare to belittle me... Yes! It's true that I can do nothing about it! However, although my family might not be as influential as the Ye Family, we were still loyal to the Realm Alliance for 3 generations. Surely, you don't have the rights to bully us!"

His face was flushed with anger. As he arrived at the main hall, he knelt down. "Grandfather! You must upload justice for me!"

"What do you have!"

In the centre of the main hall, on a bed of clouds, a silhouette appeared restless.

Their family was weak. No matter how much effort they had put in, there was only one person among the descendants that had successfully become a dream master. Although he was a lowly-skilled dream master, it was already a huge step ahead for the family. They were now on a different level from the average humans. With such a descendant, their position in the Realm Alliance had been cemented. Therefore, many families were jealous of them.

However, looking at things now, it seems as though it was something the family could not settle.

"Grandfather... I was merely following your orders and therefore went after the sisters of the Ye Family. Although you are the head of our family, we have little heritage to speak of. If we can form a relationship with the Ye Family, our standing in the alliance would be assured!"

Li Bo was not a dense person. "Now, the sisters of the Ye Family are closer to Fang Yuan... Of course, I am not going after them because of their appearances. However, it is a known fact that the resources in the alliance are limited. With the uprising of a family, it would lead to the downfall of another. With the talented Fang Yuan getting involved, if he were to marry the sisters, the position of our family in the alliance would be under threat..."

"This... you make sense!"

The silhouette nodded its head before revealing his body. It was a graceful middle-aged man. He was the grandfather of Li Bo, a 4th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master of the Realm Alliance - Li Qin.

"Realm Spirit, give me information regarding Fang Yuan..."

Considering that he was in the Realm Alliance Mountain in the

Dream Realm and that he was a 4th Leaf Cultivator, his level of rights were rather high. With a single thought, he had already gained the basic information about Fang Yuan, which was still more detailed than what Li Bo had described.

"He is only in his twenties and is already a 3rd Tier Illusionary Divine dream master? Indeed, a talent!"

After reading a few lines, Li Qin nodded his head as though he had seen his younger self. "With the uprising of a new member, the few like us with weak foundations will have to do something, for our position will be under threat. Never mind about the fact that he is from a powerful faction... Is he now the guardian of the Golden Sun Prosperous Land? Who would've thought that he would have relied on Feng Xinzi and would have Elder Smelter as his backing..."

"Grandfather... Is Elder Smelter that powerful? We have many up and coming dream masters who are talented as well. Who would pay attention to Elder Smelter? Also, don't we have the backing of Elder Green Wood?"

Li Bo hurriedly answered.

"Although you are right, Feng Xinzi has a close relationship with Fang Yuan. Feng Xinzi is a newly-advanced 4th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master and is a powerful dream alchemy master now. His level of rights in the alliance has also been promoted to a 5th Leaf Cultivator!"

Li Qin spoke with a calm voice but in his heart, he felt a little displeasure.

Many years ago, he had joined the Realm Alliance and was willing to do whatever the alliance had requested of him. However, he was unfortunate enough to have lost everything in his generation. Now that he had accumulated enough resources and had achieved a breakthrough to the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine, he had helped his family secure a standing in the alliance. Even so,

he was still considered an outsider and therefore, he remained a 4th Leaf Cultivator.

On the other hand, Feng Xinzi was a direct disciple and was promoted to a 5th Leaf Cultivator immediately after he had achieved a breakthrough to the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and was 1 level higher than Li Qin.

Officially, the alliance would explain that this was as such due to the fact that Feng Xinzi was an alchemy master and would be able to contribute much to the alliance. However, no one knew the truth. This was exactly preferential treatment given to the direct disciples!

Outsiders could only look with jealousy. If they were to have any complaints, they would encounter countless troubles within the alliance.

There is still the problem of Fang Yuan...

Although Fang Yuan's background was similar to Li Qin, Li Qin had zero empathy for him.

He had experienced hardships before. Therefore, in his warped mind, he would want to see others experience similar hardships like him before he would be satisfied.

Although Fang Yuan had it tough when he had just joined the alliance, with his current position now, he would have to look out for himself. Notwithstanding the hatred they had between each other, Li Qin would still be perturbed to see how Fang Yuan had advanced to a 3rd Leaf Cultivator in such a short period of time.

With that, he concluded. "After all, Feng Xinzi is not Fang Yuan. Feng Xizi is newly promoted and has limited influence. Therefore, he might not put in all his effort to help Fang Yuan... Grandson, just you wait. I will set things right for you!"

Within the same alliance, it was not possible for them to have internal conflict. It would do both parties no good if they were to

get into a conflict.

However, Li Qin was extremely familiar about the loopholes in the rules of the alliance and knew how to go about dealing with Fang Yuan. After all, he had personally experienced it for himself and had earned this experience through blood, sweat and tears.

'Since the ancient times, high-ranking officials would pressure those of lower ranks. Even though the Realm Alliance might be less uptight over rules, the same phenomenon still applies. It is too simple for me to deal with him without leaving any traces behind... Hehe, after all, he is a new member and deserves to undergo some hardships. If he is not put under pressure, he would not develop and improve. This is my effort in training you!'

Li Qin laughed to himself and was filled with satisfaction at the fact that he was about to take revenge for his grandson.

# Chapter 336: Meaning in Cultivation

---

Dream Realm.

Fang Yuan strolled along the streets of the Dream Realm. The public area formed by the gigantic Kun beast was bustling as always.

Numerous dream masters had a mysterious light shining from them to conceal their body. They walked along the busy streets and gathered at the four-sided stone tablet in the centre to trade or to browse through their missions.

"The dream master who conceptualised and built this Dream Realm is really a genius!"

As Fang Yuan looked at the streets, he sighed and thought, "Absolute power corrupts absolutely! With great power, people would vie for greater authority and status... The Dream Realm enables every dream master in the entire Da Qian to progress rapidly and form groups. Naturally, they would then vie for the absolute power of the whole world! This has nothing to do with being good or evil, it is a natural instinct!"

Although there was a neutral Realm Alliance and a good Baize Mountain within the 5 Grand Organisations, Fang Yuan gained new understandings from the event at Changli Mountain Hollows.

"In the end, doesn't matter if good or evil, we are all dream masters... Thus, we cannot tolerate betrayers. Just from the way the 5 Grand Organisations publicised about the Hidden Dragon Guards, it can be told that they share the same bitter hatred against the common enemy. If only there weren't some internal disputes regarding the benefits that couldn't be resolved, I guess Da Qian would have descended into chaos?"

Fang Yuan went to the Realm Alliance Mountain instead of the public square.

Ever since he received the level of rights, although he could set Realm Alliance Mountain as his main location to be transported to, Fang Yuan still preferred to be transported into the public area.

"After the rank of 4th Leaf Cultivator, one could set a Green Bronze Hall as his location to conduct all sorts of training and experiments..."

In reality, there were still many benefits in joining the Realm Alliance.

The Realm Alliance greatly helped Fang Yuan. Examples included the help he received to fight against the Divine Lotus Cult and also the position of Golden Sun Prosperous Land's guardian.

"Therefore, I still have to stay in Realm Alliance! Dream masters without an organisation usually do not live for long... especially during such a period where conflicts are becoming more intense!"

Fang Yuan had a premonition that the conflict between dream masters and Da Qian's royalties were becoming more and more intense, as though it was about to explode!

Perhaps the recent events at Changli Mountain Hollows were merely just a presage and the real tragedies awaited.

As Fang Yuan came near the rock tablet of the Realm Alliance, he found a pavilion and sat down. He then sent a message, "Ye Sisters, I have reached!"

"Please wait a moment, brother Fang Yuan..."

The inscription plate glowed and not before long, the two sisters arrived hand in hand. The elder sister was forthright as usual and sat down immediately. Whereas, the younger sister's cheeks were slightly red and she was shyly looking around.

"Seems like there's something wrong, her attitude is different..." Fang Yuan thought for a moment.

He did not care further and then asked, "You contacted me and



said you have found the technique?"

"Indeed! Here's the Red Night 9 Smelting Technique!"

Ye Shuhua took out a blood-red coloured crystal and said, "This technique is created by a dream master at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine. It can banish evil forces and is extremely expensive... however, as my family is still rather reputable, it was found in a family friend's hidden library!"

"Many thanks!"

Fang Yuan received the crystal. As he peeked into the blood-red crystal, he saw a paragraph of wondrous words.

Furthermore, as he compared it to the 9 Smelting Technique Liu Mengmei sent over, he saw that the two were perfectly linked together. Hence, he believed the sisters and assured, "Since I have already received the deposit, rest assured that I will handle that Li Bai and even the Li Qin behind him!"

This was because Fang Yuan also had backings behind him, which were Elder Smelter and Feng Xinzi.

Although it is said that relationships were meant to be cultivated, in actual facts, such favours should be used quickly or else it would bring about greater troubles and resentment.

This time around, with how Ye Shuhua quickly found the technique and closed the deal, it was also a way to put an end to their relationship.

From then on, the two parties no longer owed each other anything.

This was natural for Fang Yuan.

Ye Shuhua stood up slowly and bowed to him. She then dragged her sister who seemed like she wanted to speak and yet did not.

Fang Yuan remained seated and appeared to be waiting for someone.

Indeed, not long after, a middle-aged man came over. He was handsome and had a tall hat; he was calm and at ease. Behind him was an arrogant and haughty looking Li Bai that made Fang Yuan thought of a big cock.

The middle-aged man walked forward and sat in front Fang Yuan. He then spoke in a straightforward manner and sincere voice. He did not sound like he was showing off.

"My name is Li Qin, a dream master at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine! A 4th Leaf Cultivator in the alliance!"

"Eh... so what?"

Fang Yuan gave a wry smile.

Fang Yuan had to do his utmost since he made the deal. Just because the man said all those did not mean that Fang Yuan had to respectfully step down.

"Similar... so similar!"

Li Qin lamented, "Seeing you is like seeing the young me! I used to be like you, so witty and sharp, just like a sharp sword out of its sheath! But as someone who used to be like that, I have to advise you to know your place and limits... don't be too brash, else you would have lots of troubles ahead of you! This is coming from an experienced man!"

This man was interesting. He did not mention the Ye sisters nor did he abuse Fang Yuan with his position. Instead, he was like an old grandfather that shared his life experiences and gave warm pieces of advice.

However, Fang Yuan's gaze changed at once and he began laughing, "Old fogey... you are out of date!"

"Eh? What did you say?"

Li Qin's eyes flashed with a cold light; it was as though cracking noises could be heard from the surrounding.

Behind Li Qin, Li Bai covered his mouth in shock. He felt Fang Yuan was extremely insolent and thought to himself. How dare he criticised his grandfather, was he tired of living?

"You want to advise me and say that I am haughty? That I should be more reserved and less sharp-tongued?"

Fang Yuan chortled, "That I should be like you? Like a pebble that has been smoothened? Like a person that made zero improvements in over ten years? Why would I be like a dead tree or a rotten skeleton? If you are really experienced, you would have known that us dream masters can only move forward and not backwards! Why would you be stuck at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage for over ten years? I will not hesitate to make enemies with people like you!"

"Insolent kid!"

Li Qin was enraged and wanted to kill this kid.

He would have never imagined that such a fearless blockhead would exist in this world. Furthermore, this kid had cultivated to the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage! The heavens were blind!

"What? You want to fight me?"

Fang Yuan smirked and stared back at Li Qin, "Come on then, old fogey! Let me tell you, the issue regarding the Ye Sisters is now my issue too! If your useless grandson pesters further, he will have to suffer the consequences!"

"You..."

Li Qin's image was totally gone. As he saw the dream masters nearby gathering, commenting, bantering and staring, he dared not touch Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was not afraid as there would be no harm to his body even if his magical clone was destroyed. Most importantly, there were rules governing the Realm Alliance. It was unacceptable if

alliance mates fought each other for no good reasons.

Furthermore, it would be even worse if it was a senior bullying a junior.

"This Li Qin doesn't even dare to go against the alliance's rules and he dares to make enemies with me? He even wanted to destroy my meaning in cultivation?" Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan could only give a wry smile at such a scene.

Although Li Qin initially appeared warm, he actually harboured malicious intentions and had ulterior motives. The most important thing for a dream master was the cultivation of his own soul in order to be resolute in his chosen path.

If Fang Yuan believed Li Qin's blarney and his ways of dealing with people, that would have been a real suicide! Not only would his cultivation stop improving and stagnate, it might even regress!

That was what it meant to destroy one's "meaning in cultivation"!

Hence, Fang Yuan brazenly attacked him with words. By making use of the Realm Alliance's rules, Fang Yuan knew Li Qin could not fight him even if he wanted to. Thus, things did not go the way Li Qin wanted and his actions could not match his intentions. Li Qin might even vomit blood when he went back!

Thus, not only was Fang Yuan's meaning in cultivation not destroyed, he managed to disrupt Li Qin's state of mind!

Although swords nor weapons were seen in this exchange of words, the dangers hidden within it was comparable to a fight for death.

Fang Yuan was brought up by Master Heartless. He faced numerous challenges all by himself; even as the world was in chaos, he relied on his own ways and stayed true to himself. It was ridiculous for Li Qin to attack him for his personality.

Furthermore, the world was experiencing a massive turmoil and

chaos was imminent. If Fang Yuan cared about being humble and docile in such a time, it would be as though he surrendered himself to his enemy.

"Old fogey... you are so pathetic!"

Even if Li Qin used to be a genius, he had already lost his drive and spirit. If he were to fight in a fierce battle, his outcome would be disastrous.

Fang Yuan had already viewed Li Qin as a dead person. Fang Yuan calmly stood up and gave Li Qin a look of pity before turning away immediately.

He did not even bat an eye at that Li Bai who was convulsing in anger.

Although Li Bai was a dream master, 80% was due to external resources that helped him. Li Bai's character and temperament were utterly horrible and Fang Yuan would be stooping down to his level if he cared about him.

"Fang Yuan!"

"Fang Yuan!!"

"Fang Yuan!!!"

Li Qin was fuming mad. If that image of his was not formed by his spiritual will, he would have really vomited blood. Even so, a gleam of light shined across Li Qin and he became wobbly and unstable.

"Grandpa!"

Li Bai was shocked and immediately went forward to support Li Qin's body. However, Li Qin gave him a slap and shouted, "Scram! I don't need your pity!"

Li Qin's expression turned gloomy. He looked at Fang Yuan's back view leaving and thought, "If this kid doesn't die, my heart will not be at ease!"

...

As Fang Yuan had bafflingly just gained another enemy, it made him sigh too.

In actual fact, dream masters lived a very long life and had numerous powers. If they fought about women, it could be easily resolved usually.

However, Li Qin had an ulterior motive, he wanted to destroy Fang Yuan's meaning in cultivation! That meant Li Qin had the intent to kill!

Fang Yuan had no regrets in brazenly retorting him.

Fang Yuan only regretted not having enough power and that it happened in the Dream Realm. Thus, it was not perfect for him as he could not kill his whole family and display their chopped-off heads.

"Clap! Clap!"

Suddenly, a stream of pill essence gathered beside Fang Yuan and turned in the silhouette of Feng Xinzi. Feng Xinzi clapped his hands and praised, "So mighty! So savage! Whatever you said just now was so true! Just that you have now offended Li Qin and bunch of useless elders in the alliance!"

"Luckily I have you to support me!"

Fang Yuan expression changed and said, "It's just a few words out of my mouths! They can't possibly be rushing over to kill me immediately!"

"The Realm Alliance forbids members from killing each other. For Illusionary Divine dream masters at the same tier, they could still report it to the elders to fight on the Stage of Life and Death. You don't meet this condition and furthermore, amongst the 3rd Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters, no one is confident to take you down! Thus, there's nothing to be afraid of for you!"

Feng Xinzi did not know whether to smile or not and continued, "Just that this Li Qin does have some power with him, especially since he is good friends with the treasurer of the prosperous lands in Cloud Region. You might be in for some small troubles..."

# Chapter 337: 9 Smelting Technique

---

"If I plant one in the spring, I will get back 10,000 in autumn..."

Within the Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

Looking at the golden stalks of rice, his face was filled with anticipation to harvest them.

"Even if the Yellow Grain Rice does not evolve any special traits, the fact that I am able to shorten its maturity period meant that the resources required would be greatly reduced. As long as I am able to harvest them after maturity, I would have already earned!"

After farming for half a day, Fang Yuan walked out of the array and arrived at the main hall.

Beautiful servants with blushed cheeks served Fang Yuan all kinds of spiritual food and started to brew a pot of tea for him.

In the past few days, he had spent half the day farming and the other half practising his martial arts. In his free time, he would read up on ancient recordings or conduct research on martial arts techniques. Occasionally, he would try and understand the mysterious glow from the water dragon pearl. Therefore, his lifestyle was rather regulated.

As time passed, Fang Yuan started to give off a mature vibe. He no longer had the haste of pushing his progress forward.

This was a sign of his strengthening foundation.

"Whooo!"

After finishing his meal, he teased 2 servants and thoroughly enjoyed himself. With a laugh, he arrived at a square, released a breath of white energy and began his training in martial arts.

"Chi! Chi!"

Behind his back, 4 spiritual meridians formed a vague figure. A 5th spiritual meridian was faint, but with time, it slowly formed.



Finally, it glowed with brilliance, and the entire illusionary vague figure shook.

"The 5th Meridian of Wu Zong is formed!"

Fang Yuan composed himself before revealing a look of satisfaction on his face. "The 9 Smelting Technique to purify one's elemental force is indeed effective!"

In the past few weeks, he had accumulated experience to fill up his proficiency points. In addition, he had also started to practice the 9 Smelting Technique. It was the simplified version of the Red Night Recordings, but it was enough to purify his martial arts elemental force.

Previously, he had hastily achieved his breakthroughs without a strong foundation. Now that he had practised the 9 Smelting Technique, although it had resulted in a dip in his elemental force, his foundations were slowly being perfected.

Finally, he had achieved a breakthrough today, further progressing on his path as a Wu Zong.

Fang Yuan took a glance at his stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 48

Spirit: 48

Magic: 59

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (3rd Tier), Wu Zong (5th Meridian)

Technique: \[Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 6) (1%)\], \[Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)\], \[8 Gates Sword Array (4th Sword) (99%)\]

Skill: \[Medicine (Level 3)\], \[Botany (Level 5)\]"

"The Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique, although fused with the Qian Kun Giant Spiritual Technique from the Yang Family, can only attain the 8th Meridian at most. Although I can form the Divine Body, it is still imperfect..."

From the corner of his eye, he could see the stats for his Hundred Poison Golden Body as he rubbed his chin. "Now that I've settled down, I should improve this technique of mine... Furthermore, these two martial arts techniques that I have can complement each other to form a new technique. This is the path for me to enter the realm of true martial arts!"

He took a look at both his arms.

Even without channelling his elemental force, he could turn his skin into a golden colour with a mere thought.

He had already thought of achieving such a stage, but could only finally achieve it after training in this plot of prosperous land.

This was not only due to the fact that the environment was stable. More importantly, he had obtained information which was once in the water dragon pearl and now had the information that a dream master at the Prominent Divine stage would have.

"That mysterious glow is indeed a library of information. If there are already so many secrets on the surface of the glow, I wonder what I can discover in the core of the glow..."

Up till now, he had achieved the peak condition and had improved as well. Fang Yuan arrived at a meditation room. With the flip of his palms, a blood-red crystal appeared.

"I shall familiarise myself with the 9 Smelting Technique before I shall attempt the techniques in the Red Night Recordings. This way, although slow, I would be able to succeed with low risks..."

Fang Yuan sighed.

The reason why he was so cautious was the fact that through various means, he had gathered more information regarding the

evil force in him. Therefore, he would rather deal with it conscientiously.

"This evil force, also known as Heavenly Evil Dream Element, is a unique variant of dream elemental force which comes from the Evil Divine Sect... Dream masters with this variant of evil force in them are mostly dream masters at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Furthermore... Most of them will experience a gruesome death. However, if they manage to survive, they would become accomplished and might even have the chance to achieve a breakthrough to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!"

"However, to me, I can achieve the same outcome with an equal probability if I slowly progress in cultivating the 8 Gates Sword Array. Therefore, I have no need for such an evil force in me!"

"Although others would not dare to claim that this evil force came from the Evil Divine Sect, it is most likely that this was the case! They can use this to control or train up dream masters. Ultimately, they would be in control of everything!"

...

With experience, Fang Yuan would not hesitate to assume to worse of his enemy.

Since he knew that this was a trap, he would be a fool to jump right into it.

"Fortunately, I am different from the dream masters of Evil Divine Sect. This evil force is different from my foundations as a dream master. I would only experience a mere disturbance if I were to achieve a breakthrough. However, I could still attempt to get rid of it even at that stage!"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes. Sentences of the recordings from the Red Night Recordings appeared in his mind, and every single word was glowing.

"Red means fire! The Red Night 9 Smelting Technique is basically

bringing in an external fire to burn one's foundation and get rid of foreign forces. It might result in both the evil force and one's foundation to be destroyed... However, right now, my cultivation is pure and I have foundations in martial arts. I can still afford to experience some damage to my foundation!"

With a single thought, a small flame appeared in his actualised dream world.

This flame was not a normal flame. It was also different compared to the flames from the Fire Sword. It was red like blood. In an instant, it covered his entire actualised dream world and started to burn.

"Rumble!"

The 8 Gates Sword Array started to shake. Large amounts of dream elemental force started to evaporate, revealing the physical bodies of the 3 magical swords.

Furthermore, the physical bodies of the magical soldiers started to undergo changes as the red flames raged on. It seemed as though it was being purified.

"Bloop! Bloop!"

Of course, dream elemental force was not as hardy as the magical swords and could not hold on for long.

Under the red flames, mercury-like dream elemental force started to evaporate rapidly. In a few moments, the entire actualised dream world was almost bone-dry.

Fang Yuan felt a wave of dizziness and started to feel weak in his limbs.

He did not feel such weakness even when battling Yi Xie of the Evil Divine Sect while he was in the hollow, or when he had escaped from the hollow with all the physical injuries.

"This flames can burn my magical energy..."

Fang Yuan turned pale. The energy in his eyes started to dim.

"Chi! Chi!"

Finally, as the last drop of dream elemental force evaporated, the ground of the actualised dream world suddenly shook. An evil and demonic red dream elemental force started to appear from beneath.

In the next moment, the dim red evil force started to clash with the red flames.

"Buzz!"

The actualised dream world shook. Fang Yuan shook as well, and there was blood flowing out from his mouth, nose, eyes and even ears.

"8 Gates Sword Array, defend the 4 directions!"

He did not care about himself. All he was focused at was defending the foundations of his actualised dream world, allowing the fire to freely burn the evil force.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

Suddenly, the evil force filled his entire body. In the meditation room, a red glow was emitted from his body, giving off an evil vibe in the process.

As the flames raged on, the weakened evil force had nothing else to feed on. It retreated and started to sizzle.

After a long while, everything settled down. Only Fang Yuan's hoarse voice could be heard. "Haha... This is indeed effective. Although the process is painful and that I can only remove 1% of it every time, I have the Yellow Grain Rice to replenish my elemental energy. I have all the time in the world. Slowly, but surely, I will be able to cleanse myself of this evil force and remove all troubles that would come with it!"

This process would consume a lot of his energy and might even

result in this cultivation level to drop.

However, with the ability to fix his stats and the resources to replenish his energy, he could recuperate in a short period of time. What would he have to fear?

After his excitement died down, he started to become suspicious. "The things is... did I have that shocking feeling because my heart is pumping? Or could it be a powerful being performing a prediction on me? The only one who can do this to me now should be the owner of the evil force, right? Or could it be the inheritance left behind by Sage Changli? Tian Xiezi has already passed on. Therefore, does this mean that it is more probable for Sage Changli's inheritance to have caused this feeling? Hehe... As I was purging the evil force, I felt a concentration of spiritual aura around me. That is actually the best form of disguise! Could this be fate?"

...

In an unknown place in mid-air.

A few strong spiritual wills had gathered together. With their combined powers, the space around them shook. "Who would've thought... Dragon Changli has spent so many resources and successfully found clues about the source... If not for the fact that Lord Yin had helped us, the Imperial Court might have snatched it away!"

"I respect Sage Changli for his knowledge and findings. However, there are 6 portions to the entire secret. If we do not gather all portions together, we cannot deduce the findings. Although we had tried our best, we only managed to obtain 2 portions!"

"The Imperial Court might have obtained 1 to 2 portions as well. However, the locations of the other portions are unknown!"

The few spiritual wills started to suspect each other.

Even a dream master of the Prominent Divine stage had to put in

so much effort to find out the source of all dream masters. If anyone were to manage to discover the source, they would obtain an unparalleled mighty force!

With such a lure, no one in the right mind would peacefully work with one another.

Unless they were to find the source publicly, otherwise, everyone would rather keep the source for themselves.

Lord Yin remained silent. She began to suspect that among these Prominent Divine stage dream masters, one of them had kept the portions for themselves. 'On the day of the self-destruction of the hollow, one of my magical clones was after a portion. As she entered the chaos, she was destroyed. I do not know where that portion of inheritance went to!'

As a sage, Lord Yin would receive an answer with a single thought.

Even if she did not specialise as a dream future master to perform predictions, she would also be able to get an answer. 'Is the missing portion related to an evil force? Evil Divine Sect!?'

Lord Yin started to glare at another spiritual will. 'You hide really well! You almost had me fooled...'

Of course, without evidence, she would not accuse anyone of anything. Furthermore, as sages, they would surely erase all traces that they had done it. She could only let it go. With that, she had decided that in the future, she would test him before giving him what he deserved!

'Something feels weird. Did something happen in the sect?'

A silent spiritual will seemed to have recalled something but slowly became suspicious as well. However, it replied without hesitation. "Although we cannot combine the 6 portions, we can still come to a decision with all the information that we currently have! If we don't remove the Imperial Court of Da Qian, it will

always be in our way!"

As a sage from the Evil Divine Sect, he was not against the Imperial Court.

"I agree!"

The Divine Lotus Cult showed its support.

"I agree! We cannot let the Imperial Court benefit from the efforts of Sage Changli!"

The sage of Source Seeking Sect agreed as well.

"The Realm Alliance... agrees!"

"Baize Mountain... forfeits the vote!"

In a streak of divine light, there was a weak voice.

"Haha... great! Ever since the creation of the Dream Realm, this is the first time that we 5 organisations have arrived at a consensus!"

The spiritual will of the Evil Divine Sect was elated. As soon as the 5 sages came to a consensus, thunder started to rumble outside and a storm broke out!



# Chapter 338: Suppression

---

Within the meditation room in Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

Fang Yuan was emitting the intense red glow of the evil force in him. Slowly, it contracted and became a sinister looking red droplet.

"Rumble!"

As the fire within his actualised dream world raged on, the dark red hint of evil force was being forced to a corner.

"This is the time... get out!!!"

With the flick of his fingers, the dark red evil force started to crystallize and was flung out. As it landed on a wall, a huge hole exploded and the boundaries of the hole started to corrode, releasing a black fog.

"Phew..."

As soon as Fang Yuan had forced the red crystal out of him, he immediately felt more comfortable. Even though he was still weak, it was as though he had put down a huge burden, and the sense of danger that he used to have was now gone.

"In the past two months, I have continuously executed the Red Night 9 Smelting Technique for 81 times. Finally, I have cleared all traces of the evil force from my actualised dream world..."

If he was a normal dream master, even if he was at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine, his elemental energy would be adversely affected and he might even experience a drop in his cultivation level, considering the intensity of him executing the smelting technique.

However, Fang Yuan had daily replenishment of energy in the form of food and could maintain his cultivation level at the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Furthermore, the technique

that he had executed had also purified his dream elemental force and martial arts elemental force.

"This is the best condition that I have ever been. Once I recover from this weakness, I will be able to attempt breaking through to the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage..."

The 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would allow one to trigger spiritual properties within objects and was a significant milestone.

Regardless of whichever path a dream master might choose, as long as one would achieve the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, one's power would increase by folds and would become much more powerful than before.

This was especially so for the 8 Gates Sword Array.

Once the 4th Sword would be formed, Fang Yuan would be able to cast the 4 Emblems Sword Array. Furthermore, his magical soldiers would gain spirituality and each of their powers would be individually magnified! It would be hard to imagine what power the swords could collectively achieve.

Of course, if he ever revealed the 4 Emblems Sword Array, he would have sealed his identity as Master Heartless' disciple.

Therefore, he would either not cast the array, or he had to kill the person if he were to use the array.

"I have unknowingly arrived at this stage..."

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself as his eyes glistened. "I will take revenge for Master!!!"

A dream master at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine was extremely powerful and had limitless powers! How would someone with such powerful die? Master Heartless must have been injured before arriving at the mainland and was already nearing his death.

After all that Master Heartless had done for him, he had to repay

his kindness and therefore take revenge for him!

"Of course... In order to keep this secret safe, I should not even mention it!"

The enemy was too strong and Fang Yuan could not afford to be careless!

...

In the Realm Alliance.

Li Qin looked desolate as he walked through a corridor and arrived at a hall.

"Haha... Li Qin, who would've thought that you would be thoroughly embarrassed!"

A sinister but gentle voice was heard from the centre of the hall. In the seat at the centre, a sinister-looking scholar slowly formed his physical body and smiled.

"I've got to admit that Fang Yuan is indeed a talent and a formidable opponent!"

Li Qin had sadness written all over his face. "Now... I'm afraid that he has become the demon in my mind. If he doesn't die, I'm afraid I will be stuck at my current cultivation level forever!"

Dream masters had to have a clear mind in doing things and would fear 'obstacles' in their minds!

As long as their minds were cluttered, they would never be able to achieve their true potential!

"Sigh... an enemy?"

The scholar took in a deep breath. "Are you seeking for my help?"

"Yes. He is now the guardian of Golden Sun Prosperous Land and will be in isolation for 10 years. If he doesn't come out of the prosperous land, I'm afraid that his achievement in the coming 10 years will be too scary for me to imagine..."

A sinister look flashed across Li Qin's eyes. "As the treasurer of Cloud Region, do you have any solution to this? The resources from every prosperous land will have to go through you! Let him personally bring his resources to you for a few times! Is that possible?"

This was a tactic to weaken his enemy, or rather, to prevent his enemy from becoming stronger.

As members of the Realm Alliance, they would often take ownership of their own decision. The only thing that the alliance could request of the members was to do missions.

However, since Fang Yuan would be occupied for 10 years and would not be required to take up any missions, Li Qin could not stand it. The best idea he had would be to relinquish him of his appointment and force Fang Yuan to continue taking up missions from the Realm Alliance.

By then, considering Li Qin's level of rights and rank within the alliance, he could plot against Fang Yuan.

Although he could not brazenly assign Fang Yuan to do risky missions, the fact that he had to do missions means that he could not cultivate in peace. As long as Fang Yuan would be unable to advance in his rank, Li Qin could use many ways to deal with him, making him unbearable.

"The portion coming from Golden Sun Prosperous Land has already been submitted for this year..."

The treasurer of Cloud Region smiled. "However... Brother, you're in luck! There's an opportunity here. Take a look at what the alliance just announced!"

As he spoke, a mysterious glow flew from his hand and landed on Li Qin's palm.

"Oh? The reallocation of resources across regions? What a lucrative job!"

As an experienced dream master in the Illusionary Divine stage, Li Qin could tell that something was fishy. "The armies are still not deployed and the resources are already on the move. Is something big happening in the alliance?"

"There could be an impending war, or they could be gathering resources to invade a few other realms. Who would know? However, as long as they delegate this mission, we will be at liberty to do whatever we want!"

The scholar let out a sinister smile once more as his expression changed.

"Brother, as the treasurer of a region, you can decide how much resources you require. Even if you increase the amount by a little, no one could say anything..."

Li Qin commented.

"However, Fang Yuan is still a force to be reckoned with... Not only is he gifted and would likely become as powerful as us, he is also good friends with Feng Xinzi and is under Elder Smelter's faction!"

"Smelter and Green Wood have been long-standing enemies. There is nothing more to say!"

Li Qin sighed. He knew that although they were good friends, he would only help if he would benefit from it. Unwillingly, Li Qin took out something. "This Mysterious Elemental Crystal has always been a treasure of mine. I shall give it to you today!"

"Haha... great!"

Seeing this, the scholar's eyes glistened and knew that Li Qin was giving it his all. "Alright! Leave this to me! Even if that small kid were to create trouble, I can still keep him in place considering that I am a 4th Leaf Cultivator as well. No one would be able to say anything!"

"I'll leave this to you!"

Seeing this, Li Qin was decided. As he turned around to leave the hall, he revealed a sinister smile. 'How dare you embarrass me. I shall let you know how powerful I am!;

...

Within the Spiritual Gathering Array.

As he walked lazily across the farm and gazed at the huge grains of Yellow Grain Rice, Fang Yuan could not control himself but let out a big smile.

"If outsiders were to see this, they would surely be shocked beyond words, but it's a pity... It's always safer to keep such treasures a secret."

With the ability to evolve special traits, the Yellow Grain Rice was ready to be harvest in merely a few months.

Even though he did not produce a lot of spiritual rice, he could harvest around 100 catties of spiritual rice from the 600 square-metres the farm. Therefore, he was able to accumulate over 7,500 catties of spiritual rice, enough for a dream master to consume for 10 years!

With so many resources to nourish himself, his intense training in the Red Night 9 Smelting Techniques for 81 times was nothing.

"Eh?"

After walking around, he discovered a small surprise.

A few stalks of Yellow Grain Rice resembled a small horned dragon.

"Is this another type of special trait being evolved? This is great! However, I don't know what special trait is it..."

With a flash from his Mountain River Pearl, the seeds of the evolved variant were absorbed into storage.

Considering how large-scale his farming was, it was only natural that there were a few variants being evolved here and there.

Although it might not evolve into how he would have wanted it to, it was always good to have improved variants.

He now felt like a wealthy overlord.

"Lord!"

As soon as he exited the Spiritual Gathering Array, he noticed both Meng Tian and Meng Guang frantically running towards him. "Something bad has happened! A messenger arrived, claiming that the contribution requirement has increased!"

"Oh?"

Fang Yuan frowned. Quickly, he sent a magical clone into the Dream Realm to investigate. "This is a piece of legitimate news. However, they have allowed each region to decide the increments for themselves. I'll just go take a look..."

In the main hall.

"Why is the guardian not here yet? Is he showing disrespect on purpose?"

Fang Yuan arrived outside the main hall and heard an arrogant voice followed by a distinct slap. "How dare you useless bum serve me? Get lost!"

Amidst cries, two servants held their red faces and ran out, crying. Seeing Fang Yuan, they quickly greeted him.

"Forget it, please carry on!"

Fang Yuan suspected that something was not right. As he stepped into the main hall, he could see a dream master dressed in black. A table was flipped and wine was spilt across the floor. Everything was in a mess.

"Are you the guardian of Golden Sun Prosperous Land? I am Zhou Hun, the messenger of the treasurer! There is a new order!"

Seeing Fang Yuan's arrival, Zhou Hun snickered. He raised an official document towards the ceiling. There were prints of

spiritual light coming from the document.

"You are just a dream-building dream master, yet to achieve the Illusionary Divine stage. How dare you? Where are your manners?"

Fang Yuan chuckled.

If it was a normal mission, they could directly inform him about it in the Dream Realm. Seeing how this messenger reacted, he could guess that the treasurer of Cloud Region must have colluded with Li Qin. Therefore, there was no reason for Fang Yuan to hold back.

"You..."

The messenger was stunned. As his attention was diverted, the official document in his hands disappeared and in an instant, he flew backwards and felt a sharp pain in his face.

"Pa! Pa!"

In a few moments, there were two fresh palm prints on his face.

Zhou Hun, being groggy, took a while before realising what had happened. He was infuriated. "How dare you?"

"You're such a dog, how would I not dare?"

Fang Yuan continued. "Looking at your cultivation, you must be lowly-ranked in the alliance! How dare you show me attitude? If you dare to go against me, I'll kill you this instant. I will at most be punished by the alliance. Do you want to try me?"

The official document was written in the name of the alliance. Regardless if it was fake or not, Fang Yuan had already decided to shoulder any consequences that might come.

However, after taking the official document from Zhou Hun, he would no longer be a messenger but a normal member of the alliance. Therefore, things were different.

All of these were within the rules and no one could argue against



it.

"You..."

Zhou Hun was startled and did not dare to speak a single word.

To think about it, the person in front of him was a rogue dream master and would likely kill him if he was enraged. If that really happened, who would be able to help him?

'I wanted to embarrass this person and please the treasurer. However, looking at how things are, I don't think I should take the risk... No wonder none of them was willing to take up this job!'

# Chapter 339: Breakthrough

---

"Get lost!"

Fang Yuan hollered.

"Hmph! Please, know your place and don't get in the way of the alliance!"

Zhou Hun knew that he was at his wits' end. He stood up, paid his respects and left, depressed.

Although he was still responsible for investigating Fang Yuan's background, the fact that the entire Golden Sun Prosperous Land was under the protection of the 99 Golden Suns Gigantic Array as well as Fang Yuan's own additional array meant that unless he had the ability to completely destroy the prosperous land, there was nothing he could do. Of course, he wouldn't be so dumb as to court his own death.

"Lord..."

Witnessing this scene, both Meng Tian and Meng Guang were stunned.

Even the previous guardian would show some respect whenever a messenger would come. Why was their new guardian, Fang Yuan, so daring?

"Relax... he is just an insignificant person. There won't be any severe consequences!"

Fang Yuan flipped the scroll. Without looking, he could already guess that the figure they were demanding would be an astronomical value.

"What... 3,000,000 catties of spiritual rice and 800 catties of aged gold?"

Meng Tian squinted his eyes and examined the scroll as well. "Are they crazy? Why would the treasurer do this to us?"

As he looked at Meng Guang, both of them could roughly guess that this was likely to be related to the fact that Fang Yuan was now the guardian of the prosperous land.

"This... I will settle it. Carry on with your duties!"

Seeing that these two servants were struck with fear, he laughed inside as he waved his hand and dismissed them.

To think about it, he could tide over this relatively easy. He just had to fork out resources from his own storage.

However, only a fool would use their own resources to cover up for official resources!

Furthermore, by acceding to their demand and revealing his wealth, he would attract more unwanted attention and pressure from onlookers. Next time, the treasurer would then be able to demand 30,000,000 catties of spiritual rice and 8,000 catties of aged gold!

"However... I would also be a fool to resign and put myself against the alliance just because of this unreasonable demand!"

Fang Yuan sighed as he suddenly realised the power of such an organisation.

It was true that an official would be able to oppress the weak!

"Against such a problem, no matter how talented one would be, if one does not have a backing, one would still be toyed around like a fool and remain trapped by the rules! This is like dancing while being chained up!!!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin, closed his eyes and arrived at the Dream Realm.

"It seems... a little different!"

As arrived at the rock tablet of the Realm Alliance before walking out on the public streets. "The dream masters are all rushing about. Every mission's payout is now 10 times more, and the prices

of war supplies seem to have gone up... is a war about to break out?"

Before the advancement of troops, their rations would have to go first.

Even dream masters were not spared from such ideologies.

From the tense atmosphere, Fang Yuan could sense that something was about to go wrong.

"The alliance is forcing us to take up even more missions! Furthermore, most of them are assassination missions..."

Fang Yuan licked his lips. "I'm fortunate... If it was a little later, I'm afraid I would not have a chance to get this appointment as guardian!"

With this appointment, he could officially be inactive. Even if there were no more resources for him to loot, he would still not give up this appointment!

"No wonder the treasurer is demanding me for my supplies. Of course, the alliance wouldn't be against his decision! It seems like my appointment has gotten some jealousy..."

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as he contacted Feng Xinzi.

However, he was informed that Feng Xinzi was in isolation. With that, Fang Yuan had come to a conclusion. "I've used up my friendship with him... Or should I say, he has deemed that our friendship is over. Unless I can perform and show him that I am valuable to him, I would no longer receive preferential treatment from him!"

With this thought, he disappeared from the Dream Realm.

Since he could not rely on others, he had to prepare himself!

"Elder!"

Feng Xinzi got up and walked to the hall. "Fang Yuan has attempted to contact me, but I had rejected him!"

"Mmm, the compensation that we've given him is enough. We should not spend any more effort on him!"

There was a serious look on Elder Smelter's face. "This kid is indeed lucky... In fact, I don't even think I might be able to smoothly get the appointment of a guardian for myself!"

"Is it... really about to start?"

Feng Xinzi shuddered.

"Mmm... as the alchemy master of our realm, you have an important role to play. Give it your best!"

Elder Smelter continued. "I have already ensured that higher authorities would not be able to get involved and personally deal with Fang Yuan. As for the internal conflicts, whatever he can guard will be his, and if he fails to do so, it is none of our business..."

"Yes, Sir!"

Feng Xinzi took a bow.

Thinking about the heavy responsibility of producing large quantities of spiritual pills and comparing it with those who could enjoy their lives behind the scenes, it was understandable why Feng Xinzi would be jealous of Fang Yuan.

"This is indeed a challenge for you, Fang Yuan. How do you plan to deal with it?"

Feng Xinzi suddenly felt a hint of worry. Before the impending war, even he had started to feel the jitters.

...

In the Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

"If others are unwilling to help me, I can only rely on myself!"

In his meditation room, Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged. It seemed like he had understood something. "It seems... my role as

guardian is a lucrative job in peacetime, but in troubled times, it becomes a piece of meat that everyone is jealous of and would want... there is an impending chaos! Could the Changli Mountain Hollow be the cause of all this?"

Although his appointment was something small, it was a haven of peace!

"All the more I should not accede to their demand! Although the Realm Alliance is nothing, at least I can gain protection there and benefit from it..."

"It's time to achieve another breakthrough!"

All of this had made him determined!

Within his actualised dream world.

Mercury-like dream elemental force was flowing about. It seemed heavy and dense, giving him a sense of security.

After completely eradicating the evil force, the entire actualised dream world felt as though the shackles on it were removed. With that, it expanded once more.

"Ultimately, this place will become a real hollow in the real world!"

Fang Yuan's glistening eyes could not conceal his greed. With that, he looked at this 8 Gates Sword Array.

4 pillars of sword rose up towards the sky. The fire was blazing, the ice was freezing and the thunder was grand... The elements were fighting. As the 3 magical swords glowed, a hint of spiritual wind was in the centre.

On the green sword pillar, the tip of the sword was still lacking and the sword could not form completely.

However, this was done intentionally by Fang Yuan.

"Breakthrough!"

With this thought, the green ball of energy in the centre of the 8 Gates Sword Array, which was untouched throughout the many times he had fought, started to spread out.

This was energy from the source of a realm and was exchanged using karma from the Water Realm. It was extremely beneficial to the cultivation of dream masters.

Furthermore, this amount of energy was already enough for Fang Yuan to become a dream masters in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, but it was forcefully contained.

After all, if Fang Yuan could not rid the evil force from his body and went on with the breakthrough, there might be repercussions in the future. However, now that the evil force was gone, there was nothing holding him back.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

Huge amounts of green glow gathered around the green sword pillar. The lightweight Modest Wind Sword started to form. Green runes glittered on the surface of the sword and finally, they were engraved on the sword.

The Wind Sword! Formed!

"Rumble!"

In an instant, 4 sword pillars glowed and their radiance shot up into the sky!

Red, blue, purple and green... They represented the power of fire, ice, thunder and wind. As a stable foundation formed in the centre, the actualised dream world started to expand.

The actualised dream world shook and trembled as though the ground was splitting. Fog rose up into the air, and the entire space was now increased to twice the size!

"Fire, water, wind and thunder... the 4 Emblems are finally formed!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan was filled with satisfaction. "Although it is still incomparable to the most basic earth, fire, wind and water, it is still alright, for I will not be able to harness such power. Instead, with these 4 Emblems coming together, it will be something I can manage and something that is suitable for me! This is the best!"

With this, his stats started to change:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 48

Spirit: 48

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (5th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 6) (1%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)]"

"Finally... the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!"

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh.

Being at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage meant that he would be able to create spirituality. He was now a dream master to be reckoned with, even in the Realm Alliance.

In fact, the dream master who had troubled him, Li Qin, and even the treasurer of Cloud Region was only at this stage.

In terms of combat power, he would be on par with them, if not even stronger!

"Activate your spiritual property!"

Using his magical energy, he could control the space in mid-air.



Immediately, he could feel a mighty force in him as though the heavens had bestowed him with power.

With the point of his finger, an illusionary figure appeared on the Leaving Fire Sword. It was blurred and appeared confused but curious. "Master?"

"Is it intellectually similar to that of a 9-year old kid?"

Fang Yuan sighed. As he waved his hands once more, vibes of intellectual waves were given off from the 3 other spiritual swords.

"The ability of a dream master in the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine to create spirituality is extremely limited... Of course, it is enough for the sword spirits to be able to have such an intellectual level! In the future when my cultivation improves, the spirituality and wisdom of the sword spirits will improve as well. Once I reach the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, I should be able to create the Fire Sword Child, Water Sword Child and more..."

In reality, as a sword spirit, they did not need to be very wise. It would be enough as long as they could kill enemies!

"Who should I look for to test out the 4 Emblems Sword Array?"

With a new powerful weapon in his hands, Fang Yuan wanted to kill.

With a snicker, he looked at his sword array.

The 4 Emblems Sword Array appeared sturdy. At the west of the array, a mysterious black sword was beginning to form. Spiritual aura began to disperse as the black sword complemented the array like a puzzle piece.

"This is the Lake Sword. It is graceful on the outside but brute on the inside. It is most suitable to be the heart of the array as it would be able to amplify the power of all the other 4 swords..."

As the 4 Emblems Sword Array formed outside, the next would be to form the array within.

Heaven, Earth, Mountain and Lake, followed by Water, Fire, Wind and Thunder!

"At Master's peak, he should have formed the Heaven Sword at the 8th Tier of Illusionary Divine..."

Fang Yuan knew the power of the 8 Gates Sword Array, and his fear for his master's enemy started to build up. "This is similar to martial arts. After the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, I would have the chance to achieve a breakthrough to the Prominent Divine stage. Master must have been close to invincible as a Prominent Divine stage dream master! However, he was not a sage!"

"In the 8 Gates Sword Array, could there be... a 9th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage?"

Suddenly, he realised what his Master's resolution and regret. Thinking about it, his heart shook.

# Chapter 340: Retaliation

---

"Fang Yuan...you...mm?"

In the Dream Realm, Feng Xinzi stared at Fang Yuan and the sword essence that surrounded his hands. His eyes suddenly widened.

"You...you have ascended to The 4th Tier?"

Fang Yuan was toying with a ray of sword radiance, which swam in the air like a little snake. It seemed as though it was alive.

To be able to exert such a degree of control over sword essence was incredible. Feng Xinzi was entirely aware that this was the cultivation of the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, a state where one's spirituality would be triggered.

"That's right!"

Fang Yuan acknowledged with a smile.

In truth, this was impossible to hide. Although there was an increase in strength, but the increase in rank had not yet arrived. To face off with an enemy was unwise, and there was a need for Fang Yuan to search for a backer and prove his worth.

"Congratulations...I am being honest!"

Feng Xinzi was experiencing a flood of emotions. He remembered how he had been painfully stuck at the 4th Tier for years, and how he had only managed to achieve a breakthrough recently. He had sacrificed so much in the process. Now looking at Fang Yuan, he had this intense feeling of having led a wasted life.

Unknowingly, a sliver of jealousy and depression had been born.

Of course, the dream master of the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage was undoubtedly powerful. Feng Xinzi maintained his smile anyway.

"I'll help you to inform the Elder Smelter! Our line has gained

another talent. The Elder will be pleased!"

Feng Xinzi left immediately after speaking.

Fang Yuan looked on silently.

Even though Feng Xinzi had not given away anything, all the more it betrayed his true feelings! Anyone would have felt envy upon seeing his achievements. Suppressing it to such an extent could only mean that he was a dangerous person.

Fang Yuan's endless strings of breakthroughs had ultimately led to cracks in his friendship with Feng Xinzi!

...

In the hall.

"What? That Fang fellow has already reached the 4th Tier?"

The Elder Smelter appeared at the master seat in the form of a fire dragon. He was alarmed.

"Such a qualification would at least bring him into the top 10 list of pugilists in the Alliance...no, for a dream master to rank up, there are considerations other than qualifications. Resources matter as well. Either he has inherited the generous legacy of the forebears, or dream-traversing the different worlds has done him much good!"

"This person has immense talent. I cannot compare to him!"

Feng Xinzi was hunched as he spoke.

"Also...it seems like he carries a secret, and his inheritance is an uncommon one. Elder, you must decide what to do with him!"

"But to be fair, has there been anyone who reached the illusionary divine stage without possessing secrets of their own?"

The Elder Smelter was not overly concerned. He was a dream master of the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, more powerful than True Divine martial artists and True Elemental

spiritual knights. He was a man of great ability and did not lack for opportunities.

He was at an elevated position and was not particularly impressed by a legacy of the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

However, Feng Xinzi's words had attracted his attention, and he stared at Feng Xinzi.

"So...what do you think should be done?"

Feng Xinzi felt his blood ran cold. He knew that the Elder Smelter had already picked out the jealousy in his voice, and he fell to his knees immediately.

"Hear me out Elder. Our line has produced yet another talent, and I am elated. Even if I might not be entirely reconciled to this fact, I will not allow these feelings to get in the way!"

The Elder Smelter was approving of Feng Xinzi's frankness and nodded.

"You may continue!"

Feng Xinzi heaved a mental sigh. He knew that he had the Elder's trust.

"Now that Fang Yuan is at the 4th Tier, his abilities would be recognised by the Alliance sooner or later and they would give him a higher level of rights. To mend whatever hard feelings there might be between you and him, why not give it to him right now?"

"This person must have been carrying some secrets to be able to rank up this quickly. But our line has a strong foundation and we can offer him so much more. As long as we continue with our subtle recruitment efforts, he will join us one day. Aggressive behaviour might turn him away instead. But it's a good thing that you have grasped the big picture!"

The Elder continued.

"A dream master at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage can at least gain the level of rights as a 4th Leaf Cultivator. We should give it to him ourselves or he'll owe the favour to someone else. But he is not a core member after all and we will have to place him under probation! Tell him to come in and I'll see him personally, and give him a higher level of rights!"

"Yes sir!"

Feng Xinzi bowed. He was filled with a sort of anticipation.

The Elder had given him an assurance. Yes, although Fang Yuan and he were both of the illusionary divine stage 4, but he himself was around from the start and was a core member while Fang Yuan was only joining in halfway.

Fang Yuan had to undergo a series of tests and training before he could be useful to the organisation.

'Breaking through stage 4 would exhaust all of one's foundational strength, which would have to be accumulated again...we will now start from the same point. I have an advantage because I am a core member. He won't overtake me.'

Feng Xinzi's thoughts had given him more confidence and he swaggered off.

Behind him, the Elder Smelter smiled quietly.

Having gained two dream masters the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage under his wing would give him more authority in the Realm Alliance. This was especially important given that there was impending war.

...

Not long after. The Realm Alliance Mountain.

The residential hall of the Cloud Region's Treasurer.

The Treasurer had a scholarly air about him and was listening to Zhou Hun's reports gloomily.

"My lord..."

Zhou Hun was on his knees. His face was streaked with tears and he had a palm print on his cheek that he had put on deliberately.

"That Guardian is an arrogant prick. He humiliated me, which is akin to not giving you respect!"

"Jerk!"

The Treasurer had a dangerous glint in his eye.

"I already knew that this person was excessively proud, but I had no idea that he was violent and temperamental as well... he hasn't stepped out of line yet though. I cannot deal with him."

He laughed coldly to himself.

'Since he has already been assigned a task, the amount of land available for use in the Golden Sun Prosperous Land must be lacking. He would have to put in much effort to maintain his appointment and avoid war at all costs! All the more we should ruin his plans!'

The Treasurer then turned to Zhou Hun.

"Go to him again in a month's time and if he has completed his assignment, issue him another one with a workload that is twice as heavy as his current one!"

"Ah...my lord, this defies logic!"

Zhou Hun was stunned.

Although he wanted to take revenge very much, he did not want to put himself in unnecessary danger.

"So, there is only him! If the Golden Sun Prosperous Land is given a larger share, the Cloud Region and other places will have less to do. This is a good thing, and no one would object other than the Guardian of the Golden Sun Prefecture."

The Treasurer laughed with mirth.

"As for him? Hmph...just a 3rd Leaf Cultivator. If he disobeys orders, it means that he is disregarding the big picture. I could report that to the leaders, who would remove him from his post and send him to the battlefield!"

"My lord is brilliant!"

Zhou Hun felt a chill in his bones.

He could not imagine himself being the one involved in this situation. His lordship's greed could never be satisfied. But these feelings were soon replaced with a sense of satisfaction.

'Haha...to think that this day would come. This must be your retribution for hitting me back then...eh?"

At this moment, he glanced a figure charging into the residential hall from his peripherals.

"Who is that?"

The Treasurer was equally perplexed.

He did not know who the intruder was yet, but it was surely a person with the same level of rights as he. A 4th Leaf cultivator of the Realm Alliance, a force to reckon with.

"Get lost!"

Fang Yuan kicked out casually, and Zhou Hun flew out by several yards with a scream.

"Ahh...are you the Guardian of the Golden Sun Prosperous Land? Fang Yuan?"

The Treasurer was startled.

"You? Have you attained the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage? Do you have the 4th Leaf level of rights?"

The rapidness of his promotion was astounding. He was a prodigy.

"You are the Cloud Region's Treasurer?"



Fang Yuan sized him up defiantly. He considered the Treasurer his equal, which was the truth in terms of power and authority.

"I am Zhou Tian. What do you want?"

The Treasurer frowned.

"What do I want?"

Fang Yuan roared with laughter.

"Zhou Tian! We both know it very well. You dared to interfere in my conflict with Li Qin. Are you bent on challenging me on the Stage of Life and Death?"

"You..."

Zhou Tian choked and was silent for a moment.

The Stage of Life and Death was a method of resolving conflicts between dream masters in the Realm Alliance. They would fight each other to the death on a platform.

The rule was that only dream masters of the same level of cultivation could fight each other, and they had to receive the blessings of the elders. All their weapons and magical tools would be taken from them to ensure fairness.

Zhou Tian had not expected Fang Yuan to make such a huge fuss. He had only antagonised Fang Yuan slightly, and now Fang Yuan was challenging him to a death match. Had all his training been for nought?

Even if he was 90% confident that he would win, a death match was still a worrying prospect.

As a dream master, he was almost immortal. He could expect to live on for a long time. How could he take part in a death match so readily?

The key thing was, how had he offended Fang Yuan? It was not worth it for him to risk his life for a Mysterious Elemental Crystal. He was not stupid.

'Damn it! How did I forget that this person is a mad bull! For the sake of the Ye sisters, he actually dared to challenge Li Qin at only stage 3..."

Zhou Tian was becoming more afraid and beads of perspiration lined his forehead. He decided to smile obsequiously.

"Brother Fang, you need to calm down. Perhaps there has been a misunderstanding!"

"Misunderstanding?"

Fang Yuan smirked.

"How do you explain the issue with the quotas?"

"This was all the fault of my subordinate...this Zhou Hun has made a blunder and I will punish him! As for the stated quota, it will definitely be changed! Changed!"

Zhou Tian took on a fierce look immediately and waved his hand. Zhou Hun gave a shriek and his spiritual will disappeared into thin air.

Fang Yuan giggled to himself as he observed the scene. This was the fate of a servant.

At the same time, he was himself a newbie. To protect his interests, he had to either find a powerful backer, or become so belligerent that his enemies would think twice about crossing him.

Unless they had good reason to kill him, his foes would leave him alone.

There was an immediate shift in Fang Yuan's mood and he gave a gentle smile this time.

"Oh, it must be a misunderstanding then. Treasurer Zhou, although we have the same level of rights, but based on appointment, you are my superior. Please do look out for me!"

"Yes...yes..."

Zhou Tian's face began to spasm.

"This person is very mercurial. He is a scheming character indeed!"

Knowing that Fang Yuan was no push over, Zhou Tian realised that many of his plans were unfeasible. He was suddenly annoyed at Li Qin.

# Chapter 341: Chaos

---

"Are you unwilling?"

Within the Green Bronze Hall, Li Qin gazed at the silhouette beneath him and frowned.

"Grandfather..."

Li Bai knelt down and was pale. "I have only just become a dream master. It is extremely risky for me to take up a mission now! How can the few elders in the Realm Alliance be so selfish as to sacrifice us to protect their direct disciples!"

"What rubbish!"

Li Qin frowned once more and had a serious look on his face. "Don't spout such nonsense... even before me! Keep these thoughts to yourself, otherwise... I will personally send you to the battlefield with the highest casualty rates to show my loyalty to the alliance. Do you understand?"

"Under... understood!"

Li Bai could see a chilly look in his grandfather's eyes as he acknowledged while shivering in fear. Following, he became silent for a while before hesitating to ask again. "Can I not go? The secluded 9 Extremes Mountain is among the top ten most dangerous places in Da Qian... Even if I have support from outside, it is still too dangerous!"

"... There are no more other suitable places for you to go. You can sit out of this one, but if anything happens, you will be sent out to the frontline!"

Li Qin paused for a while before continuing. "Although that place is dangerous, if you do accept to go there, you are entitled to reject any other requests. This is the best I can do for you. Appreciate what I am doing for you. At your age, I killed many and stained my hands with blood before returning alive. People would fight to go

there, but here you are, unwilling!"

It was not a sudden decision to start a war with Da Qian. The dream masters would have to ascertain their base camp before they could start eliminating those that didn't matter before the war. These were people without sects and backing of any organisations and could be Wu Zongs, spiritual knights or even lone dream masters. Everyone had to choose a side; no one would be allowed to stay neutral!

By that time, since the Realm Alliance had the least requirements to enter, there would surely be a lot of dream masters begging to join!

Unfortunately, Li Bai could not understand his grandfather's goodwill.

"But..."

Li Bai hesitated. "How did Fang Yuan become the guardian of the prosperous land?"

Li Qin's face went black. "He was fortunate enough to have settled that deal before all of these began. He had just taken over as guardian before everything changed. What can we do?"

However, inside him, Li Qin felt unjust as he gritted his teeth with hatred.

The job of a guardian was a lucrative one to begin with. It would become much more valuable during wartime and it would be impossible for there to be any vacancies.

"Don't worry. Wait at the 9 Extremes Mountain. As long as you don't enter the secret realm, you would not be in any true danger. In the future, you would surely have the opportunity to become the guardian of a prosperous land!"

Li Qin gave a cold look as he mulled.

Zhou Tian's plan against Fang Yuan should have worked out by

now. Fang Yuan would be pressurised and surely cannot retaliate!

After getting rid of Fang Yuan, the appointment of a guardian would be made available once more and therefore, Li Qin would be able to help his grandson become the next guardian.

"Is this true?"

Hearing this, Li Bai's worried look become one of happiness. "Grandfather, you must help me!"

"Whoosh!"

At this moment, a fiery glow shot into the Green Bronze Hall. It was a small sword with a piece of beautiful jade attached to it. The jade was filled with essences of elemental force.

"This..."

Li Qin's expression changed as though he had a bad premonition about something. With his index finger, he touched the surface of the sword.

"My old friend, Li Qin!"

From the small sword, Zhou Tian's voice was heard. "Regarding the issue about Fang Yuan, I have decided not to get myself involved. I shall return you the Mysterious Elemental Crystal in its original state... Let me warn you that this person has already attained the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and his level of rights has been increased to that of a 4th Leaf Cultivator. He is now as powerful as the both of us and is an extremely dangerous person. It is going to be hard to deal with him!"

"What? 4th Tier?"

Li Qin let out a gush of spiritual aura which exploded in mid-air, as though he had lost control of something. "That brat... How could he advance so quickly?"

"A 4th Leaf Cultivator?"

Li Bai was stunned as well.

This meant that Fang Yuan was one of the more powerful dream masters in the alliance and would be accorded certain rights. To Li Bai, this was a powerful person which should be given utmost respect.

"Brat!"

Li Qin's eyes were filled with fury. "Fang... Fang Yuan!"

If Fang Yuan's first words to him were akin to planting seeds of phobia within his mind, then Fang Yuan's rapid advancement would be akin to slapping him in the face!

"What a world! What a cruel world!"

Most importantly, the source of the news was from a higher up and therefore, Li Qin could not deny this fact.

In times of chaos, everyone had to give way to those who would rise to power quickly.

Previously, Li Qin had also gotten help to achieve a breakthrough to the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. However, since then, his progress seemed to come to a halt.

How long ago was it since he had attempted the extremely-dangerous dream-traversing?

Li Qin appeared depressed. "I've used up a lot of resources to achieve my breakthrough many years ago, as well as owing many others favours! Even my progression in terms of my level of rights is halted, and yet you can catch up within a day. You're good..."

"Grandfather, don't be angry..."

Li Bai tried to appease Li Qin and felt that his grandfather was on the verge of becoming crazy.

"Don't worry, I'm fine!"

Li Qin waved his hands. "It's just that it has been a while since I fought, and I don't want others to look down on me! Take your leave, I shall remain in isolation!"

The impending war and the threat from a newcomer both gave him a sense of danger!

Under such stimulation, this old dream master would finally resume his training!

...

In the Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

Fang Yuan called Meng Tian and Meng Guang over to tell them about the change in the quantity requested for the resources. Both of them were overjoyed. "Congratulations, Lord! You no longer have to worry about it!"

"Mmm, carry on with your work!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands. Although he was not hopeful for the two of them to begin with, he was completely convinced that he should not waste effort in training them up.

"Eh... sometimes, animals are more loyal than humans... I wonder how are the Flower Fox Ferret and company doing?"

Fang Yuan was lost in his own thoughts. "If I can improve my cultivation in the future, I might be able to return to the mainland and the Green Peak spiritual land to visit them..."

Of course, Fang Yuan knew that he owed nothing to both the Wu Zongs. In such a short time, he knew that it was impossible for them to die for him. Even the previous guardian might have a higher chance of getting the both of them to be loyal to him.

"I've settled everything at Zhou Tian's side and my level of rights has now increased to that of a 4th Leaf Cultivator. I'm afraid there's not a lot Li Qin can do to me now... The older we get, the more afraid of death we will be. Even if I do not pay him a visit, he would surely train himself up and prepare himself for a death match with me..."

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.



He knew that since Zhou Tian had nothing to gain from their conflict, he would be easily scared by the thought of a death match. However, it was different for Li Qin!

If Fang Yuan were to visit him, he might just agree to the death match.

Although Fang Yuan had a chance of winning, ultimately, Li Qin was an experienced dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and would have many tricks up his sleeves. Li Qin might even be able to force Fang Yuan to reveal his secret 4 Emblems Sword Array.

Now that he had scared Zhou Tian, Fang Yuan should not press further and should cowardly hide within the prosperous land to train up.

"Since time is on my side and that I've settled Zhou Tian, let's see what else can Li Qin do!"

With the speed of his cultivation, Fang Yuan was not afraid of Li Qin!

If he could quickly advance and attain the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine, killing Li Qin would be a simple task!

"Furthermore... Is a war really breaking out? The alliance would have to kill the lone cultivators..."

As a 4th Leaf Cultivator, he had a high level of rights in the alliance and was entitled to some classified secrets.

With a casual browse, Fang Yuan was able to obtain all these information.

For instance, the alliance had stocked up on war supplies and resources and was now prepared to wipe out the small organisations. Furthermore, the alliance had secretly raised the requirements for entry and no longer accepted lone cultivators readily.

"If the current Feng Xinzi were to approach me then, I would not dare to join the realm alliance - I might be sacrificed in the war!"

Fang Yuan felt a little fearful. "What if I want to remain as a lone cultivator? I'll have to get approval from the other organisations as well? This is tough..."

All of these are in preparation for the impending war!

There were only a few lone cultivators in the entire world that were worthy of the alliance to take notice of them.

"This war is either among the 5 Grand Organisations or against Da Qian!"

With that thought, Fang Yuan closed his eyes...

...

Gold Region.

This region was North of the Jade Capital and was famous for the 10 over gold mines scattered around the region.

Although gold was not as valuable as they used to be in Fang Yuan's past life, they still worthed a fortune to the average person.

More importantly, there were mysterious treasures around the gold mines; treasures that even dream masters require.

Therefore, this region was extremely well-to-do. There were many sects, and the leading sect was Golden Peak Sect.

At Chaoyang Sect, Maple Town.

"Die!"

With a crackling noise, the entire gate of Chaoyang Sect crumbled.

"Ahhhh... How dare you?"

The sect head of Chaoyang Sect was a 4th Tier spiritual knight. He was devastated as soon as he witnessed this. "Who is this? What hatred do you have with us?"

"You don't need to know all these!"

The black figure snickered. With the wave of his hands, a black fog appeared and started to spread.

"It's a dream master!"

In the black fog came the shocking voice of the sect head. "The Golden Peak Sect will avenge us!"

"Hehe... You spiritual knights and Wu Zongs have occupied Gold Region for long and have enjoyed the treasures here long enough. Yet, all of you contributed nothing! My sect has endured this for long. Let me tell you, even the Golden Peak Sect cannot run away from us!"

A voice as sharp as a nightingale was heard. There were hints of cruelty and evil in the voice.

Not long after, the black fog dispersed, revealing a broken gate.

The sect head of Chaoyang Sect stared at the rubble and leaned against the wall. In his chest, there was a big hole and his organs were lying outside the body. He died a gruesome death.

"Chaoyang Sect is destroyed!"

As the black fog intensified, 10 silhouettes appeared. "After this, we shall go for Green Bamboo Sect... After wiping them out one by one, we shall finally eradicate Golden Peak Sect! By then, the elder in our sect will help us as well! Hehe, the Golden Peak Sect has made use of the Imperial Court's support and discriminated against us in Gold Region. Finally, it's their retribution!"

# Chapter 342: The Alliance

---

The Golden Peak Sect had declared hegemony over at Gold Region. Their power was not to be underestimated.

In the Sect, there was a True Elemental spiritual knight and two True Divines. The three of them ran the organisation and called the shots.

The other sects in the Gold Region had all pledged allegiance to the Golden Peak Sect, and there was an intricate web of communication going on within this alliance.

Such a powerful organisation was making the dream masters uncomfortable, especially given that they seemed like they were about to collude with the imperial forces.

Of course, their differences were not so obvious previously and most of the disagreements could be resolved on the negotiation table by both parties. But now, they no longer had time for such niceties!

However, even as they fought each other, there were strategies to follow. It was not realistic to act on the core leaders of the Golden Peak Sect immediately, and it was far more effective to take out their associates first.

The dream masters were bold and destroyed the affiliates of the Golden Peak Sect one by one. They even placed some of the sects under siege so as to draw out their reinforcements, and subsequently massacred all of them. The entire Gold Region was engulfed in blood and gore.

The Giant Rock Sect.

It was one of the most powerful factions in town, but had been destroyed because of its association with the Golden Peak Sect.

"Junxian! What is your opinion upon seeing this?"

Underneath, the carnage went on. The dream masters made use of their powers of illusion to kill their enemies in their sleep.

The occasional scream in the dead silence brought a chill to their bones.

Ruan Junxian climbed up a tower to get a better view. He was shaken.

In front of him, an old man in a scholar's attire ate and drank with relish. There was a jug of fine wine and a few dishes on the table.

The sharp contrast between the sumptuous meal and the massacre evoked a nauseous reaction from Ruan Junxian.

Of course, he did not dare to show it, and refilled the old man's cup with wine. "The Giant Rock Sect is unscrupulous and have suppressed the people for a long time. Although their activities do not compromise ours, if we are intent on destroying them, they can do nothing about it. In this world, it's always the strong preying on the weak..."

Ruan Junxian seemed to speak from personal experience.

"The strong prey on the weak, well said! This is the law of nature...dream masters like us practise natural arts, how can we turn our backs on the orthodox ways?"

The old man roared with laughter. With a glint in his eye, he scanned Ruan Junxian from head to toe.

"You were lacking in natural gifts and did not have the potential to become a dream master. However, after consuming spiritual foods to boost your foundations, you did manage it somewhat...but can you bear to lose your progress in martial arts? It is still possible for you to become a spiritual knight. To give it all up for a small probability of becoming a dream master?"

"I won't have any regrets. Please recruit me, sir!"

Ruan Junxian kowtowed to the old man after speaking. He knocked his forehead on the floor until it was a bloody mess.

"Hold!"

The old man stroked his beard.

"Although you have missed the optimum window for cultivation, but it is your good fortune to have met me. There will be side effects, but my efforts will be sufficient to push you up the path of the dream disciple...as for the other aspects, I cannot say. It will depend on your luck."

"Yes, thank you master!"

Ruan Junxian stood up with determination in his eyes.

"Haha...bear with this!"

The old man gulped down the contents of a wine cup and pressed a finger to Ruan Junxian's brow.

"Ahh!!"

A sharp pain that seemed to cut deep into his bones and true aura made him scream out involuntarily. His veins swelled like fat worms on his body.

It felt like tens of thousands of ants were assailing his limbs, his bones, his organs...

Following this pain, his flesh felt as though it was withering. At his core, he felt his elemental force die off.

"Enter dreams with martial power, breakthrough today, enter the way!"

As he laughed, the old man drew back his finger and Ruan Junxian collapsed onto the ground. He was drenched in sweat and felt as though he had undergone the most horrific torture.

"Thank...thank you for your help, master!"

Although he was covered in perspiration, his eyes were shining

and he bowed eagerly in gratitude.

"Mm, from now on, you are a man of Baize Mountain."

The old man held up his beard.

"Now that you have entered the sect, it may or may not be a good thing. Now that there is continuous war, rewards will be given out freely. If you can make use of the spoils of war to support the war effort, you will be able to progress faster than dream masters are able to in years..."

"Alright...we don't have to talk too much of this. Just follow me, kill and destroy!"

The old man turned around and saw that a group of soldiers had appeared over the horizon.

"Yes sir!"

Ruan Junxian was exhausted, but he did not dare to take his time. He followed behind with his mind set in stone.

'I am already at the start line. The next step will involve passing the test and accumulating dream elemental force so that I can become a dream master!'

'Baize Mountain is one of the 5 Grand Organisations. With their protection, the family will be safe...also, the enmity between Father and his old masters...'

...

The Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

"My Lord, as per your instructions, all the children in the Prosperous Land aged 10 to 13 are over here..."

In the hall, more than 20 children were gathered. Some were curious and others were nervous.

"Mm...since I am the Guardian, I have a responsibility to make this place prosper. As my subjects, you are all allowed to enter the

libraries and learn how to read and write. You shall learn the martial arts too..."

Fang Yuan decreed casually.

The older personnel had their own independent motivations and there was no point in grooming them. But the young ones were impressionable and should undergo training.

Fang Yuan did not dare to hope for a potential dream master among them, but it would be a good thing if a few spiritual knights and Wu Zongs emerged.

After all, if he was to be stationed here for ten years, he needed to plan for the long term.

"Hurry, greet our lord!"

Meng Tian and Meng Guang made the kids bow down to Fang Yuan.

"My lord!"

Their voices rang out brightly but were out of sync. It was funny.

"Mm, the both of you will plan out their curriculum and assign teachers to their education. I will check on their progress regularly..."

Fang Yuan was in fact assembling a squad.

This was not uncommon though. The previous Guardians had all done it before, albeit through different methods.

Meng Tian and Meng Guang looked on at the kids with envy.

They would probably never become the confidantes of dream masters, but the younger generation could, and it would bring glory to them all the same! If the children were found to possess talent, they would be taken in by Fang Yuan as his disciples. That would be a great leap and a great honour.

Of course, Fang Yuan's original plan was to recruit a few loyal



followers.

Additional helpers and back up plans were always welcome.

"This peace won't stay for much longer..."

Fang Yuan could feel the stirrings of the war to come and he was troubled.

"Hmm?"

Fang Yuan looked towards the entrance to the Prosperous Land suddenly.

"Buzz"

A large movement, followed by the gathering of fog, then a golden beam. The 99 Golden Sun Gigantic Array! It was not too overwhelming, however, which showed that whoever had arrived was holding back.

"The Three Suns Daoist, together with his disciple He Qing, is here to visit!"

A shining spiritual talisman hovered in the air, and a voice rang out when Fang Yuan reached out for it.

"Ah, it's a friend! Give me a moment!"

Fang Yuan walked over to the entrance of the 99 Golden Sun Gigantic Array, and he did see two people waiting there

One of the daoists wore long flowing robes and had a long beard to match. He was in the pink of health and from one look, Fang Yuan knew that his cultivation had reached the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

The man beside him was familiar to Fang Yuan. It was He Qing, the young master of the He family.

"Greetings sir!"

He Qing fell to his knees when he saw Fang Yuan approach.

"It is thanks to your recommendation that my master decided to

take me in, sir!"

"You have your own good fortune to thank!"

Fang Yuan smiled and shook his head. He did not intend to have any further dealings with this person, and he turned to the Three Suns Daoist instead.

"Your arrival has brought me happiness. Please do enter for tea!"

"I will!"

The Three Suns Daoist agreed spontaneously and followed Fang Yuan up the Gengjin Mountain.

"The scenery in the Prosperous Land is excellent, and the many spiritual fields provide nourishment to the land. You are a lucky man indeed! I have brought you a gift to congratulate you on your promotion!"

The Three Suns Daoist gazed at the surrounding fields and smiled.

In truth, he did not think much of these spiritual fields, but after the Guardian Fang Yuan had broken through to the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, this area had become a significant power base and had to be taken more seriously.

"Thanks!"

Fang Yuan was more than aware that if he had not achieved the breakthrough, these powerful personalities would not have visited him personally.

Equality in interactions comes with equality in power. This was something he understood clearly.

The two of them did not enter the hall but found a spot under the trees to rest. In the shade, they began to brew tea.

"You are dismissed for now!"

The Three Suns Daoist said to He Qing after they had downed a

cup of tea.

"Yes master!"

Although he was reluctant to do so, He Qing did not dare to disobey his master and took his leave respectfully.

Fang Yuan stirred slightly. The Three Suns Daoist was about to move on to serious matters.

"Sigh...there has been a recent flurry of activity in the Alliance. What are your thoughts?"

The Three Suns Daoist was straightforward indeed.

"If there is going to be unrest, it will be difficult for us to go about it alone!"

Fang Yuan put on a solemn look.

Although he had received a guarantee from the Elder Smelter, if the war continued to rage on and his services were required, he would have to leave his fields behind.

"You are right, my friend. These are my exact sentiments!"

The Three Suns Daoist gave a bitter laugh.

"Although we have not yet been activated, it is but a matter of time. You might be able to get out of it but it is different for me...if anything happens to me, might I trouble you to manage the Three Suns Sect for me..."

"You worry too much, my friend..."

Fang Yuan had realised that the Daoist was here to seek an ally, and he spoke.

"If we could go at it together, we would have a better chance of making it through these difficult times!"

"I agree!"

The Three Suns Daoist displayed a wide smile.

# Chapter 343: Search

---

Several months passed in a flash.

Fang Yuan formed a small alliance half-willingly the previous time Three Suns Daoist came to visit him.

Many dream masters in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine Stage from the sects in the Cloud Region gathered one after another in a short span of few days to aid each other.

Thanks to them, Fang Yuan was able to obtain several pieces of classified information. As such, he knew that there were conflicts in all parts of the world as 5 Grand Organisations demonstrated their prowess with provocative acts. The Da Qian Royal Family had started to pull back and retaliate. The whole Cultivation World was in disarray.

"Judging from the current situation, a majority of the martial artists and spiritual knights are siding with Da Qian...Needless to say, the dream masters have always been arrogant and it is no surprise that they have offended almost everyone?"

Fang Yuan looked at the report and was speechless.

However, in this world, an individual could possess the power to overwhelm everything. The dream masters possessed remarkable abilities. Even if all the Wu Zongs and the spiritual knights side with the royal family, it would only cause a little additional trouble as the dream masters would have to kill more people.

"Truth be told...it is not the case where the dream masters do not want to integrate and mingle with the Wu Zongs and spiritual knights. However, they could only be servants here at best...over at Da Qian, they would be able to reap all sorts of benefits... After all, it is a people dao Kingdom. There are some resources which we are unable to give up so easily..."

He pondered, "The royal family gathered the power of the masses

and drew out the power that could be drawn out. It is a pity that it would not be able to block the power of the 5 Grand Organisations if the organisations were to wholeheartedly combine their power..."

The war-torn Cultivation World was no new or miraculous experience for Fang Yuan.

Of course, the most direct observation was that the missions in the different paradises became increasingly serious. These missions were dispatched by the alliance and were not meant to go against the Cultivation World. Not even Zhou Tian could change the mission.

Meng Tian and Meng Guang grumbled incessantly that even if they were to deploy their land to its full capabilities, they would only manage to hold out for a year.

However, Fang Yuan had made some plans. Now that peace and quiet were hard to come by, it was only natural for him to make use of his resources for as long as possible. The most crucial point was to increase his level of cultivation!

So what if the world is in turmoil and the 5 Grand Organisations would not combine their power? Fang Yuan still had the confidence to overcome them!

"Now that there is time, it is better to cultivate. If not, there might not be another chance once the war breaks out and I would even miss out countless of opportunities!"

There were both dangers and opportunities when the world was in chaos.

With the world in chaos, Fang Yuan naturally chose to undergo cultivation. It would be the perfect opportunity to strike when things quieten down next time!

Without the need for many words, Fang Yuan arrived at a side palace hall.

"Rumble! Rumble!"

The green water rolled around ceaselessly and bubbled within the pond, emitting a black aura.

"Hiss hiss!"

The black aura took on the shapes of centipedes, scorpions, venomous snakes of the 5 poison types. It was indeed formidable and had the ability to erode souls and melt bones!

"The Hundred Poison Golden Body is a technique which specifically trains the physical body. With the scarce resources from the mainland, I managed to reach the 1st Refining Stage. However, Da Qian has plenty of resources and as such, I have a great room for improvement ...Furthermore, I am a dream master. Things will be different with the aid of the Dream Realm!"

The sect which inherited this Hundred Poison Golden Body Technique was but a small martial arts sect. The user had to traverse the world in search of suitable poisonous objects. As such, it was very challenging.

However, Fang Yuan was different!

As a dream master, with sufficient contribution points or resources, it was only a matter of time before he would be able to procure ancient or precious poisons given the opportunities to trade within the Dream Realm. The poisons obtained from the trade were enough to reach the pinnacle of this technique!

"Since the ancient time, trading life in exchange for cultivation was the only right way!"

Fang Yuan jumped into the pond with a splash, his body releasing a golden light. The raging poisonous fog was nothing but a gentle breeze to him. He spread his arms and leaned against the side of the pond as if he was taking having a soak in a hot spring. His face revealed a look of enjoyment. "There is a school of thought among the dream masters to concentrate on training up their magical

energy and form their Yin Spirit. Their bodies are but shells which could easily be replaced and in the end, they will cultivate to reach the level of ghost and deities. However, I do not subscribe to that school of thought!"

"M...Master, your... soup!"

After a moment, Fang Yuan clapped his hands as Meng Tian and Meng Guang entered the room with a look of nervousness. Even though they had already taken the pill to counter the poison, they were still deathly pale as they looked at the Five Poison Fog. 'Be obedient...if we inhale even a tiny bit of this poisonous fog, I am afraid that we would immediately be poisoned to death and our flesh will melt, revealing our bones...'

They held their breath as they looked at Fang Yuan, who appeared to be serene and enjoying as if he was taking a soak in a hot spring. "This is the soup made from Intestine-breaking Grass and every blade is worth 500 years. There is also the Heart-eroding Flower Pulp with a 1000-year poisonous property which is sufficient to poison a water dragon to its death!"

"Hmmmm, put down the items and leave!"

Fang Yuan waved them away when he saw the terrified expressions on both their faces. He reached for the bowl of soup without seeming to mind and drank it all in 1 gulp. "I should train my physique and my organs. I cannot afford to be careless..."

He took the Heart-eroding Flower Pulp and ate it like an apple.

"Understood!"

Meng Tian and Meng Guang quickly retreated as though they had received a pardon and walked a great distance before they finally let go of their breath when they saw the clear sky. One would have the misconception that they had climbed back out from the gates of Hell.

'Master's technique is indeed impressive...'

...

"They are indeed mediocre..."

Within the poisonous pool, Fang Yuan shook his head and could not be bothered. After he ate his food, he shut his eyes, as though he was taking a nap, as his spiritual will entered the Dream Realm.

"Friend! Were you satisfied with the Five Poisons Flower you bought previously? I treat everyone fairly. Find me regardless of who you want to poison..."

"My friend, do you still have Yellow Grain Rice? I am willing to pay a high price for it, regardless if it is spiritual ingredients, techniques or information, whatever you ask for..."

"Senior, I have 2 top-grade cauldrons, both of which are of outstanding quality. How about I trade them for 200 catties of Yellow Grain Rice?"

...

Once he entered the Dream World, the messages on the inscription plate started to flash.

"It seems like the Yellow Grain Rice is in high demand!"

Fang Yuan stroked his chin and was very pleased. "Yellow Grain Rice was originally a top-grade resource for the dream masters. With then big war, the future consumption would be huge. As an item that can preserve lives, it would never be enough..."

Even an alchemy pill, unless it is of the highest grade, could not be used as a staple. However, the Yellow Grain Rice could be consumed as a staple.

He would naturally have to pay the price in order to collect all sorts of precious poisonous objects. As he had a use for his contribution points, he decided to put up a batch of Yellow Grain Rice instead as it would fetch the highest price for its quality.

He did not expect that the market price for the Yellow Grain Rice



would be so good.

"It is not considered a feat for a dream master to produce Yellow Grain Rice. However, the crucial part would be to hide the proportion of resources needed to produce the Yellow Grain Rice as well as the type of spiritual seeds used...By keeping these 2 secrets close to me, given my current status, I would be able to curb the small talks about it."

Fang Yuan scanned the objects available a few times but was unable to find what he wanted. He was too lazy to reply the sellers and headed to the stone tablets to search for the ingredients he required as well as the locations of several strange poisons.

With a look, he discovered a stalk of 'Jade Flame Gold Flower' which was a required poison to reach the 10th Refining Stage. He was joyous as he contacted the seller. "How much for the Jade Flame Gold Flower?"

"500 contribution points!"

The other party had a haughty expression.

"I will use the Yellow Grain Rice to replace the contribution points!"

"Ah...where are you, I will come over immediately for the deal!"

In a flash of fiery light, a red shadow condensed as the other party rushed forward and asked. "You have Yellow Grain Rice? My Jade Flame Gold Flower is of the top grade and there is only 1 portion. I will trade it for 400 catties of Yellow Grain Rice..."

One would sneer if one were to witness such a change in attitude. However, Fang Yuan had his fair share of experience recently.

Truth be told, after witnessing the change in attitude, Fang Yuan felt somewhat sorrowful.

Those lower-levelled dream masters were like duckweed which could only drift with the wind and flow with the waves.

After completing the transaction, he bade farewell to the seller and contacted the other dream masters he was familiar with.

Liu Mengmei was extremely busy. As the main force of the offense, the Divine Lotus Cult and the Evil Divine Sect managed to accomplish their tasks well. Even though she was a reserve, she had no choice but to take part in the battle to exterminate the enemies.

On the contrary, the sisters of the Ye Family revealed their intentions to draw closer to Fang Yuan. They appeared regretful especially after Fang Yuan rose to the 4th Tier. After all, with the incoming war, it would be better to maintain a close relationship with someone of power. However, Fang Yuan had set his mind to further his cultivation and could not be bothered with the two of them. He merely contacted them and exchanged reports.

"Beautiful ladies are the cause of trouble, especially these two sisters who would inherit the Ye family's name and their grudges. Only a fool will go for them..."

Fang Yuan arrived at the Realm Alliance Mountains and did not want to be bothered by the pair of sisters.

"Only a person favoured by the heavens and destined to play the lead role would purposely take on and solve the problems, at the same time offending many highly skilled experts in the process before overcoming them in the end. I would save myself the trouble and avoid this game..."

The missions on the Realm Alliance stone tablet were able to fetch a higher price compared to the common regions. The ingredients available were more valuable as well. Fang Yuan was reserved as he made his payment in contribution points in exchange for a few types of poison before he retreated to a side to rest and ponder.

"After breaking through to the 4th tier, I have already exhausted the benefits from the water realm. As for the martial arts and the

Golden Body, I can only train step-by-step every day. It would be even more difficult to achieve a breakthrough in the Illusionary Divine Stage. In order to progress rapidly, I must take the shortcut!"

Where is the shortcut? The shortcut is in the other realms!

"I have only experienced 2 realms till now. However, the heavens and earth in the water realm hate me. I will receive heaven's tribulations the moment I set foot there. It is dangerous to even pass by there. I think it is time to find a new realm...."

Even though obtaining the coordinates of the realms are hard, the difficulty in obtaining the coordinates also depended on the person seeking them.

There were plenty of missions and specific ones in the Realm Alliance.

Truth be told, most of the information held by the 5 Grand Organisations were hidden in other realms.

How could the small benefits be compared to unearthing the realm's treasures?

"These coordinates are from the core of each of the 5 organisations...a normal dream master would not be able to obtain the coordinates. However, I am a 4th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master with sufficient authority. Even though a previously explored realm does not hold great benefits, the benefits obtained from exploring these realms are still considerable..."

With his thoughts, the identity inscription plate flashed and interacted with the stone tablet as it quickly searched for the information on other realms.

"Given my current authority, I can only access 3 realms? It is not bad considering I had to give up nothing...Hmm? This world..."

He carefully analysed the information before he suddenly drew back as if he had seen something that appeared inconceivable.

# Chapter 344: A New Realm

---

In the sky, there was a huge sun.

As the burning sun rays glared upon the land, Fang Yuan squinted his eyes and shielded them with his outstretched right hand, forming a shadow.

In the surroundings, there were flowers everywhere and birds' chirping could be heard. There was a mild fragrance in the air.

Beneath his body, it was soft. Fang Yuan realised that his new body was lying on a patch of grass.

"Yuan!"

A voice started to approach him. Following which, the silhouette of a young lady appeared.

She wore a cloth made from animal hide and grass and could only cover half of her body, revealing her arms and leg. Since her limbs were exposed most of the time, they had a healthy tan. She was like a female leopard: fierce, graceful, sexy and dangerous.

"Yuan? Is she calling for me?"

Fang Yuan stood up and a string of memories appeared in his consciousness.

"Divisions... my race... warrior... Yuan! Is this my new identity?"

As his spiritual will shook, Fang Yuan could see himself from the corner of his eye.

He was a 20-year old young man with big eyes and a tall build. He was wearing animal hide as well and hung a bronze sword by his waist.

Mmm, this realm seemed young and underdeveloped. Most of the people lived in divisions and their craftsmanship was extremely rudimentary. Although Fang Yuan only had a bronze sword, it was already a symbol of his status. Only strong warriors in the division

were worthy of such a sword.

"You're lazing away here again!"

The female leopard-like young lady climbed up the knoll and twitched her nose as though she was unhappy.

"Ah ha..."

Fang Yuan stretched himself and stood up. "What's up? Wei?"

Most of the people in this realm had single-word names. It indeed felt rather ancient.

"The leader of the division has called for a meeting. Hurry up!"

The lady called Wei was rushing Fang Yuan. "Because of the flood, we will have to migrate for the 3rd time..."

"Flood? Alright, I'll come!"

As a warrior, Fang Yuan had the duty to protect his division. He quickly wiped the grass off his hair and walked with big steps. "Let's go!"

The young lady followed and the both of them rushed like the wind. Their physical fitness was unbelievable, which shocked Fang Yuan.

The physical quality of the people in Da Qian was already impressive enough, but that of people in this realm was even better. Everyone was skilled enough to kill tigers and leopards. This was not because their realm was more superior, but merely their adaptation to survive due to the harsh conditions in the realm.

'This is comparable to how one would initially have a life expectancy of 150 years, but due to the extreme conditions in forcing their bodies to undergo intensities of more than 3 times, they would be fortunate if they could even live up to 50!'

Looking at the vibrant body of Wei, Fang Yuan was confused. "Are they just started out? With such clothing and undeveloped

fire... Unfortunately, they have to encounter us just when they are slowly becoming developed. Who knows if this is good or bad for them..."

At the foot of the knoll laid their division - Shang Yang Division.

The houses were built from rattan and stones and seemed as though they would crumble in the slightest wind. Scattered houses formed the image of a village. Around the village, there were farms, planting rice. They were still using the most rudimentary equipment and methods of farming.

The men would go out and hunt and the women would tend to the farms. Kids would play in the farms or help out, and there were extremely few old people. This further confirmed Fang Yuan's guess.

"Yuan! We're waiting for you!"

As soon as a middle-aged man saw Fang Yuan, his eyes glistened as he started to sound the drum in his hands.

Not long after, 30 over people started to gather around and sat within the division leader's house.

The division leader had a heavy responsibility. Since he was a public figure, he did not have many personal valuables and his house was only bigger because he had to facilitate gatherings and discussion. Everyone was seated on the ground and a small bonfire was lit in the middle. On the walls, ropes were hung around and had knots in them. There were many carvings of what seemed to be words, which made up the decoration of the room.

Fang Yuan knew that all of these were merely methods to record information.

It was a known fact that the ancient people use knots to record information. Over here, they were a little more advanced and used words as well, but there were many more methods recorded in the history books.

"Since everyone is here, I'm sure all of you know the purpose of this meeting..."

A middle-aged man walked to the centre. He was the division leader of the Yang people, Yang!

He was a 30-year old man with a tanned skin. He was covered in scars and had a dim red glow from his skin, displaying his might and potential at his peak.

As the leader of the people, he had to have strong combat power and experience to be able to lead everyone to survive in such harsh conditions!

Yang started to speak. "In recent days... the river nearest to us has overflowed a few times. I've sent our best swimmer to investigate. He has reported that the water level has already risen to as high as the average man. If we do not migrate, the overflowing river water will flood our land and destroy our division by next year!"

"Is there a need to migrate?"

Although there were both men and women around, all of them were either warriors or group leaders of the division and were the people with power. Even so, they hesitated as they spoke. "It's not simple to find a suitable place to stay, where there are no ferocious wild beasts and other divisions!"

"We will spend a lot of effort and resources to migrate once more!"

"But what can we do if we do not migrate? Stare at the river as it destroys our houses and wash away our loved ones?"

...

The division was democratic. Therefore, even the division leader could not veto the decision. With that, the people under him started to argue.

"Cough cough..."

Seeing this, Yang waved his hands and stopped the fierce argument. "Also... The strongest division in the plains, Xia Division, will be sending their messenger here to discuss the flooding problem. Yuan! I'll leave it to you to receive the messenger!"

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan felt shocked that his name was mentioned out of the blue. However, he agreed to it without hesitation.

"Let's come to a conclusion regarding whether to migrate or not after seeing the messenger. Everyone, please return!"

...

Outside the straw house, there was a fence. In the house, other than a few hides and piles of hay, there was nothing else.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan let out a bitter smile. "Am I... a poor bloke now?"

He could not care about this for now. He took out his allocated food. There was half a rabbit and a few fruits. He immediately started eating the fruits, started a fire and roasted the rabbit.

"This realm..."

As he ate, relevant information regarding the realm appeared:

"This realm is named 'Ancient Realm' by the Realm Alliance. It is known to be filled with concentrated realm energy within it and is only second to Da Qian Empire... Furthermore, it was rumoured that the alliance leader of the Realm Alliance, a sage, has benefited greatly from this realm for him to become a sage! Of course... this is only a rumour."

"However, this became more interesting. It was rumoured that when the sage descended into this realm, he had possessed the division leader, 'Gu' and started a war with the witches of Jiuli



Division. The people of Jiuli Divisions were extremely brave. Their leader, 'Wu', had 3 heads and 6 arms, a bronze head and metal forehead. He was impenetrable and ate metals for survival. He had an unparalleled ability. Furthermore, there were other witches in the division, including Wind and Rain Masters who could manipulate the weather."

"Initially, the Shangyang Division was about to be wiped out. At that time, Sage was still not at the Prominent Divine stage but was still incredibly powerful. He could alter nature and create dragons and fire spirits to aid him in killing the Wind and Rain Masters before beheading Wu himself... Without a head, the blood which flowed out from Wu became a forest of maple trees. He swung his bronze sword for another 7 days without his head before dying..."

After such a thought, Fang Yuan appeared solemn.

It was recorded in <Classic of Mountains and Seas, Great Wilderness: North>. "... Chi You attacked the King. In retaliation, the King brought the fight to the Ji Region. Chi You invited the Wind and Rain Masters to whip up a storm. The King then invited a deity called 'Drought Demon' to stop the rain and kill Chi You!"

"Is this similarity due to the fact that all civilisations are like that, or that dreams are merely reality and reality is a dream?"

With such a striking similarity, Fang Yuan started to think about something. "Could it be... a high-tech radiation leading to its mutation?"

Of course, this was not all that the information had to offer.

Gu managed to successfully defeat Wu and become the leader of the realm. He then passed on his appointment as the leader and roamed the skies with much freedom.

From then on, the appointment as leader was passed down for another 7 times before it was Xia's turn.

Now, the entire realm was plagued with floods and the people

were suffering. Therefore, Xia started to study the rivers and controlled all the demons in the world. With this, he managed to expand his influence everywhere and was nominated as the king of the region. Afterwards, he accepted the gold from the 9 Regions and 9 cauldrons as a symbol that all of this was heaven's fate for him.

Xia was merely a possessed person, possessed by the Sage of Realm Alliance!

This meant that after Gu left, this Sage returned to the realm once more to reap more energy from it!

"This is a realm where many have harvested and visited before..."

Fang Yuan seemed a little lost.

To put it simply, the prize of this realm had long been taken away and therefore, there was not much left to take.

"This seems to be the case... is it not?"

Fang Yuan felt a tinge of disappointment in his heart.

He quickly finished his roasted rabbit and walked out of the division.

"Stats!"

As his spiritual will shook, new stats appeared:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 2 (48)

Spirit: 2 (48)

Magic: 30 (60)

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (???), Wu Zong (???)

Technique: \[Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (???)\], \[Hundred Poison Golden Body (???)\], \[8 Gates Sword Array (???)\]

Skill: \"[Medicine (Level 3)\", \"[Botany (Level 5)\"]\"

"This realm has already been conquered and would benefit dream masters of the Realm Alliance. It is interesting how I can preserve half of my magical energy!"

"With the help of my fixed stats, it is a matter of 1 or 2 days for me to restore the other stats..."

Fang Yuan arrived at a forest and gazed deep into it.

"Roar! Roar!"

At this point in time, the grass shook. With the roar of a tiger, a Sword Toothed Tiger leapt out.

"My next meal is here!!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan was not shocked, but elated.

# Chapter 345: History

---

In front of Fang Yuan was a living, breathing Sword Toothed Tiger.

It was larger than the average tiger and had two fangs as sharp as swords. It was the undisputed king of the predators.

However, as the Sword Toothed Tiger glared at Fang Yuan, it hesitated for a while before feeling a little fearful.

Although it had eaten many humans before, it still felt a sense of danger from Fang Yuan.

"This is timely..."

Fang Yuan wielded the short sword by his waist. "I'll test this new body... Hey, pussycat! You'll only have one try!"

"Roar! Roar!"

Although it could not understand human language, Fang Yuan's posture had agitated it. With a roar, it leapt forward. Any strong villager would still feel extreme fear facing this beast.

"You're ultimately still a beast!"

Fang Yuan twisted his body to one side and lunged his sword out.

"Ping!"

The sword in his hands was extremely short. It was almost as long as only 2 daggers. Although it was sharpened, the sword still snapped as it came into contact with the skin of the Sword Toothed Tiger!

It snapped...

"Is this weapon trying to play games with me?"

After using his magical soldiers for quite some time, Fang Yuan could not get used to such a weapon.

If not for his speed and agility, Fang Yuan might have already

been bitten by the Sword Toothed Tiger.

As a dream master at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, it would be a waste if he were to be bitten by a tiger.

"Die!"

As his eyes glistened, the red sword essence in his hands was on the brink of explosion.

"Yuan!"

At this point in time, a young lady ran over. Seeing that the Sword Toothed Tiger was about to attack Fang Yuan, she was shocked. Swiftly, she pulled her bow and shot an arrow out.

"Whoosh!"

Wei's archery skills were rather remarkable as the arrow flew straight into the right eye of the tiger. With a roar, it turned around and left.

"Don't you escape!"

Fang Yuan leapt forward, grabbed on to the arrowhead and pressed it down. As he pressed it in, a concentrated amount of sword essence exploded within the tiger's head, turning it into a gruesome mess.

"Pa!"

The Sword Toothed Tiger fell to the ground and a layer of dust was stirred up.

"Yuan, are you alright?"

Wei came forward with a worried look, unlike her brave and determined self just a few moments ago.

"I'm alright, thanks!"

On the surface, he was being rescued by a woman...

Fang Yuan was a little unhappy about it, but he did not let it show. "Come, let's carry this Sword Toothed Tiger back together.

We shall have more meat for dinner tonight!"

"Alright!"

Wei replied happily. "I've heard from the people of our division that there is a cunning Sword Toothed Tiger lurking around. I've always wanted to kill it!"

'Mmm... This is still the ancient times and people still do not regard females as housewives and mothers. They can be strong warriors as well, or even division leaders with thousands of soldiers under her command... Enough to make us men embarrassed!'

...

3 days later, Fang Yuan brought along 2 other warriors as they received the messenger from Da Xia.

"Guest from afar, we welcome you. I am a warrior of the division, Yuan!"

Fang Yuan examined the group of people who had just arrived. They were all well-built and carried spears in their hands. They also had bows on their backs and their clothing was sewn with proper cloth. In all aspects, they were stronger and more superior than the people of Yang.

"Mmm, my name is Qi. You can call me Xia Qi!"

The messenger in front seemed like he was in his 20s and his skin was extremely white. He had a piece of jade on his waist. After seeing Fang Yuan, he smiled and twitched his eyes at him while transferring a message. 'Are you the newcomer from the alliance?'

"Eh?"

Fang Yuan focused on the person in front of the group and used a similar method of transferring messages to reply him. "You are..."

"No need for suspicion. I am following orders - All is well and peaceful here!"

"I am Fang Yuan! I am here after receiving a mission to provide assistance!"

After confirming their identities, Fang Yuan introduced himself.

The alliance would not allow any dream master to enter an explored realm like this for free. Dream masters would either have to use their contribution points to purchase coordinates or take up missions to gain entry.

Fang Yuan had spent his contribution points in cultivating his 10th Refining Stage and therefore had to save up on his contribution points. Therefore, he had chosen to enter the realm by taking up missions.

"It's indeed you, the newly promoted dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage! You are the talent of our alliance!"

Xia Qi's eyes glistened. "In recent days, I've been overloaded with work to do. Now that you are here, you can share my workload with me and everybody will have an easier time!"

"Eh? Isn't it rumoured that after the uprising of Da Xia, the entire world has been developing peacefully? Why would you reach the stage of requesting for assistance?"

Fang Yuan asked curiously.

"Hmm... Actually, I'm not supposed to share about this. However, since you are one of our own, I can tell you about it!"

Xia Qi continued. "Last time, when the Sage of our alliance entered this realm, he killed Wu of the Jiuli Division, started a civilisation, protected the human dao and gained karma. Because of this, there were legends that he could fly to the heavens. However, he had no choice but to reincarnate as Xia and re-enter the realm. This is why the coordinates of this world had leaked out!"

"The coordinates have leaked out? To which organisation?"

Fang Yuan was shocked. He knew that if anyone else knew the coordinates, they would be able to dream-traverse and enter the realm as well. This was a threat.

"It's Da Qian! The Hidden Dragon Guards!"

Xia Qi continued with a cold voice. "There was a traitor in the alliance. Although the traitor had already gotten what he deserved, the trouble which he created was rather significant. Sage's original division was destroyed. The Hidden Dragon Guards had transformed into water demons and triggered tribulations all around the realm, causing the world to flood and killing many people! There are two more famous people among them and you might have an impression of them."

"You are saying..."

Fang Yuan quickly scanned through Yuan's memories, recalled a few legends and gave off a mysterious look. "Wu Zhiqi? And Xiang Liu?"

Wu Zhiqi had fiery eyes and the look of a monkey. He was extremely powerful and could control the elements!

Xiang Liu was a snake with 9 heads. He had eaten countless humans and anywhere he went would be wiped out. His blood was extremely poisonous and he could regenerate a severed head!

These two were the greatest demons in the legends of this realm. Although Xia had managed to escape many times, he was still captured by these two demons.

"It's these two!"

Xia Qi smiled. "If they were normal demons, do you think they could stop a Sage? These two demons are two leaders among the Hidden Dragon Guards. They intentionally wanted to disrupt our alliance leader's plans and therefore entered the realm. Even if they were killed, they would only experience a little backlash and could re-enter the realm once they recover and restore their



cultivation. This was how the legends described Wu Zhiqi as indestructible and Xiang Liu as able to revive upon will..."

"I see!"

Hearing this, Fang Yuan understood what had happened.

This was the history of this realm. Interestingly, the consciousness of the realm did nothing and allowed the intruders from the Hidden Dragon Guards to wreak havoc in the realm.

"Wait a minute! The leader of the Hidden Dragon Guards? Does this mean that the head of Hidden Dragon Guards is here?"

Fang Yuan took it one step further. "Is our mission related to them?"

"Nope!"

Xia Qi denied. "The reason for the arrival of all the Hidden Dragon Guards is due to the fact that our alliance leader had accomplished a lot in this realm. I've heard that even the head of the Hidden Dragon Guards was involved. However, in the end, it was still our alliance leader that prevailed! From then on, the forces of the Imperial Court have since left this realm. Even if they are still lurking around, they would only do it secretly and would maintain a low profile."

After all, the greatest reward from this realm had already been taken away. Since there were no other rewards, it was not logical for the Imperial Court to allocate so much manpower to go head on with the Realm Alliance.

"However, the situation is different now!"

Xia Qi continued with a solemn look. "The 5 Grand Organisations have agreed to come together to wipe out all organisations that are loyal to the Imperial Court. Do you think that the Imperial Court would be fools to not retaliate?"

"They would retaliate by gathering all other Wu Zongs and

spiritual knights, as well as attack us in the other realms. Don't worry, the strongest that they've got this time is a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Therefore, our Elder would be the one going against him. We just have to give him encouragement and assistance!"

Since they were dream-traversing to other realms, even if they were to die, they could start again. Therefore, Xia Qi seemed rather relaxed.

'He's thinking about it too simply. If we go against a strong adversary or die too many times, our actual bodies in Da Qian would still be affected as well...'

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan replied. "How do you want me to help you guys?"

"It's very simple. I've brought along the order of Xi, the newest leader of Xia Country. We will contain the entire water system in the 9 regions and are gathering helpers from all divisions. By then, you can officially come over!"

"Contain the water system in the 9 regions?"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes. "This means... the Hidden Dragon Guards are still in the form of water demons? They lack creativity!"

"All that matters is that their plan still works. Furthermore... This realm is still our home ground and has been defined as so because of the Sage! Therefore, if the Hidden Dragon Guards want to possess a body to enter the realm, it will be extremely difficult for them to possess humans. They can only try to possess animals!"

As Xia Qi proudly remarked, it was as though he was satisfied by the fact that they will be possessing animal bodies.

'This also means that... Sage has changed the rules of this realm. Other than dream masters from the Realm Alliance, any other dream masters who enter will be noticed by the heavens? And they

will experience tribulations if they were to attack humans?'

Fang Yuan was stunned. This was the first time he had witnessed the godly powers of a Sage.

As soon as the Sage defined his homeground, if anyone else wanted to come in, they would have to do so as beasts!

'However... How huge is this realm? This is not a simple hollow. Otherwise, Sage could directly deny entry to the evil dream masters!'

Fang Yuan thought to himself silently.

There was no question about the power of a dream master in the Prominent Divine stage. However, it was still a dream to be able to take entire control over a huge realm!

Now, they were merely making use of the fate energy of humans and the 9 cauldrons system to gain the upper hand, forcing the Hidden Dragon Guards to have to make their way from the boundaries.

'These Hidden Dragon Guards love to take up the form of demons, flood the world and eat humans. This is because the people of this realm is the external influence of the Realm Alliance, and the Imperial Court wants to weaken the alliance!'

As the both of them talked, they arrived at the Yang Tribe.

"I am the leader of the tribe - Yang! Welcome, the messenger from afar!"

Yang was long waiting at the entrance of the village and had instructed for a banquet to be prepared. "Please enjoy. Let's discuss anything else tomorrow!"

# Chapter 346: Witchcraft

---

In the Ancient World, deep at night in the wilderness.

A huge monkey was crawling about. It had long arms and legs and was covered in black fur. However, its eyes were darting about actively. A glowing essence from the moon started to descend, turning its fur white. Suddenly, an opening appeared on its forehead as it formed a third eye!

Average monkey could only at most attain spirituality. However, in a single night, this monkey had become a demon!

"Ah... I've become a demon. This is interesting and weird!"

The monkey scratched his ears and groaned like a human, as though it was depressed.

"You're lucky to be able to possess a monkey. At least there are some similarities..."

Beside him, there was a silver flash. A white fox with 3 tails appeared and it was as though it was dragging along 3 streaks of silver glow. "Those who would possess pigs, horses, cows or even goats would be the most unfortunate. I've seen someone possessing a pig that was about to be butchered and was killed before he could cultivate anything. That's the worse!"

"Hey! No one would have a say in this..."

The 3 Eyed Monkey shook its head. "The Sage of Realm Alliance has already possessed the human dao and put in place the 9 cauldrons. Therefore, we will be going against the trend of this realm. Anything we do will have consequences and fate energy will be going against us!"

"That is not entirely true!"

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox started to sound mysterious. "If the Sage can possess the heavenly dao, then we will have no place

here. But now, the Realm Alliance only possessed the majority of the people dao and is recognised by the heavenly trend. Therefore, we still have our chance! As for the lack of fate energy, as long as we cultivate ourselves and strengthened up, we will be able to use our physical body to go against fate energy!"

"That's true..."

The 3 Eyed Monkey started to laugh. "Since the Realm Alliance now possesses the people dao, we must create natural disasters and tribulations to destroy their foundation!"

The consciousness of the realm could be classified into two, namely the people dao and the heavenly dao.

Although the people dao could make decisions on its own, it still had to follow the heavenly dao to a certain extent.

The Sage of Realm Alliance had used his identity as the King of Xia to preach to thousands of people. Therefore, he had possessed a majority of the people dao. Only with such a possession could he influence part of the heavenly dao.

However, heavenly dao is still too vast! Therefore, the Sage was unable to totally restrict dream masters from entering.

If the people dao was destroyed, especially the Xia Tribe, then his influence would be reduced by more than half.

"If the Sage is still here, then we wouldn't even dare to set foot here. However, he has long passed on. King Xi is nothing and our leader will deal with him..."

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox started to giggle. "Furthermore, our head has already made arrangements. Even if we lose, we will still manage to plant our spies among them. If we really manipulated the people dao to affect the heavenly dao, do you think there will be no consequences?"

"What is our mission?"

The monkey crossed its legs and sat down, striking an uncanny resemblance of a human.

"Firstly, we have to free the body of the two leaders, which were sealed years ago!"

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox spat out a streak of light, which transformed into a huge screen and displayed an image.

It was the image of an underwater location. From a dim glow emitting from a huge black figure, they could vaguely see a ferocious monkey with golden eyes, a white head and a green body. It had golden bells strung on its nose and was restrained by thick and heavy chains.

"This was the final body which our Leader had possessed. After his plan to stop Xia had failed, he could only preserve his own body. Now, he has authorised us to use it. After all, it is something left behind by a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Even if we are weak, we can still hold up for quite some time with its assistance!"

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox let out a cunning laugh.

"Great... This is great!"

The monkey started to scratch his ears happily. "This is a powerful demon's body and will be much better than his monkey!"

"I'm sorry, it's not for you!"

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox shook its head. "This is my mission. Your mission is to enter the mountains to search for the descendants of the Jiuli Division!"

"You mean... the people of Wu?"

The monkey seemed a little unwilling at first, followed by a worried look.

"Indeed... In reality, they should be the people of this realm. However, due to the fact that the Sage had descended and changed

the fate of the realm... The people of Wu still have the protection of the heavens and therefore will not go extinct. To fight with the Realm Alliance in this realm, we will have to make use of the fate of the Wu!"

"The descendants of the ancient army leader, Chi?"

The monkey laughed. "The witchcraft dao aims to strengthen one's physical body and harness the power in the blood to release power capable of controlling the element. The army leader, Chi, fought with the Sage. Even though the Sage was not a Sage at that time, this was enough to prove their might! Alright, I'll go!"

He was rather interested in the mysterious and weird witchcraft dao.

"Considering that we have called in reinforcements, the Realm Alliance will be likely to do so as well. Be careful..."

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox's voice could still be heard, but both of them were long gone.

...

Division Leader Yang personally sent them off. "Yuan! You are the bravest warrior in our division. Give your best to King Xi!"

"I will!"

Fang Yuan carried a cloth bag, changed a new sword and gave his promise respectfully.

Xia Qi gave an excuse to manage the rivers to request the Yang Tribe to send people to provide assistance. Of course, Yang would not reject his request and sent 10 of his strongest warriors, with Fang Yuan as their leader.

Something worth mentioning was that the lady, Wei, was among the 10 being sent off.

"To rectify the problem of flooding, the crux lies in making the water flow smoothly in the river. Therefore, we will have to deal

with the powerful demons living in the water..."

Xia Qi had a graceful demeanour as he briefed them.

Fang Yuan acted as though he was listening intently. However, in reality, he was thinking to himself. 'What can I gain... from this world?'

Although the Realm Alliance would reward him for the mission, Fang Yuan was not enticed by it.

Every realm is a treasure in itself! Even if it might have been harvested before, there will still be valuables that Fang Yuan could reap.

'To preach to the people dao and become king... Sage has already done all of these. It is not practical for me to do it again, and I would make myself too high profile! This is courting death! I'll have to give this thought up!'

'Other than that, this realm has a unique system of cultivation. I can borrow this idea! Also, I can actualise treasures from this realm...'

The Realm Alliance had already done enough research regarding this realm.

'The last thing would be spirits and bloodline...'

This realm was still ancient and gods might have lived with them. Even in the most average person, there might be the blood of mysterious beasts or gods, which would strengthen them or awaken any special ability that they could potentially have. They might also be able to change their appearances, which was an extremely useful ability to have.

Through the research done by the Realm Alliance, they realised that energy from such a bloodline could be purified and brought into one's actualised dream world. To a certain extent, this would also be possible for the souls of certain powerful demons!



"Of course... this is the cycle of the heavenly dao and there would be retribution...In order for me to take something from this world, I must contribute something. This is the true meaning of karma!"

Although this world was not based on karma and one would not be able to directly benefit from gaining people dao karma and heavenly karma, indirect results could still be seen from one's actions.

"Of course... Even if the realm's consciousness is not awakened, it can still control the realm subconsciously and will not allow any random dream master to enter and remove treasures from it... How different is this from robbery? There would surely be tribulations!"

"Therefore, if I want any treasure, I must find a geographically advantageous location and get the protection from the heavens. From there, I will have to trade for the treasure with my contributions to the realm... Of course, I can try snatching it by brute force, but whether I will be successful or not depends on my ability and luck. If I am unlucky, I will be struck by lightning and my soul might even be destroyed!"

Even a Sage could not be stronger than an entire world. If he were to go against the realm, he would surely be severely injured.

"To follow the heavenly dao and observe. This must be what the Sage has done..."

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself before sending a message to Xia Qi. "How's the energy system in this realm?"

"Extremely powerful!"

Xia Qi's eyes appeared solemn. "Have you realised it too? The quality of our physical bodies here is better than our own bodies back in Da Qian... Among the people here, there is another type of energy, called 'Witchcraft'. It is a method to bring out the fullest potential of one's body and discover one's bloodline. An example of

a successful person is the army leader, Chi. He was able to go against our sage and even survive without a head for 7 days!"

"Other than that, there is also the existence of demons. Any types of spirits can become demons and their powers are extraordinary. There are also many spiritual treasures scattered around the realm, and all of their abilities are out of this world!"

"As for the god dao, although the people here believe in a god, they have never encountered one. Therefore, this is most probably an effect of the heavenly dao on them..."

"Witchcraft? To ring out the fullest potential of one's body? The powers of a bloodline?"

Fang Yuan was struck with curiosity.

He also had a technique to train his physical body and therefore, he could benefit from both.

Of course, more importantly, he was in another world now and had to follow the rules of the other world.

"Who knows... I must research the power of witchcraft for myself!"

Looking at the advancing group of people, his eyes glistened.

"Qi! Here's an oracle bone!"

Suddenly, the group stopped moving. A person from the Xia Tribe quickly rushed towards them and presented a tortoise shell. "The people of the tribe have burnt this tortoise shell and predicted that someone has destroyed the seal on Wu Chiqi in the South. He has released the demon and King Xi had ordered for all of you to alter your planned track to stop it!"

"Alright!"

Xia Qi took the oracle bone. It had burnt marks, revealing the cracks on the tortoise shell.

The people here predicted happenings using this method and

would record the findings on the oracle bones.

'What in the world...'

Seeing this scene, Fang Yuan was speechless. 'Isn't this just insider information from the Realm Alliance that the Hidden Dragon Guards are here? Why do they have to inform us using these weird tricks?'

Indeed, the next moment, Xia Qi's voice was heard. 'We have a little trouble. The Hidden Dragon Guards are removing the seal on Wu Zhiqi's body. In that body lies the power of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine stage dream master and it is devastating... From previous patrols, we can confirm that the location of the body is at the Huai River Tortoise Mountain. Let's make our way there to stop them!'

# Chapter 347: Tortoise Mountain

---

Huai River was one of the major rivers in the region. It flowed over a thousand miles across land and was not far from the division of the Yang Tribe.

'We've searched for the possessed body of the head of the Hidden Dragon Guards. It's hidden at the Tortoise Mountain within the Huai River!'

As they journeyed, Xia Qi used a sceptical tone and sent a message to Fang Yuan. "Within a 100-mile region from here, all of these floods is likely to be caused by Wu Zhiqi's consciousness... This is proof that the demon is being freed. The power of the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage is unbelievable!"

Being the ones who would be discriminated against by the people dao, the Hidden Dragon Guards would face a tough time as they attempt to descend into this realm. They would have to slowly accumulate elemental energy from the heavens and earth and would have to constantly be on guard against the Realm Alliance's attempts to fish them out.

Normal dream masters would not be able to accumulate a lot of power in the realm even after many years, but this would be different for the magical clone of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine stage dream master!

'Wu Zhiqi is a powerful demon which sealed himself. Therefore, he would spend minimal energy preserving himself and the demonic power that he would be able to accumulate would be likely to be able to support the arrival of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master and be harnessed immediately!'

Their stats would be reduced by half as soon as they entered the realm, and this was leniency given by the Realm Alliance. If it was the Imperial Court, they would be fortunate if they could even preserve a hint of their stats.

These other dream masters were not Fang Yuan and did not have the special ability to use fixed stats to restore their cultivation. They would have to cultivate for many years before they could even restore anything.

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened. "Xia Qi..... Are you not afraid?"

"Don't worry... the alliance has confirmed that there is only the arrival of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine stage dream master from the Hidden Dragon Guards! With King Xi controlling this area, it would not show up here."

Xia Qi replied with much confidence. "It is not possible for someone to come here to possess Wu Zhiqi's body. It is most probably left there for other dream masters to make use of. If this is the case, this would mean that the dream master we will be dealing with will be around the 5th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. It's still not an easy fight!"

He sounded confident and Fang Yuan could understand why.

After all, the Hidden Dragon Guards were against all the 5 Grand Organisations. They would be lucky if they could remain status quo.

The Realm Alliance had continually sent reinforcements, while the Hidden Dragon Guards only had a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Therefore, it would be wise for them to find a secluded place and cultivate themselves.

Although the possessed body was hidden well, it was only a matter of time before it would be located. However, the Sage preferred to risk more to get more rewards. Although the chances of locating the possessed body were extremely small, if he was able to find it, then the body would be undoubtedly destroyed. Therefore, the head of the Hidden Dragon Guards would not take this risk!

"Let's hope that it will be as such..."

Fang Yuan sighed. As he looked at the group of people ahead of him, he had a bad premonition. 'I feel like... things are not as simple as they seem...'

...

On Tortoise Mountain.

The mountain was located at one of the river streams which flowed from the Huai River. This stream had the appearance of a huge tortoise lying down, stabilising the entire river.

The gushing water would slow down the moment it flowed to this point. As the riverbed expanded, nutrients were deposited along the river banks, forming a huge piece of fertile land just next to the river.

The Shangzhang Tribe, Doulu Tribe, Lilou Tribe... 10 over divisions settled down here and their collective power was strong.

"Eh... I have been instructed to explore the 9 Regions and search for the d\*mned Hidden Dragon Guards. In the 3 times that I've passed by here, I always feel a tinge of temptation..."

Witnessing this scene, Xia Qi sighed. "After all, Wu Zhiqi is a water demon and anywhere he goes would be flooded. Who would've guessed that he would seal himself in such a prosperous and bustling location? He might even have bribed the people in the divisions and obtained protection from their tribal energy! I will request to see the leader of the division later on. If you detect any of them, just go for the kill and don't hold back! Oh yes, how much of your cultivation have you restored? Do you have at least half of what you used to have?"

Half the power of a dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage was too sufficient to destroy a few divisions.

"Don't worry!"

Fang Yuan glanced at his own stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 48

Spirit: 48

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (5th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 6) (1%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)]"

Nobody could guess that he could restore his entire cultivation level in the span of a few days!

Due to the differences in realms, even dream masters from the Realm Alliance would experience a reduction of more than half of their usual cultivation. They could only at most increase their cultivation to 80% of what they usually had.

Even restoring to 80% would require them to cultivate for a long period of time.

However, this was not a worry that Fang Yuan would have. Regardless of where he was, he could very quickly restore his original cultivation. This was his true ability and advantage over the others when dream-traversing to other realms.

"That's good. With the both of us combining forces, even if they have 10,000 people against us, we can still prevail!"

Xia Qi seemed relieved. As he walked to a certain division, he instructed his subordinate to inform them. "I am the messenger of Xia, and I have arrived to manage the river according to the instructions of King Xi!"

With this piece of information, they could quickly arrive at the heart of the divisions.

This division was Shangzhang Division. It had a population of 10,000 and their leader was known as Zhang. With this news, Zhang hesitated.

"Father..."

Beside him, a young man tried to speak but stopped halfway. Finally, he stood out. "Xia Country is the rightful alliance leader that all of us have agreed to! Years ago, we had conferred Xia as the King. Since his messenger is here, we should welcome them!"

As soon as he said his piece, a few elders exchanged glances and had mysterious looks on their faces.

"That's right!"

Zhang took a few steps forward, determined. "You shall represent me to receive them. Inform the people of the division to prepare the best wine and invite the most beautiful of the girls to treat the guests properly!"

"Leader!"

As the young man happily walked out, a skinny-looking priest in black robes spoke. "What should we do?"

Although the people of the division were clueless, these higher-ups were extremely clear that for Shangzhang Division's status in Tortoise Mountain was due to the protection they had from a powerful demon.

"Let's hear what they have to say first. They might not have discovered it!"

In determining the fate of the division, Zhang hesitated. "Instruct the warriors of our tribe to prepare! Also... Quickly inform the leaders of Doulu and Lilou Tribe! Although they might have conflicts with us from time to time, we have to stand together and



stay united in times like this."

"Managing the river? Hehe..."

The priest and the elders nodded their heads and snickered.

The surroundings of Tortoise Mountain was not flooded, so what was there to manage? The arrival of the messenger from Xia must have an ulterior motive.

They were officially an alliance, but it was only a name to it.

If the messenger were to bring news that would lead to a conflict of interests, then they would kill him! They would fight as long as they were unhappy!

In recent days, there were signs that the water god was returning. As long as they could wait for it to awaken, they would have its protection and would fear nothing!

...

"Welcome, messenger from Xia! I am Fa from the Shangzhang Tribe!"

Outside the division, Fang Yuan and company waited for a moment before noticing a young man coming out to invite them. "My father, Zhang, the leader of the division, cordially invites all of you to enter!"

"Thank you!"

Xia Qi nodded his head reservedly as he followed Fa into the division.

Along the way, there were curious glares from the surrounding straw huts. They should be the women and children of the division.

Seeing all these, Fang Yuan was lost in his thoughts. 'In reality, the divisions on the plains in Tortoise Mountain cannot even be compared to a town to the Xia Tribe. Leader Zhang has ultimate control over his people, his own laws, army and although he has

acknowledged Xia as the leader of the alliance, he can go against Xia anytime!'

If they were to go against Xie, the Shangzhang Tribe could effortlessly wipe out their 100-men group - if they did not consider the presence of the 2 dream masters.

The sun started to set and in the middle of a square, there was a huge bonfire.

Ladies came out to welcome the group and brought along plates of roasted meat and fruits for the guests to enjoy.

"Welcome, the messenger from the noble Xia Tribe!"

In front of them was a tall and skinny middle-aged man. With open arms, he continued. "I am the leader of Shangzhang Tribe, Zhang. What do we have from King of Xia?"

"I am following the orders of the alliance leader, King Xi, to bring you a piece of news!"

Xia Qi raised a piece of jade above his head and appeared solemn. "According to the predictions by my priest, the powerful demon which had once plagued the 9 Regions and disrupted the water systems - Wu Zhiqi, is hidden here. We want to find him and kill him!"

With this, Fang Yuan could feel that the higher-ups of the division were all in shock.

Although they could conceal their emotions well, it was almost impossible to hide their true feelings before these 2 dream masters.

"So it's Wu Zhiqi..."

Zhang froze before giving a gentle smile. "With the Tortoise Mountain to stabilise the river, we have not experienced a flood in 100 years... This piece of information is hard to believe. However, since you said it, we will surely support you. Let's not talk about this tonight, come... have a drink!"

As he clapped his hands, seductive ladies surrounded all of them. They pulled Fang Yuan to his seat, held his hands and smiled as they poured wine for him.

"Eh?"

Fang Yuan tasted the wine. "This wine is not as concentrated and is similar to a fruit wine... How do they have wine? Did they adapt it from the Xia Tribe?"

After all, this was not actual history before the Qin dynasty. With the Realm Alliance bringing many dream masters into this realm, it was unsurprising that things did not seem in place.

The body Fang Yuan possessed was well-built and while appearing generous, Fang Yuan seemed like the most eligible bachelor among all of them.

Within moments, the ladies around Fang Yuan started to blush in embarrassment and could not leave him.

Even in such an ancient time, it was already a sin to be lustful.

"Hmph!"

Fang Yuan did not care about the girls. However, soon after, he could hear a voice from behind as he felt a chill down his spine.

With a bitter smile, he turned around and saw an infuriated Wei. She seemed like an angry predator as though her prey was being snatched away, and was giving off a dangerous vibe.

# Chapter 348: Conflict

---

The sky darkened.

The warriors of Xia and Yang Tribe were enjoying the delicacies. With the companion of the young and beautiful ladies, they soon fell into a deep sleep.

The stars were glittering and illuminated the entire mountain.

Amidst the silence, one of the huts in Shangzhang Division was still lit.

"It's Lu of Doulu Tribe and Kang of Lilou Tribe! I am comforted to be able to see both of you leaders!"

Zhang smiled as his eyes glistened.

"The messenger of Xia is about to unveil our secret. How can we not come?"

Lu was a plump person with two thin moustaches above his lips. In such harsh environments, only those in power could have the ability and luxury to become so plump.

"I've brought along my elite warriors this time!"

Kang of Lilou Tribe laughed. "The Xia Tribe has already offended us for even having the intention to kill our water god. The water god will not spare him..."

"All of this is for the water god!"

Even though they might have their own internal conflicts from time to time, these 3 leaders could finally combine forces to go against an external adversary. "We have to give it our all to defend this piece of fertile land given to us by the water god, even if it means going against Xia!"

"Fight! Fight!"

As the 3 leaders walked out, they could see rows of warriors

standing neatly under the moonlight. They were all equipped with bronze knives and arrows carved from bones, and their eyes were burning with a passion to fight.

"The warriors of Xia are mostly drunk, and this will be as simple as slaughtering pigs!"

As the leader, Zhang picked up a bronze knife for himself as well. "It will be a simple task to kill all of them!"

"Alright! Let's go!"

Kang and Lu laughed too as they picked up their weapons.

To be the leader of the people, they had to have wisdom as well as combat power and the bravery to kill during a war!

Even Lu had to force himself to be like this.

Otherwise, how would his people trust him to lead them to survival in this harsh world?

"Hmm... They can survive, so why are they courting death?"

At this point in time, 2 people walked out from the shadows.

Xia Qi wielded a long spear and sighed.

"It's him!"

Zhang scrutinised Xia Qi and exclaimed loudly. "He is the messenger of Xia. Kill him!"

Regardless whether their plan was exposed or not, they had no other choice but to attack.

"Kill!"

At this point in time, 3 elite warriors were surrounding Xia Qi. They were all like ferocious tigers and leopards. With a roar, they came closer to him.

"Haha... I am a noble tribe member of Xia and have the blood of the gods in me. How will the few of you be my match?"

Xia Qi laughed. As he lunged his spear out, he killed his way into the soldiers.

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

As the spear struck the bronze knives, sparks flew and one of the warriors was flung backwards with his blood spewing everywhere.

'Is this... acting?'

Seeing how Xia Qi was acting to be a normal tribe member, he was speechless before he came to a realization. 'In a foreign realm, we will have to follow the rules of the realm. To the rest of them, Xia Qi is just a messenger. He would have to explain his powerful might if he were to reveal his true identity by recklessly using his powers as a dream master, the realm would also take notice and go against him!'

With this thought, Fang Yuan held back.

If such an experienced dream master in the Illusionary Divine stage had to be so careful, even though Fang Yuan had restored all his powers, how could he afford to be arrogant?

"Ah... Where is Yu Xi?"

Witnessing this scene, Lu exclaimed as another warrior rushed towards Xia Qi.

Xia Qi raised his spear and countered. Yu Xi did not dodge but stood firm.

"Clang!"

As the long spear pierced onto Yu Xi's body, there was a metallic clang. The spear started to bend before snapping.

"Impenetrable? With strengthened magical abilities? You're a witch?!"

Xia Qi was shocked for a moment before looking at Lu and Kang. "It's another sin for you guys to collaborate with witches!"

"Hmph! The laws of Da Xia does not apply to us!"

Seeing this scene, Kang looked to the corner of his eye and clapped his hands as well. Two priests walked forward and green and yellow runes started to glow all over their bodies.

"Rumble!"

As the ground shook, a few dirt walls emerged.

Following, a few vines covered in black thorns appeared from the ground. Like a python, these vines struck towards Xia Qi.

"Divine Technique? Techniques from bloodline?"

Xia Qi wielded a bronze dagger and defended himself. "Yuan, come on!"

"Kill!"

Fang Yuan roared. As he killed his way into the soldiers, he held a warrior in his right hand and used him as a human hammer. Spinning him around, there were many cries heard from the warriors.

"Zhang... don't you leave!"

As he located the direction of the 3 leaders, Fang Yuan started to rush towards them.

"Why is there another one?"

Seeing how Fang Yuan used the warriors as a human hammer and shield and killing his way into the soldiers like a thousand-men-strong army, the 3 of them were startled and froze with fear.

Such a person was comparable to a 10,000-man army. It was extremely rare and there would usually be only one such person in a huge division. Most of the time, that person would already be the leader!

In such a small group of people, it was extremely abnormal for there to be two persons who were so powerful.

"Did the Xia Division already detected something fishy and have sent their army over?"

Kang screamed.

"It's useless to think about all of these now... Head Priest!"

Gazing at Fang Yuan and Xia Qi, Zhang seemed depressed.

"Leader... based on our current combat power, we can only manage one of them!"

The Head Priest of Shangzhang Tribe had white hair and his face was filled with wrinkles. He was almost bald and his hands were as skinny as that of chickens. It was unbelievable that he could live to such an age of about 80 years old.

"He shall be the one!"

Zhang pointed at Fang Yuan.

"Keke..."

The Head Priest let out a weird laughter, revealing his unpleasant-looking teeth. As he retrieved a figurine made of grass, he faced Fang Yuan and started to mumble his chant.

A black fog appeared, gathering around the straw figurine. The straw figurine started to change, and its appearance started to become more and more like Fang Yuan.

'Eh? Is this... stealing my spiritual aura? Is this one of the curses in witchcraft? Interesting!'

Fang Yuan started to intentionally slow down his actions to allow the priest to execute his curse. Suddenly, the priest started to shake his limbs. As he opened his mouth, a white streak of light shot out and landed on Fang Yuan's shadow.

'Sand Shadow Technique?'

Fang Yuan felt a little confused. Suddenly, his body froze.

"Kill him!"



The surrounding warriors became energetic as they crowded around Fang Yuan.

"All of you are seeking death!"

With a laugh, flames started to flicker on Fang Yuan's bronze sword. With a few slices, 6 warriors around him immediately laid dead on the floor.

"This person... he's extremely strong!"

The Head Priest shrieked. He quickly took out a metal nail, bit his own tongue, smeared the nail in blood and nailed it in the straw figurine.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

In mid-air, there was an extremely strong and invisible force targeted towards Fang Yuan as it shot into his forehead.

Outside his actualised dream world.

Black runes started to appear in mid-air and began to attempt entering the actualised dream world.

As the 8 Gates Sword Array shook, the power of wind, thunder, water and fire swept across the actualised dream world, completely destroying the black runes.

'What's this? 7 Arrows Nail Striking Witchcraft? What a pity... the true aura of a dream master is within the actualised dream world and is constantly under protection...'

Fang Yuan snickered as he looked at the Head Priest.

"Ah... How are you alright?"

The Head Priest was in shock. Within seconds, the straw figurine in his hands started to burn and turned into ash.

From the ashes, a black fog appeared which formed a ferocious looking face. The fog face screamed as it leapt towards the Head Priest.

"Ahh!"

The Head Priest let out a blood-curdling scream. He had a startled expression as he started to claw his own face, creating a bloodied mess. Not long after, he spat out a mouthful of blood as fog and fell to the ground, lifeless.

"Head Priest..."

Zhang's face was filled with fear. How could the Head Priest with witchcraft just die like that? Furthermore, it was a gruesome death!

With such a scene, although Zhang experienced many gruesome events before, he still felt a chill down his spine.

"Let's... retreat first!"

Seeing the ferocious Fang Yuan, Zhang and the few other leaders all had the intention to retreat.

'He's killed by the backlash from intruding my actualised dream world? How boring!'

Seeing this, Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as his skin turned into a metallic hue.

With that, he pounced towards the 3 leaders and was indifferent to the weapons around him. "Don't leave!"

"Clang! Clang!"

As the bone arrows and bronze knives landed on his skin, they could only produce a metallic sound as though he was made up of metal.

"Are you a witch as well?"

Zhang screamed as he countered with a strike of a sword.

Fang Yuan grabbed the sword with his right hand and snapped it effortlessly. With a casual fling, Zhang fell to the ground.

"Ahh... Let's do it or die!"

Lu and Kang exchanged glances as they picked up their weapons. However, to Fang Yuan, they were mere disturbances and were similarly defeated by Fang Yuan.

"Your leaders are in my hands. Surrender now!"

Fang Yuan held the bronze sword to their necks as he hollered loudly.

"Haha... die!"

From the side, Xia Qi had also managed to break out of the crowd and killed two other witches who were executing witchcraft. Snatching a bronze sword from one of the warriors, he sliced the right arm of Yu Xi.

Seeing that their most powerful warrior had been defeated and their leaders captured, the remaining warriors looked at each other in disbelief. One of them released their weapon and his bronze spear fell to the ground.

"What happened?"

The commotion had already awakened the entire division. Wei led a group of warriors with weapons and rushed to the scene.

"Zhang, Lu, Kang... these three leaders have gone against the agreement of the alliance and depended on the demons!"

Xia Qi raised his bronze sword high up and exclaimed.

"Kill them!"

"Kill them!"

The warriors of Xia realised =they were tricked from the start. Embarrassed and angry, they chanted loudly.

"This is not possible... my father will not do such a thing..."

In the crowd, there was a desolated cry from a young man.

'F\*ck! Why do they think we can kill them so easily. This is not the way to seek death..... They are indeed dumb!'

Xia Qi sent a message to Fang Yuan in secret. 'You've done well to use some of your abilities and not reveal too. Remember that you can at most use your martial arts. Don't reveal too much...'

# Chapter 349: Fiery Eyes

---

"Wu Zhiqi is a water demon! It had caused floods in the 9 regions and brought us suffering!"

Xia Qi exclaimed as he signalled to Wei and the rest of the warriors to tie the 3 leaders up. With a menacing glare, he looked at Fa.

"Fa! I believe your father is being misled..."

"That's right!"

The young man had a pure heart and could not bear to do evil. This was why his father did not let him join in the decision-making process.

Uncontrollably, Fa nodded his head as though Xia Qi was willing to spare his father.

"My father must be misled by the water demons!!"

"Mm, very well!"

Xia Qi smiled, "Therefore... you must prove your loyalty to your people, Fa! Are you willing to lead your warriors to take on the water demon?"

It sounded as though Xia Qi was deluding Fa.

"As long as you can accomplish that, I can not only release your father, I will also ensure that the Xia Tribe will support you in ascending to the appointment of division leader!"

Currently, the leader of the division was nominated by the previous leader and was a cycle by itself.

Of course, in the Xia Tribe, there was already a system where the father would pass down the appointment of leader to his son. Therefore, people already regarded the tribe as Xia Country.

However, among the divisions in Tortoise Mountain, they still

chose their leader through nomination by the previous leader.

As soon as the young Fa heard Xia Qi, his eyes glistened.

"Dear noble messenger from Xia, I am willing to assist you in taking down the water demon to prove my loyalty to my people!"

As he knelt down, he gave up the bronze sword in his hands.

"No..."

Zhang wanted to say something, but before he could do so, Fang Yuan quickly went up to them and stuffed a ball of cloth in their mouths, rendering them mute.

"We are willing to follow you, young leader!"

The warriors of Shangzhang Tribe looked at each other. However, seeing that their leader was captured, they followed suit. They knelt down and presented their weapons as a sign of willingness to follow.

"Alright!"

Xia Qi laughed. "This will be the same for Douli Tribe and Lilou Tribe. Yuan! Lead the warriors together with Fa, and let them know our might! If they are willing to surrender, then allow them to follow us!"

"Yes!"

Fang Yuan agreed, and his mind was clear.

Capturing the leaders was just a method to convince the rest of the warriors to follow them.

They were still too weak to face the water demon. Furthermore, these warriors might suddenly go against them if one of their leaders managed to escape. Therefore, they had to move immediately and take down the other two tribes, while sowing discord between these divisions of Tortoise Mountain in the meantime. Afterwards, they could do anything they wanted!

As long as they quickly accomplished this, even if the leaders of the 3 divisions were to escape, they could no longer turn the tables.

Hearing this, Lu and Kang appeared desolate. They made a few mumbling noises but could not speak.

After all, they had already brought along their elite soldiers with them. Their divisions were now defenceless and if they were ambushed, they would surely lose and experience losses.

'This strategy can only be thought of by a dream master from the outside world. These people here are simple-minded and I'm afraid they will have to suffer!'

Xia Qi remained at Shangzhang Tribe to guard beside the few captured leaders, while Fang Yuan started to allocate the manpower he had to prepare for the attack. He silently sighed to himself, "In an instant, an army of 10,000 failed to stop us and instead became our helping hand. We are really in control of everything!"

"Yuan, if we manage to take down the other two divisions, remember to share the loots with Yang Tribe!"

Wei carried a huge bow behind her bag as her eyes glistened with excitement, which made Fang Yuan speechless.

Where was the demure girl as written in the books?

...

The sun rose.

The Shangzhang Division was bustling with activity.

Groups of warriors walked on the streets and their knives were still stained with blood. They carried severed heads by their sides which were proofs of their efforts.

Behind them, women were strung up with grass ropes. There were also meat and jars filled with treasures. These were all the valuables that they had looted.

It was a normal thing in this realm to attack other divisions and kidnap their people, to the point where the kidnapped women would be obedient to their kidnappers as though they were used to it.

"Messenger, this time, we have ambushed Douli and Lilou Divisions. It was a resounding victory and we've killed more than 100 of them, kidnapped over a thousand and reduced their houses to ashes!"

In front of others, Fang Yuan acted normal and reported to Xia Qi respectfully.

"Very well, let's split the rewards with our people, namely the women and the staples!"

The enemy's base was rather empty, whereas the attacking force was made up of elites and was even led by a dream master. There was no such thing as a failed mission and therefore, Xia Qi was decisive. "Also, let those warriors who are submissive join us. Sent messengers out to inform the other divisions in Tortoise Mountain... With this, the smaller divisions would not dare to come! By then, we can activate tens of thousands of people to help out in searching the Hui River and locate Wu Zhiqi!"

"That sounds good!"

Gazing at the satisfied Fa, Fang Yuan felt a little pity for him.

Although this young man had a little power, the only way he could hold on to it was to show his loyalty to the Xia Tribe and would likely have to resort to abusing his authority in order to maintain stability within his tribe.

Of course, all of this was none of his business.

On the spot, Xia Qi initiated the splitting of rewards fairly and everyone was satisfied.

"Yuan, do you think this cloth looks nice on me?"



Wei did not care about the other treasures. She was extremely happy with a few bronze swords and a piece of dyed cloth.

"It's very beautiful!"

Fang Yuan was speechless. Women were similarly vain in any time period and any realm.

"We are still some time away from informing the various divisions to gather their people..."

After splitting the rewards, Fang Yuan went to a straw hut and started to account for his treasures.

He was not interested in the many bottles of medicine. However, he had snatched a basket of oracle bones and ropes from a few temples as he knew these divisions had the inheritances of witches. Now that he observed his loot, there was nothing that he could understand.

"Although it might seem like a huge basket of oracle bones, the information in this basket might not even be as much as a few pieces of paper... This is creepy. If there were carvings on the oracle bones, I might be able to interpret them. However, these knots are hand-tied and I can't understand it at all. It seems like I will have to ask Xia Qi to let me have a few priest disciples to assist me in interpreting these..."

He casually picked up a grey piece of bone. There were a few markings made on it which resembled a human opening up his arms and walking towards the sun.

"This resembles something... Of course, more importantly, there is energy from this realm trapped within the cracks of the oracle bone..."

Fang Yuan ran his finger through the cracks of the tortoise shell and felt an ancient spiritual aura in it.

"The cultivation of witchcraft begins from one's physical body. These recordings are just a trigger to enable one to harness energy

from nature to activate the bloodline in these people... From there, their abilities will appear on the physical bodies and they would become more powerful!"

"From how things are, it seems like all of these people in this realm are qualified to become witches. Of course, the people of Jiuli Division are the most suitable... After their defeat in the hands of the Sage, the entire Jiuli Division was wiped out and the survivors were either split from each other and reproduced with other people which diluted their bloodline, or they could still be hiding in the wilderness trying to survive the harsh conditions... If I have the chance, I must take a look at the inheritance of these witches!"

Fang Yuan flipped the oracle bones in the basket. Finally, as he picked up a red oracle bone, the energy in his body started to react.

"This must be the word for 'Fire'!"

Seeing how the engraved symbol resembled a ball of fire, Fang Yuan started to think to himself. "The quality of this body is unsatisfactory. However, with the increase in my magical energy, I am able to detect abnormalities in my blood. This is the foundation of being a witch. It seems like on Yuan's body, there are hints of fire-type witch's bloodline. If I can cultivate it to the peak level, can I become Zhurong, the Fire God?"

Zhurong the Fire God was a god from the South. She was rumoured to have the head of a beast and the body of a human and was covered in red scales. There were fire snakes in her ears and fire dragons beneath her feet.

"Of course, looking at my current cultivation, I believe I am too far off!"

The cracks in this oracle bone only had the spiritual aura of a fire witch and should not be used to generalise other witches.

However, Fang Yuan was a dream master! As long as he could

initiate the cultivation and master the basics, he would be able to use his spiritual will to absorb the fire-type elemental energy from the surroundings to supplement his body.

With the supplemented elemental energy, the hint of witch bloodline in him started to strengthen and turn into a golden-red hue, shimmering under the sunlight.

"The bloodline is strengthened!"

After a long while, Fang Yuan stood up and felt that although there were changes to his body, he could not feel the changes.

As he walked to a water vat, he could see the reflection of a young man with big eyes and thick eyebrows. He had a muscular build and gave off a faint red glow.

On the sides of his eyebrows, there were streaks of red in the form of runes, and his eyes glistened as though flames were about to emerge from them.

"It seems like my bloodline and physical body has been strengthened, and I have gained some witchcraft abilities! Of course, my foundations are too powerful to begin with and this small boost from witchcraft should not affect me much..."

He twitched his eyebrows and took a glance at this stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 48

Spirit: 48

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (5th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 6) (1%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array

(5th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Eyes (Level 1)]]"

A new skill, Fiery Eyes? Could I possibly train it to become the Fiery Golden Eyes?"

Fang Yuan thought for a while as he focused on this new skill of his. With that, he obtained more information about it:

"Fiery Eyes (Level 1): The ability from the bloodline of a Fire Witch. It is able to nullify basic illusionary spells, traps and elemental energy. Currently, at Level 1, you will be able to form fire-type spiritual inscriptions."

"Fire-type spiritual inscriptions..."

He subconsciously felt his red eyebrows. "Are they talking about this?"

He quickly left the house and looked for Xia Qi.

"Eh? How did you start to cultivate in witchcraft so quickly? Is this the red eyebrows Fiery Eyes? It seems like the Zhurong Blood in this body is rather concentrated!"

Xia Qi was a little startled, but he did not mention the downsides of practising witchcraft.

Others would see it as a sin for him to possess witchcraft, but to him, there was nothing wrong with it.

# Chapter 350: Earth

---

"Those 3 tribes' leaders were all defeated? Trash!"

Near Shangzhang Division, a 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox was hiding inside a bush. It was watching the events unfold with its long and narrow blue eyes.

"There must be a dream master from the Realm Alliance hidden amongst the Xia messengers! Once they gather the nearby divisions and send tens of thousands of people to search the Tortoise Mountain, Wu Zhiqi's seal would be discovered! No way! I need to make my move quickly!"

As the fox thought, it turned into a stream of white light and disappeared in the bushes.

Tortoise Mountain.

The mountain was shaped like a tortoise prone on the ground. It suppressed the water currents and gathered auspicious energy.

Near the position of one of the tortoise's leg, the waters were black. A whirlpool was formed there.

The white fox came to the side of the water and jumped in without hesitation.

With a splash, water splattered all over the surface of the river and waves were formed. Even the black water whirlpool immediately subsided.

Deep within the river, there was a mouth of a spring.

Streaks of dim golden lights gathered and cast light on the silhouette of a gigantic ape. It had a white head, a green body, a pair of fiery golden eyes and a golden bell on its nose. It had a fearsome look and was shackled by numerous iron chains.

Although both its eyes were shut, streaks of mysterious and mercurial like spiritual aura automatically gathered around its

body and formed ripples. It was a natural water spirit body.

Such a demon was truly terrifying!

"Wu Zhiqi's divine body..."

An air bubble emerged. Inside the bubble, the 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox was carrying a black crystal in his mouth.

The black crystal was extremely condensed. Inside it, there were sparkling gold runes that radiated a layer of mysterious light.

With the crystal, the mysterious water energy and the strong water pressure in the surrounding dispelled at once which allowed the fox to went closer.

"Wu Zhiqi is a powerful ancient water demon! His body is filled with mysterious water-type inscriptions, he is extremely powerful and his magic is boundless..."

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox sprawled on Wu Zhiqi's shoulders and mumbled, "Furthermore..., this is the powerful being's possessed body, it has accumulated over hundred years worth of demonic strength. Once it is released and controlled by me, it can even easily defeat dream masters at the 6th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage! Sadly..., there's only one chance!"

Even dream masters from the Realm Alliance had their cultivation weakened in this realm and could not restore to their full power.

The fox's own demon body had its advantages, it could control water currents in this realm.

"The leaders were afraid our demon body would be discovered. They had already altered it such that once it is abandoned, it would die immediately. Such a pity!" the fox thought.

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox turned a few rounds and finally made up its mind, "Although there's only one chance in this body, to be able to experience another realm and sense water currents and

water-type spiritual inscriptions were the benefits of this body!"

With such a thought, the 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox immediately abandoned its demon body.

The white fox quivered. Its pulse and blood flow stopped immediately as it died.

A translucent Yin Spirit emerged from it. It appeared to be a female dream master in a colourful skirt and a girdle with a jade pendant. There was a three coloured mysterious light glowing from her and hence, her figure could not be discerned clearly.

She held the black crystal and went towards Wu Zhiqi's nostril.

"Woong! Woooong!"

As she got closer, the golden bell began shaking and emitted a golden light. When the golden bell touched the black crystal, it stopped shaking at once and a passage appeared. The Yin Spirit entered the passage and there was a momentary silence.

Moments later, cracking noises could be heard. Cracks appeared on the chains and the golden bell which soon fell off.

Wu Zhiqi opened his eyes. There was a fiery looking glow from his eyeballs.

"Kaboom!"

Outside, on top of Tortoise Mountain, grey clouds covered the skies. A storm erupted!

...

"Clang!"

Xia Qi accidentally dropped a ceramic bowl on to the floor.

He could not be bothered about it. He walked outside to look at the torrential rain and asked, "Why is it so fast?"

"Pitter patter!"

The river waters turned black and overflowed. It surged over

Tortoise Mountain and was flowing towards the plains.

No matter how strong a warrior was, at the sight of such a catastrophic disaster, their expression changed at once as they froze in fear.

"Looks like Wu Zhiqi's seal has been broken earlier than we expected!" Fang Yuan calmly spoke as he watched, while his eyes shined with a fiery light.

"In actual fact, this is very normal. After defeating their supporters, we were about to search through the entire Tortoise Mountain, the seal would definitely be found! Since they didn't want to wait to be discovered, they definitely broke the seal first!" Fang Yuan thought.

"Yuan! You'll follow me!" Xia Qi turned around and said.

Only the two of them had divine techniques and could defeat the water demon. The other warriors were panic-stricken and confused, what use would they have?

"No, I want to follow you!"

Wei held his bow and followed Fang Yuan.

"No! You all have to stay here and protect this division! Rely on the walls as defence!"

Fang Yuan shook his head and pointed outside.

Wei was astonished. She just realised within the rising waters, there were silhouettes of all sorts of demons.

Wood fiends, water spirits, mountain demons, stone monsters and numerous other unimaginable spirits appeared in large amounts. There were over a thousand of them charging towards the division.

"These are all Wu Zhiqi's kind... kill them all!"

Xia Qi hollered and looked at Fang Yuan. The two of them carried bow and arrows on their back and a copper dagger on their hands.



They then charged out as though they were fierce tigers.

"Yuan!"

Wei could only scream loudly as she saw the two of them going away quickly. She clenched her teeth and looked at the spirits that were coming over to attack them. She then fiercely shouted at the young Fa who was beside her, "Fa! If you don't want your division to be defeated by these demons and have all your tribe members eaten up, you better be truthful and activate all your people to resist them with us!"

...

"Oh... actually, this is pretty good too! Since Wu Zhiqi willingly appeared, we don't have to waste time searching for him!"

"Furthermore, there are fewer restrictions since no one else is around!"

Xia Qi moved his fingers gracefully as though he was playing a musical instrument. The demons in the surrounding 10 yards froze immediately and were ripped apart from between their eyebrows, turning into black coloured sand.

Such savagery, there was no tinge of panic left!

Fang Yuan was very understanding of how Xia Qi had to balance his true identity and his identity in this realm. He asked him, "You are so confident that this is not a powerful ability of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master?"

"I am! If it was a powerful being, there would be no changes to the weather! The winds and waters would be calm, there would be no lightning or thunder. That would be the scariest!"

Xia Qi laughed and continued, "Of course... it's okay even if I guessed wrong. If such an Illusionary Divine dream master that we cannot defeat really comes into this realm, we can still preserve our true aura and get out of this realm to report it to the Realm Alliance! It would still be a big accomplishment!"

"Nevertheless, the most likely scenario is that it's a Hidden Dragon Guard that is making use of Wu Zhiqi's possessed body. Hence, we have to suppress it!"

"I understand now!"

As Fang Yuan listened, he was greatly enlightened.

Although such a possessed body was strong, it was an obvious target. Even if the seal was discovered, it might even be a trap that had been set up beforehand.

If it was a bait set up by the Sage, even a dream master at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine would die if they fell into such a trap!

7th Tier of Illusionary Divine dream masters were powerful beings too, even the Imperial Court could not force them to come over. Even if they were to come, they would lay low and slowly progress!

With this premise, Xia Qi was naturally not afraid.

Even if they were so unlucky and met such a dream master, they would just face the music.

"Of course... at such a stage, we should no longer conceal our true selves! We should unleash all our abilities and destroy that Wu Zhiqi! Even if we have to return immediately, it is still a big accomplishment!"

Xia Qi's eyes burned fierily as he turned into a beam of light and reached the peak of Tortoise Mountain with Fang Yuan.

As they looked down, they saw the originally calm waters of Huai River had become strong waves and currents. A whirlpool was becoming larger and larger and it occupied almost the entire width of the river. Inside it, a black shadow could be vaguely seen.

Suddenly, thunder roared and the river water exploded. A humongous ape emerged from the whirlpool and stared downwards viciously.

"Wow! Winds and lightning rage, trees and rocks rustle! The realm is in chaos as Wu Zhiqi emerged! What a powerful demon!"

Fang Yuan sighed and continued, "The water-type spiritual inscriptions on his body shows that he is from the witchcraft dao. If I can understand these inscriptions, it will be extremely beneficial to me!"

"There are two dream masters from the Realm Alliance?"

A woman's voice could be heard from the ugly monkey face of Wu Zhiqi.

"No wonder Shangzhang they all lost so badly!"

"Indeed, a Hidden Dragon Guard! It's not a powerful being possessing the body!"

Xia Qi was relieved at such. However, his expression turned solemn again, "This Wu Zhiqi would be equivalent to a dream master at the 5th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage in Da Qian Empire. However, in this realm, dream masters at the 6th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage were restricted! There was a possibility that Wu Zhiqi could not be defeated!"

"Defeat me?"

Wu Zhiqi paused for a moment before he guffawed. It was as though he heard an incredulous joke, "Although my cultivation is not that strong, this possessed body is a remnant of the powerful being! It cannot be penetrated by any weapon and it is extremely powerful! Your Xi is not coming and you are thinking of defeating me? Scram and get out of this realm!"

"Roar!"

The ape bellowed. Its roar was extremely menacing and earthshaking.

The water levels in Huai River rose sharply immediately and formed a waterspout that flooded the Tortoise Mountain.

"Splash!"

Under this extremely powerful force, the entire Tortoise Mountain tremored and a sorrowful cry could be heard from within it. Unbelievably, cracks started forming from the foot of the mountain!

Wu Zhiqi's might could indeed topple mountains and wreak havoc on the seas!

"Heh!"

Accompanied by a roar from Xia Qi, an earth mountain rose from the vast seas and Xia Qi transformed into an enormous giant.

The giant was taller than Wu Zhiqi, it had a human body and a snake tail. There was also a winged snake that coiled around its entire body. The winged snake was spitting a yellow coloured spiritual light that was connected to the surrounding lands.

"Dream beast master?"

As Fang Yuan watched, he thought of Sun Jue from Source Seeking Sect.

Of course, Xia Qi's power was much stronger than Sun Jue's.

"In the cultivation of a dream beast master, they would mostly undergo numerous transformations in the initial stages. In the first 3 Tiers of the Illusionary Divine stage, they could only transform into different beasts to obtain their power. After the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, they could actualise spirituality and transform into magical beasts with powerful abilities. After the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine Stage, they could easily summon a large army of beasts that were undefeatable!"

"The giant Xia Qi transformed into was an Earth Witchcraft body! Evidently, his body already contained the bloodline of an Earth Witch. This time around, by utilising this transformation, he is making use of twice the power of Earth Witchcraft! Its power is not to be belittled!"

"Trying to fight water with earth?"

Wu Zhiqi hollered, the voice was that of a woman which was rather queer.

"With just that pathetic amount of energy from your bloodline, you think you can defeat a powerful being that has cultivated for hundreds of years? Die!"

"Rumble!"

Layers of water-type spiritual inscriptions on the ape's body glowed. All the water currents in the realm reacted and started gushing fiercely!

# Chapter 351: Waves of Destruction

---

"Whoosh!"

Water gushed around Wu Zhiqi.

As spiritual inscriptions appeared on Wu Zhiqi's body, a godlike might seemed to appear.

Wu Zhiqi seemed like a real god as the illusionary figure of the entire Huai River appeared behind it. The force of the flowing river slowly strengthened the beast behind it.

"A lot of spiritual inscriptions indeed!"

Seeing the water-type spiritual inscriptions all over Wu Zhiqi's monkey body formed something like an armour around him, Fang Yuan sighed.

"The power of the Huai River, enter my body and explode!"

Wu Zhiqi roared as water flowed into the sky, forming streaks of water lightning that struck the surface of the earth.

"Bang! Bang!"

The ground behind Xia Qi was struck, forming a huge indentation and a few cracks all around it. The surface appeared charred. However, in a moment, the ground began to heal itself.

This was the power of the Earth Witch! As long as he stood on the ground, he could have a boundless source of energy!

This was the perfect counter to Wu Zhiqi's river strike.

"An impressive Earth Witch indeed!"

From the monkey face of Wu Zhiqi, there was a female voice heard; it was indeed a weird sight to behold. "How can the earth block an entire river? Even if you become a complete witch, how can you compare with the 100 years of cultivation in this demon's body? Thousand miles of river!!"

As it roared, the water in Huai River exploded and started to flood out to a thousand miles.

"No!"

Fa, who had sworn to fight against the water god, realised that a tsunami was approaching him. The water from the river covered the entire sky and crashed into the division, flooding it entirely.

"Although earth might be the counter for water, I am using pure demonic strength to turn the surroundings to an underwater river city. This is my homeground, not yours!"

Wu Zhiqi laughed heartily. "Water thunder! Strike!"

"Rumble!"

108 balls of water appeared in the sky before turning into bolts of water lightning.

"Bang! Bang!"

The Earth Giant hollered as the earth rose around him. A layer of earth shielded him from 70 over water lightnings before the shield of earth gave way and crumbled.

"Rumble!"

The remaining bolts of lightning struck with its full might on Xia Qi's body.

As he shrieked, many scars appeared on his body. This time, they did not immediately heal. Instead, Xia Qi quickly screamed. "Fang Yuan... Quickly help me!"

"3 Talents Sword Array, go!"

Fang Yuan let out a sigh as a green hurricane appeared around him which covered him. 3 streaks of sword pillars flew towards the sky, trapping Wu Zhiqi in it.

The power of ice, fire and thunder appeared. Together, they compressed inwards.

"Chi! Chi!"

In a huge explosion, the sword array disintegrated. The 3 magical swords appeared and glittered with spiritual light. They were flying with their own will and gathered their spiritual auras by themselves, increasing their power by 100 times before striking towards Wu Zhiqi.

"Chi!"

Under such an attack, even Wu Zhiqi's impenetrable body started to sustain injuries and open wounds.

"Magical soldiers? A dream soldier master?"

Wu Zhiqi roared as it swung its monkey claws out. "Die!"

"Bang!"

A streak of water lightning appeared, striking towards where Fang Yuan stood.

However, Fang Yuan was being carried by the green hurricane and rose towards the sky.

"Master!"

The 3 other magical swords could feel a sense of danger as they quickly flew back to protect Fang Yuan.

"This demon is extremely powerful! If I don't use my 4 Emblems Sword Array, I might not be able to take it down!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands and the 3 Talents Sword Array appeared once more. His eyes glistened.

The 4 Emblems Sword Array would infuse the power of water, fire, wind and thunder and its power would be intensified. However, among the dream masters, there was only one family of dream masters who were capable of such an array. If he were to use it, he would leak his heritage and this might cause trouble for him. Of course, he wouldn't sacrifice himself for someone else.



"Actually, with the strengthening of the 3 Talents Sword Array due to the swords having their own spirituality, it is already comparable to the power of a dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!"

Fang Yuan had decided to conceal his final move.

Xia Qi did not suspect anything. He was pleasantly surprised that this newly advanced 4th Tier Illusionary Divine stage dream master could have such a combat power.

"Alright! Let's do this together to take down Wu Zhiqi!"

The Earth Witch roared and the earth around them shook. "Also, let's conveniently seal up this traitor as well, haha... I shall let a lady like you remain trapped in this ugly monkey for hundreds to thousands of years! This is even better than killing you!"

If the soul were to die here, the true spirit of the dream master would return to Da Qian. However, there is the existence of a sealing technique. If successful, one's true spirit could be sealed in the realm and the dream master's body in Da Qian would become a vegetable.

"You... you've angered me!"

Facing this threat, Wu Zhiqi remained calm.

"Since both of you are courting death, I shall help you!"

As it waved its hands, two steaks of spiritual aura, black and white, flew out. They spun around each other, forming the shape of a Tai Chi.

"Buzz!"

The image of the Tai Chi started to expand outwards. In a few moments, it had expanded over a hundred miles and continued to expand into the earth and above the skies.

"Eh?"

Fang Yuan shuddered in fear as though something bad was about

to happen.

"Ah... This is a Heavenly Spiritual Image. It can separate us from our real bodies while dream-traversing!"

Xia Qi started to scream and appeared panicky. He was no longer the calm man he once was. "Be careful! If we die within this image, it will be a real death for us! Our True Spirit will remain here! This is Sage's treasure. Why is it with you?"

"A seal?"

Fang Yuan's eyebrows twitched as he seemed to have understood something. "We have segregated from our bodies? Does this mean that there's no running away?"

"Yes, this Image is extremely valuable and normal dream masters in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would not be allowed to hold it. However, this is given to me by the Sage, so naturally, I will have it!"

Wu Zhiqi laughed, "Although you 5 Grand Organisations are in control, do you think my head will sit around and do nothing? We have made many arrangements and are using all the treasures that we have. We will have a fierce fight with you dream masters from the Realm Alliance!"

She sounded much calmer as though the two of them were already dead, and revealed a piece of classified information.

At this point in time, Xia Qi turned pale.

His prediction that there was only one powerful being in the Ancient Realm was wrong!

"Do you know why I am revealing so much? This is because with the Heavenly Spiritual Image separating everything, the both of you can no longer bring out any information with you. Furthermore, today, the both of you will die here!"

Wu Zhiqi exclaimed as it tore both its arms. Blood flowed out

from the arms, forming a specific print of a rune. "Heavenly Demon Body Destruction, One Single Blow!"

"Rumble!"

A huge force erupted, sealing the skies and earth around them.

"Is this... the power of a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage?"

Fang Yuan appeared confused. "How is this possible?"

"This must be the print left behind by the head of the Hidden Dragon Guards many years ago... Although it has been over a hundred years, his possessed body managed to keep it active. Gathering energy from all around, this is equivalent to the strike of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master!"

Xia Qi exclaimed. "I understand now! This possessed body was not planned to be used for long, but it was prepared to self-destruct at the moment of sealing!!!"

This was, in fact, accumulating all the power that it once had to deliver one final blow, achieving the intensity similar to that of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master!

Although it was only a single blow, if properly planned, it was a significant thing.

"Both of you deserve to die!"

Wu Zhiqi continued to roar. Initially, it should not have used this single blow here. However, since it was discovered, it had to eradicate these two dream masters, even though the dream master controlling Wu Zhiqi would have to face punishment later on.

'This was actually for King Xi. To use it on the both of you is wasting it...'

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as he gritted his teeth. 'The alliance would not care about all these. If we die, then we would lose everything!'

With that thought, the green hurricane around him thickened and a green magical sword appeared from it. "Master!"

"The 4 spirits of the 4 swords, form the 4 Emblems Sword Array! Go!"

As the power of water, fire, wind and thunder combined, a mysterious change was happening. The sword array started to shrink around Fang Yuan, keeping him in the centre.

Beside him, Xia Qi roared as well, covering himself with layers and layers of soil.

Just as the both of them had completed their defence, a green-coloured sun exploded.

"Rumble!"

Waves crashed about and the earth shook. The green sun started to spread outwards. The defence which Xia Qi had created with his witchcraft cultivation quickly disappeared.

Furthermore, even the clouds in the sky were being punched through by the expanding green sun, revealing a clear sky behind.

Water started to evaporate into steam, forming a white mushroom cloud.

After a long while, everything started to slowly settle down.

Wu Zhiqi stood on the water surface. Suddenly, cracks started to appear on its face. Like a spider web, it slowly spread around.

"Splash!"

With that, the huge demon body started to crack and fell into the water.

A white flash appeared nearby, revealing a Yin Spirit which quickly flew into the body of a white fox.

"It's dead? To think about it... who can withstand such power? It's a pity that this possessed body is wasted... However, it's worth

it that I managed to kill 2 dream masters in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage..."

The white fox mumbled to itself as it looked towards where the both of them originally stood.

It was empty there, as though everything which Xia Qi had created was evaporated by the explosion. Satisfied, the fox giggled to itself. "Hehe... Nobody asked the both of you to look for me. You're seeking your own deaths!"

"Is that so?"

"Chi! Chi!"

The ground exploded, revealing a sword array. From it came Fang Yuan's voice.

"How is this possible?"

The white fox was stunned. "How can you survive that blow! It's impossible!"

"Nothing is impossible in this world!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands as the 4 Emblems Array expanded, trapping the white fox within it.

Initially, Fang Yuan had doubts about his decision. 'The 4 Emblems Sword Array did not disappoint me. Of course, I can feel that that immense force is really powerful. However, without an owner to control it, it can only achieve the power of a 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. Close to the 7th Tier, but it is ultimately not! This difference is the difference between life and death!'

"Water, fire, wind and thunder? The 4 Emblems... This sword array is much more powerful than what an average dream soldier master can harness. Where have I seen this before?"

The white fox started to grow suspicious. As it saw Fang Yuan approaching, it started to shudder in fear. "I am a member of the

Imperial Court and I have a very powerful backing!"

"That's right..."

Fang Yuan laughed sneakily. What a pity... This place is already sealed by your Heavenly Spiritual Image. Xia Qi's death is undoubtedly real... What about yours?"

The white fox froze.

Never would she have thought that her killer move to seal the both of them here would trap herself!

# Chapter 352: Meeting the King

---

The Heavenly Spiritual Image was the treasure of the Sage. Although it could only be used once, it could seal the entire world, trapping all True Spirits within it.

Within the spiritual image, if a dream master were to die, they would die in their own world as well!

"You..... you cannot kill me!"

The 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox could feel the murderous vibe on Fang Yuan's body as it shuddered in fear. "Even though you care nothing about my backing, don't you want to know what the Hidden Dragon Guards have planned in this realm? Even King Xi doesn't deserve to know the plan..."

"That's right! Then be honest about it!"

Fang Yuan was tempted to know.

Seeing this, the white fox was elated. "As long as you are willing to release me, I am willing to tell you everything... ah! What are you doing?"

"Whoosh!"

With the glitter of a sword radiance, a streak of lightning came down which struck the 3 Tailed Spiritual Fox and charred it. As Fang Yuan stretched his hands out, he grabbed hold of a Yin Spirit before chaining it up with 4 streaks of sword essence.

"You have too many tricks up your sleeve... Furthermore, I only need to know what the Hidden Dragon Guards intent to do. I wouldn't believe anything else you say!"

Fang Yuan appeared calm. As the 4 streaks of sword essence began to entangle with each other, the Yin Spirit let out a scream before disappearing in a puff of green smoke.

"This is what you get for failing to get my trust..."

After dispersing the 4 Emblems Sword Array, Fang Yuan looked at the receding river water and sighed. "Furthermore... I cannot let you spread the news about my 4 Emblems Sword Array. Therefore, you're dead meat!"

If he had hesitated, the fox might secretly remove the restriction of the Heavenly Spiritual Image and killed itself. That would spell even more trouble for Fang Yuan.

He had no choice but to be ruthless.

"After such a big fight, the foot of the Tortoise Mountain is now submerged and 10,000 people are killed just like that... sigh..."

A green hurricane appeared which carried Fang Yuan in it and transported him to where Shangzhang Division once was.

As the flood receded, a damaged division was revealed. Corpses laid everywhere and their eyes and stomach were bloated. It was a gruesome sight to behold.

"I'm afraid that the divisions of Tortoise Mountain will become history!"

Fang Yuan continued walking and saw Fa.

Fa had an aggressive look on his face as his hands were outstretched. His skin was pale and he appeared as though he was fighting for survival.

"Such an establishment is destroyed in a few moments!"

Fang Yuan sighed and continued walking. Ahead, there were a few warriors of the Yang Tribe. They were dead as well, either from drowning or being killed in battle.

"Eh?"

Suddenly, he thought of something and turned to another spot.

In a pile of mud, there was a huge severed trunk. Beneath the trunk, a young lady was trapped. Her nails were ingrained deeply into the trunk, but she was still breathing. It seemed as though she



had merely fainted, and her eyes were shut.

Around them, a few water demons started to approach as though they had found their prey.

"Die!"

With his mind, Fang Yuan summoned a green sword essence which flew out like a gust of wind. The few water demons froze before turning into ash.

"Wei!"

Fang Yuan walked up to the trunk and placed his finger on Wei's forehead to transfer her some elemental energy.

"Yuan? Am I dreaming?"

After a moment, she sighed and woke up, appearing confused. "I dreamt of the flood! Demons! You ran out quickly..."

"This is not a dream!"

Fang Yuan helped her up before she saw the mess that was once the division.

"Wu Zhiqi was released and flooded everything here. I have already killed him!"

Fang Yuan continued to explain. "I'm afraid that there are no other survivors here..."

"Ti, Gao, Li..."

Wei mumbled the names of the few other warriors that came with them as tears welled up in her eyes. "Yuan, what should we do? Return to our division?"

"No! I want to go to the heart of Xia Country - Yang City!"

Fang Yuan spoke with determination. "Even though the messenger of Xia is dead, I have to fulfil the order of our leader to report to King Xi about it!"

"I want to go with you!"

Wei bit her lips. "I'll follow you wherever you go!"

Fang Yuan examined this lady before him.

After all that had happened, it seemed that she had matured quite a bit, and became stronger than before.

However, there was a mysterious feeling about her, which made Fang Yuan confused. 'Does she have the protection of the realm? Looking at things... Wu Zhiqi's flood killed everyone except her. Either she is extremely lucky, or she has the protection of the realm! This is interesting!'

"Alright! Then let's go together!"

...

Yang City.

After successfully managing the river, the leader of Xia was crowned the king. Construction started in Yang Mountain, and the 9 cauldrons were smelted and placed in the centre of the city square. From then on, Yang City became the capital of the Xia Tribe, the headquarters of the entire plains!

The city was rather primitive. The city walls were made of soil and were 30 feet tall and 5 feet thick. It stretched around the city for 15 miles. Although this was nothing to Da Qian Empire, it was the most advanced capital in this realm, with everything built without machinery!

As soon as Wei entered Xia Country, she was mesmerized by the fertile farms, intricate pottery and dyed fabrics. Entering Yang City was even more of an eye-opener, she was like a villager entering a modernised city.

"Yuan... look at this! They're all wearing cloth! At that stall over there, they're selling bronze and even iron equipment!"

Looking around, Wei felt a little embarrassed as she was only draped in animal hide. She froze and could no longer move.

"If you like it, we can get a few iron swords after seeing King Xia. They're more useful than bronze swords anyway..."

Fang Yuan did not feel out of place.

This kind of city was like a town. Of course, it took up a lot of space and the architecture in the city had an ancient feel to it.

"They are more useful than bronze swords?"

Looking at the black iron sword, Wei hesitated. It seemed as though she wanted to slice it with her bronze sword to test it out.

Fang Yuan smiled and remained silent.

Although they had long discovered iron, they knew that it would rust and would take too much effort to be made into weapons. Therefore, they were not as common as bronze weapons.

One reason for that was that the smelting process of iron was extremely complicated.

In Xia Country, with the help of dream masters, it would be effortless to get iron equipment.

'However, it seems like it is not popularized... the dream masters of the Realm Alliance are indeed very careful...'

Fang Yuan brought Wei to the palace. "I am Yuan from the Yang Tribe. I have brought along with me the belongings of Qi and is requesting to see King Xi!"

He raised the jade piece which Xia Qi left behind and shouted.

One of the guards glanced at him and immediately, one of them rushed into the palace. "Wait here!"

After a while, he ran out. "King Xi wishes to see you! Follow me!"

The guard pointed at Wei, "You are not allowed to enter!"

"Why so?"

Wei was enraged and almost took out the bronze knife by her waist. However, she was stopped by Fang Yuan. "Wait for me

here!"

With that, he followed the guard into the palace.

The palace did not seem luxurious. The only thing special about it was that it was huge.

After a short walk, they arrived at a square. In a hall behind the square, there were 9 huge cauldrons. There were carvings of famous treasures and mysterious beasts on the surface of these cauldrons which would strike fear on whoever laid their eyes on these engravings.

'The 9 Cauldrons of Xia! Where the fate of the people dao lie!'

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself as he felt a huge invisible force on him.

The 9 Cauldrons served the purpose of stabilizing the entire region. It was created by the Sage many years ago and was representative of the traditions of the people dao!

'This is not dragon energy. It is more powerful than dragon energy and is able to stabilize the region and restrict evil spells!'

As he remained silent, he could feel the passion of the ancestors of the people dao boiling within the cauldrons. The energy from the cauldrons rose up into the skies.

Even if a Realm Alliance dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would be no match to King Xi in Yang City, for the king would be strengthened by the energy from the cauldrons!

He focused on the task at hand and followed the servant as they entered the main hall.

"I am Yuan. Greetings, King Xia!"

Since this was the ancient times, this form of greeting was not considered disrespectful. After their greetings, he arrived at a table and sat down with two other ministers which made Fang Yuan feel

respected.

"Yuan from the Shangyang Division, tell me about Qi's and your encounter with Wu Zhiqi!"

And King Xi spoke, his deep voice was heard.

"Yes!"

Fang Yuan composed himself, glanced at the two ministers standing by the side before explaining everything.

Of course, secretly, he was sending a message to the elder.

Along the way to the palace, Fang Yuan had already decided on what to say. He had mostly said the truth but only changed the last part, claiming that Wu Zhiqi and Xia Qi had fought to their deaths before Fang Yuan stood in to deliver the final blow.

'It's a good deed that you and Qi managed to kill the unsealed Wu Zhiqi!'

After a while, the loud voice of King Xi was heard from above.

"I am only doing my part to eliminate the evil!"

Fang Yuan thanked King Xi before look at him.

King Xi of Xia Country was an elder of the Realm Alliance. He was dressed in robes and had a composed look. His thick eyebrows gave off the vibe that he was extremely dependable.

"You deserve to be rewarded if you do a good deed, and deserve to be punished if you do a bad deed. This is only normal!"

King Xi waved his hands. "Yuan of Shangyang Division killed Wu Zhiqi and is therefore deserving of a reward! I shall change the name of the North Sea Secluded Capital to Fang Mountain, and that piece of land is now yours. The priest will record this down!"

"Thank you, King Xia!"

Since he was also part of the Realm Alliance, there was no reason for Fang Yuan to return to his division. Of course, he had to take

orders from the Xia Tribe.

Fang Yuan accepted the reward without hesitation.

"Mmm, since you are now the Lord of the Fang Mountain, your descendants shall take the surname Fang. From today onwards, you will be Fang Yuan! That is all!"

King Xi smiled as Fang Yuan felt a little humoured.

'In the ancient times, there was a person named Shang Yang. However, since he was part of Wei Country, his named was changed to Wei Yang. Afterwards, as he became the king of Qin Country, his land was known as Shang and his name was changed to Shang Yang or King Shang. Who would've thought that I would now experience the same thing...'

Regardless, Fang Yuan appreciated the fact that he could use his real name from now onwards. Without hesitation, he paid his respects and left the palace.

"All of you, leave too! Ju, stay behind!"

King Xi dismissed the other ministers, leaving behind Ju, who was also a dream master from the Realm Alliance.

"Elder... Is Chen Qi really dead? And... do you think Fang Yuan would trick us?"

Ju asked.

"Since even the Heavenly Spiritual Image is out, we can do nothing about it..."

King Xi's voice was calm. "After thinking about what he said, I believe that most of it were true. The Hidden Dragon Guards are plotting for something big, and we have to be well prepared!"

# Chapter 353: Essence of the Blood

---

Fang Yuan was made Lord over his plot of land! He could command ministers, collect taxes and even set up an army!

To Fang Yuan, the process of making him a Lord felt more similar to the western version of being knighted.

As time passed, history had shown that the kings would slowly lose power. Finally, it would only be a status.

In the west, they could truly knight someone and confer him all that he deserved. However, in the east, power was everything!

However, now, Fang Yuan not only had power, but land and even riches as well!

He would be considered to have attained a high status among the people of this realm for going this far, and even had the potential to start his own country!

'Both Elder and I are not from this realm. Therefore, we would not pay as much attention to all of these. I'm sure that Elder is intending to make use of me...'

This was only an excuse for Fang Yuan to remain in Xia Country. As soon as he left the palace, he told Wei about what happened.

The young lady opened her eyes wide. "Yuan... you are now the Lord of Xia Country? Does that mean you are not returning to the division anymore?"

"Yeah, I'm not going back!"

Fang Yuan gazed afar. "Look at all these... This place is prosperous and is the heart of this world! I've decided to stay in the Xia Tribe and make a name for myself!"

He now seemed like a greedy person who would abandon his home and his people for riches.

"Alright!"

Wei clapped her hands. "I like this place too. Let's stay here!"

"... Cough cough..."

...

Although Fang Yuan was declared a lord, he had to go through a ceremony of sorts, even if it was a simple one.

At the very least, a simple ceremony was still required.

Furthermore, he had other rewards which he sent some servants to collect for him.

There were servants in this era! There were still cruel people outside of Xia Country who would bring all their servants to their graves after their death. The more servants, the more prestigious the person would be!

In an instant, there were representations of both civilised and barbaric practices.

With the status of a lord, Fang Yuan was directly under the command of King Xi and did not have to worry about where to stay.

Furthermore, during the night, Fang Yuan would be required to secretly pay a visit to the Elder of the Realm Alliance and the other dream masters of the Realm Alliance.

"Ahh... I have no idea if the people in Fang Mountain are wealthy or not, and I am clueless as to how many people reside in the mountain!"

Beside him, Wei childishly started to count using her fingers, which amused Fang Yuan.

...

It was nightfall.

Fang Yuan woke up, silently left his house and arrived at the palace.



"Greetings, Elder!"

The white palace was empty and the guards who were supposed to be guarding the doors fainted.

King Xi sat on the throne, similar to how he did in the daytime. However, this time, there were a few dream masters from the Realm Alliance around him.

Although there were fewer people now, the spiritual aura in the surroundings felt much more threatening.

"Fang Yuan?"

King Xi smiled. "You are indeed the talent of our alliance. I am Xi Chen. These few dream masters are Dan Ju, Wu Li and Song Cai... you all will get along in the future!"

The Realm Alliance had invaded countless realms. To think that in this Ancient Realm, there would be a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and a few other 4th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters showed the importance of this realm.

Of course, there could be other dream masters in the Illusionary Divine stage. However, their statuses were too lowly and thus, they did not have the rights to join in this conversation.

"Yes, Sir!"

In front of his elder, Fang Yuan and the few other dream masters could only pay their greetings.

"Fang Yuan, please describe what you previously said, but in more detail!"

Fang Yuan started to mention the details regarding the Tortoise Mountain.

"Based on what you have said, the Hidden Dragon Guards are plotting for something big here. We must be on our guards!"

Elder Xi Chen appeared solemn. "Although our Sage has already

gotten control of the people dao in this realm, he has mentioned before that the source of energy in this realm is extremely concentrated. There might even be changes in the future. If we can succeed, then this would be the best opportunity to explore and understand the heavenly dao!"

"Yes, Sir!"

The other dream masters agreed and Fang Yuan was lost in his own thoughts. 'Heavenly dao... could this be the path after attaining the Prominent Divine stage?'

The means of cultivation in Da Qian was split into spiritual and martial arts. In terms of martial arts, martial artists would have to go through the 12th Golden Gates before obtaining elemental force as a Wu Zong. From there, they could further advance to form the 9th Meridian and form the Divine Body, thus entering the realm of True Divine.

As for spiritual knights, cultivators would have to begin as a spiritual disciple before they would obtain elemental force as a spiritual knight. From then on, they could go on and attain the 9th Tier of the Elemental Opening Realm before reaching the realm of True Elemental!

Dream masters were largely similar to spiritual knights. They would start off as dream disciples before they would obtain elemental force as a dream master. From there, they could achieve the 9th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, gain spirituality and finally reach the Prominent Divine stage!

The only difference was that dream masters would have an unparalleled combat power. A 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master could go head on with a True Divine or a True Elemental. A dream master in the Prominent Divine stage would be even more powerful and would be regarded as a Sage. No one would be able to challenge the Sage except for the True Elementals and True Divines who obtained the blessing and strengthening from Da Qian

Imperial Court!

"Martial artists, Wu Zong, Meridian Opening, True Divine! Spiritual Disciple, spiritual knight, Elemental Opening, True Elemental! Dream disciple, dream master, Illusionary Divine, Prominent Divine!... Who would've guessed that there would be a path after the Prominent Divine stage? Is this related to the fate of this realm?"

Fang Yuan was drowned in his thoughts.

The few dream masters in the Illusionary Divine stage started to discuss among themselves. Unfortunately, they had too little information and in the end, there was no productive conclusion. They could only remain calm and compose themselves.

Fang Yuan knew that as a newcomer, he should not speak too much. Therefore, for most of the discussion, he was silently listening to the exchanges at one side.

"Alright! After all, the Xia Tribe has control over the fate of the people dao. As long as we do not do anything evil, with the presence of the 9 Cauldrons, we will remain safe!"

Near the end, Xi Chen started to wrap things up. "At hand, we will have to settle two big issues. The problem of flooding and the survivors of Jiuli! Fang Yuan! You have done well to kill Wu Zhiqi. The alliance will reward you handsomely. You have completed your mission. If you decide to join in future missions, there will be more rewards!"

Fang Yuan stood out and thanked Elder Chen Xi.

"Also... It's the Fiery Eyes that you have activated, right?"

Looking at Fang Yuan's eyes, Chen Xi smiled. "Let's not talk about the rewards from the alliance. As the King of Xia Country, I want to present you with a gift!"

"Buzz!"

As soon as he finished speaking, a fiery-looking crystal floated towards Fang Yuan.

"After my observations, I believe you have activated the bloodline of a Fire Witch. It seems that you want to improve your cultivation in witchcraft... This drop of blood essence was obtained when I killed a powerful witch. That witch is also a Fire Witch and was able to harness the power of Zhurong the Fire God. He was as powerful as a dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. I shall give this to you!"

"Thank you for your reward, Elder!"

As soon as the crystal landed on his hands, Fang Yuan could feel a warm fuzzy feeling. It was as though flames were burning within the crystal and it looked special.

Elated, Fang Yuan quickly thanked Chen Xi.

"Alright, that is all. Everyone, please return!"

Chen Xi waved his hands. "After settling the issue of the flood, the witches will rise once again. We need to be prepared to leave anytime to deal with them!"

"Yes, Sir!"

The Illusionary Divine dream masters obeyed the instructions.

...

"He is indeed a powerful 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master to be so generous!"

Fang Yuan strutted out of the palace, arrived at an empty spot and crossed his legs. He looked at the drop of blood essence in his hands and gave a look of satisfaction.

As a person who has cultivated in fire-type witchcraft, Fang Yuan could tell that this drop of blood was indeed filled with the essence of a Fire Witch.

Needless to say, since this body was not his own, he was not

afraid that the Elder would do anything to him.

With that thought, he opened his mouth and swallowed the drop of blood.

"Rumble!"

As he swallowed the drop of blood, Fang Yuan could feel as though there was a ball of fire in his stomach.

"Fire!"

He forcefully focused himself in absorbing the drop of blood. Thinking about the fire-type inscriptions on the oracle bones, he recalled a technique to transfer the energy to his entire body.

A burning sensation started to spread from his stomach to his limbs.

"This is indeed a blood from a Fire Witch!"

Fang Yuan could feel that he was being replenished.

He could see a red glow within him, seeping through his bones, blood and muscles. Part of it rose upwards and gathered in his eyes.

"Stats!"

After a while, as he fully absorbed the essence of the blood, Fang Yuan felt his eyes and exclaimed:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 48

Spirit: 48

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (5th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 6) (1%)],

[Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Eyes (Level 2)], [Fire Controlling Technique (Level 1)]"

"Fiery Eyes (Level 2): The increased ability from the activated bloodline of a Fire Witch. It is able to nullify fire-type elemental energy and traps. Currently at Level 2!"

"Fire Controlling Technique (Level 1): An activated ability from the bloodline of a Fire Witch, granting you the basic ability to control fire!"

...

"The cultivation of witchcraft is simply the activation of the witch's bloodline. It can produce a natural magical ability! Controlling fire..."

Fang Yuan snapped his fingers. With that, a small flame appeared above his right hand. It was greenish-yellow and flickering, giving out light and warmth.

"This skill is rather useless now... To quickly increase my cultivation, I'm afraid that I have to gather the blood essences of the witches?"

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan let out a bitter laugh. "In this realm, the people with the most concentrated witch bloodline are the people of Jiuli Division. Elder Chen Xi has really planned it well!"

"Of course, I am not a native to this realm. I will not hesitate to kill the people of Jiuli Division to take their blood... This is logical thinking..."

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.

This was an era before the Qin Dynasty. All the stories which he once heard made him think.

"What I want the most is the secret as to how this world changes!"

Why would such a normal realm develop such an ancient vibe? Why are most of the folklore and stories here similar to that of his own world?

Could this be an effect of the influence of a certain cultivation?

Or could this be a result of the doing of someone from a higher dimension?

If any of this was the cause, and if Fang Yuan was able to find out about it, this meant that he would be able to travel to their dimension and world, right?

As Fang Yuan licked his lips, he had come to a conclusion.

# Chapter 354: Black Water

---

North Sea, Secluded Capital Mountain. It was now known as Fang Mountain.

"Lord, Fang Mountain and its surrounding 35 miles of land are all under your control!"

An elderly man kneeled before Fang Yuan and reported respectfully.

"Oh? Then tell me, how much wealth do I have here?"

Fang Yuan fiddled with a black steel dagger as he asked nonchalantly.

Wei stood beside Fang Yuan with a steel spear on her hand. She was now donned in cloth. Behind her, there were hundred over slaves.

Although they were slaves, they were specially chosen by Fang Yuan from prisoners of war from each division. They were well built and skilled in fighting; with just some slight training, they would be extremely useful.

They were able to purchase all these thanks to King Xi's rewards.

After Fang Yuan was granted the title of Lord, King Xi rewarded them with riches. Even these slaves had to be approved by the higher authorities or else they could not be easily amassed.

The nobles in Xia Country felt King Xi treated this outsider extremely well.

In actual fact, this was very normal. Furthermore, Fang Yuan had received instructions from Xi to build an army to prepare to fight with the survivors of Jiuli in the mountain ranges in the southern area.

To this Realm Alliance's Elder, Fang Yuan, who was a dream master from the Realm Alliance too, was his real ally.



Since that was the case, what else could be said?

"Reporting, my Lord!"

The elderly man quivered as he felt pressured. His voice trembled as he reported, "Near this mountain, we have three small divisions with a total population of 10,000. There are 2,500 acres of farmland and over 1,000 soldiers that can be trained!"

Realistically, everyone was a soldier. If not for agriculture needs, 3,000 to 4,000 soldiers could be trained, however, that was unnecessary.

"2,500 acres of farmland? That seems like a very low yield... at least its supplemented by hunting..." Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Fang Yuan stroked his chin and ordered, "Bring over the leaders of the three divisions to accept my authority as their head. Order them to offer me prey and fresh flowers as a symbol of submission! If they don't agree, I will enslave their whole division!"

"Yes, Lord! Your orders will definitely be fulfilled!"

The elderly man clenched his teeth and answered.

"Yuan... this entire mountain and its surrounding areas are all ours?"

Wei was excited at such a sight and her face turned red. She continued, "Such a big piece of land granted to us! We can even relocate the entire Xiangyang Tribe here..."

"Relocating a tribe is not so easy! Of course, if the tribe here does not surrender to me, I guess I will have to do that!"

Fang Yuan intentionally said that out loud such that word would spread which would put pressure on the three divisions.

Fang Yuan walked a few rounds and chose a spot beside a small river on the flat ground, he then said, "We shall camp here tonight, also... prepare to determine a few plots of land for us to lay

foundations to build rows of wooden houses! Oh, right... we have to make some bricks! We can't always rely on straw huts!"

Fang Yuan felt it was very novel as it was as though he was playing some sort of primitive civilisation game.

Not before long, the elderly man brought three men over.

"My dear Lord, we are the division leaders of White Mountain, Black Water and Xuan Du, here to pledge our loyalty!"

The three uncivilised looking division leaders brought along animal hides, fresh flowers and other gifts to display their sincerity.

"Hmm, as your Lord, from today onwards, all items that you hand over to Xia Country will be collected by me... Also, I want each of you all to bring over 300 men from your division to be placed under my command!"

As told by Xi, there was an upheaval in southern Jiuli. Hence, Fang Yuan had to quickly build up an army in order to suppress them.

"This..."

In one division, there were only a few thousand people, 300 men would be one-tenth of its population. Furthermore, they had to be strong men, thus, the three division leaders were naturally hesitant.

"Rest assured, under my military training, food and weapons will be provided by me!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands.

"Since that's the case, we will be willing!"

As that was the new Lord's first command, the three division leaders could only clench their teeth and accept it.

"Very good... follow me and survey this Fang Mountain!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and walked towards the mountain, "What are the specialities that could be found near here? Or are there any dangers around here?"

"Of course there is!"

One of the division leaders replied, "Inside the Secluded Capital Mountain, there are all sorts of black coloured feline beasts, they are extremely strong and vicious! They always attack our divisions and devour our people!"

"Black coloured... beasts?"

Fang Yuan thought about it after he heard what the division leader said.

As the group of them continued, they arrived at the periphery of one of the divisions.

There was a large plot of farmland which was enclosed by a fence. Inside it was some small beasts. Evidently, they were influenced by Xia Country and the people in this division learnt how to rear animals too.

"Lord, this is White Mountain Division!" One of the division leaders stepped out and proudly exclaimed.

"Leader!"

Suddenly, a young hunter ran out from the forests. His body was stained with blood and he exclaimed, "We encountered a black leopard! It chased after us and ate many of our people!"

"What? Quickly prepare to guard against it!"

The division leader was appalled and grabbed his weapon tightly. He then looked towards Fang Yuan.

"A black leopard, interesting! I will take a look!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and pointed at the hunter, "Follow me!"

"No!"

Although the young hunter was a warrior in this division, he was panic-stricken and flustered, "Don't go! It will kill you!"

"Huuuu!"

Suddenly, the bush rustled and a gigantic black shadow emerged from it.

It was a giant leopard that was twice the height of a human. Its pure black fur radiated with a mysterious glow under the sunlight and its mouth was dripping with blood. As it saw the White Mountain Division, a greedy look could be seen in his eyes.

"Gather the tribe! We will fight this beast!"

The division leader of White Mountain clenched his teeth and shouted, "We can't let it enter our division!"

"Let me settle it!"

Fang Yuan calmly took a few steps and appeared in front of the black leopard, "Scram, kitty!"

"Woosh!"

Fang Yuan's hand glowed with a dark light and the black leopard was stunned at once. Moments later, its huge head fell off and blood gushed out.

"This... this..."

The three division leaders were astonished.

For them, such a ferocious beast had to be trapped by all the warriors in their divisions before it could even be killed. Also, they would have suffered tremendous losses during the process. But now, the new Lord had easily sliced off its head with a wave of his arm.

Such powerful martial art skills made them speechless.

"Haha... speechless right? Yuan is the number one warrior who

killed the powerful demon Wu Zhiqi, this black leopard is no match for him!"

Wei laughed and looked at Fang Yuan proudly.

"Lord!"

Moments later, the three division leaders were fully convinced and paid their respects to Fang Yuan.

"Eh, distribute its meat amongst the people in the division!"

As Fang Yuan looked at the black leopard's carcass, an idea appeared in his mind, "I want to enter the mountain to take a look!"

The three division leaders wanted to warn Fang Yuan against it as the mountain was very dangerous, but as they thought of Fang Yuan's powerful martial arts skills, they did not say anything.

...

Inside Fang Mountain.

Fang Yuan swept some vines out of the way and asked, "Other than black beasts, what else is inside this mountain?"

"There's black water that runs through the cracks of the ground which corrodes the earth! Wherever it passes through, nothing would grow!"

The leader of Black Water Division answered.

"Eh? Bring me there!"

As they arrived at a location with mudcracks, indeed, within the low-lying grounds, black water could be seen flowing through it. It was as though the black water seeped out from deep within the earth and it was extremely eerie.

"Ok, let's go back!"

After witnessing it for himself, Fang Yuan did not stay any longer and went back immediately.

Only Wei who was nearest to Fang Yuan could hear him repeatedly mumbling to himself, "It is recorded in : Within the North Sea, there is a mountain named Secluded Capital Mountain. There were black water, mysterious birds, mysterious snakes, mysterious leopards, mysterious tigers, mysterious foxes."

"Yuan, what are you saying?"

Wei was confused at what he was saying and asked him.

"Nothing much... Black Water Division leader!"

Fang Yuan laughed and continued, "From now on, the offerings from your division shall just be this black water! It shouldn't be a difficult task to collect it, right?"

"It's not difficult, of course it's not difficult!"

The division leader was stunned for a moment before he quickly replied.

"This black water looks so dirty, what do you need it for?"

Wei was bewildered at such and asked Fang Yuan after the three division leaders left.

"I'm preparing... to make weapons out of it!"

Fang Yuan smiled sinisterly, "If there were no witches here, this Secluded Capital, which is the Fang Mountain now, might even be the foundation of an empire!"

Fang Yuan had already confirmed that this black water was in actual fact, crude oil!

Of course, without an industrial system, it was useless even if they had a huge oil field. However, there were no problems utilising it for basic uses.

Regarding this aspect, Fang Yuan was not hesitant to follow in the footsteps of people in the past, for example... the Byzantine people!

Wei was even more confused as he listened to Fang Yuan.

"Gather some brass, wooden tubes and craftsmen over! I will tell them how to manufacture Greek fire!" Fang Yuan instructed.

Not bad!

This time around, he wanted to produce Greek fire.

Greek fire was a type of incendiary liquid made out of crude oil, it was also known as liquid fire as it could spit fire. Most importantly, it could not be extinguished by water!

"Although there are still some problems in producing the Greek fire, with the divine techniques in this realm and the Fire Controlling Technique I possess, these problems can be solved... In actual fact, if I was in any other mundane realm, such a power would allow me to rise up. Nevertheless, now that I can allow normal people in this realm to control flames, it would be a killer move during battles! By utilising it well, it can definitely bring us victory!" Fang Yuan pondered.

The Greek fire was not useful to Fang Yuan, however, it was extremely useful for the normal people under him.

Although it was a primitive incendiary weapon, it was already extremely powerful in wars in this early Qin dynasty time period.

Furthermore, not every person in Jiuli Division possessed divine techniques, there were many normal people amongst them too. Thus, such a weapon would be put to great use against them.

# Chapter 355: Jiuli Division

---

There were many mountains in the South.

In the lush and sprawling primitive forests, there were numerous ancient and towering trees that formed a canopy which blocked out the sun. Colourful clouds enveloped the area too which was a beautiful sight to behold. However, it was actually a dangerous trap in disguise as they were actually poisonous miasma.

In such a harsh environment, even the people in the realm would find it hard to survive here. There was little life and even Xia could not exert his influence here.

At this point in time, in a huge mountain.

"Revenge! Revenge! Revenge!"

Rows of people from the Jiuli Tribe gathered. Their eyes were burning with passion and their skin was tanned. The average tribe member here was about 8 feet tall and they were all like mini giants. They smeared colourful paint on their faces and shouted as they waved their weapons in the air.

In the centre, there was a huge platform surrounded by 4 red vibrant flags. The flag of their Army Leader, Chi, was flying in the air as though he was alive and roaring in the wind.

Flames were burning everywhere, leaving charred marks on the ground.

On the platform, two of the strongest witches were engaging in a deathmatch.

"Dong! Dong!"

One of them had ferocious eyes and wielded an axe in one hand and a shield in another. Every time their weapons met, a dull sound could be heard which shook the entire place.

"Bang!"



In another clash, the giant axe mercilessly shattered the bronze hammer the opponent was wielding. Not long after, his opponent was sliced in half.

"Splatter!"

Fresh blood spewed everywhere from the platform and started to glow brilliantly. Suddenly, it started to flow together, forming the shape of what seemed to be a snake. Finally, it slithered to the winner and imprinted inscriptions on his body.

"Roar! Roar!"

The witch roared loudly as the surrounding warriors knelt down, showing their submission.

"I am... Xing!!! I have already defeated 80 warriors from all the different tribes! From today onwards, I shall be the leader of Jiuli Division. Are there any objections?"

"Xing!"

"Xing!"

"Xing!"

Many warriors of Jiuli Division started to chant Xing's name. "You are our leader. You shall lead us to get our revenge with Xia Tribe!"

Beneath the platform, there were a few priests clad in colourful robes. They exchanged glances and nodded their heads as well.

"Xing, you have passed through the ceremony to take over the leadership of the division. From today, Xing will be the leader of all of us here in Jiuli Division!"

Secretly, a few other priests were satisfied too. 'Through the ceremony, Xing's body has gathered the purest bloodline from the entire Jiuli Division. He is at the peak of forming the Ultimate Witch Body and might even attract the soul of Army Leader Chi!'

'The Xia Tribe is merciless and have pushed us to our limits,

forcing us to live in the mountains. Every year, countless of our people would die to the poisons and the ferocious beasts from the area. We need to avenge them!'

'We have 50,000 warriors in the division. We have also mined for minerals in the quarries and smelted weapons. Under the leadership of our new leader, we will surely succeed!'

As everyone was satisfied with their new leader, the atmosphere was energetic.

Amidst the fiery flames around, the flag of Army Leader Chi quickly caught fire. Black smoke filled the air, which seemed to form a ferocious looking face which was looking downwards...

...

"Is it true that Army Leader Chi's soul is still around?"

Somewhere far, on the top of a hill, the onlooking Hidden Dragon Guard in the form of a 3 Eyed Monkey started to shiver in fear.

As the illusionary shadow of the face appeared for a brief moment, it was as though a strong magical will was felt, causing the demonic force in him to feel unstable.

"He is indeed the mighty Army Leader Chi, who was worthy to fight against the Sage before he had achieved the Prominent Divine stage!"

The 3 Eyed Monkey mumbled to itself as it started to kneel beneath a tree. "Head! Look..."

"Whoosh!"

The tree had many branches and leaves. As it shook, a pair of eyes appeared on one of its branches. A slit appeared beneath, which revealed wooden teeth. The tree instantly took the form of a human face.

Seeing this scene, it sighed. "This is not only his soul but the fate

energy of his tribe as well!"

"Fate energy?"

The 3 Eyed Monkey looked confused. "He was defeated and his tribe was forced to suffer. What fate energy is there to talk about?"

"After all, this world revolves around the people dao..."

The face on the tree started to smile mysteriously. "Even against a Sage, these people would still have a chance of survival and would not be wiped out... Now that they are ready to strike back, this must be the doing of the heavens!"

The 3 Eyed Monkey seemed to have understood something.

Suddenly, it could also feel a mysterious but fleeting strong force blessing and strengthening the people of Jiuli Division.

"The Sage is, after all, an outsider. He is ultimately no match for the entire realm, especially against such a realm with a concentrated energy source!"

The face on the tree smiled once more. "Let's follow the will of the heavens. You shall pay Xing a visit to represent the demons in forming an alliance with them. From there, you will be protected by his fate energy!"

"King Xia is the leader of all alliances. Do you think they do not hate him? As long as the Jiuli Division is ready to strike, they will be able to do so with the assistance of the water demons. From there, we will have a chance to kill him!"

"After such a long planning, we only have a chance?"

The 3 Eyed Monkey agreed and appeared a little helpless.

"It's rather good to have a fifty-fifty chance. After all, this is the realm designed by the Sage! It will still be dependent on the restrictions imposed by Da Qian. The Realm Alliance would not be so crazy as to bring it a lot of reinforcements..."

The face on the tree calmly spoke. "However... Even if we lose, it

will not matter. Head's plan is much more than you can imagine..."

"Whoosh!"

As soon as the tree finished speaking, it shut its eyes and reverted back to a plain-looking tree, and had no more spiritual aura.

"That's true too. Our leader already has many unbelievable plans, so I should expect even more from the Head!"

The 3 Eyed Monkey was lost in its thoughts. After a while, it started climbing and made its way to Jiuli Division.

"Who's there?"

Two witch guards shouted as water-type and fire type runes appeared on their bodies. They mustered their magical energy and seemed as though they were going for the kill.

"I am a messenger from the demons!"

The 3 Eyed Monkey took in a deep breath and shouted. "I bring with me the goodwill of the demons and the latest news regarding Xia Country!"

...

Fang Mountain.

Many wooden houses were built on what was once an empty plot of land. In the middle of the buildings, there was a majestic mansion, which was Fang Yuan's intention. It stood out among the other buildings.

In this era, he had no intention to be on an equal standing with the rest. As the lord of this place, he had the responsibility to protect his people. However, having the influence meant that he could enjoy everything that was on his piece of land, and he would be stupid if he had harboured thoughts of being equal with the rest.

In his newly-built city, the most eye-catching architecture was not Fang Yuan's mansion, but a majestic looking altar in the centre

of everything.

"We can make use of the people in these divisions, but we cannot rely on them... Most importantly, we have to strengthen ourselves!"

Fang Yuan brought Wei along with him as he patrolled in the vicinity.

"Firstly... we need to impose a hierarchy on the 100 slaves that were brought here. Their rights would be dependent on their ranks. As long as they work hard and show their contribution, they would be promoted from being slaves to being civilians, and might even be rewarded with women!"

As he casually spoke, he paid no attention to Wei, who was beside him. In this era, everything which he just said was perfectly normal.

"If there are a hundred slaves, we will need a hundred women..."

Indeed, Wei did not get angry. Instead, she thought of other considerations. "This means that we will need to get a lot of resources!"

"Don't worry about it... What I want to buy most are children!"

Fang Yuan smiled.

"Children?"

Wei was a little confused. Old people, children and weak women were the people that would most likely die in this era. Therefore, people did not give any importance to them.

"That's right. As a single person, the lord of this place, our power is too weak! Too weak!! Therefore, it is hard to stand firm here. Your previous recommendation to shift the entire Shangyang Tribe is impractical. Therefore, I want to buy children slaves and teach them to be loyal from a young age!"

Actually, it was practical to shift the entire tribe to his new piece

of land. However, there were leaders and elders there. If they were to shift here, who would be the one making the decisions?

Fang Yuan would rather start anew and preferred not to be controlled by others.

"Once we have our own armed forces and base, we can form an organisation and slowly take over the 3 neighbouring divisions, allowing them to join our division... Although this might seem hard and impossible to be accomplished within a single generation, after many generations and reproduction, we will be able to form a new division in Fang Mountain. By then, we might be able to form a country..."

"Form a country? On a scale as large as the Xia Country?"

Wei's eyes glistened with excitement.

"Mmm, as large as Xia Country!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head, "A unified division must have a unified mindset and culture. Therefore, I have constructed this altar, making this the religion of our division. We will have to build schools in the future. Anyone from anywhere will be allowed to come here to learn from the priests and warriors."

"What do we have to pray to?"

Wei examined the altar.

The altar was constructed from soil and was 30 feet wide and 10 feet tall. Considering the ability of the people in this era, this was an impressive feat.

"We should not pray to evil ghosts, and we shall not pray to the mountains and rivers. These are too small and unworthy for our division to pray to..."

As a person from a different realm, Fang Yuan could speak with confidence. "We shall pray to the heavens and the earth, that will be enough!"

The heavens were above and the earth was below. The people dao was between both entities.

"Lord!"

At this point in time, an old man in a priest outfit came forward. "Everything is ready!"

"Mmm, let's commence the session!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head. The priests started to light fire torches and performed a mysterious-looking dance.

These few priests were actually new members of the tribe. Based on his current influence, he was still unable to convince priests to join him. This old man was similarly bought from the slave market.

Although he had invaded a division and enslaved everyone, the priests and leaders were treated differently.

They were old people and would be killed.

However, this old man had concealed himself. Furthermore, he was not a real priest but merely at the disciple level. Therefore, he had escaped death, but not Fang Yuan's eyes.

After buying him, Fang Yuan forced him into submission and turned him into his puppet.

As the leader of a place, how could Fang Yuan not have control over the religious aspect of the divisions?

# Chapter 356: Hule Division

---

"Bow!"

In front of the altar, Fang Yuan led Wei and the other slaves to pray.

The deities they prayed to were faceless and there was no need for idols or statues.

Fang Yuan's actions were systematic and well rehearsed, but his mind was going wild.

"Huff!"

A flash of fire flew up into the skies, and there was a gentle breeze.

This was the precise time when the afternoon light gave way to dusk. Just as the ceremony ended, Fang Yuan squinted towards the south and was slightly moved.

'It seems like something has changed!"

"Yuan, look!"

Wei tugged at his wrist and shook it.

"The sky..."

"Hmm?"

Fang Yuan raised his head and saw a clump of red clouds. They looked like a fantasy and were beautiful. It seemed as though they were about to fall.

"The heavens have acknowledged our offerings!"

The master of ceremonies' face was flushed, and he roared.

"This is our tribe's honour!"

"Many thanks to the heavens and earth!"

Everyone bowed once more, especially the leaders and warriors



from the other tribes. Their faces of disbelief showed that they had also been awed by the sight.

"No way!"

Seeing the amazement and joy in their eyes, Fang Yuan was speechless.

'It was all supposed to be an act...how did it become real? No! Impossible. If I had ten thousand people and led them in praying to the heavens and earth, it might have been more believable. But this is child's play, how could it be real?"

"Unless, there are other forces at work...a great shift in the south?"

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin, and pointed at the master of ceremonies.

"This is a sign from the heavens. I order you to divine the fortunes!"

"Yes my lord!"

The old man dropped his exaggerated gestures and conducted the proceedings with a greater degree of seriousness. He threw some tortoise shells into the fire and began to chant.

The heaven was circular and the earth was square. The hump of the tortoise shell represented the skies, and its flat abdomen represented the land. Thus, it was a sacred object that could connect heaven and earth, and was used for divination.

When the fire was down to its last embers, the master of ceremonies picked out the tortoise shell and read the patterns on it.

"My lord, lord of the tribes!"

The old man prostrated himself before Fang Yuan.

"According to the heavens, there will be a calamity in the south! We, on the other hand, will prosper!"

'Shit!'

Fang Yuan widened his eyes.

"Great! You have become the official master of ceremonies?"

"Yes, my great lord!"

The old man remained on the floor, his forehead to the ground. His eyes were full of tears.

"While I prayed to the heavens and earth, I felt an overwhelming radiance emanating from above, and acquired the powers of our forefathers...the all-knowing ones told me that you are our destined leader, and will lead us towards a golden age!"

"Yuan!"

"Yuan!"

"Yuan!"

All the slaves and warriors which even included the White Mountain, Black Water and Xuan Du tribesmen were cheering.

Amidst these developments, the leaders of the three tribes had terrible looks on their faces. But they managed to squeeze out smiles.

"Great Leader Yuan, we will pledge our allegiance to you. The three hundred warriors that you required will be sent to you shortly!"

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan agreed but he was slightly troubled.

'What does this mean? A pretender that became legitimate?'

.....

After the successful ritual, the people were once again in awe of the heavens, and this would lead Fang Yuan's reign to stability.

The different tribes sent three hundred men each as promised on

the second day. From this pool, one thousand men were chosen to undergo military training.

The impending military threat pressured everyone to work hard, and barbarians came from all over to join in the war effort. Thus, Fang Mountain became a hive of activity.

Fang Yuan only played a supervisory role. Micromanaging was not his style. He tasked the young lady Wei to run the show.

After all, running this little fief was but a game to him. It did not provide him with much real power.

As time passed, news from the south came in a never-ending stream.

"The Jiuli Division has raised an army of fifty thousand with Xing at its fore. They destroyed the Zhuri Division in 3 days?"

"The Xia borders are not stable. The Kuayi Division to the west, Sangjie Division to the east, and the Hule Division to the north have all revolted?"

"The demonic tribes have all risen, and are definitely major threats. However, are they only targeting the Xia?"

.....

Fang Yuan picked some blueberries and put them into his mouth. When he bit down, he tasted both sweet and sour. It was a delicious mixture of pulp and juice.

"Everything is going wrong!"

If the other territories had to deal with these external troubles, in addition to their internal conflicts, they would most certainly be torn apart.

But to Xia, it was but a tiny problem, as long as the Hidden Dragon Guards stayed out of it.

"Yuan! You're still in the mood to eat!"

Wei stomped in.

"As one of the Xia lords, you will definitely be summoned when war breaks out!"

"Yeah!"

Fang Yuan picked up a string of red berries.

"How's the training going along for our soldiers? Also...is the Greek fire ready?"

"Yes sir, everything is going according to your plan. One section will consist of five men. There will be a five-troop commander and ten-troop commander, who will be nominated by the soldiers. They will report to their ten hundred-troop commanders, who will in turn answer to us directly, all with different responsibilities.....and the Greek fire has already been tested. It can burn on water and it is extremely difficult to put it out. We need to train a team of one hundred to specialise in utilising this weapon!"

It was apparent that Wei was looking forward to trying it out.

"My lord! The Xia envoy is here!"

An attendant led the envoy in. The envoy was dressed in black, and appeared to be quite agitated. As soon as he saw Fang Yuan, he presented the bone tablet in his hand to him. Fang Yuan read it.

"Ah...so King Xi has ordered me to mobilise the troops and rendezvous with the northern army. We must defeat the Hule Division and send reinforcements to Yang City! Of course...I will be the commander-in-chief!"

In truth, the message included one strand of spiritual will from the dream masters, who had given him more information and missions.

"Although the one thousand soldiers we have are fresh out of training, we have no time left. Order them to form up, and prepare

to march off!"

Wei raised his hands and shouted.

"Mmm, I'll go too! Me too!"

"Alright, you shall go, but only as far as the Hule Division. Don't go to Yang City!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and made his decision.

.....

North of Xia.

The land was vast and flat for as far as the eye could see.

On the great plains, a tribe of about a hundred thousand was moving south.

"We, the Hule Division, were once an ally of the Xia. And yet after peace had returned to the Nine Regions, we were only given the poor lands of the northern plains for our trouble!"

"Crops cannot be cultivated here, and many of us die every winter from the cold! This is all the fault of the Xia!"

"That's right, this is why we are moving to the south, to take everything from them!"

.....

"Hehe, Great Leader Mu. Look, your people are facing the south!"

At the front of the herd, a man in black robes gave a deep laugh. His eyes stood out from his cowl like two greenish flames.

"Don't worry. Since we, the Hule Division, have agreed to the Alliance, we would not renege on our promise!"

Mu, the leader of the Hule Division, looked to be in his forties. His sideburns were slightly grey, but his complexion was a healthy pink.

"Rest assured Leader Mu. If you settle your part of the deal, the

lands to the north of Yang City will all be yours!"

The man in black robes was overjoyed.

Immediately after, Mu waved his hand and rushed forward on his steed. Another steed caught up with his, with an old man mounted on it.

"Mu...I've never doubted your decisions. But moving the whole division to the south and challenging the Xia people...it's too risky!"

"Our shaman has consulted the heavens and received blessings...what is there to worry about?"

Having said that, Mu smiled wolfishly.

"I know, whether it is the Jiuli, Xia, Sangjie or other tribes, they are all our enemies...hehe...they can give us all the lands north of Yang City, but we don't need that! We, the Hule people, were raised on horseback. The grasslands are ours!"

As an ambitious leader, he was aware of the great cultural disparity, and had no intent to submit to Xia rule. All he wanted was to maintain the status quo, to protect something very precious.

"Then why are we still moving south?"

The old man did not understand.

"How do the hunters of the grasslands hunt? They move forward relentlessly and force their prey to spend all of their energy on surviving. And when that happens, they will sweep up their prey effortlessly. This is our strategy!"

Mu bit off the cover of the leather pouch in his hand and gulped down the wine.

"We have to pillage all we can during our time in the south so that we can make it through winter on the grasslands. If we do succeed in weakening Xia this time, then we will harass them every

year. One day, I want the King of Xia to acknowledge my status as Lord of the plains!"

There was something else too, but he kept it in his heart.

Once the Hule had consolidated its power, and when the Xia had fallen into a war on multiple fronts, they would be able to build a nation. The Hule might even assimilate the culture of the central plains and lord over them!"

Although it might take a long time for Mu to achieve his dreams, he had the determination of the wolf!

"Alright!"

The old man sighed.

"I thought you had been taken in by that envoy, but it seems like you are still our greatest leader! Don't worry, your generals and the shaman are behind you!"

"Excellent!"

Mu was overcome with happiness.

"I, Mu, hereby vow that I will lead our people towards a brighter future!"

Or even become the Lord of the Nine Regions!"

Mu steeled himself.

# Chapter 357: Preparing for War

---

On the plains, the two armies of Da Xia joined forces.

"As appointed by King Xi, I am Yuan, the commander-in-chief of the northern warzones!"

Fang Yuan raised the oracle and announced pretentiously.

"I am the leader of the northern army, Tong! I pledge my loyalty to you, Lord Yuan!"

A valiant looking man along with 1,500 of his men bowed and paid respects to Fang Yuan.

"We were ambushed by Hule Division previously! This is all we have left!"

In reality, the reason the two groups could merge seamlessly and why Fang Yuan could quickly hold authority over them was because Tong was also a dream master from the Realm Alliance!

Of course, Tong was of a much lower tier compared to Fang Yuan. He just entered the Illusionary Divine stage and was just defeated in a battle, hence, he was submissive to Fang Yuan.

"There's only so few people in the entire northern army?"

Fang Yuan furrowed his eyebrows.

Secretly, he sent a message to Tong, "Within Hule Division, are there any powerful person?"

"Lord, in the entire Hule Division, not including the other tribe members, there are already ten thousands of archers... Of course, to us, these normal people are no match for us. However, their shamans are pretty powerful, there are powerful demons helping them!"

Tong sounded like he was trying to please Fang Yuan and continued, "Looks like we have to activate the whole army and send our best people in order to suppress these rebels!"



"No need! Pass down my command, we will be deploying to the frontline immediately... No! Wait! Prepare our defences first!"

"You are saying?"

Tong was shocked, "The people of Hule Division are so daring that they dare to charge into our land?"

"Furthermore, other than that, your men have already lost their willpower to fight! Let's retreat and reconsolidate them!"

Just after Fang Yuan sent his command and the 1,000 soldiers finished arranging themselves, a black line appeared on the horizon. There were thousands of cavalry soldiers shouting and charging towards them.

"D\*mn it! Another attack!"

Tong clenched his teeth at such a sight.

Obviously, Tong's badly defeated army would be conquered by this thousand plus strong cavalry.

Even the army trained by Fang Yuan was in a commotion after they saw this huge group of cavalry charging towards them.

"In ancient times, cavalries were unstoppable in the battlefield... Of course, currently, these people could not really be called cavalries, they were at most infanteers that rode horses!"

Fang Yuan easily recognised the difference with just a quick glance.

Saddles, horseshoes and such were still not invented yet. Their horse riding skills were extremely barbaric as they solely relied on the strength of their thighs. Those who were able to shoot arrows on top of the horses were the elite warriors amongst them.

Amongst this 1,000 plus men, there were at most 50 of such skilled warriors!

"Furthermore... they were not armoured! Even the horses were not armoured at all!"

Fang Yuan was very clear, if such cavalry dared to charge into the battlefield, once they hit against something, they would be smashed like eggshells! Hence, he was not bothered by them and hollered, "Prepare for war!"

"Defend!"

Wei commanded loudly.

"Defend!"

The Fang Mountain army was very disciplined. As the new soldiers saw the five-trooped commanders and ten-trooped commander were still calm and collected, the commotion quickly died down and they held their weapons tightly.

Indeed, when the 1,000 men strong cavalry saw the opposing army remained at their location, they stopped miles away from them. They then came down from their horses and began preparing their weapons for war.

Although the two sides were equally numbered, the cavalry rode on horses on their journey here, hence, they were still energetic. Naturally, they seemed like they could easily achieve victory.

Not only that, one group of hundred over cavalry soldiers left their big group and charged towards the rows of soldiers commanded by Fang Yuan.

"Woosh!"

The ten few people that led the pack shot numerous arrows towards the northern army.

More than ten long arrows flew towards Fang Yuan's army and hit a few of his soldiers. They immediately collapsed onto the floor and screamed in pain.

"There are only ten over horse archers? They must be the elites amongst the enemies' cavalry!"

Fang Yuan snorted and picked up his own large bow.

His bow was brought from Yang City. The body of the bow was very long and had a lustrous shine to it. The head of the arrow was crafted from steel while its tail was made from the tail feathers of geese. It was far more mightier looking than the bows used by the opponents!

As the horses galloped, the noise of the arrows shuffling was deafening!

The sound of the bowstring vibrating continuously was like that of a thunder! The cavalry soldiers on the opposite side fell off their horses one by one! Each shot of the arrow was extremely accurate!

After nine cavalry soldiers were shot dead, the cavalry shouted and dispersed as they returned back to their large group at the back.

"Lord, your archery is impeccable!"

As Tong watched, he clapped his hands and praised, "We have killed at least a few of their men!"

"No need for useless talk, fight!"

Fang Yuan raised his long sword and commanded, "Also, you, bring those warriors who are still brave enough to the frontline to fight!"

No matter how inexperienced Tong was, he was still a dream master. He could still defeat hundreds to thousands of enemies in a normal army.

"Yes, my Lord!"

Tong roared as he raised his weapons and charged towards the frontline with a group of soldiers.

"Kill them all!"

The two groups of armies got closer and closer. Suddenly, howls of agony could be heard from the opposite side.

"Clap! Clap!"

Dust flew everywhere as the horses trampled the earth.

Hundreds of horses were freed from their halters. After they were viciously whipped, the leading horse led the herd of horses towards the northern army. Their strength was unstoppable, it was like a mighty flood!

"Great!"

Fang Yuan could not help but to clap his hands at such a sight.

The horses were no longer protected and most of their cavalry soldiers were either severely injured or had died. By using the horses as a direct formation that charged towards them, once such a formation was defeated, Fang Yuan's army would immediately emerge victorious!

Such a formation was similar to military tactics recorded in history, particularly Tian Dan's Fire Cattle Columns and South Asia's elephant cavalry!

"Sadly... their attempt was pathetic!"

Fang Yuan waved his arms and instructed, "Bring on the fire-spitting soldiers!"

"Yes, my Lord!"

100 soldiers carrying wooden tubes came forward and as they pressed the trigger, large amounts of flames were spat out.

Greek fire! Liquid fire! The hidden weapon of the ancient Byzantine people was displayed for the first time in this realm!

"Swoosh! Swwwwooosshh!"

The horses neighed and scattered away messily.

The glow of the fire, the loud noises and the burning flames made the horses uncomfortable and panicky.

Furthermore, these ancient horses were not as mature as horses used in wars in the future. They were not tamed and were easily

disturbed, they could not remain calm in all sorts of situations.

As the horses were terrified, not a single horse dared to continue charging towards the flames. Most of them fled away to the sides and some even galloped back directly towards the front of Hule Division's army.

"Kill them all!"

The people of Hule Division were not stupid, they immediately commanded their soldiers to utilise all their weapons.

Bows, arrows, copper swords, dagger-axes, et cetera... they wielded all sorts of weapons as they commanded their horses.

However, the horses had already lost their sanity after being scared by the flames. They charged forward crazily with great momentum and inertia, wreaking havoc all over the battlefield. Blood and flesh splattered everywhere, it could not even be discerned whether they were from humans or horses.

"Charge!"

Fang Yuan naturally did not let such an amazing opportunity slip, he immediately commanded his army to charge forward. The 100 soldiers who carried the wooden tubes seared anyone they came across even as they tried to escape.

"Kill them all!"

In the army, five to ten soldiers formed a section which viciously murdered the Hule soldiers.

Compared to the Hule Division, their soldiers were scattered all over the place. Each of their soldiers fought alone bravely, the difference in militant skills between the two sides was evident.

"After all, this is still the barbaric period and their soldiers valued bravery. But, that's useless...! Times are changing, if they don't keep up with the trend, they can only be left behind mercilessly!" Fang Yuan thought as he sighed.

Fang Yuan then grabbed his iron sword tightly and strode forward.

The enemies' soldiers were mostly defeated, it was now the time for Fang Yuan to strike!

"Die!"

Opposite him, a few shamans chanted as they shook the blood-red coloured spiritual drums with their hands.

An unpleasant gust of air swept across the corpses on the floor. Blood and water gathered and formed monsters immediately. These monsters rampaged all over the battlefield.

"Kill them all!"

Fang Yuan strode forward and swung his sword. There was a fiery glow that sparkled on his forehead, in the area above his brows.

"Wuuuu! Wuuuuu!"

These bloody beasts collapsed at once and turned into black blood. Fang Yuan continued forward and arrived in front of the shamans.

"Protect the shamans!"

A few soldiers from the Hule Division shouted. However, under Fang Yuan's swords, they were severed into two pieces.

"Leader Mu would seek vengeance for us!"

Two of the young looking shamans stared at Fang Yuan with extreme enmity and hatred, as though they wanted to bite Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not hesitate and annihilated them with his sword.

"The shamans have died!"

Seeing such, the Hule Division soldiers who were still defiantly resisting just now immediately fell apart. They fought against each

other for the horses and began fleeing away.

"No need to chase them!!!"

Fang Yuan immediately ordered, "Clean up the battlefield, set up the tents, build up the defences and prepare for the big war!"

"Lord? What you meant is...?"

Tong came over to stood beside Fang Yuan. Although his body was stained with blood, his expression seemed happy.

"Their frontline soldiers have already arrived here, their main body will definitely reach here in two days!"

Fang Yuan shook his head slowly, "If they know we have thousands of people, what will they do?"

"Of course they would destroy this remaining strength of ours! From then on, the north of Da Xia would be free rein to them! They would then charge towards Yang City!"

"Hence... we will be preparing for war right here!"

Fang Yuan directly commanded, "At least we still possess some firsthand advantage here. We can dig more trenches, store more food, build our earth walls higher..."

"1,000 against 10,000?"

Tong was speechless, he rolled his eyes and continued, "Are you confident?"

"No, it's 2,500 against 9000!"

Fang Yuan corrected Tong's mistake and replied, "Unless you think you still can escape?"

"Haha! Great, I will take this gamble with you then!"

If it was any other normal general, he would not be able to convince a subordinate he just newly met even if he was extremely charming or had an impressive character, especially to one that almost died just moments ago.

However, Tong was not any normal person too! As a dream master, even if the army was fully defeated, there was still a chance for him to escape.

Furthermore, dying in this realm was like losing in a round, it was nothing much actually.

Two days later.

Near 10,000 cavalry soldiers charged to the battlefield and saw numerous structures made out of earth. There were even trenches that surrounded the entire area.



# Chapter 358: Ambushing the Campsite

---

Thick smoke filled the air.

Around 10,000 soldiers surrounded the tiny city made from earth. They had already tried to invade for 3 days but to no avail.

"Mu has instructed that the first person who can successfully scale and infiltrate the walls will be promoted to a commoner, followed by a promotion to a chief. As a chief, you will receive 100 slaves as a reward!"

A cavalry unit galloped about, spreading the news to the army.

It was not worth it for the chiefs to risk their lives invading the city. However, to the commoners and slaves, it was a chance for them to change their lives. With that, they were encouraged once more as they attempted another attack.

"Fire!"

On the walls, a sharp voice was heard as arrows flew towards the invading soldiers.

"Chi! Chi!"

Blood spewed everywhere and the commoners without armour fell to the ground. Some of them were even trampled to death by their own fellow soldiers!

During the construction of the earth wall, Fang Yuan had included the design of a fort to ensure that from whichever direction the enemy attacked from, they would be in the line of fire. Coupled with the fact that these invaders had almost no defences, it was just a simple massacre.

"Don't be afraid! Let's charge!"

Of course, this realm was different from what Fang Yuan had imagined it to be.

A few exclamations were heard as 10 strong warriors stood

together, waving the wooden shield in their hands. They were exceptionally nimble and avoided the arrows. In no time, they arrived at the foot of the wall and started their ascent.

"Burn them!"

These were the elite warriors of Hule Division. As soon as they scaled the walls, they raised their knives and sliced haphazardly. Normal soldiers could not even come close to them.

Wei shouted a command as the soldiers trained in Greek fire rushed forward and shot out flames from their tubes.

No matter how skilled the warriors were, against fire, they still turned into a burning inferno and were pushed down the city walls as they cried in pain.

"Ah... Shamans, quickly bless us!"

Beneath them, a daring shaman risked himself and chanted a few curses. With that, he summoned a stream of water.

"Splash!"

Unfortunately for them, the Greek fire floated on the water and continued to rage on mercilessly with no signs of weakening.

A few other warriors attempted to use witchcraft to infiltrate the walls. However, they were quickly spotted by the soldiers of Tong and Fang Yuan and were killed.

After the last few burning men fell from the city walls, the motivated soldiers of Hule Division started to feel discouraged and retreated.

"D\*mn it!"

Seeing this, Mu exclaimed. "Capture those who ran the fastest. Regardless if he is a chief or a commoner, kill him!"

"Leader Mu... Please spare me!"

"Leader Mu... No!"

After a few cries, over 10 heads fell to the ground and the remaining soldiers shuddered in fear.

Mu nodded his head, he then instructed the nearby soldiers to clean up the mess and return to their camps to rest.

"D\*mn it... when did Xia Country have such a heavenly fire and such soldiers?"

After 3 days, over 2,000 soldiers died. If not for the reinforcements, the Hule Division would be in an even more dire state.

Not just that, many of the chiefs were no longer willing to fight for the war and wanted to leave to pillage other divisions.

"How would these stupid people know? If we do not wipe out the last army of Xia Country in the North, if we abruptly enter like that, we will be ambushed on both sides!"

Mu gazed at the blood-stained ground and appeared depressed.

At this stage, it was already impossible for him to retreat his forces.

There was no room for a coward to lead on the plains! If he were to retreat, someone might overthrow him on his way back!

"Get Hei here!"

After a long while, he finally called for a man in black robes.

"Greetings, my noble Leader Mu!"

The man in black let out a weird laughter.

"Do you know how to deal with that liquid fire?" Mu enquired.

"Naturally... The reason for the shamans' failure was because they had used the wrong method and there were too few of them..."

The voice of the man in black sounded a little dry. "Therefore, in order to deal with the group of fire-sprayers, we need to send all

the shamans we have... However, both you and I are aware that they also have their highly skilled people. If our group of shamans go too close, they would be ambushed as well!"

Mu bit his lips.

He was aware that the general, Yuan, was the one who killed Wu Zhiqi!

Such a person was surely a powerful and highly-skilled warrior. If he were to make his way into the group of shamans, the result would be too painful to imagine.

"What else can we do?"

Mu raised his eyebrows.

"My noble Leader Mu, if you are willing to wait for a little longer, my reinforcements will be here in no time!"

The man in black bowed and reported.

"I'll have to wait a little longer?"

Mu clenched his teeth as though he was about to laugh.

He knew what the demons were preparing. Rather than getting help from afar, he should just attack Yang City directly!

After all, only Hule Division was involved in the fighting up in the North.

Furthermore, if the two parties were to result in casualties, some other parties would get to benefit.

...

"It's been three days. That's about it!"

On the walls made of earth, Fang Yuan stood with Tong and was filled with emotions.

"The enemy has attempted to invade for 3 days straight and have tired themselves out. Together with the high casualty rate, I'm sure their morale will be extremely low by now...."

Most of the soldiers were simple-minded and brute and had no thoughts about getting organised. Therefore, they were not comparable to the soldiers of Xia Country.

Previously, they were weak and only got the upper hand from executing an ambush.

As soon as everything was prepared, their weaknesses were showing.

"Pass the order to prepare for a counter-attack!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands.

"Yes!"

Tong bowed respectfully and went down the wall.

If it was 3 days ago, they would be crazy to use their almost 3,000-men strong army to attack Hule Division's 10,000-soldier strong army.

There were no highly skilled people among the enemy. However, even a dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would find it troublesome if trapped among the shamans.

However, the situation was different now.

The enemy was now fatigued and most of their highly skilled warriors were killed. They had a chance to counter-attack.

'Who would've thought... this lord is very well-versed in the art of war!'

Tong thought to himself as he felt more respect for Fang Yuan.

It was nightfall.

Dark clouds covered the moon and the stars twinkled dimly.

A layer of fog appeared across the battlefield, engulfing it.

A part of the wall was being destroyed and rows of soldiers silently walked out.

In front of them was Fang Yuan, Tong, Wei and a group of highly-skilled warriors who were adept at riding horses.

"We must succeed in tonight's ambush! Kill!"

Fang Yuan shouted and rushed forward.

At the opposing end, in the camp of Hule Division.

Hule Division was clueless as to how to properly pitch their tents in formation. They treated it like a normal plain and casually pitched their tents. After 3 days of intense fighting, they could finally rest. They were tired to the extent that nothing would be able to wake them up.

"Kill!"

Fang Yuan shouted and ran into their territory. From his horse, he fired a few arrows, killing a few commoners.

Within minutes, the soldiers rushed into the tents. They started to kill anyone that they saw and burnt down any tent they came across. After a few moments, hundreds of soldiers arrived at the scene as well and everything was out of control.

"Is the enemy ambushing us at night?"

Mu sat up from his bed and quickly rushed out of his tent. He could see flames everywhere and chaos in the campsite. "Chiefs, hurry up and appease the commoners. The shaman group, go forth and stop the chaos!"

The enemy only had a thousand soldiers and therefore, only a hundred would be capable of creating this ambush! It was impossible for them to create such a huge commotion. The only other explanation was that their commoners were contributing to the chaos as well.

There was no other choice but to use brute force to keep the commoners under control.

"Capture and kill Leader Mu! Destroy Hule Division!"

Amidst a few shouts, 10 soldiers on horse spotted the golden tent and made their way towards it.

"Protect Leader Mu!"

A few shamans went ahead and chanted a few curses.

"Die!"

Flames appeared in Fang Yuan's eyes. The fire-type sword essence gathered in his eyes, giving his eyebrows a brilliant red hue. Two streaks of flame shot out from his eyes.

"Chi!"

The flames flickered and burned, nullifying the witchcraft spells.

"Haha... die!"

He whipped his horse, making it gallop forward. Soon after, he arrived at the golden tent as well. Fang Yuan was the epitome of a highly-skilled martial artist. With the illusionary shadow of a sword in his hands, Fang Yuan waved them and the heads of the two shamen flew up high into the sky.

"Let's go!"

Mu was in a shock and could only think about leaving.

"It's Yuan!"

The man in black was even more stunned and his voice changed. "You have disrupted my plans. You deserve to die!"

"You have demonic energy around you?"

Fang Yuan was stunned for a moment. Shortly after, he pulled his bow, aimed at the retreating Mu and fired an arrow.

"Whoosh!"

The arrow had a little flame on its tip. It pierced through two other guards before finally piercing through Mu's back.

"I..."

Mu had a face of disbelief, "I am the leader of the plains. How can I die here?"

Fang Yuan had already done something to the arrow as a fiery force started to burn Mu's insides. No one could save him and in a few moments, he fell to the ground, dead.

"Leader Mu is dead! Leader Mu is dead!"

The last resisting force of Hule Division was astonished at this scene and broke down, fleeing as fast as they could.

"Don't you run!"

Fang Yuan identified the man in black and gave chase, running out of the campsite.

"Hmph!"

With the wave of his hands, a hurricane appeared. The illusionary shadow of a sword appeared in the hurricane and flew towards the man in black robes.

The man in black fell to the ground and groaned in pain. Just as it was about to use its demonic spells to escape, it noticed a small green sword floating in mid-air. The sword had a shockingly powerful sword essence and the man in black no longer dared to move.

"Previously, it is a war among humans and therefore, I had my reservations. As for you... Hehe..."

Fang Yuan stripped the black robe off, revealing a shivering weasel.

"A dream master from the Hidden Dragon Guards? Why is your cultivation so low?"

It was obvious that this weasel had not yet attained the Illusionary Divine stage.

"I am only a small demon. Please spare my life!"



The weasel started to beg.

It was only a dream master in the Dream-building stage and was barely qualified to dream-traverse. If he were to die, his own body would be severely injured and the backlash he would experience would be much worse compared to a dream master in the Illusionary Divine stage. It was a life and death situation.

"What a pity... I know that you have been a sacrificial pawn all along. What value will you even have?"

Fang Yuan sighed. The green Modest Wind Sword seemed to understand its master's intention. With a strike, the weasel disintegrated into dust. At that moment, a True Spirit appeared and was being chased out of the realm.

"This True Spirit..."

He gazed towards the horizon. 'It seems like something about this was mentioned in Sage Changli's inheritance...'

# Chapter 359: Swelling Earth

---

The sky became lit.

The campsite of Hule Division was a big mess.

The soldiers emerged from the walls of earth as they guarded the fugitives, swept the battlefield for survivors and looted from the campsite.

"Lord..."

Tong's face was filled with happiness as soon as he saw Fang Yuan making his way over. Without hesitation, he presented a piece of oracle bone. "After predictions, it is confirmed that we have killed over 3,000 soldiers. We have actually only killed 1,000, but the other 2,000 were killings among themselves during the chaos. We have captured 4,000 of them, taken possession of 5,000 weapons. The rations and bronze are still unaccounted for. In addition, we have more than 2,000 horses now!"

"That's not too bad!"

Deep down, Fang Yuan knew that the credit for his victory and rewards belonged to the internal chaos in Hule Division.

"After this, all the elite soldiers in Hule Division are wiped out. With this piece of news, people would return to the North to continue living in the plains. We have finally settled the mess in the North!"

Fang Yuan casually added. "I want at least half of all that we have looted. Split the remaining half as you wish, but don't forget the contribution to Yang City! Hmm, I want more horses as well!"

With these horses, Fang Yuan could train up his cavalry units for the future.

Based on the method of training which he adopted, the cavalry which he would train up would surely be stronger than that of the

Hule Division.

"Of course!"

Tong had no intention to vie for the rewards and respectfully replied.

"Since all of this is over, we shall rest for one day before heading to Yang City to provide our assistance!"

Fang Yuan's eyes widened. "Wei, you shall escort our loot back!"

"Hmph!"

The young woman heaved a heavy breath and agreed. She knew that she could not go against Yuan's orders and could only clench her teeth and carry out his orders.

...

Yang City.

The capital of Xia Country was now in a desolate state.

With the Jiuli Division army attacking and the assistance from the divisions from the East and West, they were formidable. Under the leadership of Xing, they killed their way to the vicinity of Yang City.

"Kill them! Kill all these Xia people to take revenge for the people of Jiuli!"

In one of the divisions, Xing roared as the blood inscriptions on his body glowed dimly. He waved his axe about and wielded a huge shield. Ferociously, he struck at the head of another division's leader.

"Ah... You cannot kill me! I am..."

This division leader was a dream master from the Realm Alliance. However, he could not finish his sentence as his expression turned to one of fear. "Die!"

"Rumble!"

Above him, many small array flags appeared, forming an array. It was a killer array of a dream array master!

"Hmph... You are one of those mutants!"

Xing grinned from ear to ear. "It's a pity... Who would even care about such a small spell?"

"How dare you call my Evil 7 Extremes Array a small spell?"

The dream master was infuriated. "7 Evil Ghost Generals, kill!"

"Hehe!"

"Keke!"

From all directions, armoured ghost generals and soldiers emerged from a layer of fog. They had sinister smiles on their faces and fangs poked out of their mouths, dripping blood. Together, they floated towards Xing.

"You are the one to die!"

Xing exclaimed as the illusionary figure of a giant appeared behind him. The figure stretched out its huge hands and slammed down.

"Pa!"

It was as though the hand was slapping a fly. With that, the glow from the array dimmed and blood trickled from the nose of the dream master. The dream master took a few steps backwards; it was evident that he had just experienced a backlash.

Xing continued to advance and sliced his axe forward.

"Bang!"

As the axe made its way down, the dream master immediately became a bloodied mess and died in a gruesome fashion.

"Leader... Our leader is dead!"

As soon as the people of the division witnessed the death of their leader, they immediately ran for their lives.

"Haha... Go forth! Kill their men and capture their women. Kill those children taller than the length of a bronze sword, and keep the remaining as slaves!"

As Xing gave his command, the warriors behind him let out bloodshot eyes. However, these were all understandable.

If they didn't do this, how else could they vent out their years of hatred for the people of Xia?

With this, the division started to undergo destruction.

Outside the division, a person was witnessing everything. A slit appeared on his forehead, revealing a third eye.

'Xing is becoming too... scary! The peak of the Ultimate Witch Body would allow one to nullify most types of spells and would grant one immense power like a godly demon. This would make one comparable to a True Divine martial artist in the main world... To be able to kill a dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage in one move would mean that he must be as powerful as Army Leader Chi years ago!'

"Monkey!"

Xing walked out with flames of passion burning in his eyes. "I will be able to see the walls of Yang City in another day. Where are your promised allies?"

"This..."

This monkey was naturally the 3 Eyed Monkey. After being questioned, he became slightly embarrassed. "Xing... Your army is advancing too quickly. The Sangjie and Kuayi Divisions from the East and West have already started to make their way, but they are facing resistance from the other divisions. They will need another 10 days before they can arrive at Yang City... As for the Hule Division in the North, they are already defeated!"

"Bunch of useless people!"

Xing scoffed and let out a heavy breath. "This is especially so for Hule Division. Who was the one who defeated them?"

"It's the lord of Xia Country - Yuan! The hero who killed Wu Zhiqi!"

As the monkey replied, it shuddered in fear at the thought of it.

Only he knew the true meaning behind what he had just said.

"He killed Wu Zhiqi?"

Xing smiled. "In a few days, I shall personally behead him! Hopefully, he will not be as useless as the other leaders to die in a single move of mine..."

"Yes! Yes of course!"

The monkey was a little sceptical. However, he quickly composed himself. "Although we cannot depend on the other 3 divisions, you can trust that the demons are already taking action to cause floods in Xia Country and especially so for Yang City. You will be able to witness our friendship and power."

"Very well, I shall look forward to it!"

Xing smiled widely and replied. As soon as the monkey left, his expression turned to a cold one. "Another mutant! All demons in this world are mutants! They are the ones who had harmed our people. Only the people of Jiuli Division are the true owners of this world. This is predicted by the priests and will never be wrong!"

"Yang City is also occupied by a bunch of mutants. Since I can still make use of the demons, I shall do so. Otherwise..."

...

Within the palace in Yang City.

"King Xi, Xing had already destroyed Tianlan Division with 50,000 soldiers. He will be able to arrive at our city walls in a day!"

"King Xi, the water demons have been wreaking havoc for the

past few days and have destroyed many things. As of now, they are hidden in Yang River, which is next to Yang City..."

On the throne, Xi sat calmly like a piece of rock.

His composure brought peace to those who were worried within the tense atmosphere of the hall.

"Reporting!"

At this point in time, another priest requested to see the king. "King Xi, we have news from the North. Tong has combined forces with Yuan and they have defeated Hule Division. They are now rushing back!"

"That's great!"

Hearing this news, Xi finally bit his lips. "How many soldiers do we have left in Yang City?"

"Our people have caught wind of news that Jiuli is invading us. They have loyally pledged their lives to us. If we use the soldiers in the reserves, we can rack up 30,000 armed soldiers!"

One of the ministers stood out and reported. "However, the Yang River is overflowing! That is a more pressing problem!"

"This is easy to resolve. Ju!"

Xi calmly spoke. "Retrieve the Swelling Earth and stop the disaster!"

"Yes, King!"

Ju dismissed himself, walked out of the main hall and arrived at a spot in the palace. "The King has instructed me to retrieve the Swelling Earth!"

The guard of the treasury was also a dream master and was long aware of the instructions. With an outstretched hand, he disabled the seal on the treasury.

Ju entered the treasury and noticed spiritual glows everywhere.

'All the treasures of the Xia Empire is here. It's a pity... none of these can be brought out!'

Xia Country ruled over the 9 Regions and therefore had many treasures.

However, those spiritual treasures which could turn illusionary and be brought out of the realm were only for the Sage and the dream masters in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. How could they enjoy these treasures? Even if they could get their hands on these treasures, they would not have enough karma to bring them away!

Ju arrived at a corner of the treasury. On an elevated platform, a bunch of black soil was wrapped in cogon grass. It appeared normal.

"Sir, please be careful. If the Swelling Earth is not contained by the cogon grass and if it were to land on the ground, it will start to expand immediately!"

Although both of them were aware of the ability of this treasure, the guard of the treasury had the responsibility. After all, there was no harm in reminding his fellow dream master.

"I know about it. This treasure has the essence of the heaven and is full of life. In past years, the Sage has used it for himself to manage the floods as well!"

Ju bit his lip and carefully held the bag of Swelling Earth in his hands. "Of course, this treasure has its own limit as well. It can only expand to 800 feet wide before coming to a halt! This is only a temporary measure to manage the flood!"

With that, he carried the Swelling Earth and brought it to the top of the city wall of Yang City.

"Sir, look!"

Beneath them, the Yang River surged as water crashed onto the city walls. It was a threatening scene to behold.



Furthermore, within the murky waters of the river, there were many black silhouettes.

"Go!"

Ju mustered his magical energy and scattered the Swelling Earth. With that, the soil fell into the river.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

The ground shook. Within a few moments, the Swelling Earth started to expand and blocked the mouth of the river. However, it continued to grow.

Although the water was gushing with might and the water level was rising continuously, it was finally blocked.

The soldiers on the city wall witnessed this scene and cheers erupted.

However, Ju silently sighed to himself. 'We can only temporarily keep the demons at bay. However, if the water erupts from it in the near future, the consequences would be worse! What is Elder Xi Chen thinking?'

Of course, it was a sin to doubt his leader in such a tumultuous period.

Ju forcefully wiped this thought of his from his mind!

"Elder Xi Chen is the disciple of Sage and is powerful. He will have his own arrangements. Why do I have to care so much? I just have to follow the plan..."

"After all... this world is manipulated by Sage. Who would dare to show disrespect here?" Ju mumbled to himself.

If things were to fall out of control, Sages would get involved to correct it!

If that was the case, what do they have to fear?

Thinking about how Elder Xi Chen could keep his composure

amidst all the chaos, Ju felt impressed and was full of admiration for him. "This is what the mind of a powerful being can do!"

# Chapter 360: The Big War

---

"We've finally arrived!"

Fang Yuan could not help but sigh as he saw the city walls of Yang City.

Immediately, the Swelling Earth flourishing on the riverbanks caught Fang Yuan's attention.

"This is Swelling Earth? Amazing indeed!"

"Lor... Lord!"

Tong's teeth were chattering. As they were rushing for time, only the two of them made use of their techniques to arrive so quickly.

As Tong thought about the trouble ahead of them, he felt anxious and uneasy.

"50,000 tribe members from Jiuli Division and a Xing that's comparable to an army leader! If we brought along that few thousand men of ours, they would surely die to them!"

Fang Yuan gestured, "By leaving the entire army there, they can continue to suppress the north... That said, you dare to not come here?"

"... I dare not!"

Tong could only force a smile and reply him.

After all, Tong was a dream master in the Realm Alliance. If he did not want to be killed after he returned to Da Qian, he could only obediently come to Yang City and await his next order even if he knew his chances of survival would be very low.

"Another idiot blinded by 'righteousness'!" Fang Yuan thought of Tong's plight with disdain. Moments later, he felt fearful.

Although Fang Yuan was confident he could survive in this realm, he still had to enter this realm even though he knew this

realm was extremely dangerous!

Of course, if this was not a dream realm, Fang Yuan would not have willingly chosen to face such dangers. He would even rather commit treason than willingly put himself in such dangers in the real world.

Royal Palace.

"Greetings, King Xi!"

Fang Yuan and Tong paid their respects to Elder Xi Chen.

"Yuan, Tong... it's great that you all could settle the Hule Division in the north!"

Xi was still solemn and stern as always, he continued, "Just that I can only reward the two of you after we defeat the Jiuli Division! Now, follow me to fight them!"

Xi stood up immediately after he finished speaking. He was donned in a body armour.

"Yes, your Majesty!"

Fang Yuan and Tong took a step back and joined the rest of the ministers and lords. They then gathered at the top of the heavily guarded city walls of Yang City.

"Revenge!"

"Revenge!"

"Revenge!"

The Jiuli Division army was already near the city walls. The 50,000 witches were like a black coloured torrent and were shouting loudly, their voices spreading far and wide. However, the ministers on top of the city walls remained unfazed.

"This is..."

The dream masters and priests saw much more.

As Fang Yuan surveyed the group of Jiuli Division army, he saw

black coloured and red coloured vapours rising to the sky above their heads. It seemed as though there were immense hatred and cursings coming from them.

"The hatred from an entire country and the cursings from an entire tribe.... This is accumulated and brewed over hundreds of years..."

Fang Yuan could see even more as the corner of his eyes twitched and his Fiery Eyes shined brightly.

The black and red vapours were even denser and they mixed together. There was even a tinge of purple in it!

"The heavenly trend?!"

The purple colour disappeared in an instant. Even though Fang Yuan only caught a few glimpses of it, his eyes began to hurt and were on the verge of tears.

He was greatly enlightened, "That's it! In this realm, even though the Xia Tribe is doing very well, they will still not be favoured as much by the heavens!"

"Furthermore, if the Sage did not enter this realm last time, Jiuli Division would have been the ones leading the people dao!"

"Hence, although Chi was destroyed, the Jiuli Division still survived. Now, they have engaged their whole tribe to fight us and are even blessed by the heavenly trend!"

With the heavenly trend on their side, they would be protected by the heavenly energy too! If they were killed, their attacker would be punished with the wrath of the heavens and suffer tribulations! It would be truly horrifying.

Amongst the Jiuli tribe, there was an extremely muscular man. He had a dark red light glowing from him and his body was god-like. He stood forward and hollered loudly, "... The orthodox of Xia has long oppressed the tribe of Jiuli! Today, I will seek vengeance and enact punishment! Attack!"

At this stage, all the spying, peace talks and even schemes were useless. Only absolute power could suppress all!

"Kill them all!"

50,000 Jiuli tribe members roared and charged forward. The black and red coloured energies on their head combined and turned purple before falling onto their heads, blessing them.

Even dream masters felt suffocated at the sight of such mighty powers.

"Summoning the people dao!"

Xi waved his hands coldly and a picture scroll appeared from thin air. It first depicted the scenes of ancestors engaging in slash-and-burn agriculture, their harsh lives and numerous other scenes of civilisation starting.

Afterwards, the souls of those outstanding humans in the people dao formed a long river stream.

This was the people dao torrent! Once it appeared, the Xia Tribe were boosted by their tribal energy. Similarly, it even affected the heavens as they too gained purple-coloured fate energy.

"People dao is part of the heavenly dao. Xia Tribe has the 9 cauldrons that could suppress fate energy and offset the heavenly trend's boost on Jiuli Division..... The Xia Tribe may even have a slight advantage!" Fang Yuan contemplated as he watched.

"Fight!"

Xi bawled loudly.

"Fight!"

"Fight!"

The warriors of Xia Tribe roared towards the skies.

Even though they were the tribe with the best standards of living in the 9 Regions, they did not lose their bravery and righteousness!

"Bang!"

Under the loud noises, the two groups of armies clashed together.

Although the soldiers of Jiuli Division were brave, they were disadvantaged by their weapons and the city walls. Immediately, there was a stalemate. Xia Country's city walls became a meat grinder that was continuously taking away lives from the two sides.

"Kill them all!"

Xing hollered and a colossal giant emerged from behind him. With a punch, he rushed towards the city walls. In that instant, the realm tremored!

That was a punch from the witch! It was comparable to a True Divine! It could not be dodged! Almost no one could block it!

If it landed on the city walls, the walls would have definitely given way.

"Xing!"

On top of the city walls, a sun appeared behind Elder Xi Chen's back. As its corona extended, its spiritual territory spread across the area.

"Dream masters at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage can actualise spiritual lands and wield power over the land! Furthermore... they can create spirituality and even actualise a tribe, but not humans..." Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan stared intently at this scene.

Such high-levelled battles were extremely uncommon.

"Roar!"

The sun shined brightly high in the sky.

Under the corona's territory, it was as though the entire city walls were blessed. The Xia Tribe soldiers standing on it were

energised while the Jiuli soldiers were badly scorched and injured.

Furthermore, in front of the city gates, two 100 feet tall beasts emerged from the cracks in the earth. One was in the form of a dragon while the other was in the form of a tiger and their eyes brimmed with intelligence. They then roared loudly as they pounced towards the punching giant.

"Bang!"

A loud bang could be heard and the tiger and dragon erupted. Large amounts of rocks scattered down and a bloody scent filled the air. The punching giant also disappeared without a trace left.

"The head of Xia Tribe, Xi?!"

As Xing watched, a bloodthirsty glow emitted from his eyes, it was as though he had found his most wanted prey. He ferociously sprang forward so quickly as though he travelled through time and arrived below the city walls in two steps.

Xing raised his giant axe high up and dared, "I dare you to come down and fight!"

"Why would I dare not?"

Xi leapt down lightly and a long sword appeared on his hand.

The sword was straight and well built while its blade had four sides to it. One side was carved with the sun, the moon and the stars. Another side was carved with mountains, rivers, trees and grass. Another side was inscribed with agricultural techniques. The last side was inscribed with military tactics to rule the world. The sword had a mighty meaning to it and was a heavenly sword!

"Amazing sword!" Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan's eyes sparkled at the sight of the sword as he thought, "People dao fate energy is condensed on this sword, even if I reach the 7th Tier, my magical soldiers may not even be comparable to this!"



"Kill them all!"

Xing swung his axe as he shouted.

The axe swung wildly. Although it was barbaric, it was filled with an indescribable intrinsicity, it was as though it could create a world.

Xi Chen parried with his sword.

"Clang!"

An intense vibration spread across immediately. The eardrums of the soldiers in the nearby 100 feet radius ruptured at once and they collapsed onto the floor screaming in pain.

A 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master could actualise a group of beasts and utilise the power of its spiritual territory, it was natural that he could strengthen his body!

Although Xi rarely demonstrated his skills, his body still contained numerous divine techniques. Additionally, with the blessings from the spiritual land, his body was comparable to a martial artist Divine Body!

"Haha! Good, again!"

The inscriptions that covered Xing's entire body were like metal armour. His voice was filled with excitement as they were both equally matched, he continued, "You are the king of Xia Tribe, I will kill you fair and square! I will take away your everything!"

"Breach the city walls and massacre Yang City!"

As the two powerful leaders fought, large numbers of black shadows appeared outside Yang City which turned into numerous kinds of demons. Especially inside the waters, the black shadows repeatedly attacked the seal on the Swelling Earth.

"Quickly suppress them!"

Ju stood high above and ordered all the dream masters, officials and priests of Xia Tribe to fight against the demons and those who

possessed divine techniques in Jiuli Division.

Fang Yuan fought dutifully. As he was a dream master at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage, he picked a similarly powerful demon, a black water dragon, to fight against. He fought against the demon slowly and used his sword spirit from time to time.

The black water dragon was one of the more skilled ones amongst the Hidden Dragon Guards. Although it cultivated for many years, it was no match for Fang Yuan's 3 Talents Sword Array's sword spirits. Thus, Fang Yuan could still observe the battlefield while fighting against it.

"The two sides are evenly matched..."

After scanning the surrounding with his spiritual will, Fang Yuan thought to himself, "Just that... the Hidden Dragon Guards have placed a powerful being leader into this realm. After the Realm Alliance was alerted to it, we have also sent more members here as reinforcements. Now we just have to wait and see who will make the first move!"

A powerful being's patience should not be underestimated.

In order to emerge victorious, it was nothing for them to lose tens of thousands of lives in Yang City!

"However... in terms of contributions to people dao, fate energy and their intrinsic qualities, Xia Tribe is still way ahead of Jiuli Tribe! Even if Xia Tribe is defeated this time around, there will still be chances for them to rise again. Whereas if Jiuli Division is defeated this time around, their entire tribe would be doomed!" Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan moved his spiritual will.

Indeed, moments later, the 9 cauldrons in the royal palace resonated and turned into 9 powerful beams of golden light. They soared through the skies and dug down to the earth before joining the battle.

"Bang! Bang!"

Although Xing had already cultivated his witchcraft dao Divine Body, he could not withstand the 9 cauldrons which suppressed people dao fate energy. Xing kept moving backwards while squeaking noises could be heard from his body.

"The Jiuli has been defeated! Us Xia Tribe form the people dao with our 9 cauldrons and obtain fate energy by ourselves!"

Xi Chen's voice could still be heard, "Today... I will use the 9 cauldrons to cultivate that last resistance of yours!"

As he spoke, flames erupted from the 9 cauldrons and seared Xing's Divine Body.

"Boom!"

It was as though hot oil just touched water. Originally, the inscriptions on Xing's body were impenetrable. But now, he could only scream bloody murder as the flames of the people dao seared him. Streaks of black vapour appeared as the inscriptions on his body disintegrated continuously.

# Chapter 361: Resurrection

---

"Flaming!"

The divine flames of people dao had a golden radiance to it. It was as though it sang praises to the culture and the magnificence of the civilisation. It symbolised the wishes of the humans and was filled with hope and beauty.

However, the divine flames were Xing's witchcraft dao Divine Body's nemesis! The moment the flames touched his body, the spiritual inscriptions on his body disintegrated immediately!

"Holy!"

Numerous souls of past heroes appeared and surrounded Xi. They began chanting and shined brightly as though Xi was a god.

Xi's eyes glistened. He raised his heavenly sword and sliced towards Xing's neck!

"Sigh....."

A low pitched sigh could be heard rumbling. An earthquake erupted and a gigantic red coloured snake rose from the cracks on the ground.

The gigantic snake's body was totally red. It had a human face, a snake body and only one eye. When its snake-like eye was shut, the entire skies turned dark at once; once the snake opened its eye, the skies were bright again at once, as though the sun was red and shining brightly!

"Xi Chen!"

The snake roared and its sun-like radiance shined on Xi's body.

"Back off!"

After the snake appeared, the ground was tattered and in pieces. Even parts of the city walls of Yang City were destroyed.

Both the armies of Xia Tribe and Jiuli Tribe suffered from the natural disaster as many of their soldiers were buried under piles of rocks and stones.

"This is the... Torch Dragon?"

Fang Yuan was surrounded by his sword essences. A green coloured beam of light flew out and shattered a huge piece of rock in front of him. He no longer cared about the black water dragon he was fighting against and he quickly moved backwards.

It was recorded in , "...There is a god-human here with a human face and a snake's body, and he is scarlet. He has vertical eyes that are in a straight seam. When this deity closes his eyes, there is darkness. When the deity looks with his eyes, there is light. He neither eats, nor sleeps, nor breathes. The wind and the rain are at his beck and call. This deity shines his torch over the ninefold darkness. This deity is Torch Dragon!"

The giant snake that just appeared was exactly the same as the Torch Dragon.

Except, the legend of the Torch Dragon stated that it was a thousand leagues long, however, this Torch Dragon was only at most half a mile long. Nevertheless, its might was already earth-shattering.

"It has hidden well deep within the earth! Once it appears, it moves as rapidly as lightning and thunder! A possessed body cultivated by a leader of the Hidden Dragon Guards indeed!"

Evidently, the Torch Dragon was the possessed body of a powerful being at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine. Furthermore, it had cultivated for extremely long to accumulate such a terrifying power!

"Haha... Jiu Yinzi, you finally appeared!"

No one could move closer to the battle between the powerful beings. But suddenly, a rough voice could be heard.

"Huuuuuu! Huuuuuuu!"

High above the skies, the originally pristine and white clouds turned red at once. A dragon head that was spitting flames emerged from the clouds and directly blocked the Torch Dragon's radiance.

"This voice!"

Fang Yuan raised his head and saw the clouds dispersing. A 6 Headed Fiery Dragon brandished its claws and leapt down. Its target was the Torch Dragon.

"Elder Smelter! Can't believe the reinforcement sent here is him!"

As the reinforcement was a familiar person, Fang Yuan had no thoughts of going forward to acquaint each other. Instead, he moved away immediately.

Just from the reverberation formed between the battle of two powerful beings at the 7th Stage of Illusionary Divine would severely injure people! Only fools would charge forward!

"Smelter!"

The Torch Dragon and the 6 Headed Fiery Dragon coiled around each other. A sinister smile appeared on the Torch Dragon's human face as he sniggered, "You are the person I wanted to lure over!"

"What?"

Xi Chen was shocked. He utilised his spiritual will and thought of something immediately, "The Hidden Dragon Guards still have further assistance? Impossible! Our leader has already confirmed, other than Jiu Yinzi, the rest are in other realms!"

A powerful being's heart had been forged through numerous experiences, it was extremely resolute.

Even though he was flustered, his jade-like hands were still resolute as ever as he sliced Xing's neck.

"Bam!"

The witchcraft inscriptions on Xing's body were already burnt by the divine flames of people dao. Now, with a slash from a powerful being's heavenly sword, his head flew up and warm blood spewed everywhere.

"Hate! Hate! Hate!"

Although Xing was already decapitated, his body still stood still. He used his fingers and wrote the word "hate" thrice with blood.

"Kaboom!"

An ominous stream of air filled with grievances shot up the skies and absorbed the dark red clouds before returning moments later.

"I, Xing of Jiuli Tribe, sacrifice my own body for the heavens! No regrets in death! Only to seek vengeance!"

"Kaboom!"

A purple coloured lightning flashed and struck Xing's headless corpse.

A strange transformation began at once.

A pair of eyes appeared on Xing's bare chest and his belly button turned into a mouth. It then roared and its voice was that of an ancient person, "I am... back!!!"

"Kaboom!"

Dark clouds loomed and purple bolts of lightning flashed. An enormous headless apparition appeared and merged with Xing's body.

An indescribable and petrifying atmosphere loomed at once!

"This is... revival with a drop of blood? No, it's possession! This is not Xing, this is Chi!" Xi Chen exclaimed.

"Ancient survivors? Demons from outside? Die!"

The eyes on Chi's chest stared intently at Xi. He moved his right

arm and the glow of an axe struck at once.

At the same time, the nine black coloured blood dragons on his body emerged and roared. They easily broke free from the 9 Cauldrons' suppression.

"Clang!"

The axe and the sword clashed against each other and Xi moved back immediately. Cracks formed on the people dao heavenly sword at once.

"Chi is powerful indeed! He fought against the Sage before! In terms of power, he is even more powerful than Xing!"

Xi Chen's stare intensified as he continued, "Also... he seems to be boosted by tribal energy and the grievances of the heavens and earth. He is enacting punishment for the heavens and cannot be suppressed by the 9 Cauldrons!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

The headless Chi strode forward and the land tremored along, it even trampled the spiritual territory! With yet another swing of his axe, he roared, "Evil demons from outside, die! War!!!"

The moment the word "war" came out of his mouth, the atmosphere changed at once. It was as though the energy from the entire realm's wars gathered and condensed on his giant axe.

In the surrounding, scenes of wars and battles appeared which pushed away the other spiritual territories. Even the Torch Dragon and the Fiery Dragon were pushed aside.

Furthermore, a purple lightning struck down and merged with the giant axe.

"Ah! Assist me, Green Wood!"

It was the first time Xi lost his composure. He sent out a spiritual will.

"The lush green forest thrives! Even if wildfires burn it down, it



will regrow the next Spring!"

Inside the royal palace, a skinny elder in a green robe appeared. With every step he took, the surroundings turned into lush greenery that flourished luxuriantly.

"Fire from wood! Haste!"

A spiritual territory filled with greenery extended forward and complemented Xi Chen's sun. The situation was stabilised as they withstood the war energy from the battles in the 9 Regions.

"Such a pity..." Xi Chen thought.

Xi Chen watched and shook his head as he thought, "After all, this spiritual territory of mine is not purely true fire-type. If the two elders, Green Wood and Smelter, can cooperate with each other, their power would better complement each other. Sadly, the two of them hold grudges against each other and it would be impossible for them to join forces!"

"Another one!"

Army Leader Chi remained unfazed and unafraid as he strode forward into the overlapped spiritual territories.

"Die!"

Behind him, the silhouette of the 9 Regions appeared. On top of it, scenes of countless of soldiers battling were depicted. Other than the northern areas, fierce battles could be seen in the eastern, western and southern areas.

Even the overlapped spiritual territories near Chi's body were weakened.

"Chi built up himself through numerous wars. Now that the 9 Regions are in war, he is conforming to the heavenly trend!"

Green Wood's expression turned solemn and he spoke to Xi Chen, "Elder Xi Chen, it's time to use our all!"

"That's right!"

After Xi Chen agreed, all the giant trees in the spiritual territory opened their eyes and transformed into giant battle tree men. Faeries that resembled fire phoenixes also appeared and they formed a large army that charged towards Chi.

These were all faeries actualised by the two powerful beings during their spare time. They were meticulously trained and their power was comparable to Illusionary Divine dream masters. Furthermore, they could travel out of the spiritual territory alone to fight as they had their own foundation and elemental energy.

However, they were willing to sacrifice all of them now just to deplete some of Chi's strength.

As Army Leader Chi had resurrected and was boosted by the realm's war energy, even though the two powerful beings joined hands, they did not know how to defeat him.

...

At another area of the battle, the Torch Dragon was fighting against the 6 Headed Fiery Dragon. Jiu Yinzi then sneered, "Hehe... can't believe they sent three elders here! Your Realm Alliance doesn't care about or want the other realms or even Da Qian anymore?"

There were only 7 powerful being elders in the Realm Alliance. They were putting all their eggs in the same basket by sending almost half of them here!

"Three elders?!"

Far away, Fang Yuan had a similar reaction.

As there were three dream masters at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine here, it was no wonder Xi Chen was so confident.

With their power, even though army leader Chi resurrected, they could still defeat him!

"Just that..."

A curious look appeared on Fang Yuan's face as he thought, "I don't think the Hidden Dragon Guards have fully revealed all their hidden cards up their sleeve!"

When Fang Yuan killed Wu Zhiqi last time, Wu Zhiqi purposefully hid something. As the Hidden Dragon Guards had yet to utilise it now, Fang Yuan immediately knew they still had some tricks up their sleeve.

"It is too dangerous for me to go to the epicentre of the battle now... Why don't I..."

The corner of Fang Yuan's eyes glistened and he turned into a gust of wind immediately that floated out of Yang City.

...

Deep in the mountains, a loud bang was heard suddenly.

A black coloured head fell from the sky and smashed the ground violently, forming a small crater.

However, although the head was severed, there was no blood flowing from it. It was extremely strange.

"Huu..."

Moments later, it even opened its eyes.

"I am not Chi, I am Xing!"

"By sacrificing my body and my blood, I resurrected the mighty ancestor, Chi! This is enough..., I should now think for myself! Witchcraft divine technique, Revival Technique!"

A bloody glow shined from his eyes and large amounts of blood flowed down his neck which slowly formed the shape of a human. Bones, blood vessels and muscles appeared one by one.

Lastly, a gust of black air floated over and engulfed him.

Moments later, a deity-like man with a body that glowed like jade walked out of the crater. It kept caressing its face and body while

exclaiming, "Great! Although I sacrificed my flesh body, I inherited Chi's legacy! It was not in vain... Just that it's such a pity, this witchcraft divine technique was created by the Army Leader years after his death from all his grievances. Else, he could have recovered his Divine Body back then and fought for the world with Gu!"

At that moment, he closed his eyes slightly and furrowed his brows, "I have lost half its divine techniques and strength. Based on Army Leader's instructions, I need to leave immediately with the seeds of Jiuli Division to preserve our last remaining bloodline!"

Xing touched the area between his eyebrows and a red line could be partly felt.

That was the witch's vital blood, it was a gift from Chi.

Although Xing was weak now, he only needed some time before he could fully recover.

"Army Leader... you have to win!"

As Xing gazed towards Yang City, tears flowed down his face.

Suddenly, he turned around. His eyes glared viciously as he shouted, "Who's that?"

# Chapter 362: Surreptitious

---

"I thought the witches were reckless and simple-minded people. Who would have thought there would be smart ones among them that thought ahead and thought about their future?"

Fang Yuan walked out of the forest and applauded. "Don't go about looking for the priests. I have already dealt with them!"

The other dream masters hid as soon as they realised that the powerful dream masters were fighting against one another. None of them would have imagined Fang Yuan would be so daring to leave the city and enter the enemy's territory.

Therefore, Fang Yuan managed to obtain a great opportunity.

If the demise of Xing was Army Leader Chi's plan to revive, what would it mean for Xing to become a leader?

"Is the ability to split one's head and body a witchcraft ability?"

Fang Yuan waved his hands and 4 magical swords appeared. Harnessing the power of water, fire, wind and thunder, he quickly captured Xing within.

"Your original form is indeed powerful. However, in order to let Chi revive, you had to sacrifice a huge amount of energy and use up your magical bloodline to execute the revival technique. How much do you have left in you?"

Without hesitation, he released his most powerful 4 Emblems Sword Array as he wanted his enemy to lose all hope of winning and end the fight as quickly as possible.

"Master has instructed us to kill the witches!"

The 4 magical swords had spirituality and their concentrated sword essences gathered in the centre.

Furthermore, it felt like an entire realm on its own as it started to constrict.

"Is this... another realm? No, this is just a miniature version of another realm!"

Seeing this, Xing exclaimed loudly. "If my original body was still here, I can turn you into a pile of bloodied meat with a swing of my axe. Who are you, you despicable foreign demon?"

"I am... Yuan! However, don't bother remembering my name, for a dead person does not need to know all these! 4 Emblems Sword Array, kill!"

The completed 4 Emblems Sword Array could form a miniature version of a realm and was vastly different from other arrays.

This was the secret of the 8 Gates Sword Array. If dream masters from the main world were to see it, they would be able to identify it.

However, Xing was a native of the Ancient Realm and could never spread this piece of information out.

"Chi! Chi!"

Red, blue, purple and green streaks of light gathered. With the power of the different elements, a huge net was formed, covering all possible escape routes.

"Oh, so you're Yuan!"

Xing roared as he smashed his fists outwards.

"Buzz!"

The entire array shook, but the net formed from sword essence continued to float towards him.

"Chi!"

Xing quickly retreated and realised that his fists were full of blood. His eyes turned bloodshot. "I hate this! Foreign demon, you will get your retribution!"

"You speak too much nonsense! Die!"

With his thoughts, Fang Yuan fused the net on Xing, resulting in a fog of blood spewing out.

This fog of blood was extremely concentrated and had a black hue. In it, there seemed to be countless faces of witches cursing and struggling.

"Purify!"

Seeing what Xing did previously, Fang Yuan was still a little fearful of the Revival Technique. Therefore, he commanded the array to turn into flames and purify Xing's blood.

"I'm afraid that Xing is not even 1% of what he used to be. However, his physical body is still here. The fact that the 4 Emblems Sword Array is able to kill him means that there is no doubt about its power!"

Fang Yuan had a look of satisfaction on his face. The flames raged on as he finally purified the last drop of blood and grieving soul from Xing's body.

Finally, all that was left was a drop of blood essence. Like an earthworm, it started to wriggle with spirituality.

"It is indeed the blood of a powerful being to be able to survive all this. However, none of this would matter! Thunder Sword!"

Within the 4 Emblems Sword Array, Fang Yuan was God!

With the wave of his hand, the Thunder Sword appeared in his hands and was shimmering.

"Ah!!!"

A vengeful shriek was heard, which even shook Fang Yuan.

This was all that was left of Xing in this realm, and yet it was destroyed by Fang Yuan.

Without a consciousness, the drop of blood finally stopped moving. It was completely purified and was now a drop of dull-red blood crystal.

"Although Xi had given me a drop of blood from a powerful witch before, that was nothing compared to this!"

Fang Yuan had a look of happiness on his face. Suddenly, his hair stood on end.

Being decisive, he kept the sword array and quickly left.

"This is..."

He could feel a sense of worry in him, which was a familiar feeling. "Is this how the realm discriminates against us? Even the 9 Cauldrons of the people dao cannot overpower it?"

Dream masters were ultimately people from the outside world. This was similar to the previous Hui Realm and Water Realm. If one were to go against the heavens, there would be tribulations!

There were exceptions in the Ancient Realm due to the fact that the Realm Alliance had control over the people dao and could manage it using the 9 Cauldrons!

Now, the 9 Cauldrons were no longer in power and it was a fact that Fang Yuan had destroyed the bloodline of a witch. This was the backlash that he was about to experience!

"Could there be heavenly streaks of lightning?"

Fang Yuan gazed up at the cloudy sky and was feeling extremely tensed up.

After he left, peace was restored in the mountains.

A few moments later, a few streaks of light flew into the mountains. There were a few exclamations and their voices were filled with hatred and despair.

...

On Fang Mountain.

Wei strapped a bow behind her back and as she was patrolling, she kicked a piece of rock. "D\*mn you, Yuan... Don't you know how



I feel towards you? Why did you not bring me along! Please, let nothing bad happen to you!"

Thoughts ran wild in her mind. Suddenly, a black shadow flew across her head.

"Lord Wei!"

The warriors around her exclaimed. "These are the mysterious beasts from the Secluded Capital Mountain. They're here once more!"

Although the name of the mountain had long been changed, they were still more used to its old name.

"I see it!"

The black shadow was a huge black bird. It resembled a phoenix and had a long tail and was covered in golden-black feathers. Wei adored it the moment she saw it. "This is my prey!"

Without thinking, she pulled her bow and fired an arrow.

"Whoosh!"

Her archery skills were impressive all along. Now that she was equipped with the best bow of the Xia Tribe, she was even more accurate and deadly than before. Regardless, with the flap of its wings, the bird was able to avoid the arrow.

Startled, the black bird did not dare to linger around any longer and flew straight towards Fang Mountain.

"After it!"

Without thinking, Wei chased it into Fang mountain. "I want to gather its feathers and give it to Yuan as his victory gift!"

She was extremely fast. In a few moments, the warriors behind her could no longer catch up as she entered the depths of the mountains.

"Chirp! Chirp!"

Following the high-pitched chirping of the bird, Wei bashed her way through the dense vegetation and soon arrived at a cliff.

As soon as she arrived, she could see the bird lying on the ground. Seeing her arrival, the bird quickly spread its wings and flew into the sky. In a moment, it became a black dot and disappeared.

On the ground where it once laid, there was a huge and round egg. There was still steam coming from the egg.

"This egg..."

Wei took a step forward and knocked the egg with her knuckles. There was a look of suspicion in her eyes. "... it's edible, right?"

...

"Eh? What happened?"

Fang Yuan made his way to Yang City. In that instant, the feeling of worry which was bugging him was gone.

Not just that, he felt as though he was integrated into the world.

'This feeling... it is similar to how I used Realm Evidence to enter the Water Realm previously. However, I can feel it more this time... Has this realm completely accepted me?'

Fang Yuan remained stunned as thoughts ran through his mind. 'Could it be... that the prayers of my tribe are working? That my division has the blessing of the heavens?'

At this point in time, there were a few developments on the battlefield.

Above the battlefield, there was a huge sun. Beneath it, there was a huge green wooden trunk which rose towards the sky.

By combining forces, the 2 powerful dream masters finally managed to contain the energy of the 9 Regions' soldiers. Even Army Leader Chi's voice was starting to soften.

"You have killed so many young people... and now you still want

to make so much noise? Jiu Yinzi, how would you like to die?"

From the fiery dragon next to him came the mocking voice of Elder Smelter.

"I want to see all of you dead! Keke..."

Jiu Yinzi, in the form of a Torch Dragon, gave a sinister laugh.

"Whoosh!"

Suddenly, there was a loud rumbling noise. The earth gave way and a headless illusionary figure covered in wounds appeared from a glow.

"Kill!"

Xi Chen exchanged glances with Green Wood before channelling their power to oppose Chi's body.

Whoosh!"

The witchcraft dao Divine Body of Chi immediately cracked. The skies started to rain blood, and a fresh-red heart suddenly appeared in mid-air, pounding with life.

"Roar! Roar!"

As the clouds gave way, the ferocious-looking head of a leader appeared.

The heart started to combine with the head. Blood started to spew everywhere as a huge body was being formed.

"I am Chi! I am invincible!"

A strong spiritual will was felt from his body. "Every death I undergo will only strengthen me!"

"We must kill him for good!"

Two strong forces started to pound towards Chi, but they were held back by layers of black fog.

Xi Chen looked at Green Wood once more and had a worried look

on his face. "Has his power as a witch increased once more? Could he really absorb vengeance from the realm just before his death?"

"Hiss! Hiss!"

At this point in time, from the riverbed of Yang River, a long and slithering silhouette appeared.

"Whoosh!"

As a splash emerged from the river, a huge demon was revealed.

This was a snake demon. However, it had 9 heads and each of its head had corrosive and poisonous venom.

With the flick of its tail, the seal formed by the Swelling Earth immediately shattered.

"Rumble!"

As soon as the seal broke, terrifying waves of the river crashed out, smashing into the already weakened city walls.

"Bang!"

The entire wall cracked as the river water started to flood into Yang City mercilessly, carrying with it everything that was in its way.

Against such a calamity, normal warriors stood no chance and were all killed, regardless if they were from Xia Tribe or Jiuli Tribe.

"It's Xiang Liu!"

The powerful dream masters of Realm Alliance heaved a sigh of relief. "This is not its actual soul and therefore, its powers are limited!"

"Hiss! Hiss! Burn the demonic body to deliver one single powerful blow!"

At this point in time, there was a mysterious glow on the 9 heads of Xiang Liu. As the blood in its body burned, waves of energy

started to spread. "Venerable elders, I am here to help you!"

At that moment, the green sun exploded towards Chi, who was forming the Divine Body!

Even though Chi was becoming increasingly powerful, against the 3 powerful dream masters, the black fog around him gave way, revealing his true body.

"Chi!"

Blood spewed everywhere as the green sun exploded towards Chi's body. It imprinted black runes on his body, which gave off a mysterious vibe.

"Never trust them! They are demons from the outside world!"

Chi raged angrily.

"Haha.... It's too late. You would truly die once we destroy your witch bloodline. I wonder how will the world change if we were to offer you as a piece of offering to the heavens?"

Xiang Liu laughed before collapsing and losing its breath.

# Chapter 363: Heavenly Trend

---

Xiang Liu!

How could the secret move of the Hidden Dragon Guards, the strike of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, be exhausted on Chi?

Xi Chen and Green Wood began to suspect something. Now that everything was on the edge, they exerted their powers as well, expelling everything on Army Leader Chi's Divine Body.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

The dark runes on Chi's Ultimate Witch Body turned into flames and surprisingly started to burn him alive.

"In today's defeat, our ancestral bloodline will forever be lost. There is so much hate! Hate! Hate! You demons are disgusting!"

Chi's head continued to roar and tears seemed to be welling up in his eyes. With that, his head started to burn.

In mid-air, blood-red fate energy started to disperse quickly.

"This is the tribal energy of Jiuli Tribe, and Chi was merely the body which the tribal energy had chosen to enter... After this episode, there will no more Jiuli Tribe!"

Xi Chen sighed as he looked at the Torch Dragon. "What is the intention of the Hidden Dragon Guards?"

"What intention? You'll know very soon!"

The Torch Dragon broke into laughter. Quickly, it lost its breath and fell to the ground.

"Crash!"

The huge corpse of the Torch Dragon fell into the gushing water. In a few moments, it was entirely consumed by the river and disappeared.

Considering that they were all powerful dream masters in a foreign realm, if anyone of them wanted to die to leave the realm, no one would be able to stop them, even if 3 powerful dream masters were to come together to combine forces!

"What does he intend to do?"

Elder Smelter gazed down and could see that everywhere was flooded. The normal Jiuli Tribe members and Xia Tribe members were long dead.

Just a scene of death gave him an uncomfortable feeling. "This is not good..."

"Rumble!!!"

In the next moment, the entire world shook and many clouds resembling fish scales started to cover the sky. Streaks of lightning danced around.

The power of tribulations came from the source of energy of the realm.

By harnessing the power directly from the source of energy, tribulations would be terrifying!

"Why is this happening? The Xia people are the main people of the people dao, and we have the 9 Cauldrons to control our fate energy..."

Xi Chen froze and subsequently gazed down.

The water from the river flooded the entire place, turning the whole Yang City into a lake city. Other than a few survivors, everyone was killed and corpses floated around.

Furthermore, the water continued to gush towards the palace, flooding the entire place and covering the 9 Cauldrons as well.

"Rippp!"

A streak of lightning struck down towards the cauldrons and immediately, cracks appeared on the surfaces of the cauldrons.

There was a tremor felt. As the water continued to flow, the 9 Cauldrons were being carried away.

"The 9 Cauldrons are made from normal materials. What makes it such a strong treasure is the fact that it is filled with the fate energy of the people dao..."

Xi Chen witnessed the entire scene and suddenly came to a realisation. "The people of Jiuli are the original natives of this world. Therefore, they still had a portion of fate energy with them. Now that we have destroyed their bloodline, the heavens have noticed it and are angry!"

"Initially, this shouldn't trouble us at all. Even if there were tribulations, we could still defend ourselves with the 9 Cauldrons... However, now that the Xia people are mostly dead, the people dao is weakened and we have lost the fate energy!"

Without the Xia people to manipulate the people dao, they could no longer affect the heavenly dao!

This was why there were tribulations now!

"Someone secretly altered the fate of the Xia people and even prevented us from detecting it!"

Green Wood started to predict before letting out a shriek. "The 3 of us are dream masters in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Only a dream master in the Prominent Divine stage could do this! It's the Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards!"

"D\*mn it!"

Elder Smelter gazed into the sky as the green streak of lightning started to turn purple. "The source of energy of the Ancient Realm is extremely concentrated. If we are to bear the brunt of it, we will have no chance of survival..."

Even Sages could only create hollows which depended on the main world.



Now that an entire realm was enraged, which dream master would be able to bear the tribulation and survive?

"Rumble!"

As the entire realm shook, a huge force was felt upon the few dream masters. Blood rain started to fall.

Everyone was fearful, dream masters of the Realm Alliance and demons alike. "Heavenly tribulation! Heavenly Tribulation! Our True Spirits cannot escape!"

"What? I thought there isn't any Heavenly Spiritual Image?!... This is the world sealing us in it!"

Xi Chen quickly reacted and could feel the immense force. "After a certain limit, anything foreign within the area would be killed by the tribulation! This realm is trying to kill us all! Furthermore, I have not seen this type of seal before!"

No matter how powerful the 3 of them were, they could still feel fear as the realm raged upon them!

"Rumble!"

As the blood rain fell, purple streaks of lightning struck down. Two demons and a few dream masters of the Realm Alliance were pulverized!

...

Outside the Ancient Realm.

A huge hand floated in mid-air and paused for a moment at the boundary of the Ancient Realm. On it, there was a mysterious colourful glow.

With the mysterious glow, the solidified wall of defence at the boundary of the realm started to melt, revealing a realm in turmoil.

'The world is starting to awaken and is discriminating against the foreigners! Head of Hidden Dragon Guards, I will settle this score

with you!'

From the huge hand, there was an anxious voice heard.

"Haha... since you want to settle the score with me, let's fight!"

Outside the realm, another huge green hand appeared. It flew up and pressed down against the entire realm. "Ancient! You shall decide if you want to save your own people or fight against me!"

The giant hand which had arrived first was stunned. With that, it used its nails to carve an opening from the boundary's membrane.

"Bang!"

In the next moment, the giant green hand flew towards the other hand, grabbing on three of its fingers and pulled it towards the ground.

As the space around them vibrated, there was silence for a while before a spiritual will was heard. "Head of Hidden Dragon Guards! Good! You're good!"

"Of course I'm good. This Ancient Realm was named after you and used to be your home ground. But now, we're even!"

The spiritual will of the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards laughed. "The consciousness of the realm is waking up and it will choose whoever it wants to take over the 9 Regions! In this period, you will have to consume a lot of energy before you can arrive... I know, you've always wanted to reap rewards from this world for the third time and advance to the Prominent Divine stage. Hehe... look what happened now! Since you are a Sage and have once made your way through to conquer this realm, you can try to do it again!"

The Ancient Realm's consciousness was asleep and was only functioning on its subconsciousness. Therefore, The Ancient One was able to conquer the realm and use the 9 Cauldrons to control fate energy, therefore affecting the heavenly dao through the people dao.

However, the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards had subtly awakened the consciousness of the realm and had made use of eliminating the bloodline of Jiuli Tribe to anger the consciousness of the realm so as to allow it to cleanse the realm of foreigners.

Even a Sage would have to put in a lot of effort to go against the consciousness of a realm.

Time would pass and there would be another favoured tribe in the future. The Xia Tribe would slowly be written in the history books.

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards had only meticulously made use of everything that was in place to achieve his objective. With that, everything that The Ancient One had left in the realm was all gone, and the dream masters which the Realm Alliance had sent into the realm were also sacrificed!

The Realm Alliance had invested 3 dream masters of the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage to guard the realm only because they had been warned, and countless other dream masters were sacrificed as well.

What about the Hidden Dragon Guards? They only had a powerful dream master in the form of a Torch Dragon, which had taken his leave earlier on.

Therefore, even if the Ancient World were to sort the foreigners out, The Ancient One would be the only one desperate, for his disciples were all trapped in the realm!

...

Within the Ancient Realm.

"Eh?"

Xi Chen could feel that the realm was not as restrictive as before and was elated. "Master must have helped us to weaken the realm's defence. Let's go!"

Without thinking, he slammed his palm on his forehead. With that, his head exploded and his True Spirit quickly flew out and disappeared.

"This is a good opportunity!"

Elder Green Wood sighed. "We can take our leave quickly, but as for the weaker dream masters, they'll have to depend on their luck! Go!"

"It's a pity that hundreds of years of preparation is now destroyed!"

Elder Smelter sighed and closed his eyes. The fiery dragon lost its breath and fell to the ground.

"Go!"

Seeing all that had happened, Fang Yuan remained emotionless and went into a daze.

Beside him, Tong gritted his teeth and killed himself, escaping the realm. Ju was a little unfortunate. It seemed as though he had insufficient fate energy since his True Spirit was unable to escape after his death. It froze in the air as though the realm had detected it and prevented it from escaping. With a bolt of lightning, his True Spirit was reduced to ashes.

Fang Yuan stretched his hands out and within a few moments, a puddle of blood was collected on his hands.

His clothes were drenched in blood as well and he became a bloodied man.

Other than that, there was nothing much.

It seemed as though Fang Yuan had understood what had happened in the past few moments. "The realm is discriminating against the foreigners, but it has forgotten about me? What's this about..."

He started to think to himself.

The power of the realm was immense and it was probably even more powerful than a Sage!

But now, all the dream masters were being dealt with except himself. What a chance this was!

'If we compare this to the analogy of a game, this game has turned from a public game to a private game!'

Fang Yuan's heart started to burn with excitement. Seeing the desperate faces of the dream masters around him, Fang Yuan thought to himself. 'But... at the very least, I still have to put on an act. After all, I have the coordinates of this realm. I can secretly return in the future!'

With that determination, he killed his own body as his True Spirit started to leave.

However, he was different from the other dream masters who were desperately making use of this opportunity to escape while the defence of the realm was weakened. Fang Yuan was not targeted by the realm and therefore, his escape was smooth.

...

Fang Mountain.

"Ah! It's pain!"

In a room, Wei laid on a bed and shrieked. "Quicky! Send over the witch doctor and priest!"

"Yes! However..."

The two female servants looked at her bulging stomach as though she had been pregnant for 10 months.

'If I'd knew earlier, I wouldn't have eaten that egg!'

The greedy woman was filled with regret. Suddenly, she could feel a kick in her stomach. With that, she started to scream. "No... I don't want to be a mother!"

"Get a few experienced women here!"

The priest arrived outside the house and appeared solemn. He allowed a few old ladies to enter before walking towards the altar and started his predictions.

"Rumble!"

Dark clouds started to gather and a streak of lightning struck down.

With that, the distinct cries of a baby were heard.

At the same time, he held onto the oracle bone and started to read into the pattern on it. With his solemn face, he seemed to have interpreted the prediction. "Giving birth to a child after eating an egg! It is a prosperous thing!"

# Chapter 364: Test

---

Golden Sun Prosperous Land, Da Qian Empire.

"Life is like a dream!"

Fang Yuan stretched his body, walked out of the meditation room and shook the golden bell.

"Sir, you are awake?"

The maids waiting outside the room were pleasantly surprised and went inside the room to help Fang Yuan wash up.

Moments later, a female cook served him food.

The jade bowl was filled with Yellow Grain Rice and there were also a few side dishes made from spiritual fruits and vegetables. The plain tasting meal really suited Fang Yuan's palate as he had isolated himself for a long time.

"Not bad..."

Fang Yuan ate the rice with his spoon and felt warmth in his body as his dream elemental force recovered. He was very satisfied.

"You all are dismissed!"

After finishing his meal, he dismissed his servants and sat cross-legged.

"Stats!"

A screen that could only be seen by him appeared.

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 48

Spirit: 48

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (5th

Meridian)

Technique: \[Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 6) (1%)\], \[Hundred Poison Golden Body (1st Refining)\], \[8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (1%)\]

Skill: \[Medicine (Level 3)\], \[Botany (Level 5)\]"

"After abandoning that body, the witchcraft abilities I cultivated are gone..."

Fang Yuan expected it to happen. Using his spiritual will, he looked into his actualised dream world and saw that red drop of witch's vital blood. He smiled and thought, "With this, the dream traversing this time around was still worth it. Of course, what makes me even happier is the changes happening in Ancient Realm that caused it to purge foreigners. It has become my own realm..."

He sensed that the originally vast realm had already shrunk itself. Concentrated amounts of heavenly energy had already formed a crystal wall with a hive-like structure that surrounded the realm, preventing it from being explored.

It would be extremely difficult for dream masters to enter this realm from now on.

"The realm shrank and it was now turbid like an egg. Such an extent... even if the Sage were to descend in the realm, it would require a lot of effort too? Furthermore, he will be suppressed and won't be as powerful..."

Originally, with the help of the 9 Cauldrons of people dao, dream masters who entered the realm would at most have their strength halved and could recover their strength quickly.

But now, even the Sage would not obtain his power so quickly if he entered the realm.

"The Hidden Dragon Guards must have caused such changes! The Sage was so smart to stay outside the realm..."



Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, "The Realm Alliance must have suffered great losses this time!"

The method of escaping from the Ancient Realm this time was different from the usual method of leaving the realm. In order to escape as quickly as possible, many dream masters used a suicidal method to escape. Even dream masters at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage suffered losses.

Furthermore, with the realm's seal, there was only a fifty-fifty chance of escaping!

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and his spiritual will linked with the Dream Realm as he arrived at Realm Alliance Mountain.

Although the place remained the same, there were fewer people around. Many dream masters had a sombre look on their faces and it was as though something big was about to happen.

"Looks like the Realm Alliance suffered great losses this time around..." Fang Yuan thought.

It was truly extremely unlucky that the Hidden Dragon Guards set a ploy that misled and lured the Realm Alliance to send in more reinforcements.

As Fang Yuan was in the Realm Alliance, it was natural that he knew about the situation as he had ties to the alliance.

"Brother Fang!"

A few messages appeared on his inscription plate. The first message was from the Ye sisters, "We are very relieved to know that you are alright, little sister was very worried for you!"

"There were some setbacks, but luckily I'm alright!"

Fang Yuan replied, "What's the situation like in the alliance?"

"What else can it be like? Many were either injured or died! Only at most 40% of the dream masters returned from Ancient Realm, the rest died... The three elders were injured but their injuries

were not too serious and they have already appeared to appease the people!"

"That's great!"

In actual fact, even the powers of 10 dream masters at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine combined would not be comparable to that of a single dream master at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine.

As long as those three elders were alright, the Realm Alliance would be alright.

Of course, at such a moment, some of their strategies were affected by the losses.

"Also..."

Ye Shuhua hesitated for a moment before sending over another message, "Li Qin died... He was also one of the reinforcements this time!"

"Li Qin?!"

This enemy of his, the old-fashioned dream master at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Devine, died in the Ancient Realm too?

Fang Yuan thought hard, other than the period the last reinforcements were sent, he was at the north the whole time. He had no impressions of him and could not help but to sigh.

Although Fang Yuan still had some issues to settle with him, Fang Yuan never imagined he would just die like that.

The realm was merciless. Fang Yuan only escaped due to his luck, but what about next time? Would he still have such amazing luck?

...

Fang Yuan walked into Green Bronze Hall and saw Feng Xinzi just moments later.

"Brother!"

Feng Xinzi was dressed in a five-coloured robe and pill essence

surrounded him exuberantly. His spirituality was astounding. Although he seemed tired, a happy expression appeared on his face the moment he saw Fang Yuan.

"I heard you went to the Ancient Realm and was so worried for you! Now that I see you are all fine, my heart is relieved at once!"

Realistically, only Feng Xinzi himself knew how he really felt inside his heart. Just that dreams masters were the masters of manipulating their emotions and soul, no one would be able to tell they were faking.

"I was just lucky!"

Fang Yuan could not tell too. As Fang Yuan was cautious by nature, he replied cautiously and ensured nothing was leaked, thus blocking Feng Xinzi's attempt to probe.

"Sigh... times are difficult!"

Feng Xinzi sighed and continued, "Many died in the alliance this time, it is now a period of bereavement. Also, many positions are now empty and they have to be replaced or removed.... You have done well this time and earned your merits! When you visit Elder Smelter later, your level of rights can be raised to 5th Leaf!"

If Fang Yuan had received the 5th Leaf level of rights in the alliance, his level of rights would be equal to Feng Xinzi. Thus, this could not be decided so easily and Fang Yuan had to pass through the elder first.

Feng Xinzi was slightly gloomy but he did not reveal it on his face and continued, "Just that, from the 5th Leaf onwards, you would be at the mid-high level and you have to pass through a test first!"

Fang Yuan was speechless, he knew this was another attempt at systemic exploitation by the alliance.

"A test?"

Fang Yuan stared at Feng Xinzi deeply and laughed all of a

sudden, "What if I choose not to raise my level of rights?"

"What?"

Feng Xinzi's jaw dropped, he almost could not believe what he heard, "This... although there is no set rule, why would you choose not to accept a reward?"

"Haha... I'm just kidding. Let's talk about it once I meet the elder and obtain more information about the test!"

Fang Yuan clasped his hands and walked out the door.

"Hng..."

Many moments later, after there was no one else left in the Green Bronze Hall, Feng Xinzi's smile turned stiff and his expression turned sullen.

...

"Heh... whatever 1st Leaf or 2nd Leaf level of rights is merely a status, it doesn't provide me with great authority in the alliance, the practical benefits are minute! I would be a fool to risk my life for such a thing!"

Fang Yuan joined the Realm Alliance initially to resist the pressure from Divine Lotus Cult.

Now, it was to avoid the effects of the big war once it started. He did not care much about his level of rights.

As long as Fang Yuan himself was powerful as a dream master was all that mattered.

At the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine, he would be able to actualise spiritual lands and tribes.

When he finally reached that stage, he would be truly powerful and relevant! What would that mere status matter?

"Of course... now, I still need the Realm Alliance's protection. In these kinds of organisations, a lowly member would dare not

disobey an order, even if it was an unspoken rule! There were ways for the organisation to force them! Hence, I still need to put up a facade... although I cannot disobey, I can drag and delay it!"

Delaying the test required some tricks too.

Mentioning that he did not want to up his level of rights was just a way to prevent them from repeatedly forcing him to take the test.

His own attitude would then slowly soften and his decision would flip back and forth. Overall, it was for him to have a battle of words with them!

The time gained from delaying would then be used to cultivate and strengthen himself.

Once his power passed through a certain threshold, things would go his way. The test would no longer be a difficulty to him.

Fang Yuan was all set in his plan and went ahead to meet Elder Smelter.

...

A few days later, Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

"After a few arguments, I managed to find out the baseline... I can still retain my Golden Sun Prosperous Land and the pact for me to not participate in other mandatory missions for 10 years. Just that I had to accept one mission!" Fang Yuan thought.

In actual fact, he had no other choice.

After the events in the Ancient Realm, three elders were injured and many alliance members died. The original arrangements were barely sufficient and new bloods had to replace these empty positions.

Furthermore, it was not only him. Even Zhou Hun and other members of the alliance who worked behind the scenes were deployed too.

"Also.....I can only at most drag for half a year! In half a year, I need to strengthen myself!"

Secretly entering Ancient Realm was the best way for Fang Yuan to strengthen himself.

Although that realm was extremely defensive, it did not purge Fang Yuan. But now, after such events, it was very likely many higher beings were paying extra attention to him now. He would be caught if he were to enter the realm! Furthermore, the realm was in havoc now, it was obvious that the heavenly trend was changing. If he riskily entered the realm, even if he could reap great benefits, he would most likely garner hatred. Hence, Fang Yuan would not enter the realm and he still had to slowly plan first.

"Other than the Ancient Realm, the other coordinates I can contact are limited. Furthermore, they are small realms which were attacked numerous times and they would have nothing left..."

Fang Yuan sighed, "Looks like I still have to cultivate more over a period of time first."

Luckily, he did not come back empty-handed from Ancient World.

Inside his actualised dream world, a drop of blood-red coloured crystal vibrated slightly. It had a mysterious glow on it and was being repeatedly analysed, emitting bits and pieces of witchcraft dao's legacy.

"Witches valued the body the most. This complements the Hundred Poison Golden Body technique I have been refining... If I can absorb this blood and fully analyse its divine techniques, my martial arts and body will greatly improve."

"Other than that, I still have the inheritance from Sage Changli which I will be learning continuously from. At the 4th Tier of

Illusionary Divine, I can now see and analyse even more content!"

"The most important things in this half a year would be this two!"

# Chapter 365: Fiery Golden Eyes

---

A few months later, at the Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

Fang Yuan laid in a pool of hundred types of poison and both his hands were resting on the sides of the pool as though he was soaking in a hot spring tub. He had a look of enjoyment on his face.

"I'm afraid that I might just achieve the 10th Refining Stage today!"

He opened his eyes and seemed excited.

Fang Yuan had wholeheartedly accepted the fact that he would have to undergo a test.

He could not avoid the chaos in Da Qian. Even if he were to hide in an isolated place, he would still have to enter the Dream Realm and interact with the other dream masters, right?

Anywhere with the existence of people would have civilisation!

It would be the same for every organisation. Most of the players in the game of chess had made their way from being pawns. The only difference which set them apart was that the players had spent more time in the organisation than the pawns.

Taking this time as an example, Fang Yuan could only accept what was given to him since it was the rules of the alliance.

In his actualised dream world, a dragon pearl floated up and down and emitted a mysterious glow from it. Pieces of information started to flow out from it, which was subsequently classified according to the type of information.

"I am only a middle-ranked dream master and yet, I have access to all these information..."

Fang Yuan started to read a recording which detailed the tips for a dream master to take note when dream-traversing. The information provided on this recording was much more detailed



than that provided in the Dream Realm.

Even 6th to 7th Leaf Cultivators might not be able to obtain these pieces of information.

Now, all of these were his to enjoy.

"Sage Changli seems to be an expert in dream-traversing... I have never heard of all his methods. He must be incredibly talented... I wonder what secrets are there in the heart of all of this information?"

Fang Yuan retrieved a recording which detailed a technique in it. This technique was about retaining the True Spirits of dream masters in other realms to deny them of any chance of escaping. This piqued his interest as he continued to read in detail.

Unknowingly, a few hours had passed and the pool of poisonous water had slowly cleared up. He climbed out of the pool, shook off the water droplets from his body and channelled a force throughout his entire body, clearing any residue from it.

Water started to evaporate from his body as steam, revealing a clear-looking skin beneath. On the skin, there was a layer of metallic-gold hue.

"I have finally completed the 10th Refining Stage of the Hundred Poison Golden Body!"

Fang Yuan let out a heavy breath and clenched his fists, cracking his knuckles in the process.

"I can now use my physical body to fight against Meridian Opening Wu Zongs! Only such a body is strong enough to accept the blood essence of a witch!"

Since he was unable to dream-traverse and reap rewards from other realms, the only way he could increase his cultivation in such a short period would be to absorb the blood essence of the witch.

Although this was a good treasure, Fang Yuan still needed a good foundation before he could accept it. If he was a normal Wu Zong or even a Meridian Opening Wu Zong, he might destroy his own physical body if he were to absorb this blood essence.

Fang Yuan had done multiple experiments and finally determined that the minimum strength he had to have before he could absorb the blood essence was that of the 10th Refining Body!

The physical body was the source of one's essence, which was completely different from the strength of a Wu Zong.

However, it didn't matter. Fang Yuan already had a technique to strengthen his own physical body.

With a single thought, the blood-red crystal in his actualised dream world exploded, turning into streaks of energy which entered his body.

"Mmmm..."

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth as his face turned ferocious.

Beneath his skin, his green veins started to pop out and wriggle about like small snakes. His muscles started to grow and his physical body started to expand, turning him into a small giant.

"The blood essence of a witch is indeed powerful... This is too strong!"

He mumbled to himself as he felt as though his body was on the verge of breaking down. However, his strong spiritual will remained steadfast and unaffected by external factors, keeping him composed.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

A layer of metallic-gold started to cover him. He did not explode into a bloodied mess purely because he had the foundation of a 10th Refining Body.

However, that was not enough.

As the blood of the witch entered his body, Fang Yuan felt as though there were countless untamed dragons surging about in his arteries.

The huge force in his blood felt like magma, destroying anything in its path.

Even with the protection of his Golden Body, there were countless bruises forming beneath his pores.

"What's this... my original blood is being forced out? The blood essence of the witch is indeed demanding. Is it trying to change my entire body? What a pity... the only thing I want from you is your power!"

Fang Yuan quickly summoned the sword essences of wind, thunder, water and fire around him. With the 4 elements, he formed a miniature realm around him, which started to strengthen his physical body.

In his dantian, Fang Yuan's martial arts elemental force started to surge as it tried to take control of the force of the witch's blood.

Although the barbaric force of the witch's blood was like an uncontrolled dragon, Fang Yuan's martial arts elemental force flowed continuously. Gaining an upper hand with an immense volume, it started to gain control over the blood essence of the witch with every passing day.

300 days!

600 days!

1,000 days!

...

Time had passed. Suddenly, Fang Yuan's body shook and his elemental force surged. After all this while, he had finally absorbed more than half of the blood essence.

Like scalding hot water, the burning sensation started to spread

to his limbs. It was a numb and itchy feeling which alternated with a cold and hot feeling.

"This time... It is not my blood that is changing. Instead, it is my blood trying to control the witch's blood which caused all these problems!"

Fang Yuan knew that his physical body belonged to Da Qian and he was not prepared to visit the Ancient Realm regularly. Therefore, he did not want to change his blood entirely.

Furthermore, the world in which he lived in might not accept the blood essence from a powerful being from an alternate realm. He might be restricted in certain ways if he were to change his blood.

Therefore, the best way for him to make use of the witch's blood was to use it to strengthen his own.

"I have long destroyed Xing's spirit. Now, I just have to merely tame the blood, for Xing's imprints still linger in it. Let's do this!"

Fang Yuan's spiritual will shook.

"Rumble!"

His actualised dream world started to shake and information regarding witchcraft started to overflow.

In his dantian, the last bits of resistance from the witch's blood started to die down and his inflated body started to shrink.

"Whoosh!"

As his eyebrows twitched, with the wave of his hands, a dim red scab fell from his body as though a snake was shedding its skin.

"I can use this opportunity to expel the poison in me..."

Fang Yuan frowned as he quickly ripped apart the blood leeches on his body. Looking at his bronze skin, he remained speechless.

After completely absorbing the witch's blood essence, there were huge changes to his body.

He clenched his right fist and immediately, there was a shattering sound as though the air in his fist was contracted.

"Is this... my physical strength? It seems like this is not all..."

He could clearly feel warmth in his eyes, which he could activate at will. "A magical ability? I get to use this ability which was once exclusive to only those with the martial arts divine body?"

As he waved his hands, a mirror made out of water appeared, reflecting his godlike appearance.

Fang Yuan examined himself. The young man in the mirror was handsome and energetic. He had beautiful eyes and as his eyes moved, they turned into a golden colour, like tiny flames in the eyes.

"Is this the ability of a spiritual eye?"

He gazed outwards and realised that he could now see through the walls of the hall and even through arrays. He could see the natural elemental energy in the surroundings.

"I seem more suited to develop abilities that make use of my eyes!"

After all of these, Fang Yuan seemed more matured and gentle. He smiled to himself. "Is this the complete version of the Fiery Eyes, the Fiery Golden Eyes?"

With this, he called for this stats window and observed a huge change:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 96

Spirit: 48

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (5th

Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 6) (1%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (10th Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"Fiery Golden Eyes: The ability of a witch, formed from Level 5 of Fiery Eyes. It allows one to observe the future and perform predictions, and can nullify most spells! Currently at Level 1!"

"This is indeed the power of a witch's blood essence to be able to double my physical strength!"

Seeing that his Essence was about to reach 100, Fang Yuan took in a cold breath. "I think that I am not far from forming the martial arts divine body! With such a foundation, I am now scarily strong!"

Other than obtaining the skill of Fiery Golden Eyes, there was nothing much. However, the foundation that it had laid out for Fang Yuan's physical body was unimaginable!

"I would be stronger than any martial artist who is not a True Divine!"

Fang Yuan slowly experienced his strengthened body and was feeling extremely satisfied. "Of course, it's still most important to continue my cultivation! Now that my Essence is greatly improved, I can attempt to open my meridians. No matter how much brute force I use to achieve the next breakthrough, my physical body will be able to handle the stress, and my martial arts can be improved by leaps and bounds!"

The foundation of a martial artist would be their physical body.

Now that Fang Yuan's physical body was strengthened, his previous path towards forming the Divine Body was now replaced with a more straightforward and foolproof path. The only thing that would limit his progress now was time.

"Breathe in... breathe out..."

Thinking about this, he quickly walked out of his hall and started to breathe.

"Whooo! Whooo!"

Suddenly, in the middle of Golden Sun Prosperous Land, there was a tornado. Spiritual energy from the surroundings was slowly being sucked in.

The tornado started to become more intense as time passed!

Huge amounts of elemental energy from the surroundings were being absorbed as well, and even the 99 Golden Suns Gigantic Array started to shake.

"What magical technique... is Lord cultivating this time..."

At the farms, Meng Tian and Meng Guang raised their heads to such a terrifying scene. Even though they were Wu Zongs, their legs started to turn jelly. The servants around them could not hold on any longer and went down on their knees.

Fang Yuan could not care so much about them.

Seeing that the foundation for his physical body was improved and that the experience bar for his Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique was slowly filling up, he felt excited.

50% - 75% - 100%!

In a moment, the 6th spiritual meridian was formed.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan's body did not stop there as it continued to scale further.

# Chapter 366: Aid

---

"Whoosh!"

A blurred silhouette rushed through the forest, across a few areas with perilous dangers and finally arrived at the boundary of Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

As the silhouette came to a stop, the person was revealed to be Zhou Tian in a scholarly disguise.

"Who would've thought that a simple command from the alliance would send all of us scrambling about!"

He gazed at the opening of a cave and let out a bitter laugh. "This kid has extreme potential and is able to improve his cultivation very quickly. His level of rights is also increasing at a shocking rate. It only took a while for him to reach the level of rights of a 5th Leaf Cultivator. To think about it, he is now my superior!"

There was no limit for cultivation.

It was perfectly normal for juniors to overtake their seniors in terms of cultivation.

However, the fact that Fang Yuan was able to do it in such a short time considering the fact that things were made difficult for him made Zhou Tian feel that things were a little mysterious.

Now that Zhou Tian had arrived, he walked into the cave and raised an order plate. "I am Zhou Tian of the Realm Alliance and I am requesting to see Lord Fang!"

Since there was a certain level of rights inscribed in the order plate, the 99 Golden Suns Gigantic Array shook and his message was delivered through.

"Haha... It's Brother Zhou! Why do you make it sound like we are strangers?"

Not long after, the array split and Fang Yuan walked out to



welcome Zhou Tian.

"I wouldn't dare!"

Zhou Tian bent over slightly and appeared humble. "In this mission, we are no longer related based on our appointments as treasurer and guardian. Instead, you are now my superior!"

He solemnly gazed at the order plate. "... According to the elders of the alliance, we are both required to head to 9 Extremes Mountain for official business!"

To think about it, the alliance could have just sent a message to Fang Yuan through the Dream Realm. By sending another dream master to inform him showed their sincerity as well as the importance of this mission, making it hard for Fang Yuan to reject.

'It seems like I'll have to leave for at least half a year!'

Fang Yuan smiled, for this was what he had expected as well. "After settling some minute stuff, I will be able to join you!"

"Alright!"

On small matters like this, Zhou Tian would naturally let Fang Yuan have his way.

On the contrary, seeing how Fang Yuan treated him so kindly, he shuddered. 'This kid gave me a sense of extreme danger like a ferocious beast. Could he have cultivated a powerful technique for himself?!'

Although he was shocked, a part of him was relieved. 'With him around, we would have a higher chance of completing the mission at 9 Extremes Mountain.'

After a while, a spiritual boat flew out of the prosperous land. Meng Tian, Meng Guang, and the other servants followed behind to send their lord off.

High up in the air, the wind was strong. There was glowing sphere surrounding the spiritual boat, which separated it from the

surroundings outside.

Fang Yuan stood at the bow of the boat and was shocked. "It's rare to see such a magical boat!"

"This is merely a mode of transportation. Brother Fang, have you seen the Imperial Court's Kunpeng? That is a city in the sky, the ruler of the heavens!"

Zhou Tian let out a bitter laugh once more. "We will need to pick up a few other dream masters along the way. I have prepared tea and some snacks in the room. Brother Fang, do you want to have some?"

"Thank you for your good intentions, but I am good for now!"

Fang Yuan appeared serious. He removed the protection around and allowed the strong gusts of wind to land on his body.

"Whooo!"

His body became somewhat like a black hole, sucking the energy of everything around it.

'I'm afraid that even 9 Meridians Wu Zong will not be able to compare to this body of mine?'

After all this time, Fang Yuan had gained full control of his powerful physical body. With that, his strong body was now like the 4 Emblems Sword Array, something he could depend on to save his life. Furthermore, he had fewer restrictions to use the strength from his new physical body compared to the 4 Emblems Sword Array.

With a strong foundation, the experience bar of the Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique quickly increased as well. As of now, Fang Yuan had already formed the 7th spiritual meridian and had achieved the lowest cultivation required for one to achieve the True Divine!

'The more spiritual meridians I have, the stronger I will become

when I achieve True Divine. It's a pity that the Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique is limited to the 8th spiritual meridian! If I want to achieve any more breakthroughs, I will have to depend on my Hundred Poison Golden Body!

Fang Yuan long had the idea to combine these two techniques into one. Now that his physical body had been enhanced, this gave him an even stronger foundation to do so.

As he looked at his stats, he could not help it but smile. "With the strengthening of my physical body, the Spirit in me is increasing rapidly as well!"

There were a few changes in the window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 96

Spirit: 70

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (7th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 8) (5%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (10th Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

With such a strong physical body as a foundation and the fact that Fang Yuan had spent most of his time practicing his martial arts and had nourished himself with nutrients and supplements, he managed to achieve consecutive breakthroughs in his martial arts.

Furthermore, he had the utmost confidence that he could push his Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique to the limit of the 8th

Meridian.

However, if he were to complete the breakthrough, he would not have achieved his fullest potential. Therefore, he still required the aid of his Hundred Poison Golden Body.

Something to note was that after reading through the cultivation experiences of Sage Changli and the recordings on witchcraft, Fang Yuan had begun to set his sights on other worlds and had a clearer path of martial arts.

'However... Just my physical body alone is already a powerful weapon in itself.'

Fang Yuan was deep in his thoughts. 'This will be especially so while I'm in 9 Extremes Mountain!'

With that thought, a flash appeared on his hands and a jade inscription plate appeared. The details regarding this mission started to flow into his consciousness.

### 9 Extremes Mountain!

This mountain was among the 10 Perilous Places in Da Qian. It had a popular legend behind it. Legend had it that an unknown Sage had passed away there, causing its hollow to merge with the world!

Even Sages were vulnerable and could similarly experience death!

With their passing, their hollows would either slowly disintegrate, be sealed away and left for their descendants, or be shattered to merge with the real world, resulting in the formation of either spiritual lands or perilous lands.

9 Extremes Mountain was a mountain range with stretched out for 1,000 miles. In it, there were many unique types of flowers and grass, and countless weird-looking beasts. There were many unknown secrets in it as well, and it was these secrets which attracted many dream masters to explore the mountain.

Unfortunately, there were many dangers in the mountain. Not only did it have many wild and ferocious beasts, a ban was also placed on the mountain by the late Sage. Finally, the mountain had a special property known as 'The Ultimate Segregation', which would separate anyone in the mountain from the outside. Even natural elemental energy and dream elemental energy would be affected!

It was because of all these unique traits of the mountain which gave it the name '9 Extremes Mountain'!

"Of course... although it is a perilous land, the potential for opportunities is there. Among the many dream masters who had explored the mountain, a few of them had discoveries of their own and became powerful later on!"

"It was rumoured that the ban imposed on the mountain was incomplete due to the fact that the hollow had been shattered. Therefore, in specific periods of time, the ban would be at its weakest. That would be the best time to conduct any explorations!"

After the shattering of the hollow, it would merge with the real world and even Sages would not be able to isolate it.

Of course, they could forcefully isolate it from the real world, but they would also anger the heavens in the process and it would not be worth it.

Although the 9 Extremes Mountain was extremely dangerous and was a hollow left behind by a Sage, it was still able to attract many dream masters in the Prominent Divine stage.

"In fact, there might be Sages who had already explored it, but we are just merely unaware of it!"

Fang Yuan was lost in his thoughts as he thought about this mission. "... We are tasked to enter 9 Extremes Mountain! Even at the boundaries of the mountain, the other 4 Grand Organisations are already coming together to combine forces. This shows that the

mountain is indeed special!"

Because of the Realm Alliance's previous failure, the alliance had been maintaining a low profile since then. However, the alliance had still sent out dream masters to the 9 Extremes Mountain, and this was the same for all 5 Grand Organisations, making the mountain seem extraordinary!"

"Wait a minute..."

Fang Yuan's expression changed as though he had recalled something. "The 9 Extremes Mountain... I seem to have read about this description in the inheritance of Sage Changli. It was an important node..."

Unfortunately, he had only read the brief description of it and he had only obtained one-sixth of the full inheritance. Therefore, he was still confused.

...

The 1,000 miles of 9 Extremes Mountain was mostly shrouded in fog. There was a colourful glow covering the entire mountain and lone cultivators who would wander into the glow would all die a gruesome death.

There were a few rare weaker spots. There were either created by fate when the hollow shattered, or they might be weakened by powerful dream masters. These weak spots were perfect for others to enter. Therefore, these spots were determined as gathering points, or strongholds, for dream masters.

Although the 9 Extremes Mountain was filled with danger, the treasures were extremely worth it. Naturally, it could attract and play on the greed of many dream masters.

However, the dream masters of the 5 Grand Organisations had guarded these entrances fiercely, denying entry to any members of the Imperial Court or lone cultivators.

At this point in time, at the stronghold of the Realm Alliance.

A few flying boats appeared in mid-air in the form of streaks of light. They quickly gathered above the stronghold.

From the stronghold emerged many dream masters. They were alert and had a look of anticipation on their faces.

"Mmm, we have communicated with them before. The mark is right. They are one of us!"

One of the dream masters nodded his head. "Let them in!"

An invisible vibration started to spread and the dream masters around started to let their guard down. This was especially so for those in a nearby tall building. Their fierce spiritual auras slowly disappeared.

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

3 flying boats slowly landed, creating an air current as they landed. 10 over dream masters alighted from the boat and looked around in curiosity.

'Just 15 of them?'

Beneath them, the leader of the dream masters gave a depressed look before smiling and approaching the newcomers. "I am Xing Yunzi, the guardian of this land. Welcome!"

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan and the rest of them returned their greetings.

Xing Yunzi had an unpredictable spiritual aura. He was a dream master in the 6th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, one step away from being a 7th Tier dream master!

Although he was only one step away, he was still very different from a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, but ultimately, he still had a chance.

"Haha... no need for formalities. I have prepared a banquet and hope that all of you will join me. We shall rest for 3 days before entering 9 Extremes Mountain!"

Xing Yunzi was a decisive person.

With that, he started to examine the newcomers. Finally, he took notice of Fang Yuan, Zhou Tian and another dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

These 3 dream masters were all that the Realm Alliance had sent to help out.

"Please!"

As his heart wavered, he walked up and invited Zhou Tian and the other Illusionary Divine dream master to join in the banquet. With that, he gazed at Fang Yuan. "You must be Fang Yuan, right? You're young but you have already attained the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and are a 5th Leaf Cultivator. You're indeed a young hero! You are the future of our alliance, and I am relieved!"

Fang Yuan smiled as he followed Xing Yunzi into the main hall.

As they got seated, female servants started to serve wine. He slowly examined his surroundings and noticed another familiar face. With that, Fang Yuan let out a sinister smile.

Across the hall, Li Bai held his head down and wished he was an ostrich at that moment. His entire body was shaking in fear.

After losing his grandfather as his backing, it was as though he had lost his spine.



# Chapter 367: Node

---

<b>Translator: Sparrow Translations Editor: Sparrow Translations</b>

In Fang Yuan eyes, Li Bai was merely a worthless stalk of weed. As long as Li Bai did not come close to Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan could not be bothered about him.

After the banquet, the dream masters returned to their rooms. Fang Yuan sat cross-legged and began detailedly searching inside the inheritance of Sage Changli.

In his actualised dream world, a dragon pearl shined brightly. It was hazy inside the pearl and a golden-green dragon was pulling out streaks from it to be analysed.

"This is the Sage's legacy. As I am only a dream master at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine, I can only at most see the middle levels and not its core... However, they are already enough!"

Based on his memory, Fang Yuan picked out a grey spot and analysed it. It turned into a magnificent map of the world.

The vast Da Qian Empire was in the centre with 99 regions in it and it occupied a large portion of fate energy. On it, there were many tiny stars littered around.

"Evidence of fate and breaths of the earth could be found in the world. This was especially so for breaths of the earth, they had meridians which could be found and nodes on the earth....."

Areas with numerous nodes gathered would form natural prosperous lands and spiritual lands. Some of these areas were hubs of earth meridians and were key positions that would attract numerous people.

It was obvious that there was such an area inside the 9 Extremes Mountain!

"Sage Changli had calculated that there are over a thousand nodes in the entire Da Qian Empire. However, this map is slightly tattered and there are only 365 nodes shown on it, which is the number of days in a year... If arrangements are made on these nodes and they are tweaked during crucial moments, the direction of the breaths of the earth can even be manipulated. This would be a big hit to the imperial court of Da Qian!"

Fang Yuan faced turned serious as he continued to ponder, "But it seems like Sage Changli's arrangements are not so simple, there's more to it!"

Fang Yuan had one-sixth of Sage's heredity while all other dream masters and Da Qian royalties solely relied on information from Changli's investigations. Thus, Fang Yuan could naturally read more than what meets the eyes.

"It is not so simple to be just about disrupting the foundation... But I still have to wait and see what would truly happen..."

Amongst the thousand plus earth meridian nodes in Da Qian, some were big while some were small. The one in 9 Extremes Mountain was definitely an extremely important one.

Of course, Fang Yuan himself was clear of that and the Realm Alliance was clear of that too. But no one knew what Da Qian and the Hidden Dragon Guards would do.

...

Three days later.

An opening in 9 Extremes Mountain.

In the dense forest, a thick white fog sealed off the opening. It was a powerful restriction that seemed to segregate the mountain from everything else.

During noon, the white fog slowly dispersed and a passageway could be seen.

"When the 9 Extremes Mountain was discovered, it resulted in a calamity. It caused the demise of an ancient kingdom..."

Xing Yunzi stroked his beard and continued, "It's such a shame that its restrictions have lived for thousands of years and have never been broken before. Especially with The Ultimate Segregation array, once you enter the mountain, not only would your elemental energy be isolated, even your dream elemental energy would be isolated! You must be careful!"

Behind him were Fang Yuan, Zhou Tian and a dream master also at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine called Peng Xuan. Peng Xuan was very ethereal as he held a horsetail whisk in his hand and was donned in an airy green robe.

No matter what realm or world was it, power decided a person's standing.

Xing Yunzi was leading them and behind him were the three 4th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters. Further behind them were the other Illusionary Divine dream masters. For those like Li Bai, they could only stand the furthest away and listen to the orders quietly.

Peng Xuan smiled and said, "Rest assured, Sir... we are well aware of the dangers of 9 Extremes Mountain. This is why we brought along a few strong men to use!"

As 9 Extremes Mountain was segregated from the outside, dream masters and spiritual knights would not be able to use their techniques freely. Hence, they could only rely on their martial artists as they would be the least restraint.

Fang Yuan looked around and saw numerous submissive looking powerful martial artists as expected. Fang Yuan could not help but to silently judge.

There were no True Divines amongst them which was very normal.

True Divine martial artists had already forged their Divine Body and were not bound by their flesh. They also have extremely powerful divine techniques. If they pledged loyalty to Da Qian, they would get to enjoy a rich and wealthy life, why would they degrade themselves down here?

Only powerful beings at the Prominent Divine stage could possibly have True Divines as slaves under them. But this was definitely not the case for these dream masters here.

"Fang Yuan..... You don't have anyone to order about, do you want me to lend you two?"

Zhou Tian walked forward and spoke in a scornful way.

"No need!"

Fang Yuan took a glance at those behind Zhou Tian and saw a few strong men with bronze skin and divine light shining from them. They were definitely Wu Zongs at the 5th or 6th Meridian!

Such loyal subordinates had to follow their masters closely even in life and death situations. They must be groomed from young and slowly influenced which Fang Yuan would not be able to.

However, he did not felt deprived and instead clenched his fists and smiled inside his heart secretly.

Although dream masters could also refine their body, not many could endure the pain from it. Also, they would not even be comparable to Fang Yuan's 10th Refining Body, what about his current powerful body? Hehe...

"Good, let's go!"

Xing Yunzi spoke no further and ordered two strong men to protect him on his left and right side as he stepped into 9 Extremes Mountain.

"Rumble!"

Fang Yuan and the rest followed behind immediately and felt as

though they crossed a layer of the boundary of the spiritual territory.

Their expressions change at once!

"Indeed, there is a layer of restriction that suppresses us. The channel in which I absorb dream elemental force has been isolated, wait, no! I can't say its fully isolated, it is just restricted, like it used to be like a large river and now it is like a small stream. The elemental force which I have already accumulated is not affected. Is this The Ultimate Segregation?"

Anyone who cultivates would utilise magical energy!

Magical energy would combine with the person's' own mental strength, which would allow them to absorb elemental force from the surroundings to improve their body and hence, form divine techniques.

This was the case for spiritual knights! Dream masters too!

Just that the elemental force dream masters absorb were dream energy from a higher dimension, which is the dream elemental force. Dream elemental force had numerous powerful uses and could suppress everything!

Thus, to become a dream master, there would be a higher requirement for one's magical energy. Not everyone could become a dream master and those who could are gifted!

In Da Qian, the most talented and intelligent ones were dream masters! After dream masters, it was the spiritual array masters, the medicine master, the spiritual knights, the martial artists, et cetera!

Furthermore, there would be no problems absorbing dream elemental force in other worlds.

However, this was not the case in 9 Extremes Mountain!

"In this mountain, once dream elemental force is depleted, it

would be extremely difficult to replenish it! Hence, refrain from using spells! Have a sufficient supply!"

Xing Yunzi voice could be heard by the whole group.

"Elemental energy from the surroundings have been reduced by 99% too, there's practically nothing left... The martial artists are still fine as even if elemental force was hard to recover, they still have their powerful bodies!"

Fang Yuan glanced around and saw terrified expressions on most of the dream masters' faces.

"This is not even a situation where all their powers are isolated, they can still slightly use them...." Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan could not help but sigh as he thought, "Dream masters can actualised divine techniques, but in reality, these were all gifted by the heavens from the world with the natural source..... The Ultimate Segregation array is a good point that proves this. Unless a dream master cultivates until he does not require forces outside him, he would remain affected!!!"

By not requiring outside forces, it meant that one's own body contained everlasting powers. Even Sages could not achieve that!

After all, even their hollows needed to be rooted in a world to grow!

"Thankfully, other than inside 9 Extremes Mountain, no one else in Da Qian could cast such a powerful The Ultimate Segregation array. Else... martial arts would prosper in this world!"

Fang Yuan looked at the two martial artists in front of him.

These Wu Zongs were merely slaves in their dream masters eyes and were derogatorily called "strong men". There were also different levels of Wu Zongs amongst them.

For example, Zhou Tian's Wu Zongs were around 5th to 6th Meridian and so were Peng Xuan's. Whereas, dream masters

behind them only had normal or average Wu Zongs and some were even alone as they had none.

The two Wu Zongs beside Xing Yunzi were at least at the 7th Meridian and it could be felt as though they were about to forget their martial artist Divine Body!

Once they forge it successfully, they would be a True Divine martial artist and their status would rise exponentially! Even Xing Yunzi would not be able to order them around.

"Of course... martial arts is easy at the start and tough at the end. Even with the 12 Golden Gates, Wu Zongs who could go beyond the 7th Meridian were extremely rare. Even amongst 100 qualified Wu Zongs, there might not even be one who can successfully forge the Divine Body." Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan secretly sized up the two Wu Zongs beside Xing Yunzi. They appeared to be middle-aged but their bodies had a waning aura, it was evident that they were not young anymore. They might even have consumed pills that extended their life.

Martial arts cultivation was extremely tough, it required one to repeatedly exhaust his own body's potential and even abuse their body for short-sighted gains. Even if the Wu Zongs were nourished with elemental force, they also had to break through their Meridian and hence, their vitals would be damaged and their lifespan would be much shorter than spiritual knights and dream masters.

Unless they forged the martial arts Divine Body, transformed into this new body and thus cleansed their body, else, their lifespan would remain as short.

Except, such a leap was extraordinarily difficult, not many people could pass it.

"This current mission does not require us to do much, we just have to build a stronghold at the periphery of 9 Extremes

Mountain and then guard it!"

Fang Yuan pondered about the current mission.

In actual fact, if there was no interference from the royalties of Da Qian and the Hidden Dragon Guards, they only had to face the dangers of the mountain itself which were relatively simple as of now.

The forests were abundantly dense and the fog was especially thick. The entire group was silent and only the shuffling of feet could be heard.

"So quiet! No... it's too quiet, I am afraid there's something wrong!"

Immediately, Xing Yunzi's yell could be heard from in front, "We have a situation on our hands!"

"Woosh!"

Numerous green arrow-like shadows appeared from all sides of the surroundings.

Upon closer look, there were numerous small snakes spitting out their red tongues that were hiding inside the thick fog. They were perfectly blended in the background before they appeared and even Illusionary Divine dream masters did not detect them with their spiritual will. As they suddenly surfaced, it was as though thousands of arrows were suddenly launched at once!

"Puff!"

One of the dream masters who stood further away did not manage to evade fast enough. A layer of protective fluorescent armour appeared over his body but blood splurged out as the green shadow penetrated right through it with no signs of it slowing down!

"Elemental Piercing Snake? This kind of snake is extremely fast and its body is like metal and can pierce through elemental



defence! Be careful!"

Peng Xuan immediately warned everyone. He then shook his whisk and thousands of silver lines appeared and sliced the green snake at once which caused droplets of blood to spew everywhere.

After all, it was just a normal ferocious animal that launched a surprise attack, else mediocre dream masters would be able to manage it too.

"Kill!"

The strong men finally reacted and whipped out their weapons to fight and protect the dream masters.

Even so, a few shrieks could be heard as some dream masters were still attacked.

"Hiss! Hiss!"

Suddenly, a huge hole was torn from the ground. A green light emerged from it which charged towards Fang Yuan at the speed of light!

# Chapter 368: Blood Mosquitoes

---

"Hehe, you're seeking death!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as a streak of wind and thunder sword essence appeared, slicing the snake into half.

Wind and thunder were extremely quick! One slice was all it took to behead the snake, as blood started to spurt out.

As he stretched his hands out, the head of the snake landed on his head and was still squirming about.

"The Elemental Piercing Snake has extremely sharp fangs and poisonous venom!"

Beside him, Zhou Tian gave a friendly reminder.

"Thank you for your reminder!"

Fang Yuan placed his palms together and kept the snake's head in his sleeves before examining the surroundings.

The dream masters around were all powerful dream masters of the Realm Alliance. They could quickly gain their composure after the ambush, eradicated all the green snakes and started to account for their losses.

"Lord Xing Yunzi, we have 5 deaths. Among these 5 are 2 dream masters, Li Bai and Xia Ruo!"

Very quickly, they accounted for the deaths, and the news shocked Fang Yuan.

"Li Bai!"

Fang Yuan took a few steps forward. Indeed, there was the corpse of a young man with the wound of a fang on his forehead. He had an expression of willingness as his face appeared unnatural.

"Gather the corpses and bury them!"

Xing Yunzi did not even twitch his eyebrow.

These experienced dream masters were extremely acquainted with death and did not react too much to it.

This was especially so because Li Bai's backing had already died. Now that Li Bai himself had died here, the Li Family would surely go down, for they had no one else who would give power to the family. Therefore, they casually buried him and left everything behind.

There was a look of worry on Xing Yunzi's face, for his team had suffered such a loss as soon as they entered the mountains.

"Sigh... You, settle Li Bai's corpse. I will inform the rest..."

Seeing this, Zhou Tian sighed as he instructed a servant to clean up the mess.

Noticing the Fang Yuan had glanced over, Zhou Tian tried to explain. "After all, I have a little friendship with his father, Li Qin. But that is all..."

What Zhou Tian meant was that he was not willing to become enemies with Fang Yuan.

"They are all dead. Why would I care? Brother Zhou, you're thinking too much!"

Fang Yuan smiled magnanimously.

After all, the Li Family depended on Li Qin and pinned their hopes on Li Bai. Although both of them were gone, the Li Family still had plenty of resources. Many people would still try to establish relations with the family. By then, Zhou Tian's unofficial relationship with the family would not aid him in any way. In fact, if the family wasn't careful, they would end up becoming weaker and weaker.

Therefore, he did not care about much and continued to chat with Zhou Tian.

"There used to be many treasures in 9 Extremes Mountain. By

now, many dream masters have already explored it and the number of treasures that are usable is getting lesser and lesser. Therefore, the number of dream masters coming here to explore is also reducing... The two biggest dangers are the wild animals and the restriction on the mountain! With regards to the restriction, the alliance has already investigated and have found a way to bypass it by using a map and exploiting the weak points. However, the locations of the beasts are always changing, and that is the most troubling thing..."

Xing Yunzi calmly explained.

These beasts were not normal beasts. They were mutated beasts created by a powerful person! They harnessed many unique and special abilities. Coupled with the dangers in 9 Extremes Mountain, even a careless dream master might succumb to the dangers.

However, after this incident, the remaining dream masters were now more alert. They had no more encounters and finally, they had arrived at a lakeside.

"It's this region!"

Xing Yunzi held a round-looking magical equipment and started to confirm his suspicions. "The node which my alliance is looking for is here! Once we locate the crypt, we will need to map its location. I'll have to trouble everyone to inspect every corner of this lake."

With that, he started to give out similar-looking magical equipment to Fang Yuan and the few other dream masters in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. "By having the few of us to lead the groups, we will eliminate the chances of encountering a danger. Pick a direction and start working!"

"It's this item!"

Fang Yuan examined the ancient coin in his hands.

The coin was circular in shape and was made from pure gold. It was used as a form of currency by normal people and gave off the vibe of royalty.

"This is royal money made into a magical equipment by infusing people dao dragon energy and pure gold. Therefore, it can sense objects beneath the ground..."

After benefitting from Sage Changli's inheritance, Fang Yuan's experience and knowledge was much more than the average dream master, and had an even greater understanding of this place compared to even Xing Yunzi.

"This node is recorded in Sage Changli's inheritance. However, this piece of inheritance is with me. It seems like the Realm Alliance has predicted this node from the location of the other nodes, and have yet to ascertain the exact location of the node!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.

Xing Yunzi had deployed him to the East, which was where the node laid!

"Since I am fortunate enough, I shall explore it!"

With that, he led a group of servants and started his exploration.

Although there were many mutated beasts in 9 Extremes Mountain and many restrictions in place, the dream masters were in total control!

Along the lake, Fang Yuan and company had walked towards the East for a few miles. The fog from the surroundings started to thicken, restricting their visibility.

"Lord! There seems to be a restriction ahead!"

The other dream masters were only in the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Therefore, Fang Yuan was the undisputed leader. One of the dream masters had a look of anticipation on his face.

"Let's take a look!"

Fang Yuan took a few steps forward and the fog started to disperse, revealing a messy stone array. Besides the array, there was nothing else but a large patch of empty space. There was a faint yellow glow in mid-air, which meant that there were restrictions in place here.

"There should be something sealed within here. However, it looks like someone has already taken it away!"

Another dream master took a step forward and his face was filled with regret.

"It's been taken away?"

Fang Yuan focused as a hint of gold flashed across in his eyes.

The other dream masters thought of nothing after seeing Fang Yuan execute his special ability. After all, dream masters would traverse to many worlds and would have seen many different types of weird techniques. This was obvious just a simple sight technique.

Through his Fiery Golden Eyes, Fang Yuan could see much more.

As he felt his eyes heating up, he could see through the fog. A ripple appeared on the scattered rock array and the truth was revealed.

On the empty space, a few holes were now revealed. Black fog started to disperse out from it, which worried Fang Yuan. On the stone array outside, there was now an ancient-looking seal on it. The yellow glow formed many runes which gathered together to form a chain, restricting the black fog in within.

"There are good and bad breaths of the earth. If the breath of the earth is good, then the place will be a prosperous land. If the breath is evil, does it make the place a perilous land?"

This node made Fang Yuan feel uneasy and he could guess that

the breath of the earth here must have been evil.

"Lord? Do you have any findings?"

A female dream master walked forward and gave a look of concern.

She was rather pretty and started to tear up in her eyes. Her gentle voice was therapeutic.

'D\*mn! What does Pink Deity intend to do...'

The other dream masters were left speechless, and some of them were jealous of her.

After all, in such troubled times, one could ensure one's safety if one could win over the hearts of the powerful!

One's life would still be more important than honour and humiliation!

"Mmm, I can see the restriction. All of you, combine your powers and remove the restriction. Be careful!"

Fang Yuan acted and looked towards the ground. The ancient coin had some unnatural movements here. This might just be the location of the node!"

"I see! We'll do it!"

With his command, the other dream masters had to exert their dream elemental force and strike on the restriction above the stone array.

"Rumble!"

Even though they had held back and only used part of their dream elemental force, their combined force was enough to make the restriction vibrate, revealing a crypt which was emitting black fog.

"Lord, you're spot on!"

Pink Deity blinked and complemented Fang Yuan.

"Although we've broken the restriction, we still need to deliver one final blow!"

Fang Yuan could tell that although the restriction was passive, its defence was extremely strong, as though it was almost impossible to break through it.

Although the dream masters had combined their forces to break it down, it could quickly recover itself, forming a stalemate - These situations which would challenge the endurance of dream masters was the type that dream masters would want to avoid.

'The Ultimate Segregation and a depletion restriction? What a great pair!'

Fang Yuan thought to himself. As he waved his hands, the Water, Fire and Thunder swords appeared. With the power of the 3 Talents Array, Fang Yuan delivered a powerful strike towards the restriction.

"Rumble!"

As the entire place shook, the faint yellow glow shattered and smoke started to rise.

'He is indeed a powerful dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. However, by using up so much of his dream elemental energy, is he not worried that he might encounter danger later?'

The dream masters, including Pink Deity, were all shocked. Shortly after, an evil force was felt, which sent chills down their spines.

At the same time, the ancient coin in Fang Yuan's hand started to make a loud buzzing noise as though it had identified the location of the node.

"Buzz!"

"Buzz!"



"What sound is that?"

Amidst the smoke and fog, there was a buzzing sound and vibrations were felt, as though many birds were flapping their wings all at once.

Pink Deity was stunned. Within moments, she could see a dark-red cloud floating from the crypt, which started to spread out.

"What's that?"

Fang Yuan had an exceptional eyesight and could see immediately that the red cloud was a group of blood mosquitoes, and each of them were as big as a thumb. Their bodies were translucent as though they were carved from jade, and their proboscises were huge and scary. It was evident that this blood mosquito was a mutated variant.

At this point in time, the mosquitos gathered together and flew towards the group of dream masters.

"A dream of clouds and smoke!"

Pink Deity was the closest to the mosquitoes. With the wave of her hand, she summoned a pink fluffy cloud to shield herself.

"Pa! Pa!"

As the mosquitoes collided with the cloud, the cloud vibrated violently and the mosquitoes exploded into a mist of blood.

As the mist of blood became more and more concentrated, the defensive fog around Pink Deity started to thin out. Her face became pale with fear.

"Ah!"

The dream masters were managing well. However, the Wu Zongs accompanying them fell to the ground as they cried out loud. In a few moments, they had become a dried corpse!!

It was a gruesome death for them to die with their corpse completely dry, their bones wrapped in a thin layer of skin.

"Wow..."

Seeing this, Fang Yuan was speechless. "The Elemental Piercing Snake is able to pierce through the elemental force defence of dream masters and spiritual knights. Now, there are Blood Mosquitoes which can pollute elemental force and break through the defence of Wu Zongs... How many mutated beasts did this Sage create?"

With the flick of his finger, a streak of Thunder Sword essence flew out, slicing the air.

The Blood Mosquitoes which were around him disappeared in an instant, and even the mosquitos in the vicinity were all gone. With that, he had saved Pink Deity's life in the process.

"Thank you for saving my life, Lord!"

Pink Deity had yet to compose herself as she quickly hid behind Fang Yuan before expressing her gratitude.

It was a good position to hide. After all, the mosquitos which came near were sliced by the lightning streaks around and turned into ash. The other male dream masters started to feel jealous of her. However, they could only clench their teeth and suck it up for the fact that they were male.

# Chapter 369: Corpse Refining Technique

---

"What are you staring at? Quickly send the signal and get Lord Xing here!"

Although Fang Yuan could deal with the mosquitoes himself, he would rather not. With that, he shouted at the startled Pink Deity.

"I understand!"

Pink Deity snapped out of her trance and quickly activated her piece of jade. "Guardian Xing, I am Pink Deity. We have discovered a node at the East of the lake! We are now under mutant beasts attack, so please send help!"

"Oh? You've found it!?"

Xing Yunzi's excited voice was heard from her piece of jade. "Hold it a little longer, I'll be there in a jiffy!"

'There shouldn't be any problem!'

Fang Yuan glanced at the dream masters in his group.

Other than Pink Deity who had such an encounter, the rest who died were mostly Wu Zongs.

These Blood Mosquitoes seemed to prefer martial artists. Therefore, without the protection from the dream masters, these martial artists suffered severe injuries from the mosquitoes.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

Seeing that they were unable to penetrate any further, the Blood Mosquitoes started to fly into a different formation, forming a twisted shape which vaguely resembled a human's face. It had a sinister look and suddenly, the face let out a shrilling voice.

"Ah! Ah!"

A piercing female voice was heard; it was akin to the scratching sound of a fingernail on a piece of glass. Everyone's hair stood on

their ends and all of them started to have goosebumps.

"What's this..."

As soon as Fang Yuan focused, he could see an invisible vibration spreading out. Accompanying the vibration was a powerful force, and the nearby dream masters were all affected. Their eyes turned white and blood started to flow out of their ears. Some of them even fell straight to the ground, and it was unknown if they were dead or not.

More importantly, their defences were immediately crippled as soon as the powerful force reached out to them!

"Buzz! Buzz!"

At that moment, the lady's face started to disperse. Groups of mosquitoes started to spread out towards their defenceless preys, as though a hungry wolf had found a piece of meat in front of it.

"Thunder, strike!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. As he waved his hands, streaks of lightning appeared everywhere, striking the air. Ashes began to fall to the ground.

"Chi! Chi!"

As the mists of blood exploded, his depleted dream elemental energy was quickly restored.

"This is not bad... I'm afraid that even normal dream masters in the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine will not be able to take them down!"

Fang Yuan commented before striking another sword out. "Wind Sword, go!"

"Whooo! Whoo!"

A hurricane started to pick up speed and the Blood Mosquitoes around him were blown about, losing all control.

In fact, these mosquitoes were likely to find out that this enemy they were facing was not an ordinary enemy. They would have no chance to suck his blood and might even risk their proboscises. However, even so, Fang Yuan would not want to reveal his unusually strong physical body.

Just as the tables were being turned, a few streaks of light appeared. It was the arrival of Xing Yunzi, Zhou Tian and a few others.

"Who would know that there would be so many Blood Pitched Mosquitoes?"

Xing Yunzi stood in front. As he evaluated the scene before him, he stretched his palms out.

An invisible force started to increase in strength and Fang Yuan suddenly felt as though his body had become heavier.

"Bang!"

"Pa! Pa!"

With that, the Blood Mosquitoes in the surroundings started to fall to the ground like raindrops.

"Ha!"

Xing Yunzi shouted as his head started to transform into that of a beast. He now had a sharp and pointed mouth with a long and red tongue. With that, he swung his tongue out.

"Whoosh!"

The Blood Mosquitoes on the floor were swept clean.

"Is this... an anteater?"

Fang Yuan was speechless.

There was the Ultimate Segregation Array in the 9 Extremes Mountain. Therefore, anyone who wishes to enter would be required to have an extremely strong physical body. It was normal

for the guardian of this place to be a dream beast master.

After all, even if they were to deplete all their dream elemental force, he could still rely on his transformed beast form to survive for long periods.

What Xing Yunzi had displayed was a partial transformation, which was an extremely high-levelled technique.

After all, the magical beast which he was to transform to had to have the ability to eat up all these blood mosquitoes. In order for him to manage the Blood Mosquitos in his stomach, he needed to transform his stomach to that of another magical beast - Wenkong!

Of course, Fang Yuan felt uneasy as he looked at Xing Yunzi.

"Elder Xing, you're finally here!"

However, he could only keep his thoughts to himself. After all, Xing Yunzi was the strongest dream master here that was from the Realm Alliance. Therefore, Fang Yuan had to be humble in front of him.

"Hmm! Who would've thought that there would be a nest of Blood Mosquitoes here!"

Xing Yunzi transformed his head back into that of a human as he licked his lips. "Who are the casualties?"

"We have about 6 to 7 dead, and the rest are injured by the high-pitched vibration..."

Fang Yuan reported honestly.

"The more Blood Pitched Mosquitoes there are, the more powerful their high-pitched sound will be. We can do nothing about it!"

Looking at the crypt, Xing Yunzi nodded his head. "Who would've thought that there would be such a restriction over this node. Zhou Tian, Peng Xuan, Fang Yuan, follow me as we enter this crypt. As for the rest of you, prepare a campsite here and form

a protective array!"

Now that all the Blood Pitched Mosquitoes were gone, the crypt became visible to everyone as it laid in the middle of the messy stone array.

The black fog which spewed continuously from the crypt resembled the mouth of a weird looking beast, as though it was prepared to swallow a person whole.

"This is giving off a sinister vibe!"

As Zhou Tian arrived at the side of the crypt, he examined the wide opening and was speechless. "I'm afraid that normal humans or even dream masters might be affected after coming into contact with this corrosive black fog!"

"Let's go!"

With a long face, Xing Yunzi activated a layer of yellow scales around his body in an attempt to protect his vital parts. He led the group of them as they walked towards the crypt.

The crypt was extremely large and the tunnel ran deep. After a few yards, everything became pitch-black.

At the same time, glows appeared on the ancient coins in their hands, illuminating the entire place. This was a sign that they were getting closer and closer to the node.

The wall was not made of soil or rock. Instead, it was a wall of crystals, and in these crystals, there were red glitters.

"This is..."

Fang Yuan took a few steps towards the wall and started to examine it.

"Hehe... I see that you realised what it is. This is the larvae of the Blood Pitched Mosquitoes. This entire tunnel is, in fact, the nest of the Blood Mosquitoes... No wonder we can feel a sinister vibe everywhere."

Zhou Tian sighed. At this point in time, the thick black fog started to surround them and now, there was already a visible layer of fog.

What surprised Fang Yuan was the fact that there were no longer any dangers along the way in the tunnel. The 4 of them made it to the end smoothly as they arrived at a huge pool. In the middle of the pool, there was a pitch-black liquid which bubbled continuously.

"Ahh, this node is indeed within an extremely perilous land!"

Xing Yunzi shook his head and started to examine the surroundings.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan started at the pool of black water and was lost in his thoughts.

His physical body was already as close as the level of the 100th Refining Stage and he should be fine even if he were to take a swim in this pool. On the other hand, in the refining process, he might require a few poisons which can only be obtained in crypts like this for him to attain the 100th Refining Stage.

"What are you thinking about? Are you interested in this poisonous water, Fang Yuan?"

Peng Xuan gazed over with a look of anticipation as though he had found someone with similar interest. " This pool of black water is one of the most poisonous waters in the world, and even elemental force would corrode in it. However, it would be a good resource to use to refine corpses! Even if I were to throw in a most normal corpse, I might be able to get a [Yaksa](#) in return!"

"Refine a corpse?"

Zhou Tian seemed to have understood something as he tugged at Fang Yuan's sleeves. "I remember something. This Daoist Peng Xuan has a nickname, the 'King of Corpses'. It was rumoured that he had stumbled upon an extremely powerful corpse refining



technique in one of the small realms. Obsessed with this, he went on to modify it and refined a few Iron Corpses and Golden Corpses as his bodyguards, but unfortunately..."

Fang Yuan knew why Zhou Tian sighed at the end.

The Bronze Corpse and Iron Corpse were powerful and impenetrable. However, the same could be achieved with highly-skilled martial artists. In fact, martial artists were even agiler than the corpses.

With the Wu Zongs as servants, who would need to refine corpses?

"That's not true! Not true!"

Peng Xuan waved his whisk. "The technique of refining corpses is a study on its own. Even the refining of the Golden Corpse is only elementary. If I can really refine a Yaksa, then I will really be skilled. After all, the Golden Corpse has a simple mind but the Yaksa has the mind comparable to a normal human being. If I am lucky and I am able to refine and create the Drought Beast, then keke... it will cause a drought in a 3,000-mile radius, and I'm not lying!"

"Dream on!"

Zhou Tian rolled his eyes. "What Drought Beast do you think you are talking about? That is only in the novels..."

"That's not true! The Drought Beast exists..."

Peng Xuan started to look serious. "I don't think I'll ever achieve the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage in my life. However, if I am able to reincarnate into a Drought Beast, I will be able to lengthen my lifespan to live even longer than a Sage!"

"Forget about it! You've told this story to almost everyone you meet, and you're just finding new people to trick!"

Zhou Tian immediately rebutted. "Fang Yuan, don't take his

word. Everything he said was imaginary. In our world, we can at most refine a Golden Corpse!"

"Previously it is because I have limited resources!"

Peng Xuan gazed at the pool of black water and his eyes glistened. "If I can make use of this treasured place, I can surely refine the Yaksa!"

"Alright!"

Xing Yunzi, who was examining the entire place, turned his head around. "Don't make too much noise... As long as we succeed this time, in the future, no matter how long you guys like to stay here, you will be able to do so!"

With that, he flicked a purple-coloured ancient coin into the pool.

The ancient coin was made of gold, but this particular one was even more unique. It was translucent like a crystal and as soon as it fell into the pool of black water, it disappeared in a splash.

As Fang Yuan focused, he could see a purple figure floating about at the bottom of the pool. After a while, it stopped at a particular spot.

"It's here!"

Xing Yunzi seemed extremely excited. "Let's go!"

With the wave of his hands, a purple streak of light appeared. In the streak of light, there was a long needle. The needle flew into the water and through the hole in the middle of the coin which laid at the bottom of the pool.

"Rumble!"

It felt like hallucination as the entire crypt shook at the moment where the needle entered the hole!

'This is using the Dragon Searching Acupuncture Technique to search for the core of the node in the earth meridian...'

Fang Yuan started to think to himself. 'After this, we should be building an altar directly above this place to keep it under control and to detect anything from it, right?'

...

At the same time.

Outside the 9 Extremes Mountain, in an isolated room.

The room was extremely spacious and there was a bronze cauldron in the middle of the room. On the cauldron were 8 golden dragons facing in different directions.

"Pa!"

At this point in time, one of the dragons opened its mouth, spitting out a golden pearl which landed in the mouth of a golden toad below.

"Are the earth meridians changing?"

One of the old daoist guarding the place opened his eyes and moved his fingers in an attempt to predict something. "It's from the 9 Extremes Mountain... Since the dragon meridian is injured we will have to remedy it within 9 days. Otherwise, all hope would be lost!"

A Yaksa is a type of human-eating ghost.

# Chapter 370: Peace

---

Inside the messy stone array, 9 Extremes Mountain.

A boxy looking altar was already built above the entrance of the crypt.

Nearby it, the rites of numerous arrays surrounded the altar with numerous runes swirling around. There was a fierce and mighty aura to it.

Inside the altar, Xing Yunzi sat right in the centre. He was expressionless and spoke, "The altar has been built, now we just need to guard it for nine days and the mission will be completed. After that, we just have to leave a few men to check on it occasionally!"

Fang Yuan and Zhou Tian looked at each other and nodded.

There was no need for Fang Yuan and Zhou Tian to give excuses or fight to stay. From the looks in Peng Xuan's eyes, he was determined to be the one staying behind.

"Anyway, within these nine days, we might be ambushed by Da Qian's dream masters! We can't let our guard down..." Xing Yunzi gravely reminded. He then assigned Fang Yuan and the rest to take turns to keep watch while the others rest.

"No, wait... this 9 Extremes Mountain is the 5 Grand Organisation's land. Where are the people of Divine Lotus Cult and Evil Divine Sect?"

As Fang Yuan walked out the altar, a thought flashed in his mind, "Looks like... either there's more than one node in 9 Extremes Mountain or they are hiding in the dark, preparing to ambush the Imperial Court?"

The Realm Alliance suffered great losses due to the Hidden Dragon Guards previously, they would definitely want to seek vengeance.

Ne one knew if this was a bait.

Fang Yuan had never been afraid to judge those in the higher authorities with the worst intentions.

"Sirs, we have already finished building some houses nearby! Come on in and rest!"

Pink Deity was outside the altar and the moment he saw Fang Yuan and the rest, her eyes lit up. She went forward immediately to invite them to the houses and at the same time, gazed at Fang Yuan numerous times unintentionally.

"Haha... great!"

Zhou Tian laughed and gave Fang Yuan a look before walking away. Dream masters were powerful and there were no problems for them to be more easygoing in their private lives. Furthermore, Fang Yuan was young and virile, cough cough...

"Great!"

Beside the altar, a row of small houses was built with bricks. Fang Yuan entered his house and sat crossed legged as he looked at Pink Deity who followed in, "I understand your thoughts and I know you want me to protect you, but as someone who's painfully cultivating, I'm not interested in romance nor sensual pleasures. As long as you listen to me in 9 Extremes Mountain, I will protect you to a certain extent!"

"Yes, Sir!"

Pink Deity's cheeks turned slightly red as she replied, "I will pay diligently investigate and look for information to report to you daily!"

"She's smart at least!" Fang Yuan thought.

In actual facts, lust was not forbidden to Fang Yuan. It was just because he had indulged enough in Mainland and was already tired of carnal pleasures.

Now, it was not because he was not attracted to Pink Deity, but because after all, she was still a dream master. It was not good to be too involved with another dream master, especially during such times where war was imminent. Why would Fang Yuan have the spare thoughts to be involved with her?

"Very well, I will not treat my own people shabbily!"

Fang Yuan smiled and poured open his Mountain River Pearl. A few bags of Yellow Grain Rice came out from it and Fang Yuan then continued, "I'm not used to eating rough grains, you can cook and send these over to me for my daily meals and keep the rest!"

"Yellow Grain Rice?"

Pink Deity heaved a cold breath of air and almost fainted.

Although the Mountain River Pearl and Yellow Grain Rice were rare, it still matched Fang Yuan's position and status. Thus, Pink Deity would not have any negative thoughts about it.

Just that when she saw how rich Fang Yuan was, her intentions to seek refuge with him grew even more.

Fang Yuan was a young man with wealth and powerful cultivation, Pink Deity would be a fool to not keep close to him... Just that it was a pity that he was not very interested in her beauty.

Hence, Pink Deity was slightly vexed at such.

.....

7 days later.

It was totally calm near the altar, there were not even many beast attacks. This made the dream masters felt relieved.

Inside the meditation room, Fang Yuan sat crossed leg and analysed the earth meridian map left behind by Sage Changli in his sea of consciousness.

"There are over a thousand nodes in Da Qian and the 5 Grand

Organisations have already made arrangements at many of them. It might be possible that Da Qian did not care about this node..."

After many days of peace, it made Fang Yuan felt that way.

"Just that... I don't think the Realm Alliance is simply disrupting this earth meridian..."

Fang Yuan's face turned serious as he saw one of Sage Changli's manuscript.

"Dream masters are very powerful and can actualise many things. This is all possible due to the world where the natural source of dreams is from. Even a powerful being dream master at the Prominent Divine stage cannot set himself free from this... Hence, centuries of dream masters have been continuously chasing after this dream source world. However, none of them has ever succeeded before and thus, there are Sages who conclude that there is an "invisible net" in Da Qian world. This is because the fate and breaths of the earth in Da Qian were too strong and hindered the dream masters' search... In actual facts, this was only one reason and not the main reason!"

Sage Changli's manuscripts were all written in an ancient text that was more similar to talismans. After Fang Yuan spent lots of contributions points to buy a book from the Realm Alliance which could analyse the texts, he finally understood it in his own words.

"According to Sage Changli's deductions, Da Qian world's interference was only one small reason. Most importantly, that source world was simply too far away, it might not even be in the same dimension! Even Prominent Divine powerful beings can only passively receive its radiation and would not be able to find its source as their powers were not strong enough!"

"Hence, discovering the source of dream masters and breaking free from the "invisible net" were merely the most basic reasons. The most important thing was to obtain powers from the natural source which could break through everything!"

Fang Yuan's expression turned cold as he then thought of the arrangements the Realm Alliance made at the earth meridian.

Previously, he would have thought it was to simply destroy the earth meridian in order to destroy Da Qian. But now, with the numerous Sages' calculations, it was truly unpredictable.

"An energy sufficient to break through dimension?"

Fang Yuan pondered, "I guess taking other realms' natural source is not even enough, but... if it's Da Qian itself's natural source, it might be enough..."

Da Qian world was the strongest world Fang Yuan had ever seen, the energy of its natural source was dense and incomparable and even Ancient Realm was lacklustre compared to it.

Looks like the five powerful Sages amongst dream masters would definitely not miss this treasure, especially since they would want to progress further.

"Chaos is really bound to descend... in this world..."

As Fang Yuan was no longer confused, he immediately felt the deep and cold meaning behind all these.

Dream masters were high above others, they conquered and plundered numerous worlds and realms. In their eyes, even Da Qian was merely just a temporary stop for them.

In order to progress further and also seek for the natural source, they would not be hesitant in sacrificing an entire world!

Those crazies from Source Seeking Sect would definitely do that!

Even the Sage from Baize Mountain might not even oppose it.

In the eyes of the heavens, all lives were equal. In the eyes of the Sages, all commoners were equal.

Since they were all equal and since other worlds and realms could be sacrificed, then why not Da Qian?



"Unknowingly, I am now on the opposing side..."

Fang Yuan gave a wry smile and his eyes glistened, "Even so, the real methods are in the core of the inheritance... If I can fully master Sage Changli's secret inheritance, I might even be able to surpass all!"

...

"Sir?"

Suddenly, there was a knock on the door. It was Pink Deity.

"Come in!"

Fang Yuan expression turned gentle as saw the lady carrying a meal box with an expression meant to please.

"Sir, enjoy your meal!"

As she looked at Fang Yuan using the spoon and drinking it, she began to report on the situation, "Early in the morning today, the small group who went out to patrol was attacked by an Elemental Piercing Snake. One dream master and three strong men died..."

"Qing Yuan and a few other master masters secretly sneaked out to explore the movements of the nearby restrictions and I heard they found something. Although it was just a few of them, they were still part of the team, but even though Xing Yunzi seemed to notice it, he did not say anything..."

"Ok, I get it!"

As Fang Yuan calmly acknowledged, another cold thought appeared in his mind.

Such behaviour of doing personal work while on official duty was technically counted as neglecting one's duty, but since Xing Yunzi was surprisingly not disapproving of it, it explained why they did it.

"This mission is not only an obvious conquest, it is also a bait to lure the Hidden Dragon Guards and Imperial Court to react? In

order to let the other four organisations ambush and destroy them?" Fang Yuan thought.

The real plans were unknown. In the entire team, only Xing Yunzi would know the real rationale and plan.

"Although I don't even have many expectations left, such behaviours are still... disappointing!" Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Seeing such, Pink Deity felt coldness in her heart as even though she was exposed to many things, amongst the dream masters at the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine, only Fang Yuan felt the most mysterious and unpredictable to her.

....

"Haha... Brother Fang Yuan!"

At that moment, Zhou Tian's voice could be heard from outside. He then teased, "Am I interrupting?"

"No, come on in, Brother!"

Fang Yuan moved his hands and an invisible force opened the door. Zhou Tian walked in and took a quick glance at Pink Deity before he gave a facial expression all men could understand.

"I will take my leave!"

Pink Deity's cheeks turned pink as she bowed and left.

"Haha, did I interrupt you and your lady?" Zhou Tian asked teasingly.

"What, don't you know there's nothing between me and her?"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes and continued, "So what have you discovered that brings you here?"

Indeed, other than those lower tiered dream masters, Zhou Tian was one of those who sneaked out too.

"I shall tell you everything!"

Zhou Tian sat crossed legged as his expression turned solemn, "Two strong men and I were searching the surrounding areas these few days and we found the remnant of a restriction! I need your help!"

Zhou Tian was roping Fang Yuan in to share the rewards.

Whereas for Peng Xuan?

Ever since Xing Yunzi allowed him, this King of Corpses had been inside the crypt for days, unseen by others outside.

"Sure!" Fang Yuan thought for a while and agreed.

He then looked at Zhou Tian and contemplated, "In this current mission, other than Xing Yunzi and a few others, the rest were all those not as reliable ones like us or the weak ones. The motive of making use of others to get rid of adversaries was not too obvious... Feng Xinzi, Elder Smelter!"

Although Fang Yuan knew this situation was most likely brought about due to Feng Xinzi's jealousy, if the Elders did not approve, it would not be like that now.

Fang Yuan's gaze deepened as he fiercely made up his mind.

# Chapter 371: Elemental Refining Fruit

---

Half a day passed, in a location about a 100 miles from the messy stone array.

Fang Yuan walked alongside Zhou Tian as 2 other Wu Zongs followed behind.

"This is the place. I previously sent a Treasure Seeking Mouse out, and here is where it found traces of the Elemental Refining Fruit!"

Zhou Tian bashed through a few trees as he spoke.

As soon as they heard the name of the fruit, all of their hearts wavered.

The Elemental Refining Fruit was an Earth Grade treasure. However, it was not suitable for dream masters in the cultivation. Instead, it was a spiritual object used to strengthen one's martial arts.

This was especially useful to Wu Zongs in the Elemental Opening Realm for it would be able to assist them in triggering a breakthrough.

"According to the report from the Treasure Seeking Mouse, there are quite a lot of Elemental Refining Fruits there. It should be enough to assist Ah Long and Ah Hu to achieve a breakthrough and advance to the 7th Meridian!"

The powers of a Wu Zong in the 6th Meridian were vastly different from that of a Wu Zong in the 7th Meridian. At least, the minimum requirement to form the Divine Body would be attained.

Taking a quick glance at Ah Long and Ah Hu, Fang Yuan realised that their spiritual auras were indeed different. Their elemental forces were strong, and this would go to show that Zhou Tian did invest quite a lot in them. If they were to achieve a breakthrough, they might have a slight hope of attaining True Divine in the

future.

However, there was a confusion bugging Zhou Tian. "I've seen the map. The location of the Elemental Refining Fruit is no longer in the safe zone. Therefore, we might encounter more restrictions and dangers along the way!"

"This is why we need your help, Brother Fang!"

Zhou Tian patted his chest. "Of course, after we get the fruits, I will not forget your gratitude."

"Mmm, you can give me fewer Elemental Refining Fruits, but I will want to take its spiritual roots!"

Fang Yuan laid out his conditions.

"You want this spiritual plant? Of course, there's no problem in that!"

Zhou Tian immediately agreed, for he was not interested in these spiritual plants which would take over a hundred years to mature.

"That's a deal!"

Fang Yuan was elated. With his skill in Botany, he knew that he could reduce the maturity period of the spiritual plant. With that, he would have an endless supply of Elemental Refining Fruit!

Even if he would no longer require it in the future, he could still make use of the fruits to train up his servants.

The fog started to thicken.

As the few of them traversed through a small valley, strong gusts of wind blew from both sides. Spiritual light was glowing about, covering the entire sky and giving off a creepy vibe.

"Squeak!"

Zhou Tian fished out a mouse-looking spiritual beast. "It's up to you, Treasure Seeking Mouse!"

Fang Yuan closely examined the beast and realised that it was as

big as his palm. It had a red nose, green eyes, glittery fur and a few streaks of purple on its back.

After eating a few acorns, the mouse immediately laid on the ground, twitched its nose before scooting off in a particular direction.

"Let's go!"

Zhou Tian was excited as he waved his hands.

Among his servants, the one known as Ah Long, the 6th Meridian Wu Zong, led the way. The two dream masters followed behind, and Ah Hu guarded the back.

The 4 of them continued their way and arrived at the depths of the valley. They could see a calm-looking lake. The lake was small at about 400 square yards. However, it seemed extremely deep, and the surface of the lake was black.

On the walls of the lake, there were vines stretched all over. On these vines, there were green fruits the size of an apple and it gave off an aromatic fragrance.

"This is indeed the Elemental Refining Fruit!"

Zhou Tian was elated. "It is our fortune to be able to find this!"

"However, according to the laws of nature, there must be spiritual beasts guarding in the vicinity. Everyone, be on your guard!"

Fang Yuan appeared solemn as he gazed at the deep lake.

He could sense that something was hiding within.

"Ah Long!"

Zhou Tian licked his lips.

Ah Long gingerly made his way forward, arrived by the lakeside and stretched out his arm in an attempt to pluck the fruit.

"Splash!"

The water in the lake started to tremor as a huge splash emerged. From it came a black silhouette which swift flew out before striking down.

"Bang!"

Ah Long was already prepared. Without hesitation, he retreated. Surprisingly nimble, he leapt into the safe zone behind.

"Your lightness skill is not bad!"

Fang Yuan complimented him before turning his attention to the black silhouette once more.

It was a python as thick as a bucket and was about 20 yards long. It had many small scales which resembled black jade, and there was a faint purple glow around it. As it raised its head, its silvery eyes peered down coldly.

Furthermore, there was a tumour growing on its head which somewhat resembled a horn.

"Is this... the Silver Eyed Black Snake? How did it grow to such a massive size... and the tumour on its head..."

"It seems like the Elemental Refining Fruit is its forbidden fruit." Zhou Tian quipped.

"Hiss! Hisss!"

The massive snake had no reason to show them mercy. With the previous ambush attempt failed, it now turned aggressive and swung its tail out.

"Hmph! Water, rise!"

Zhou Tian exclaimed and the water in the lake started to rise, forming a wall of water in mid-air which blocked the giant python's path.

"Pa!"

With the flick of its tail, a hole broke through the water wall as

the python started to slither through the hole.

"It is indeed a powerful wild beast... ice!"

Zhou Tian exclaimed once more. The temperature in the surroundings started to fall and the water froze into ice!

"Whooooo!"

A chill breeze blew across, freezing the water wall into any ice wall and at the same time trapping the snake in within.

'Spiritual spells with a single thought. A dream spells master?'

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as he discovered Zhou Tian's background. It was the most common of all Illusionary Divine dream masters, the dream spells master.

It was rumoured that such dream masters would be able to actualise any spiritual spell which they had seen before, and they would be able to use it to alter reality. Every dream spells master would have mastered all 5 types of spiritual spells and would be powerful spell masters. Even spiritual knights in the Elemental Opening Realm would have to concede to them. Only True Elemental spiritual knights would be able to defeat a dream spells master. Otherwise, there would be no question of the outcome of a fight between a dream spells master and a spiritual knight.

"Hmm, this snake is ferocious. It seems to have the power of a 7th Meridian Wu Zong!"

Zhou Tian smiled calmly. "Ah Long and Ah Hu came on their own, they might not be able to defeat it!"

As cracks appeared on the layer of ice, instead of being worried, Zhou Tian was excited. "Brother Fang, how about some roasted snake meat for dinner?"

As he flipped his hands, flames emerged in the strong wind. Just as the black snake had freed itself from the ice, it began to burn in the flames. With that, it transformed into a huge flaming torch as



it squirmed about in pain.

Zhou Tian could control the elements with the flip of his palm!

Even in the 9 Extremes Mountain, a dream master in the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine was still powerful.

Seeing how Zhou Tian handled the snake, Ah Long and Ah Hu could only lower their heads in respect and they were once again reminded of how powerful their master was.

Even if they were to become a 7th Meridian Wu Zong, they would still remain as Zhou Tian's lackeys!

Seeing this, Zhou Tian felt satisfied. As the black snake fell to the ground, he started to give his orders. "What are you doing? Quickly harvest the Elemental Refining Fruits! Also, Brother Fang has requested for the spiritual roots of this plant. Be careful not to damage it!"

"Yes, Sir!"

The 2 Wu Zongs quickly agreed and went on to complete their assigned task.

"How... how do I deserve this..."

Fang Yuan sounded humble. After all, it was Zhou Tian and his subordinates which put in all the effort in getting the Elemental Refining Fruit, and Fang Yuan did nothing to help them.

"Haha..... Why not?"

Zhou Tian was generous. After all, Fang Yuan could attain the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage at such a young age and was even a 5th Leaf Cultivator. Therefore, it was worth it to establish good relations with him.

At this point in time, something happened!

As Ah Long and Ah Hu arrived at the walls of the lake and were about to pluck the fruits, a purple streak of light flashed past.

Ah Hu quickly retreated far away and was in a daze.

"Brother?"

Seeing his dazed look, Ah Long was worried and approached him.

"Ho ho!"

At this moment, Ah Hu's eyes started to turn bloodshot and purple veins started to grow on his face. As he shouted "Ho ho!", he struck his fist out with all his might.

The tables had turned!

Ah Long could only block with his hands. With that, he flew backwards and spat out a mouthful of blood, suffering a few fractured bones.

"Eh? What is this evil thing?"

Based on Fang Yuan's exceptional eyesight, he could see that the streak of purple light had entered Ah Hu's body before taking control over him.

Firstly, it was shocking that Ah Hu was so easily manipulated, considering that the both of them were 6th Meridian Wu Zongs which had the protection of their own elemental force and spiritual meridians.

Secondly, the foreign entity could immediately make use of Ah Hu's elemental force as soon as it took control of him. It was not simply taking over him and controlling his actions like a puppet.

"The Puppet Snake? Ah Hu is already dead! Quickly cremate him!"

It seemed as though Zhou Tian had recalled something as his expression changed. With the wave of his hand, two flaming tornadoes appeared. As the wind intensified the flames, the fire started to spread.

"Ho ho!"

Ah Hu continued to shout with a deep voice. Suddenly, the 6 spiritual meridians started to form around his body, forming a spiritual armour around him. With that, he started to charge towards Zhou Tian.

"Whoosh!"

He was extremely quick and created a strong gust of wind. As he ran swiftly, he split the flames and formed a long pathway.

"D\*mn it! I have limited dream elemental force now..."

Zhou Tian seemed troubled.

He had tried to show off as he killed the huge snake. With that, he had over-depleted his dream elemental force. It was not a simple task to restore one's dream elemental force under the Ultimate Segregation of the 9 Extremes Mountain.

"Leave this to me!"

Fang Yuan took a step forward. With an expressionless look, he flicked his fingers and a Thunder Sword flew out!

"Whoosh!"

As sparks of electricity dazzled around the sword, Ah Hu shouted. Spiritual light started to gather around his right fist. With that, he smashed down.

"Bang!"

The Thunder Sword trembled and veered a little off course. However, Ah Hu's hand was now charred and his bones were already showing.

"After all, this is not your own body. No wonder you wouldn't care about it..."

Fang Yuan flicked his finger once more as the Wind Sword was formed. "Wind and Thunder, kill!"

"Chi! Chi!"

The sword essences were released as the Wind and Thunder Swords formed two illusionary shadows which were green and purple. They started to circle Ah Hu, piercing and slicing him.

After a moment, the two swords came to a halt. Ah Hu, who was in the middle, was motionless. Suddenly, a piece of his meat fell off from his body.

"Whoosh!"

From the bloodied mess, a streak of purple light flew out.

"I'm waiting for you!"

Fang Yuan smiled as the Fire Sword appeared in his hands. With that, he struck the sword forward.

"Chi!"

With the glow of the fire sword, a thin-looking purple snake fell to the ground, split into two.

"It is indeed the puppet snake. This one has already cultivated to purple! Even we might succumb to its control if affected...."

Zhou Tian had an uneasy look on his face. Ah Hu was dead and Ah Long was severely injured. This expedition to look for the treasured Elemental Refining Fruit had cost him dearly.

However, he still had to force a smile on his face. "Thank you for your help, Brother Fang."

"It's nothing much!"

Fang Yuan walked forward, kept a few Elemental Refining Fruits and even plucked out the roots of the spiritual plant. With that, he kept everything in the Mountain River Pearl before examining Ah Long's injury.

This man was ambushed by his brother and was severely injured. He had to be sent back to camp to recuperate.

However, something happened in this instant!

# Chapter 372: The Might of the Body

---

"Rumble!"

A vibration was felt which seemed to come from the direction of the altar!

"What's that..."

Zhou Tian had felt the same thing as well and his expression changed. "Is the base under attack? Should we quickly return to help them out?"

"Are you joking?"

Fang Yuan looked at Zhou Tian with scepticism. "We are so far and yet we can feel the vibration. Who do you think is involved in the fight? A True Divine martial artist? Or a True Elemental spiritual knight? Or could it be a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage?"

"How is this possible? This is only a normal mission..."

Zhou Tian was confused. "Why would such powerful people get involved?"

'Because we are mere baits! The alliance has decided to use us to lure the Imperial Court to come for us, and we might even have the assistance of the other 4 Grand Organisations!'

Fang Yuan thought to himself, but did not intend on telling the truth to Zhou Tian.

"Against such a situation, we would be of no help. We should wait until the commotion is over before returning there to assess the situation.

He would not admit that he had only followed Zhou Tian out because he wanted to avoid the impending clash at the node.

Even if he were to be punished by the alliance, it would still be better than going head-on against the enemy and losing his life!

"Hmm, you make sense!"

Zhou Tian's expression changed once more. Finally, he weighed the options and realised that staying alive was more important. With that, he agreed to Fang Yuan's suggestion.

"Relax! The Imperial Court will at most destroy the altar and leave. After all, there are still other nodes around!"

Seeing how worried Zhou Tian looked, Fang Yuan tried to calm him down.

In fact, if Fang Yuan had predicted correctly, if the Imperial Court had decided to go down hard on them, the Realm Alliance would suffer great losses.

"Hmm?"

At this point in time, Fang Yuan and Zhou Tian suddenly felt something as they looked at the entrance of the valley.

A few silhouettes appeared. Their spiritual auras were strong as they started to surround them. It seemed as though they had bad intentions.

"The people from the Imperial Court?"

Fang Yuan sighed. Never would he have thought that he would still encounter them, even though they were so far away from the altar. However, these people were only the supporting forces and therefore, Fang Yuan and company would gain a little advantage over them.

"Fang Yuan, Zhou Tian. Both of you are dream masters in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Especially for you, Fang Yuan! You're young and yet you are already a 5th Leaf Cultivator. Not bad! Not bad at all!"

A few of them started to approach Fang Yuan and Zhou Tian. Their spiritual auras were vastly different. There were 3 martial artists and 1 spiritual knight. All of them wore the same uniform

and had a murderous look in their eyes.

"Who would've thought that the lake and the weird snake here would deplete quite a substantial amount of elemental force from you... I am Wang Chan from the Imperial Court, and together with me are 3 Wu Zongs. We are instructed to destroy you crazy traitors!"

The spiritual knight in front seemed to detest dream masters. Vaguely, 9 spiritual points appeared on his body. With a shout, a shocking spiritual pressure was felt.

9 spiritual meridians formed on each of the martial artists' backs, forming the illusionary figure of a giant behind them. Spiritual inscriptions appeared all over their bodies which resembled a battle armour.

"A 9th Tier spiritual knight? A 9th Meridian Wu Zong?"

Zhou Tian took in a cold breath as he slowly realised the power of the Da Qian Imperial Court.

These few people had the chance to attain True Divine and True Elemental, but they had no qualms in serving the Imperial Court to be deployed. This showed their hatred towards dream masters!

'What should we do?'

Zhou Tian glanced at Ah Long. 'I can take on this 9th Tier spiritual knight. However, under the influence of the Ultimate Segregation, I'm afraid that only dream masters in the 6th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would be able to take on the 3 9th Meridian Wu Zongs. However, Fang Yuan and I have already depleted most of our dream elemental force previously!'

"What else do we have to say to these traitors? Kill them!"

One of the martial artists took a confident step forward. "You dream masters have been troubling the people and always do whatever you wished. Now that we have the order to kill you, just cooperate and concede to us!"

The few martial artists had bloodshot eyes. It was evident that they had an immense hatred for dream masters, which made Fang Yuan laugh inside.

What the martial artist just said was true.

With such powers, dream masters had been in control over the past few thousand years. The resentment the people had for dream masters would have accumulated, but they were always kept under control forcefully by the more powerful dream masters.

Now that they had an opportunity to strike back, they would strike back hard like the eruption of a volcano.

"Fang Yuan, I'm afraid that the both of us will have to die here today!"

Seeing how the 4 of them could seal off their escape paths with much chemistry, Zhou Tian could only laugh helplessly.

"That may not be the case..."

Fang Yuan stripped his robes and cracking sounds were heard from his body. His martial arts spiritual aura started to explode.

"Eh? A 7th Meridian Wu Zong?"

One of the martial artists was stunned before breaking into a laughter. "Do you think you can escape with such a weak cultivation? Dream on! Kill!"

With a roar, the martial artist leapt forward. The spiritual aura from his spiritual meridian exploded and he seemed to harness the force of an entire mountain.

A 9th Meridian Wu Zong would have reached the peak of the Elemental Opening Realm and would be a single step away from forming the Divine Body!

Although it was one step away from the Divine Body, a 9th Meridian Wu Zong was, without a doubt, sufficient to deal with a 7th Meridian Wu Zong.



"Seven Murderous Ferocious Tiger Fist! Die!"

This martial artist was shockingly powerful. As his arms rotated, his fists struck out like cannonballs. Every fist had an immense amount of force and power. As he flew through the air, there was a faint roaring of a tiger.

"With the long knife, I will kill your soul!"

As the first martial artist started to pounce towards Fang Yuan, his companion also reacted. A Hundred Casted Knife appeared in his hands and there was a skull engraved on the handle of the knife. There was frost on the blade of the knife and as it sliced through the air, the glitter from the knife sealed Fang Yuan's escape path. The two martial artists' coordination was seamless.

Zhou Tian felt uneasy as his breathing hastened.

In the 9 Extremes Mountain, the dream masters would be at a disadvantage and their power would be reduced by a lot.

Now that they were in such a situation, even if Xing Yunzi was here, all of them would still suffer great losses!

It was not known as to where the Imperial Court sourced these Wu Zongs. All of them were highly-skilled and murderous and would not give any chance the moment they attacked.

"Restrict!"

He could not think so much.

Just as two 9th Meridian Wu Zongs were attacking Fang Yuan, Wang Chan started to execute his technique. A streak of spiritual light flew out and covered the entire surroundings. It was colourful and glittery as it formed the word 'restrict'.

Zhou Tian could feel the energy in the surroundings slowly being depleted. The original dream elemental force which he had in him also came to a halt. With that, his expression changed.

He knew that Wang Chan was using spiritual spells to force

himself to fight with all that he had. Wang Chan wanted to deplete Zhou Tian of his elemental force to force him into submission!

Just as he was being restricted, the final Wu Zong rushed forward and leapt towards Zhou Tian like a tiger. He arrived about 4 yards from Zhou Tian, raised his right palm up and activated all 9 of his spiritual meridians. Like an enraged dragon, his force travelled from his arm to his palm, and from his palm to his fingers. With that, his fingers struck down!

"Ah, I'll go all out!"

Zhou Tian's eyes turned bloodshot as he spat out a mouth of blood.

From his body, a piece of jade flew out. As soon as the jade came into contact with the blood, the golden runes on the jade started to glow and expand, forming a layer of defence around him.

"Metal blood, destroy!"

As the Wu Zong laughed, he exclaimed as his metallic claws strengthened by the spiritual meridian struck on the golden glow of protection.

"Bzzzzz!"

The golden glow shook before crumbling into sparkles and disappeared.

That was all Zhou Tian needed to retreat half a step back and avoid the killer move. As he felt the wind which was created from the swift claws, his face turned pale and he continuously retreated. "Disgusting..."

If this was outside, he would have restored at least half of his dream elemental energy and would be able to retaliate!

"Hmph, you're lucky to have survived the first strike. What about the next?"

The Wu Zong pressed forward and pressured Zhou Tian.

Suddenly, there were cries coming from the other side which attracted their attention.

"What's happening?"

Wang Chan thought that he had things under his control. Now that he gazed over to the direction where Fang Yuan was, he was devastated.

Fang Yuan was standing still and beneath his foot, there was a Hundred Casted Knife. The Wu Zong which wielded the knife was exhausted, but he could not pull the knife from Fang Yuan's foot.

The other Wu Zong was lying dead on the ground and his arms were bloodied as though a giant beast had trampled over his arms.

"Hmph, how dare you show off when you are so weak!"

Fang Yuan kept his fists and smiled.

He had 70 proficiency points for his Spirit! What kind of concept was that? It was overflowing with elemental force, much more than the limit of a 7th Meridian Wu Zong! Furthermore, he had a strengthened physical body!

The Wu Zongs did not know what they got themselves into. It was like throwing an egg on a rock, and the outcome as extremely predictable.

Just previously, Fang Yuan had simply stepped on the Hundred Casted Knife. Everything was held beneath his feet. With a simple punch, the arms of the 9th Meridian Wu Zong had exploded and his bones shattered. It was a gruesome death!

"Big brother! Quickly leave!"

The Wu Zong suddenly released the handle of the Hundred Casted Knife and rolled forward. Using his palms as a knife, he sliced towards Fang Yuan's waist.

"Dong! Dong!"

There was a loud but dull sound coming from Fang Yuan's body.

His shirt was torn, revealing a muscular body with a bronze hue. Peering down, Fang Yuan quipped, "Are you scratching my itch?"

"This is impossible... the martial arts Divine Body?"

The Wu Zong shuddered and momentarily forgot what he was doing.

In the next moment, a huge hand landed on his head with a great force.

"Bang!"

His head exploded like a watermelon. With that, Fang Yuan kept his fists and took in a deep breath. 'A simple fist and strong force within my blood is the true essence of martial arts!'

"Second brother, third brother?"

The remaining Wu Zong no longer cared about killing Zhou Tian as his eyes turned red.

"Quickly leave... this person is too powerful and we are no match for him!"

Wang Chan quickly snapped out of his trance and executed a few techniques in one go. "Stabilize! Bind! Seal! Kill!"

4 spiritual spells appeared which continuously struck towards Fang Yuan. Wang Chan wanted to buy himself some time to escape.

"It's no use! No use! No use!"

Fang Yuan walked up to him and paid no attention to the spiritual light as it struck his body. With a little vibration, the spiritual spells were nullified.

"Die now!"

Without any fancy techniques, Fang Yuan came to Wang Chan and struck out a simple fist.

"You!"

How scary was it to deal with Fang Yuan, who had a strengthened physical body? Even before Wang Chan could finish his sentence, his body exploded!

It exploded! All of his defences were useless. His body exploded into a mist of blood and he turned into a bloodied mess.

"Keke... No one would've thought that you had attained such a level in martial arts. The three of us brothers are utterly impressed!"

Witnessing this scene, the final Wu Zong felt a chill down his spine and tears started to well up in his eyes. "Heaven... why are you so kind towards these traitors? I can't believe it!"

"Chi!"

He was a reckless person. Knowing that Fang Yuan would not let him go, the Wu Zong bit his tongue, spat out a mouthful of blood and killed himself.

# Chapter 373: Killing Spree

---

"This..."

As the mountain breeze blew across the valley, Zhou Tian gazed at the few corpses before him, speechless.

How did the highly-skilled people of the Imperial Court, a 9th Tier spiritual knight and 3 9th Meridian Wu Zongs, die in front of his eyes so easily?

"Fang... Brother Fang!"

Looking at Fang Yuan, he started to stumble on his words. "Have you really formed the Divine Body and attained True Divine?"

Looking at Fang Yuan's power, there had to be only one explanation.

"True Divine? I'm not that powerful yet!"

Fang Yuan turned around and smiled sheepishly. However, the fact that he had killed the 4 of them so easily just now still made Zhou Tian unable to speak a single word.

'Through the encounter just now, I now know his martial arts ability as well!'

Fang Yuan clenched his fists. 'Even in the outside world, without the effects of the Ultimate Segregation, I am still able to win anyone that's not a True Divine!'

Furthermore, after refining his blood with that of the witch's, his physical body was also comparable to that of a True Divine and he would stand a chance against any True Divine as well!

'Unknowingly, my martial arts has improved tremendously and it is slowly becoming as powerful as my dream master's ability... Or it might even be more powerful already.'

'This kid...'

Zhou Tian looked down. He could feel that the commotion from afar was beginning to settle down as well, and thoughts ran wild in his mind.

'The alliance might have intentionally placed us here as bait for us to be ambushed, but this Fang Yuan... he has the ability all along and yet chooses to conceal it. He is indeed dangerous and unpredictable!'

"Sir, what should we do next?"

Zhou Tian humbly enquired. He already regarded Fang Yuan as a True Divine.

At least, in the harsh environments of the 9 Extremes Mountain, Fang Yuan was comparable to having half the power of a True Divine!

"It's the same plan. We shall observe... Now that we have killed these few leaders, we can continue to patrol and wait to see if anyone else will approach us. It will be a big accomplishment for us to kill them.

Fang Yuan chose the option which favoured him.

"This is... good!"

Zhou Tian promptly agreed.

Fang Yuan's future was limitless. With that understanding, he knew he had to establish good relations with him.

...

At the base near the messy stone array.

Smoke billowed in the air as the entire altar shattered into many pieces, revealing a pitch-black underground hole.

In the surroundings, a few dream masters and Wu Zongs laid on the floor and their blood stained the ground.

"Kill!"

Groups of martial artists in black robes appeared. They were all in the Meridian Opening Realm as they forced their way into the base.

"Strike!"

A dream master waved his hands and a layer of fog appeared. In the fog, a few icicles appeared as well.

A few martial artists succumbed to the attack and a few holes were pierced through their bodies, spewing blood all around.

"Hmph... the few of you are just servants. How dare you fight against your master?"

This dream master laughed. Suddenly, a big hole appeared beneath him. A Wu Zong draped in yellow robes appeared. Wielding a sword and swinging it around, it resembled the tongue of a snake. With that, he went straight for the dream master's throat.

"You..."

A layer of icy armour appeared over the dream master's body. However, it was too thin and the sword managed to pierce through it, making its way to the throat and piercing through it as well.

'What a pity... If this was outside, how would this even happen?'

The dream master's mind was filled with thoughts of unwillingness before he fell squarely to the ground.

If this was outside, he could quickly restore his elemental force and the icy armour would be able to at least withstand the piercing of a thin sword.

"Great! You're indeed the powerful Sword Burrower, Wang Tong!"

The few Wu Zongs around started to cheer.

"If not for the Anti-dust Robe given to me by the Imperial Court, I will not be able to succeed so easily!"



Wang Tong gave a humble smile before gripping tightly on the thin sword in his hands, which resembled a spiritual snake. "Dream masters are overbearing! They have created chaos everywhere they go and treat martial artists like us as servants. We need to let them get their just desserts!"

"You're right!"

The few Wu Zongs cheered in unison as they started to cry tears of hatred.

However, it was inaccurate to say that dream masters were evil and overbearing. It was simply the fact that with dream masters around, other professions would never get to shine.

Furthermore, being more powerful, dream masters would be able to get their hands on more resources.

Therefore, considering the rarity of spiritual lands and prosperous lands, how would the other martial artists and spiritual knights survive if all of these rare resources belonged to dream masters?

Therefore, they started to develop a hatred for dream masters and all of them came out once they caught wind that the Imperial Court was about to wage war on dream masters.

"Die!"

A few martial artists roared as the spiritual meridians on their bodies started to glow. In a flurry, their enemies were sliced and diced into many pieces, revealing the dream master which was being protected in the centre. "Please spare me..."

"Chi! Chi!"

The swords did not stop. With a few slices, the dream master was sliced into 5 pieces.

"Are these people from the Imperial Court?"

The group of Wu Zongs made their way into the crypt and

created a commotion as they entered. With that, Peng Xuan came out. With the wave of his right hand, a handful of golden-coloured sand flew into the air and transformed into streaks of lightning. It was a powerful move indeed.

This was his famed magical equipment, the 'Golden Steel Thunder Sand'. It was made from 12,900 grains of black sand and refined by elemental force. Afterwards, it would go on to seal each and every lightning in it to become gold in colour. If thrown at the enemy, the streaks of lightning would be released at the same time. Although it would not be as powerful as a heavenly tribulation, it was powerful in its own way and hard for anyone to even defend against it.

"How timely it is for Lord Xing to leave and for Fang Yuan and Zhou Tian to have yet to return!"

Although he was obsessed with the technique of refining corpses, he was not stupid and could detect that something was amiss.

At the moment where he released his Golden Steel Thunder Sand, 3 Golden Corpses emerged from the crypt. They had ferocious looks on their faces and was entirely gold in colour. They were impenetrable as they advanced out of the crypt.

"Eh? A dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage?"

Such a combat power immediately piqued the interest of the few 9th Meridian Wu Zongs and spiritual knights around.

"Aw! Aw!"

The Golden Corpses shrieked. They were unafraid of death and their nails were sharp and poisonous. Effortlessly, they managed to kill and formed a path in their wake.

However, as soon as they reached the end, 2 of the 3 Golden Corpses were already beheaded.

"Hmph... The Imperial Court of Da Qian, just you watch out.

How dare you destroy my Golden Corpse! I will take revenge for them!"

Peng Xuan heaved a sigh before throwing out a feather. "The Thousand Feather Burrowing Technique..."

The feather was a pristine white and had a translucent spiritual glow to it. It was obvious that there was some sort of escaping burrowing technique sealed in the feather. With his chant, the feather was about to be activated.

"Hmph! Are you thinking of fleeing?"

A tall figure appeared behind Peng Xuan.

This person was shockingly skilled to be able to sneak up to a dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

"Aw! Aw!"

The remaining Golden Corpse was filled with fear. With a weird voice, it leapt forward but was being punched away. His entire head was punched into its thoracic cavity as it fell to the ground, motionless.

"Chi!"

Peng Xuan was stunned. Looking at the bloodied hand which appeared before his chest, he gave a pitiful look. "A True Divine martial artist? A captain from Yanwu Court? What a pity... strike!"

"Whoosh!"

As the glow of the feather descended on Peng Xuan, it covered him inside. Instantly, he became a streak of light and flew away.

"Hmmm? The burrowing technique of a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage?"

The tall figure was stunned. As he gazed at the disappearing Peng Xuan and the black heart which was squelching in his hand, he revealed a sinister smile. "This is interesting... Did he transform himself into a zombie? No wonder it is able to survive after my

punch... What a lucky fellow!"

"Pa!"

As he tightened the grip on his hand, the heart exploded into a mist of blood.

"Capital leader!"

The other martial artists and spiritual knights quickly settled their respective targets before bowing respectfully. "We have cleared this entire base. In total, we've killed 15 dream masters and 37 Wu Zongs!"

"What a pity. Xing Yunzi is a sly fox and has already left long ago. There are another 3 dream masters in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, but none of them is here... It is rumoured that the Realm Alliance are lax in their rules, and that is indeed true! Quickly destroy this place! Let's leave!"

The capital leader used a clean cloth to wipe his hands as he calmly gave out his orders.

The Imperial Court had long known that the 9 Extremes Mountain was all along a trap. However, with the competent Hidden Dragon Guards and other skilled personnel, they could afford to take the bait and escape.

However, little did they know that the dream masters of the Realm Alliance were all sly. Although they had accomplished their mission, they only killed a few non-essential personnel and were therefore unsatisfied.

"Yes, Sir!"

The Wu Zongs knew that he was powerful and therefore quickly agreed before making their way down the crypt.

Not long after, there was a faint roar of a dragon. The entire crypt started to crumble and within moments, it was buried underground. There were flames burning all around the base.

...

"Wow... This is such a pitiful loss. I can't even bear to witness it..."

After a long while, Zhou Tian and Fang Yuan finally returned and destruction was all they saw.

Many of the dream masters and Wu Zongs had their heads severed and stacked up, forming a small hill. It was a sign of taunt.

"There were all accomplished people, but now, all that's left of them are bones..."

Fang Yuan examined the unjust looks on their faces but did not manage to find the heads of Peng Xuan and Xing Yunzi. With that, he shook his head.

They were all smart and cunning people to begin with. Therefore, they would not blindly sacrifice themselves, especially for the sly Xing Yunzi.

Looking at things, it seemed as though these two powerful dream masters were tipped-off and had already escaped long ago to leave the remaining dream masters to fend for themselves.

"Fang Yuan! Zhou Tian!"

A few streaks of light suddenly appeared. They carried familiar spiritual auras with them. As they arrived at the base, they transformed into a few dream masters with desolate faces.

Taking a closer look, Fang Yuan realised that Xing Yunzi was leading them and accompanying him was Feng Xinzi.

"Where were you when the Imperial Court attacked?"

Xing Yunzi asked coldly. "While we were fighting with all our lives, where were you?"

"Of course in a fight as well!"

Fang Yuan retorted with confidence. "While I was patrolling with

Zhou Tian, we had detected traces of Wu Zongs. We chased them to over 30 miles from here and we finally killed the 4 of them! Their heads are here!"

Zhou Tian retrieved 3 heads. They were the heads of 9th Meridian Wu Zongs and their spiritual auras were indeed terrifying.

They could not lie about this, for there were techniques in this world which would allow one to retrieve information from a severed head.

"9th Meridian Wu Zongs?"

Feng Xinzi examined the heads and exclaimed.

"What? All three of them?"

Xing Yunzi's expression changed. If these three Wu Zongs were to combine forces and attack him together, he knew that he would not be able to escape.

"Not just that, there was another 9th Tier spiritual knight as well. However, it was a pity that his head was smashed beyond recognition..."

Zhou Tian remarked.

He was clear that he would stand by Fang Yuan's side. Therefore, he had to cover up for Fang Yuan and help him as much as possible.

After all, chasing after enemies and leaving one's position of duty were very different things.

"Keke... Not bad!"

Feng Xinzi forced a smile. "To think about it, both of you have accomplished something during this mission. I will report it to the alliance on your behalf..."

# Chapter 374: Cleaning Up

---

"Why are you here, Feng Xinzi?"

Fang Yuan turned his attention to Feng Xinzi and smiled.

"I am instructed by the alliance to meet you..."

However, in reality, the 5 Grand Organisations had laid a trap and Feng Xinzi was the representative of the Realm Alliance. He had specially journeyed here to see how Fang Yuan would have ended up but instead, he was faced with a surprising outcome.

"Oh, thank you!"

Fang Yuan smiled as though he had taken Feng Xinzi's word for it. "Since that is so, now that our mission is complete, I shall take my leave and return to the prosperous land, right?!"

"That's right! That's right!"

Zhou Tian added on without hesitation.

The dangers which he had experienced in his mission had led him to reminisce about the peaceful times he enjoyed before all of this happened.

"I'm afraid that we will have to discuss this!"

Feng Xinzi rebutted as Xing Yunzi stood out. "Cough cough... although the both of you have killed the highly-skilled enemies, the fact is that the crypt has been destroyed and the altar has been gone to waste. Therefore, the mission is still incomplete."

"What?"

There was a look of anger on Zhou Tian's face. "We have killed 3 9th Meridian Wu Zongs and a 9th Tier spiritual knight. We are now exhausted and our energy and dream elemental forces are depleted. How will we be able to stop this destruction? Aren't you a little harsh, Lord Xing?"

"Since this is the mission objective, what can I say?"

Xing Yunzi waved his hands with a cunning look in his eyes.

"Feng Xinzi, what about you? What do you have to say about this?"

Fang Yuan paid no attention to what Xing Yunzi said as he directly pressured Feng Xinzi to answer.

"My views regarding this... is that we should follow the rules set by the Realm Alliance. Therefore, we shall go ahead with Xing Yunzi's suggestion."

Feng Xinzi calmly replied. Unknowingly, he felt a little fear as he looked at the severed heads on the floor and Fang Yuan's composed look.

"Alright, since this is the case, we shall wait for the alliance to decide!"

Fang Yuan was straightforward. As soon as he forced Feng Xinzi to make a stand, he waved his hands and together with Zhou Tian, they transformed into two streaks of light and flew into the clouds.

There was an awkward silence.

After a long while, Xing Yunzi spoke. "This person is able to kill a few 9th Meridian Wu Zongs. His ability is much stronger than mine and he is becoming as powerful as an elder... My nephew, it is not worth it to go against him!"

"I know!"

Gazing at the severed heads on the ground, Feng Xinzi laughed. "I cannot control my jealousy. After all... I have gained wisdom at 3 and started to cultivate as a dream master at 5. All I ask for is an uncluttered mind. I thought that I have already achieved it but now, I am being haunted by jealousy once more."

"When I first met him, he was only a newly advanced dream master in the Illusionary Divine stage. I even thought about



helping him. Now that he had already reached the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, I am only filled with jealousy for him and even more so now..."

It was not an easy thing to witness a junior overtaking him in terms of cultivation.

"Furthermore... I am against him for the sake of the sect, and not for my own personal agenda!"

As he continued to reason, his voice became increasingly louder. "The alliance needs capable people. This person is obviously capable but he has chosen to deny responsibilities. He even left his position of duty, which shows that he is not a loyal person!"

He, however, did not mention how he had planned for Fang Yuan to be deployed here as a bait.

"With such unethical actions, the more powerful he is, the more we cannot allow!"

Feng Xinzi's eyes glistened as he spoke with a vibe of righteousness.

Beside him, Xing Yunzi was speechless.

He was indeed a talent to be able to twist facts to such an extent!

...

On the other side.

Two streaks of light flew out from a valley.

As soon as they left the region of 9 Extremes Mountain, Zhou Tian let out a satisfactory exclamation as though he was freed of shackles.

He would never want to experience the inability to use his abilities under the Ultimate Segregation ever again.

"Zhou Tian, let's part ways. What do you think?"

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath as dream elemental force was

slowly restored in his actualised dream world. Slowly, his 8 Gates Sword Array started to shimmer once more.

"This... Alright, Sir, please be assured that I will not reveal anything about your secret!"

Zhou Tian sounded solemn as he begun to swear to the heavens.

Dream masters were superstitious about these things and they knew that they would be bounded by the oath they made in certain ways.

"It's up to you..."

Fang Yuan was speechless. If he really wanted him to swear upon an oath, or if he were to decide to do anything to Zhou Tian, he would have done it in the 9 Extremes Mountain.

Since he had already spared Zhou Tian's life, he was not worried that Zhou Tian would go around spouting nonsense.

It also meant something if Zhou Tian could keep the secret of Fang Yuan killing the 3 9th Meridian Wu Zongs and the 9th Tier spiritual knight.

However, there was no more meaning in acting weak.

Sometimes, it would be better for Fang Yuan to reveal his true power so as to instil fear in others.

After all, now that the war was beginning to heat up, if the alliance were to treat him like a normal dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, he might be randomly deployed to dangerous places as bait again.

He had previously concealed his true ability in order to protect himself. Now that he had revealed some of this true ability, it was also to protect himself.

At least by doing this, Feng Xinzi would not treat him lightly any more. He would have to undergo an open discussion with the elders and this would buy Fang Yuan some time.

After all, with regards to Fang Yuan's martial arts, he was already considered half a True Divine. His prowess was already among the strongest few in the Realm Alliance.

'With rights come obligations! With martial arts comes respect! Anyway, since I have the appointment as guardian and a mission, and considering that I have revealed some of my true ability, I'm sure the alliance would not touch me without any good reason... This is also one of the rules of the organisation! How can they deal with their members without any good reason? Are they not worried that people would regard them as unethical?'

'Now that I have displayed some of my power and have fallen out with Feng Xinzi, I will be able to cause Elder Smelter to worry... If he continues to plot against me, I can look for other factions, for instance, Green Wood!'

With that, he would have the foundation and reason to leave the faction.

He could also make use of this opportunity to improve his cultivation further while the alliance would remain clueless about his actual cultivation.

This was not his maximum potential. He could attempt to form the martial arts Divine Body and attain True Divine!

"I'm afraid that other Wu Zongs, even those with the 9th Meridian, would find it extremely hard to form the Divine Body because they do not have enough resources. However, if I cannot form the Divine Body, I'm sure no other martial artists would be able to do so."

His own body was only a little weaker than the martial arts Divine Body. Additionally, after receiving the inheritance from the witches, he had the resources and knowledge and it was extremely feasible for him to form the Divine Body.

By then, as a True Divine, he could go head-on against Elder

Smelter. Only at that stage would he be able to ensure his survival in the impending tumultuous period and be the biggest winner!

...

"What? Are you saying that that kid is close to attaining True Divine?"

Within the Dream Realm, Feng Xinzi knelt on the ground and explained everything. Finally, he lowered his head. "I am not lying. Based on the severed heads and the evidence found from the place they fought, that person is indeed close to attaining True Divine. Furthermore, he might even stand a chance if he were to go against a True Divine in the 9 Extremes Mountain!"

Fang Yuan's strong physical body meant that he did not require the support of martial arts elemental force. This would mean that he would gain the upper hand in the 9 Extremes Mountain. With regards to this, even other normal True Divines would be disadvantaged.

"If this is true... this is troubling!"

Elder Smelter twitched his eyebrows. His started to gaze at him with an unfriendly look.

To think about things with a calm mind, it was logical for Elder Smelter to be closer to Feng Xinzi because of their familial ties. However, now was a time of war and every fighter was equally important, and even more so for highly-skilled fighters! This would affect the outcome of the war!

However, they had already missed the opportunity. They had thought that Fang Yuan was a normal dream master in the 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine and even wanted to squeeze him dry.

Now that he had displayed such power, it would mean that within the alliance, only the elders would be able to deal with him. If they continued to pressure him, he might just join the enemy!

If Fang Yuan were to leave the Realm Alliance, he would be

hunted down by all the dream masters of the alliance. Therefore, he would not be so stupid as to do it. However, he could just simply look for another faction and another elder.

It would be the fortune of other factions to easily gain such a powerful dream master.

If that really happened, Elder Green Wood and the rest might just mock Elder Smelter.

"Regarding this incident... you've handled it poorly!"

Although Elder Smelter sounded calm, in the ears of Feng Xinzi, it was as shocking as thunder. His limbs turned to jelly.

Feng Xinzi knew that if this elder were to act up, he might gladly sacrifice himself in exchange for Fang Yuan.

An alchemy master at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage was indeed valuable.

However, how could it compare to a dream master who was about to attain the True Divine?

'This... I can't believe it!'

Feng Xinzi could predict that this was an extremely possible outcome. With that, he started to panic. "Elder... Fang Yuan has unparalleled martial skill and he refused to display it all this while. This goes to show that he has been having his reservations! Furthermore... he has been cowardly hiding in the prosperous land and is all this while unwilling to help Elder in the war!"

What Feng Xinzi was trying to convey was that although Fang Yuan was powerful, he had his own plans and ulterior motives and therefore could not compare with Feng Xinzi's loyalty and willingness to serve.

"Hmmm... you're right!"

Elder Smelter stroked his beard. "Pass a message to him and make it sound a little more respectful. Tell him that I want to meet him!"

"Yes!"

Feng Xinzi left the hall, disappointed. He knew that he had failed to convince Elder Smelter with his reasoning.

At the same time, a deep-seated jealousy started to take over him.

...

Outside the 9 Extremes Mountain, Fang Yuan did not leave. He found a hiding spot for himself and settled down, surviving on Elemental Refining Fruits and practising his martial arts. At the same time, he was hearing out for news.

"Based on Liu Mengmei, the 5 Grand Organisations have come together and used us as a bait to trick the Imperial Court. However, that plan did not succeed... Although they have managed to destroy the messy stone array, all the highly skilled dream masters have escaped and they failed to capture even one dream master in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Instead, they had suffered heavy losses as well... However, the Imperial Court seemed to have won a few battles outside the 9 Extremes Mountain, and that made up for their lost in the 9 Extremes Mountain!"

As he took a large bite from the spiritual fruit, he gazed at the 9 Extremes Mountain with a fire in his eyes. "This is a perilous territory to dream masters, and a dangerous place to spiritual knights and Wu Zongs. However, it seems like it is a huge plot of prosperous land for me!"

Everyone was afraid of the Ultimate Segregation in the mountains. However, Fang Yuan's physical body was extremely strong and required no external sustenance. Therefore, he would not feel any restrictions at all in the mountains.

# Chapter 375: An Agreement

---

"This Elemental Refining Fruit is indeed a treasure for Wu Zongs! It is highly beneficial for one cultivating in the Meridian Opening Realm!"

After consuming the spiritual fruit and cultivating for a few days, Fang Yuan's martial arts progress had skyrocketed.

After all, he had a strong foundation in martial arts to begin with and had the special ability to view his stats and experience bar. Together with the spiritual fruit, his cultivation in martial arts quickly advanced and not long after, he was already about to form the 8th spiritual meridian.

"The spiritual fruit and the experience bar are just assisting in my cultivation. The most important factor is my extremely strong physical body. With it, there would be no more bottlenecks and cultivation will become extremely smooth!"

Fang Yuan knew that his strong physical body was already comparable to that of a True Divine. His journey of cultivation from then on was a smooth one.

He had quickly advanced through the various meridians in the Meridian Opening Realm.

As soon as he noticed that the experience bar for his Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique was 90% filled, he became hasty and as his eyes glistened, he quickly ate an Elemental Refining Fruit.

"Burp!"

As soon as he finished his last spiritual fruit, he could feel an immense warmth filling up his dantian. The energy which gathered there felt like a river which was about to overflow.

Normal Wu Zongs, when faced with such a situation, would not be able to withstand it for their dantians would not be able to hold up against such stress. This was even so for 8th and 9th Meridian

Wu Zongs. If they were to forcefully let it happen, their bodies would explode.

However, to Fang Yuan, his body was extremely hardy. He would at most experience the popping of his veins before everything would revert back to normal.

"Chirp! Chirp!"

On his back, the 8th spiritual meridian was completely formed. Together with the other meridians, they formed a mysterious illusionary figure.

This figure was extremely large like a giant. However, it had a weird shape as it had a pair of wings on its arms, as though it was about to fly.

Furthermore, there were faint grey inscriptions forming all around his body like feathers, giving his physical body a layer of spiritual armour.

"The Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique is now at its peak!"

Fang Yuan clenched his fist and immediately, the illusionary figure behind him did the same. "I can feel that as long as I am willing, I will be able to form the Giant Spiritual Divine Body and enter the realm of True Divine!"

The Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique has its foundations in the Yang Family's Qian Kun Giant Spiritual Technique. It had the potential to form 8 spiritual meridians and form the Giant Spiritual Divine Body!

Both martial artists and spiritual knights alike would be able to attempt to breakthrough to True Divine or True Elemental respectively once they had formed the 7th Meridian or at the 7th Tier. However, the potential of the prematurely-formed Divine Body would be much lower than if they were to attempt the breakthrough with the 8th Meridian or 8th Tier. Most importantly, the chances of forming the Divine Body prematurely



were extremely low!

"With a strong foundation, it is only a matter of time one will be able to attain True Divine... However, the Giant Spiritual Divine Body does not seem satisfactory enough..."

Fang Yuan took a quick glance at his stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 96

Spirit: 76

Magic: 60

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (8th Meridian)

Technique: [Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique (Grade 8) (100%)], [Hundred Poison Golden Body (10th Refining)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (1%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"I must form the strongest possible Divine Body by advancing only when I have formed the 9th Meridian!"

He came to a conclusion as soon as he glanced at the stats of his Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique and Hundred Poison Golden Body technique.

After combining Sage Changli's inheritance and the theory of witchcraft, Fang Yuan had gained enough knowledge to understand his path to breakthrough the limitations of the Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique.

"The next step... I shall gather some resources from the Dream Realm before attempting to combine these two techniques to push it to the 9th Meridian!"

Fang Yuan sat on a piece of rock, shut his eyes and arrived at the Dream Realm in an instant.

"Cultivator Fang!"

As soon as he entered, his inscription plate started to flash continuously as it received countless messages. The first was from Feng Xinzi. "I'm sorry for what happened previously. However, Elder Smelter would like to see you to discuss about future plans!"

"Elder Smelter... It seems like my treatment is getting better!"

Fang Yuan smiled and quickly arrived at Realm Alliance Mountain and stood outside of Elder Smelter's hall. "I'm Fang Yuan, requesting to see Elder!"

"Please enter!"

As soon as Fang Yuan made his request, two children in red robes came out of the hall and greeted him with smiles. "As soon as my master knows you're here, he immediately started to meditate to enter the Dream Realm!"

"I'm sorry to trouble him!"

Fang Yuan replied before entering the hall.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

A flash of fiery glow gathered, forming Elder Smelter's body. A few Fiery Dragon Children were standing around.

"Greetings, Elder!"

Fang Yuan properly paid his respects, not allowing anyone to fault him for disrespect.

"It is the good fortune of our alliance to have such a talent like you!"

Elder Smelter smiled as Fang Yuan humbly denied the compliments.

After all, Fang Yuan knew where he stood. Although he was not

afraid to take on a True Divine, he would still lose in the war if he was all by himself.

This Elder from the Realm Alliance was a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine and had once fought with Venerable Longhu, the True Divine!

Of course, although Fang Yuan seemed respectful, he had no fear for Elder Smelter.

After all, his existence in the Dream Realm was only his mind. If he were to anger this Elder, his actual physical body could immediately escape into the 9 Extremes Mountain!

Within the area affected by the Ultimate Segregation, even Elder Smelter might not be his match!

"Considering your cultivation level, I shall come straight to the point and be honest with you. As long as you wish, I can immediately increase your level of rights to that of a 7th Leaf Cultivator, which is only one level lower than us few elders. You can also deal with Feng Xinzi however you like!"

Elder Smelter's eyes glistened as he calmly spoke.

Upon hearing this, Fang Yuan remained silent.

This seemed like a favourable deal, but if he were to accept it, he knew that he would have to put his life on the line and get himself involved in the war.

"I only want to know how much I will earn from the previous mission and the status of my appointment as the guardian of Golden Sun Prosperous Land."

After a while, Fang Yuan smiled and enquired.

"The guardian of Golden Sun Prosperous Land?"

Elder Smelter gave a weird look. "This job is too lowly for you. You can at least be appointed as the baron of a land!"

"Hmmm..."

Fang Yuan shook his head and looked at Elder Smelter.

Elder Smelter's face started to turn red. He knew that Fang Yuan was still asking about the promise of not being required to take up missions for the next 10 years to come.

With that, he started to regret.

Previously, Fang Yuan was only a dream master in the 3rd Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and there was no war going on. Therefore, Elder Smelter had allowed Feng Xinzi to promise Fang Yuan of this privilege.

Never would he have thought that Fang Yuan's progress would be so quick!

How could they afford to waste such a powerful person? Even Elder Smelter himself would have to get his hands dirty if the war would continue.

'This kid... He's smart!'

Feng Xinzi's attempt to convince Elder Smelter was starting to work. A thought began to grow in Elder Smelter's mind.

"This mission at 9 Extremes Mountain was a complete failure. However, you have accomplished much and that is notable... However, it is still a fact that the mission remains incomplete!"

Elder Smelter had contemplated, but still decided to deny Fang Yuan anyway.

"Oh? Then what would you like me to do, Elder?"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.

To speak the truth, although the Golden Sun Prosperous Land was good, Fang Yuan was not insistent on it. Since he had already decided to test Elder Smelter on his stance with regards to this, he would naturally have a response to rebut him.

"Hmmm... I have a few minute stuff to settle in 9 Extremes Mountain. If you complete those, we can consider this mission

completed. I'll let you keep the Golden Sun Prosperous Land!"

Elder Smelter held himself back as he proposed the plan to Fang Yuan.

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and took his leave.

Although the 9 Extremes Mountain was a dangerous place for other dream masters to go, it was merely a walk in the park for Fang Yuan.

...

In the Green Bronze hall, as soon as Fang Yuan took his leave, Elder Smelter remained motionless as though he was lost in his thoughts.

"Elder?"

After a while, Feng Xinzi entered and knelt down.

"Mmm, you've heard our conversation. If there is nothing else, this will be how things are!"

Elder Smelter waved his hands.

"Yes, Sir!"

Feng Xinzi gritted his teeth, unwilling to resign to what had happened.

"Don't harbour any evil thoughts..."

Seeing Feng Xinzi's expression, Elder Smelter laughed. "Although it is only our minds that enter the Dream Realm, I have already used to a secret technique to test the kid out. He has a strong Essence and Spirit and has a red glow of spiritual light around him. This means that his physical body is extremely strong and even normal dream masters in the 6th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage are no match for him! Don't be too hard on yourself."

"I wouldn't dare!"

Feng Xinzi turned pale and lowered his head. "I just cannot believe it! Although this person is talented, he was obviously much weaker than me before..."

"Hehe... By dream-traversing to different realms, anything can happen!"

Elder Smelter seemed as though he was not surprised at Fang Yuan's progress. After all, the Sage of Realm Alliance had once gained plenty of rewards from the Ancient Realm to finally become a Sage!

Compared to such an encounter, Fang Yuan's situation was nothing.

"As for you... Your stubbornness in cultivation and the dao of alchemy will get you nowhere!"

Elder Smelter chided Feng Xinzi before stroking his beard in confusion. "However... this kid's previous mission seems to be the Ancient Realm..... It seems like he had benefited from the final chaos! Could he have collected large amounts of witch blood? Hmm, this seems possible."

At that point in time, the situation was chaotic. Many highly-skilled dream masters of the Realm Alliance were killed, and similarly, the people of the Jiuli Tribe including Chi, Xing and many other highly skilled witches were killed as well. The opportunities were boundless.

If Fang Yuan were to collect a lot of their blood essence and used it to refine his own blood, then it would be logical for his martial arts to improve by leaps and bounds.

Elder Smelter was a cunning man. With a few guesses and predictions, he could roughly understand the reason behind Fang Yuan's great improvement.

Never would he know that Fang Yuan paid no attention to the blood essence of the normal witches. Instead, Fang Yuan went for

the leader of the Jiuli Tribe - Xing! With that, he had obtained the purest form of the witch's blood essence and even the inheritance of the study of witchcraft from the Jiuli Tribe!

....

"Who would know that there are still things to settle in the 9 Extremes Mountain!"

In the Da Qian world, Fang Yuan's mind returned from the Dream Realm as he woke up.

Regardless if it was the Dragon Searching Acupuncture Technique or just destroying things, there was no point of return.

"Wait a minute... The 9 Extremes Mountain stretches over 350 miles and yet my map has only charted the mountain up to 130 miles and is therefore incomplete. Could there be other nodes?"

Fang Yuan's eyes glittered. He had no fear.

After all, the 9 Extremes Mountain was his homeground! In the outside world, against a powerful being, Fang Yuan could only hold on for a few moments but would ultimately lose the fight. However, under the influence of the Ultimate Segregation in the 9 Extremes Mountain, a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage could still be exhausted and be killed!

"Hmm, maybe I should apply to be the guardian of this place and replace Xing Yunzi."

# Chapter 376: Mystical Technique

---

Within the 9 Extremes Mountain, the surroundings remained misty.

Numerous restrictions covered the land, forming an area of extreme danger.

Although many dream masters had explored the mountain, a few treasures still remain, but the traces of dream masters had slowly reduced.

In a certain location, an altar was erected. Arrays shimmered around it as many dream masters gathered within the protection of the array. With fear, they scanned the surroundings and were on guard.

"Our 5 Grand Organisations have formed an alliance. The one in charge of this place should be a powerful dream master from the Realm Alliance. Why is he not here yet?"

A man in yellow robes glanced at his array plate and gave a worried look. "Could there be changes?"

"Hmph! When did Baizi Mountain produce such cowardly dream masters?"

As soon as he finished his piece, a young man with a pale skin and an evil vibe scoffed.

"Lu Xuanzhi, since your Evil Divine Sect is so powerful, why not you go out and take a look?"

The man in yellow robes rolled his eyes and rebutted.

"Keke..."

With a chuckle, Lu Xuanzhi remained silent.

Previously, the base of the Realm Alliance was being attacked. Although none of the powerful dream masters was injured, most of the normal dream masters were killed. Furthermore, the plan for



the other 4 Grand Organisations to attack the reinforcements of the Imperial Court did not go smoothly and many dream masters were killed in the process as well. All of these factors had already struck fear in these low-tiered dream masters.

Although they had already confirmed that the Imperial Court had retreated, it was still possible for one or two of them to linger about in the premises of the 9 Extremes Mountain!

All of them were assigned missions to guard the altar. It would be seeking death if they were to leave the place!

"Hehe... Why are we having internal conflicts?"

Suddenly, with a chime and a whiff of fragrance, a beautiful figure floated and came in between the both of them. "As alliance members, let's not fight each other, alright? On my account, shake your hands and reconcile."

This lady smiled, giving off a shockingly alluring vibe.

"Since it's the Divine Lady's request, I'll respect that!"

Lu Xuanzhi dismounted from his donkey. However, the man in yellow robes revealed a look of uneasiness.

Although this lady was not a powerful dream master, she was a Reserved Divine Lady of the Divine Lotus Cult. With that, she had many followers and backings in the base. The man in yellow robes was a dream master of Baize Mountain and therefore found it hard to communicate with members of the two evil sects.

He remained speechless. After all, if he were to establish any relations with these two dream masters, he would only bring trouble to himself.

'Fortunately, the guardian of this place is a member of the Realm Alliance. The dream masters of the Realm Alliance are neutral and therefore have a good relationship with the dream masters of Baize Mountain!'

The man in yellow robes felt a little relieved. He had gotten news that the newly-deployed dream master should have been Xin Yunzi, but the Realm Alliance had swapped him out in the last minute.

It was extremely rare for such swaps to happen, which would, more often than not, make the rest worry.

Lu Xuanzhi was about to speak but suddenly, the 3 dream master could detect something coming from afar.

The silhouette of a human appeared. With every step he took, he would leap over 30 yards. In no time, he had already arrived before them.

"Who's that?"

This person had a shocking spiritual aura of a martial artist, bringing discomfort to everyone in the base.

"Strike!"

Lu Xuanzhi quickly executed a defensive technique and a yellow glow appeared outside the array.

"I am the guardian of this place. Why is there none of you out here to welcome me?"

The silhouette had an extremely pressurising spiritual aura as it casually took out a piece of order plate.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

The glow from the array shook and as it interacted with the order plate an opening was revealed.

"It is indeed an order plate from the Realm Alliance!"

The man in yellow robes heaved a sigh of relief. Together with Lu Xuanzhi and the Divine Lady, they paid their respects. "We are Huang Long, Lu Xuanzhi, Meng Lian. Greetings, senior!"

"Meng Lian?"

The silhouette entered the array. He appeared young but had a mysterious and unpredictable spiritual aura. Mockingly, it examined Meng Lian.

"What... It's you! Fang Yuan!"

Meng Lian raised her head and gazed at the face she so hated. Uncontrollably, she spoke. "It's not possible that you are the powerful dream master assisting us!"

"Oh?"

Lu Xuanzhi exchanged glances with Huang Long. Looking at the pale Meng Lian, both of them were thinking that Meng Lian and Fang Yuan had met before.

"Why can't it be me?"

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose and felt entertaining as he looked at the woman in front of him.

After such a long time, this woman had improved in her cultivation and had already attained the Illusionary Divine stage. However, compared to him, her improvements were nothing.

To make things worse, she was now Fang Yuan's subordinate and Fang Yuan had the rights to give her orders.

Fate was making a fool of everyone.

"Meng Lian pays my greetings to you, Lord. Please forgive me for any past wrongdoings!"

Being smart, she immediately paid her greetings humbly.

"Forget it, please rise!"

Fang Yuan tried to control his laughter as he waved his hands. "From today onwards, we have to work together to accomplish the mission of our alliance. That is the most important!"

Although he was the leader among them, he could not brazenly kill this woman, especially so after the dream masters around had

learnt of their past encounters. However, Fang Yuan was decided that if they were to encounter another ambush by the people of Da Qian, he would do nothing to help her and leave her to die!

"I shall take a rest first. I'll get to know every one of you during the dinner later on!"

With a composed look, Fang Yuan waved his sleeves and entered the centre of the base. A few dream masters of the Realm Alliance were already waiting for him to serve him.

The 3 dream masters remained at their spots, speechless.

"What?"

Lu Xuanzhi gazed at Meng Lian with a look of curiosity. "Sister Meng Lian, how did you know of Senior Fang?"

"Fate!"

Meng Lian gritted her teeth aggressively as fear filled her heart. She started to shudder. "I know that this person has only joined the Realm Alliance for a few years. Most importantly, when I first met him, he was not even in the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage."

"He needs to be at least in the 5th or 6th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage to be our guardian, right?"

Huang Long felt confused. "How can his improve so quickly? Even if he was blessed with opportunities, he had to be a one-in-a-million talent!"

Exchanging glances with Lu Xuanzhi, both of them were overcome with shock.

"Sister Meng Lian, I recall that I have just finished a batch of spiritual pills. I have to manage the fire in the furnace. See you!"

Lu Xuanzhi took his leave. Seeing this, Huang Long left as well without saying a single word.

Their direct superior was now Fang Yuan. Even if Meng Lian had

a powerful backing, it would not be able to arrive on time to save her should the need arise. Wouldn't it be a pity if any of them were to be caught in their crossfire and get injured?

"D\*mn it!"

Of course, Meng Lian could understand them. With that, her face turned pale. "Now, the war is everything. Even my father cannot change this mission. To think that I will have to serve under him..."

With that thought, she was filled with regret.

...

"This place is indeed a node!"

After being brought into a stone hall, Fang Yuan did not immediately take his rest. Instead, he entered the earth meridian to investigate the node.

In the middle of a calm pool of water, there was a fleeting purple glow which gave off a faint roar of a dragon.

"This is indeed the Dragon Piercing Needle! What about all these..."

A golden hue flashed across his eyes as Fang Yuan mumbled to himself.

In this period of time, Fang Yuan had studied the inheritance of Sage Changli and was already extremely familiar with these arrangements. Furthermore, he had now further understood the greed of the 5 Grand Organisations.

"The Imperial Court must have felt it oo. However, they are at a disadvantage! So what if they destroyed a few nodes? It would not affect the final outcome..."

Fang Yuan sighed.

Dream masters were indeed powerful. In previous years, the Evil Divine Sect and the Divine Lotus Sect had combined forces, and

that was already enough to hold the Hidden Dragon Guards to a stalemate. The only reason why they did not eradicate the royal family was that there were conflicts of interest between the dream masters from the two sects.

However, now that the 5 Grand Organisations had decided to combine forces, the Imperial Court would not be likely to hold up.

"However, the arrangement here is not just simply restricting the earth energy at the correct time..."

Fang Yuan sighed. With that, he returned to this room and started his cultivation.

His path as a dream master had come to a halt. Without anything else to aid him, it was extremely difficult for him to increase his cultivation level. On the other hand, his progress in martial arts was extremely smooth sailing. Therefore, he had decided to focus all his effort on the cultivation and training of his martial arts.

After all, if he were to achieve a breakthrough and form the Divine Body, he would immediately become a True Divine, comparable to the power of a dream master in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!

"I have maximised the potential of the Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique. However, I can still fuse it with the Hundred Poison Golden Body Technique to achieve a breakthrough to the 9th Meridian!"

This technique of fusing techniques was something Fang Yuan had thought about after reading through the recordings of witchcraft. Comparing it against the experiences of Sage Changli, Fang Yuan felt that it was extremely plausible to execute it.

"After all, in these two techniques, one of the technique focuses on my Spirit, while the other one focuses on my Essence. Both of them are not conflicting and instead, they can complement each other. Considering my strong physical body, I should be able to

handle the stress!"

"Based on my predictions, once this new technique achieves a breakthrough to the 9th Meridian, I will be able to form the Divine Body immediately. After all, my foundations are already strong enough!"

Fang Yuan stood still. Suddenly, he started to walk about the room and occasionally struck a few claws.

Considering his current martial arts cultivation level, if he were to use his full force, he would destroy the entire base.

Now, he was silently executing his moves.

"After my experimentation, the Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique is still considered a rough technique and has the properties of iron. However, the Hundred Poison Golden Body has the properties of gold!"

Taking a few steps forward, his body started to glitter. Together with an eagle's chirp, a layer of metallic black appeared on his skin.

This was the appearance of the 8th Grade Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique.

Behind him, the spiritual meridians came together, forming a giant eagle which raised its head towards the sky and chirped.

Within moments, a golden hue appeared. It started to mix with the black-coloured hue. This was the defensive element of the Hundred Poison Golden Body, and it was being forcefully fused into Fang Yuan's technique.

"Chirp! Chirp!"

As the eagle let out a loud chirp, the illusory figure of the giant started to blur.

On Fang Yuan's body, the gold started to mix with the metallic colour, forming a new dark-gold hue.

"Hmm, since this technique is formed from fusing two great

techniques to allow me to attain the 9th Meridian, I shall call it the 'Nine Transference Mystical Technique' which will allow one to form the Golden Metal Body!"

With a thought, the stats on Fang Yuan's stats window started to change.

Under Techniques, the label of Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique and the Hundred Poison Golden Body Technique started to come together and transformed into the words of 'Nine Transference Mystical Technique'. However, there was a row of question marks behind the technique.

"This stats window is indeed showing me what I know."

Seeing this, Fang Yuan was lost in his thoughts.



# Chapter 377: 8 Dragons Bearer

---

Late at night.

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped while practising his martial arts, his eyes turned as he wondered, "Finally here?"

"Meng Lian... seeks permission to meet Lord!"

Moments later, a gentle voice could be heard outside the door which brought about an uneasy feeling.

"Come in!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands and the door opened, revealing Meng Lian's alluring figure.

It seemed that Meng Lian had specially dressed up, her lips were scarlet red and she was dressed in thin silk which showed her clear, pale skin.

As she stepped in with the moonlight shining on her back, it was as though she was a faerie from the moon.

"I was foolish to offend you last time, please forgive me, my magnanimous Lord..."

Once she entered the house, she shyly bowed down to Fang Yuan and begged, "If Lord wants to put blame, I will willingly bear the blame..."

"You will bear the blame?"

Fang Yuan stroked his chin and his eyes burned with lust as he leered her entire body again and again.

"Yes, I will do anything to bear the blame!" Meng Lian replied gently.

Meng Lian coyly looked downwards as her skin blushed slightly.

"Hehe..."

Fang Yuan gave a mirthless laugh when he heard her reply.

He knew what she was hinting, however, a lady from Divine Lotus Cult should not be played with.

From his experience with Liu Mengmei, Fang Yuan obviously understood this kind of Divine Ladies were the best at clandestinely seducing men, especially when the men were smitten by them.

Furthermore, Meng Lian was a Reserved Divine Lady, her tactics were even more powerful. If she willingly gave her body, she could definitely enslave the heart of a powerful dream master in the Realm Alliance and benefit so much from it.

"That's great!"

After Fang Yuan finished sniggering, he directly demanded, "First of all... to prove your sincerity, I want you to give me all your Dream Realm contribution points!"

"You..."

The smile on Meng Lian's face turned stiff at once as she forced herself to reply cordially, "Lord, you are joking right?"

"What do you think?"

From Fang Yuan's pondering gaze, she finally woke up and understood that he was absolutely not wavered by her beauty and seduction. She could not help but blush, however, it was due to anger, not shame!

"Fang Yuan!"

Meng Lian stood up as though she was a kitty brandishing her claws, "What exactly do you want?"

"Look at what you are saying, you were the one who offended me first! Just moments after you came over to seek forgiveness, you are now asking me what exactly do I want?"

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged as he watched her fume with rage. His eyes glistened and continued, "Furthermore... I am in charge of

this place, how dare you spout nonsense at me with no respect for authority nor rules! Is that what Divine Ladies from Divine Lotus Cult are like? Eh?"

"Rumble!"

As Fang Yuan harangued, a giant shadow emerged behind him. It had a golden and metal-like glow to it and it affected the atmosphere, causing a powerful gust of spiritual pressure to land on Meng Lian's body.

Meng Lian's expression changed at once as she was moved back a few steps.

Now, she could only admit that the person she was facing had long surpassed her and was one of the truly powerful ones in the 5 Grand Organisations.

Meng Lian's face turned pale and she rolled her eyes around before she recovered and finally replied in an odd manner, "Ok! I still have 1,000 plus contribution points, I will give it all to you!"

"Oh, I still have other conditions! But I have not thought of them now, I will tell you once I think of them."

Fang Yuan waved his hands, "Now... take your leave and don't disturb my meditation."

"Meng Lian takes her leave!"

If looks could kill, Fang Yuan guessed he would have died thousands of times by now.

Once Meng Lian left, a sly smile appeared on his face as he thought, "She wants to reconcile? And she uses such a trick at the start? She clearly does not mean it!"

Fang Yuan was suddenly eagerly anticipating for the Imperial Court to attack them.

During the chaos, so what if a few of them died?

...

However, his wishes did not come true.

Half a month passed in a blink of an eye.

Perhaps it was either because they suffered too great of a loss previously or because they were afraid of the 5 Grand Organisations' retaliation, the Imperial Court and the Hidden Dragon Guards did not attack them. They did not even reconnoitre the area which made Fang Yuan slightly gloomy.

"Seems like I can only let Meng Lian have it easy this time..." Fang Yuan thought.

Standing inside the crypt, Fang Yuan observed the earth meridian which was scintillating with a purple light and ruminated, "Also... this array, after reading through Sage Changli's inheritance, I finally sort of understood it. There must be an ulterior motive behind the 5 Grand Organisations, their ambitions are pretty wild..."

"However, that is already like an obvious plan, there's no use if I get it now... The only thing I can anticipate now is the day when the Jade Capital is turned upside down!"

As Fang Yuan thought to himself, he waved his hand and streams of light entered and immediately disappeared into the earth meridian.

"Lord!"

Back to the surface, a few dream masters paid their respects to Fang Yuan and offered spiritual tea and spiritual fruits.

Fang Yuan carefreely consumed a few before he returned to his room to cultivate.

Everything was fake, only one's own power was real.

His whole body radiated with a golden metal-like glow as his Nine Transference Mystical Technique was close to completion.

"Once I fully form it, I can attain my 9th spiritual meridian and

breakthrough the bottleneck and forge my body directly!"

Although forging the martial artist Divine Body was a huge checkpoint for 9th Meridian Wu Zongs, it was nothing much in Fang Yuan's eyes.

Fang Yuan took a look at his stats:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 96

Spirit: 76

Magic: 61

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), Wu Zong (8th Meridian)

Technique: [Nine Transference Mystical Technique (? ? ?)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (10%)]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"I just need my last shot in the goalpost for my Nine Transference Mystical Technique!"

Cultivating martial arts gave Fang Yuan a kind of bottlenecked feeling, as though he just needed one more step to breakthrough, but he just could not take that step.

This was because taking that step was not as simple as attaining the 9th Meridian, it was about forging the martial arts Divine Body directly!

"I can't believe my martial arts have finally reached such a stage!"

Fang Yuan could not help but smile as he saw the progress of his 8 Gates Sword Array.

It was an unexpected progress for Fang Yuan but a good one. After all, the 8 Gates Sword Array was a secret array which could

not be easily revealed in front of others before he enacted his grand revenge. However, there were no qualms for Fang Yuan to reveal his martial arts prowess.

"Furthermore... once I forge my Divine Body, I would be a True Divine martial artist. Thus, once Da Qian descends into absolute chaos, there would be many formidable and powerful men and I would also be qualified to try to enact revenge!"

Fang Yuan was extremely grateful for his master and their relationship remained strong. Fang Yuan had not forgotten about his thirst for vengeance at all.

However, those powerful beings were naturally intelligent, wise and they could also predict the future. Hence, Fang Yuan could never mention his intentions at all.

But once Fang Yuan became a True Divine, his martial arts would surpass many and he would be able to automatically shield himself from others trying to predict him.

"Also, although I would not be able to set up many escape ways, it is still better than having none!"

...

Inside a secret chamber outside the 9 Extreme Mountain.

A daoist elder who was sitting cross-legged stood up and looked at the copper pot with eight golden dragons on it. His face appeared stupefied as he watched.

On the floor, the big mouth of the copper toad was filled with many copper balls and brought about an inauspicious meaning.

"I control the earth dragon of Da Qian but however, both Da Qian's fate and breaths of the earth cannot defeat dream masters' fate energy..."

The daoist elder clenched his fist so tightly that it turned white and a few streaks of blood appeared in his eyes. He was almost

about to retch out a mouthful of blood.

"There are over thousands of earth meridian nodes in Da Qian. As of now, more than half of them have already fallen into the enemies' hands. Although the repercussions of it are still not obvious now, the dream masters would definitely hasten their next move!"

The daoist elder wiped away the redness on the corners of his mouth and paced back and forth in the chamber as he muttered, "Dream masters are despicable... although we have already trained up the Hidden Dragon Guards to fight against them, they can only fight against one of the powerful organisations at most. The rest have to be fought by the Imperial Court's True Divines and True Elementals!"

Other than the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards, the Imperial Court only rely on their True Divines and True Elementals to fight against a Prominent Divine powerful being.

However, although normal True Divines and True Elementals were also called powerful beings, they were only comparable to high-tiered Illusionary Divine dream masters. The most powerful ones of them were equally as powerful as dream masters at the 9th Tier of Illusionary Divine.

Nevertheless, Da Qian was still favoured by heaven's fate and the royalties possessed secret techniques to gather fate and breaths of the earth onto the bodies of Wu Zongs and spiritual knights. This was the blessing of the heavens and inside Da Qian Empire, if they could freely consume it, they would be as powerful as Sages!

This was the capital which allowed Da Qian to hold its standing till now!

Nevertheless, at this stage, dream masters had already totally broken off all relationships with Da Qian. They dared to go against the heavens and disrupt the earth meridians. Even though the elder and the Imperial Court had fought against such numerous

times, it was all futile.

This was the result of their overall strength being lacklustre compared to the dream masters; no amounts of schemes could change that.

"Shang Hou, how is it?"

Inside the chamber, a slender shadow appeared. It was as though scenes of stars being formed and dying could be seen inside his eyes; it was the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards!

"Things are not going well..."

The daoist elder, Shang Hou, shook his head and continued, "I am the dragon son of Da Qian and have cultivated the techniques of dream masters. By luck, I cultivated to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and hold the position of 8 Dragons Bearer, where I monitor all the nodes for the Imperial Court. However, I am now at a loss! I have seen before the array the dream masters are casting in Sage Changli's inheritance, it is the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array! There are 1,275 nodes in Da Qian and their presence allow the heavens and earth to thrive and flourish and as long as half the nodes remain, they are still effective!"

"When we attacked them previously, we only destroyed a few of their arrangements and instead caused them to hasten their progress. Now, the array has been formed and there's nothing we can do... you don't have to deploy people to ambush them anymore, just prepare for the imminent war! The world is going to be in chaos soon! Cough cough..."

Shang Hou was coughing continuously and blood stained his shirt.

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards could only remain quiet as the elder coughed.

Bodies of Illusionary Divine dream masters were strong, they would not fall sick easily and naturally, they were not as weak.



However, this elder was in charge of monitoring all the earth meridians and the current situation was not in his favour as numerous nodes had fallen. Thus, all his pent-up resentment finally erupted inside him at once, which he could not withstand.

His lifespan might even be cut short from it.

"Shang Hou, you can cultivate in peace! There's still a few imperial advisors and me to take care of this empire!"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards consoled Shang Hou, "Ahh... as the grandson of the emperor, I cannot escape this war!"

Elder Shang Hou smiled and suddenly grabbed the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards' palm, "The dream masters are after me this time all because of Changli's inheritance. I saw the core chapter, although it was just remnants of it, the secrets I uncovered from it is sufficient enough for us to use it as an advantage! We might not be able to resist against the dream masters and recover our fate energy, but we can perish together with them! Lord, would you help me?"

"You are saying..."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guard waved his hand and a powerful restriction appeared at once. His eyes glistened blindingly.

# Chapter 378: Destroying the Sect

---

Gold Region.

At the gates of Golden Peak Sect.

Smoke billowed into the skies and people rushed about. A huge array covered the entire Golden Peak Sect as heavenly fire continuously struck the gates.

The long invasion of Gold Region had finally reached the end.

"This is how powerful a dream master can be. To think that they can directly burn the entire Golden Peak Sect together with the mountain and force everyone out..."

Ruan Junxian was a small infantry trooper tasked to rally the people. Witnessing the destruction of the sect from the foot of the mountain, his heart shook.

"Roar! Roar!"

On the peak of Golden Peak Mountain, a streak of terrifying spiritual spell appeared. It had a golden glow to it and it stretched out like a river. Suddenly, it flicked in the air and transformed into a huge golden roc. The roc had flaming-golden feathers and an awe-inspiring look. With the flap of its wings, it flew up towards the array.

"This is... a spiritual spell!"

Witnessing this scene, Ruan Junxian was stunned and his mouth was wide opened. "The feeling I get is... even though I am separated from it by such a huge array..."

"Hehe... This is the power of a True Elemental spiritual knight!"

A dream master beside Ruan Junxian laughed. "This must be the sect master of Golden Peak Sect - Venerable Golden Peak personally fighting! However, with us ambushing and trapping them, the True Elemental spiritual knight and the two True Divine

Wu Zongs will not be able to escape!"

"These three powerful people will turn to dust?"

Ruan Junxian mumbled to himself.

At this point in time, Ruan Junxian had already obtained elemental force and was officially a dream master. However, he was still in admiration for these powerful beings.

In his previous sect, in the entire sect, there was only one such powerful being, Venerable Longhu!

But now, his new sect, Baize Mountain, paid no attention and directly struck against these 3 powerful people all at once!

The difference was too huge for one to imagine.

"A True Elemental spiritual knight will have an almost unlimited supply of spiritual strength. Most importantly, his spiritual spells will have true spirits. Even his most lowly spells would turn magical through his hands. Take this golden roc for example. It definitely has about a third of the power of an ancient beast... However, it's a pity for him, for the array is cast by 3 dream masters in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!"

The dream master chuckled and felt proud.

"Chirp!"

The golden roc flapped its wings and finally crashed into the array.

"Rumble!"

There was a shattering sound followed by the roar as the entire peak of Golden Peak Mountain shook.

On the array, a translucent layer slowly became visible and was rather thick like a wall. With the crash, the shook and cracks began to form.

In mid-air, three dream masters appeared. There were glows

emitting from their bodies and the illusionary image of a plot of spiritual land appeared behind their backs. With that, the invisible plot of land crashed down.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

The array shook and in an instant, the cracks were repaired. It remained sturdy like a crystal rock, sealing up any last hope of escape.

"Venerable Golden Peak, why are you going against fate?"

The 3 Illusionary Divine elders crossed their legs and sat down. All of them looked composed. "The Imperial Court is overbearing and our actions are only in retaliation! If the Golden Peak Sect refuses to change, then everything within the array will be reduced to dust. If you want a chance of survival, submit to us and allow us to control you. If you agree, you might even be able to preserve your heritage!"

"Dream on!"

A voice was heard from the Golden Peak Mountain. "I've sworn to the heavens that I will forever go against you thieves!"

"Roar! Roar!"

As soon as he had finished his sentence, 5 streaks of spiritual spells appeared once more, transforming into different elemental water dragons in mid-air. Forming an array on its own, he commanded the dragon array to crash onto the array above.

"Bang!"

The water dragon array exploded, but the huge array merely shook. On the other hand, the flames and chilly ice scattered across the mountains, causing the entire Golden Peak Mountain to be stricken with disasters.

"Why are you forcing yourself even after knowing that all that you do will be of no use?"

The 3 powerful dream masters sighed. The huge array remained intact and a translucent-looking flame started to brew in the centre of the array.

Anything in the mountain, be it the rocks, grass or the panicky disciples turned into flames as soon as they came in contact with the translucent flame. Slowly, they melted.

The final defences of the Golden Peak Sect started to weaken under the burning of the translucent flames. It was only a matter of time before everything would turn into ashes.

It seemed that the dream masters of Baize Mountain were absolute this time and were insistent to wipe out everything on the mountain, be it the mountain itself, the disciples or even the sect head!

Within the peak in the Golden Peak Grandmaster's Hall.

Venerable Golden Peak witnessed the raging inferno and knew what the outcome of the fight would be. With a heavy heart, he almost spat out a mouthful of blood. "Baize Mountain... You guys are ruthless! How dare you guys claim that you are the good guys!"

"It is only normal that we had previously combined forces with the Hidden Dragon Guards to ambush against one of your elders!"

Beside Venerable Golden Peak, a middle-aged martial artist with a tall built stood straight.

"We have now fallen into their trap. It seems like there is no way of escaping..."

Venerable Golden Peak looked at his True Divine brother and gave a bitter laugh. "We have implicated the entire sect as well... Fortunately, Brother Cang has managed to escape and we can still preserve our heritage!"

The Golden Peak Sect was led by a True Elemental spiritual knight and two other True Divine Wu Zongs.

Although they were tricked this time, their sect would not be entirely wiped out. With one of them outside the array, the sect still had a hope of a future.

Venerable Golden Peak would not even think about whether the Imperial Court would send reinforcements to help them out.

With such a commotion over at the Golden Peak Mountain, it was obvious that the 5 Grand Organisations were taunting the Imperial Court to attack them. Considering the resources that the Imperial Court had, it was not wise to go head-on with the 5 Grand Organisations especially at this juncture.

"Haha... Sect head, don't be disheartened. We have our chance!"

The middle-aged martial artist broke out into laughter as he held a gourd in his hands. Biting the cap off, he drank heartily like a luxurious person.

"Chance? Let's bet on it!"

Venerable Golden Peak laughed as well.

"Well said! Rather than waiting here to be crushed by the array, let's fight our way to death!"

The middle-aged martial artist threw the gourd of wine on the ground and rushed out. "I am True Divine Xuan Wu. Who dares to challenge?"

"Challenge!"

"Challenge!!"

"Challenge!!!"

His last words were loud and striking, spread out far and wide into the clouds. His energy was like a tiny sun, vibrating and ready to explode.

With that, the illusionary figure of a giant appeared.

The giant was entirely black and had the shell of a tortoise on its

back. A huge snake coiled around its body. With a ferocious roar, the giant struck a punch into the sky towards the array.

"Rumble!"

At the foot of the mountain, Run Junxian almost lost his balance. "True Divine?"

In his eyes, the giant which suddenly appeared had extremely toned muscles as though it had walked out from a fable.

Such martial arts was indeed scary and even Venerable Longhu might not be able to match up to it!

Furthermore, he had started to re-evaluate if his choice in becoming a dream master was a right one.

"Hmph, it's just a small trick!"

In mid-air, the three powerful dream masters exchanged glances and shook their heads.

If they were to be ambushed this giant, they would have to fear it.

However, now, the giant was trapped in an array which was given by a Sage. Its indisputable might would surely be able to contain this giant.

Under such circumstances, why would they be afraid of the taunt of a True Divine martial artist?

With this, the dream masters executed their techniques. The translucent flames started to gather, forming something which resembled a tiny sun. As soon as the tiny sun was formed, it started to descend.

"Aw! Aw!"

The giant started to beat its chest and roared. As its body was covered in flames, even the body of the True Divine was beginning to melt.

"Ah... F\*ck it! Blood river!"

With the exclamation of a True Divine, the giant started to crumble. Where its heart was supposed to be, there was a huge hole. An emerald glow started to intensify, and with the energy of the True Divine's blood, it struck towards the array.

"Eh?"

"This is... the blood energy of a martial artist? His giving it his all!"

"He is indeed a powerful True Divine to be able to use his powerful blood energy to such an extent!"

The three dream masters quickly discussed how to deal with him, but none of them dared to go head-on with the True Divine's final blow. The only thing they could do was to continuously strengthen the array.

"Chila!"

As the emerald glow struck upon the array, it sizzled and exploded just like how boiling oil would react when in contact with water. The three elders shook as blood started to flow from their noses.

Even a Sage's array would come to a halt against such a powerful force. A huge hole emerged on the surface of the array.

"This is the time. Sect head, go!"

"Brother?!"

Venerable Golden Peak's eyes turned red. He quickly transformed into a streak of light, carried a few disciples with him and tunnelled his way out of the array. Within seconds, he disappeared into the horizon.

"Haha... My sect will live on!"

The middle-aged martial artist laughed as he started to bleed from his eyes, nose, ears and even his mouth. He was badly injured



and there was no chance of survival.

This person had just sacrificed himself to fight for a chance of survival for his sect head and fellow disciples.

"This is pitiful, this is... amusing!"

Seeing this, the three dream masters remained in their seating posture and did not look defeated.

The streak of golden light was extremely quick. As it arrived at the horizon, it gazed back with a tinge of unwillingness before disappearing beyond the horizon.

"Rumble!"

At this point in time, the space in the air cracked as a giant hand stretched out, grabbing the golden glow.

Venerable Golden Peak's faint voice could be heard.

"Is this... the hand of a Sage?"

On the mountain, as the middle-aged martial artist witnessed the re-capture of his sect head, tears welled up in his eyes. "Hate! So much hate!"

"Hmph, we have spent so much effort to use you guys as bait knowing that the Imperial Court would cower in their palace. We can only take it out on you guys to appease us!"

One of the elders laughed as he commanded the translucent fire to burn the True Divine into ashes.

"Burn! Burn everything!"

"Rumble!"

The fire raged on for another day. The thousand over disciples of Golden Peak Sect were reduced to ashes, and even the mountain was reduced to a flat ground.

"This... Is this the power of a powerful being? Casually burning up places into hell..."

At the foot of the mountain, Ruan Junxian was in a daze.

As a small trooper in charged of rallying the people, he had the opportunity to witness the entire process. With this, his willingness to become a dream master became stronger.

On the second day, news of the destruction of Golden Peak Sect had spread, and all 99 regions of Da Qian remained solemn.

Any sect in the empire would now fear dream masters and would begin to establish good relations with powerful beings as backings.

Now, the Imperial Court had decided to prepare its army and war was imminent!

# Chapter 379: Misfortune

---

"Baize Mountain and the alliance of dream masters, I, Cang Xuansheng will fight against you for my entire life!"

In a random corner of the Jade Capital, within a huge room, a Wu Zong was reading a letter. He shrieked as he crushed the paper in his hands into powder.

At this point in time, his face turned red. He opened his mouth and spat out a mouthful of blood.

The dark red blood stained the white walls like spots of plum blossom flowers.

"Lord Xuansheng?"

Outside, there was a cry. A dream master discovered what had happened and quickly spread the information.

Not long after, an old man came in.

He had a peaceful look and was wearing a long black robe. His hair was a pure silver colour but he appeared extremely energetic. As he gazed at the wall, he frowned. "Xuansheng, although you have escaped, you have still succumbed to the 'Seven Emotions Devouring Formula'. You must keep your thoughts under control. Know that being happy, angry or sad would harm your soul. Just this time, you have already shortened your lifespan by ten years!"

The Seven Emotions Devouring Formula was created by a powerful being from the Evil Divine Sect. Even the Imperial Court could not do anything to undo it.

"I know... But what meaning does life have if I cannot avenge by sect? Furthermore, I am a martial artist!"

Martial artists hold pride in gaining through brute force. If he held himself back, how would he then be able to cultivate to the realm of True Divine?

Cang Xuansheng took in a few deep breaths and composed himself down. "Tell me, how long do I have left?"

"Cough cough... if you become useless, what is the purpose of living a long life?"

The old man's eyes briefly glistened. "However, looking at your current state, if you are willing to recuperate and ignore worldly affairs, together with the help of herbs, you should be able to live for another hundred years."

"However, in this period of time, you cannot fill yourself with emotions and must restrain yourself from fighting with others!"

Cang Xuansheng laughed. "If this is so, how am I different from a dead person? I would rather have a quick death."

He glanced at the old man. Suddenly, his voice became cold. "I believe the royal family will find it meaningless to take care of a useless person, right? Since I have already found an heir and have already recorded by martial arts into the royal family's martial arts treasury, I no longer have any value..."

"Cough cough..."

The old man's expression changed. "Xuansheng, don't think too much. You have helped the Imperial Court and we will take care of you for your entire life..."

"What if I don't want to be taken care of! I am almost crippled and would rather make the most of my life. Staying alive might even irritate you all..."

Cang Xuansheng was clear that such promises made by the Imperial Court were not worthy. They might last for a year or two but as time passed, any major contribution made in the past would be swept off the table.

Furthermore, what meaning would there be to lead a meaningless life?

"Make the most of your life? What are you intending to do?"

As the Divine Hand of the royal family, you can revive dead people and restore flesh to bones. How long do you think you can keep this Seven Emotions Devouring Formula under control? Don't tell me that you have no idea. There are so many people in the Imperial Court, and there must be a time where you have encountered something like this, right?"

Cang Xuansheng asked coldly.

"You're right... The Evil Divine Sect has always been at odds with the Imperial Court. Therefore, it is only normal that I have seen this formula elsewhere before. Although there is no cure for it, there is a 'Seven Perilous Earth Dragon Pill' which, in essence, make use of the fact that a poison can counter another. It can restore your martial arts for up to 7 days and you will be able to live normally. However, as soon as the 7 days pass, you will die and there will be no way of bringing you back to life!"

The old man stroked his beard as though he was already prepared. "How do you intend to take your revenge... within the next 7 days? Although the Imperial Court and the Hidden Dragon Guards will assist you, the main group will still have to remain in the Jade Capital to defend it. You will not be able to get enough reinforcements!"

"I am only a True Divine martial artist and will not be able to trouble the 5 Grand Organisations too much. I'll just kill as many of them as I can!"

Cang Xuansheng had a mysterious look. "Do you have the records of all the powerful dream masters in the 5 Grand Organisations that are below the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage? I want all of their information and their whereabouts! Although I cannot touch the powerful dream masters, I can kill their disciples and weaken their army."

"Alright!"

The old man bowed. "Don't worry, I will send all this information in an instant!"

It was indeed in an instant.

Within a few moments, a Hidden Dragon Guard entered with a solemn look and presented a tray to Cang Xuansheng.

On the tray was a translucent jade bottle. Within it, there was a black pill. Beside the bottle was a stack of papers.

"This Seven Perilous Earth Dragon Pill is made from 7 types of extreme poisons and infused with dragon energy before being made. It is used as a poison to counter another poison. As soon as you consume it, there will be no turning back."

The old man's gentle voice was heard. "This stack of information has all the names of the talented dream masters in the 5 Grand Organisations. Most of them are at the 4th Tier or higher and are roaming out there..."

A powerful being would take almost no effort to wipe out these talents. He would be able to quickly finish every fight with every one of the dream masters and able to weaken the future potential of dream masters as well.

"I understand. By being able to kill a few more of them in the next 7 days, it is already making the most of my remaining life!"

Cang Xuansheng remained expressionless as he took the tray from the Hidden Dragon Guard.

"After this, both the Imperial Court and the Hidden Dragon Guards will no longer look out for you. Please take care of yourself!"

The old man took another deep bow.

He could only secretly kill the disciples of the powerful dream masters, for even the Imperial Court would not be willing to take such a risk and do it openly.

After all, if the Imperial Court were to claim responsibility, the 5 Grand Organisations would surely strike back 10 times as hard.

To look at things from another angle, Cang Xuansheng was a member of the Golden Peak Sect, which was just wiped from existence.

It was therefore logical for him to take the risk and kill the talented dream masters.

Even if the dream masters of the 5 Grand Organisations were to strike back 10 times as hard, they could do nothing since the Golden Peak Sect was already destroyed.

"Alright!"

Cang Xuansheng picked up the stack of papers, scanned across and revealed a look of vengeance in his eyes.

...

"Elder Smelter is still rather smart about this..."

Within the 9 Extremes Mountain, Fang Yuan wiped his robe and stood up.

To think about it, this additional mission was extremely relaxed.

After the previous happenings, the scout of the Imperial Court did not linger in the 9 Extremes Mountain any longer. Therefore, Fang Yuan could easily complete this mission. All he had to do was to wait for another representative from the Realm Alliance to take over from him so that he could return to Golden Sun Prosperous Land to remain in isolation.

However, he still felt a tinge of pity for he did not get a chance to indirectly kill Meng Lian.

"Lord!"

At this point in time, a dream master from the Realm Alliance requested to see Fang Yuan, claiming that he had bad news. "The 5 Grand Organisations have spread the news that a True Divine

martial artist is on a killing rampage. He has already killed dream masters from Baizi Mountain, Evil Divine Sect and the Divine Lotus Cult. We have to be on our guard!"

"True Divine? How would he dare?"

Fang Yuan was confused as he touched his cheek.

Mmm, even if he were to ignore Fang Yuan's cultivation in martial arts, the fact that Fang Yuan had achieved the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would mean that this True Divine would be likely to be looking out for Fang Yuan.

"Of course he would dare!"

The dream master from the Realm Alliance laughed. "This person is Cang Xuansheng. He was an elder of the Golden Peak Sect in Gold Region... Their sect was just destroyed and there were no survivors!"

Since Cang Xuansheng had no more worries, he could recklessly go about on his killing spree.

Fang Yuan was speechless. "What in the world... How can the powerful dream masters miss out on such a dangerous person!"

Knowing that this True Divine was crazy, it would be unfortunate if anyone were to encounter him.

"Do we know his whereabouts?"

"Nope. The few elders have been looking out. However, this person is extremely sly. It is simple for a True Divine to cover his own tracks. Unless facing a True Divine, it would be extremely hard to detect one. Furthermore, they can cover over 350 miles in a day, so it is tedious to determine their location!"

The dream master gave a look of uneasiness as he glanced at Fang Yuan.

"Mmm... If he wants to maximise his powers, it is very likely that he would enter perilous lands like the 9 Extremes Mountain..."



Fang Yuan was speechless for a while. "Pass the order for the defences to be tightened up!"

"Yes, Lord!"

This dream master was extremely careful as he took his leave, for he was afraid that Fang Yuan might be in a bad mood and would take it out on him.

"Really..."

Witnessing his reaction, Fang Yuan felt a little depressed. "Am I really a person who would take it out on others? Furthermore... the other talented dream masters might be looking for ways to protect themselves, but for me, I think I would be a good opportunity to test out my martial arts."

Now that his Nine Transference Mystical Technique had reached a peak, he required an opportunity to achieve the breakthrough.

...

Very quickly, 3 days had passed. A few dream masters had arrived to take over from Fang Yuan.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not manage to encounter the True Divine.

Seeing how the other dream masters like Huang Long, Lu Xuanzhi and even Meng Lian heaving sighs of relief, Fang Yuan felt even more disappointed. "Could Cang Xuansheng be already captured by the powerful dream masters? Otherwise, considering the geographical advantage in the 9 Extremes Mountain, why would he not come?"

If the other dream masters were to know what Fang Yuan was thinking, they would surely be speechless.

Most of them were afraid that the powerful enemy would approach them and no one would think that anyone would be looking forward to seeing the enemy.

"Alright, the takeover is complete. Have a good journey, Lord!"

The dream master who led the group of them to take over was only at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. With a smiling face, he attempted to establish good relations with Fang Yuan.

After all this while, the arrangements on the node will be able to activate itself and will no longer be easily destroyed. Therefore, from now onwards, they would only need to send a few people to occasionally take a look.

"Alright!"

After receiving proof that their mission was completed, the few dream masters had no intentions of staying behind. All of them quickly left as though this place was hell.

"Such a prosperous land... it's a pity that it's hidden!"

Fang Yuan followed the dream masters as he thought to himself.

Perhaps, he could start planning to get the appointment of the guardian of the 9 Extremes Mountain after a few more years.

To him, this was the best prosperous land he could ever ask for, especially in troubled times like this. It was a safe haven.

With him leading the way, the group of dream masters quickly arrived at the exit.

"Alright, after passing this place, we will be out of 9 Extremes Mountain. Take care of yourselves!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands. His spiritual will shook as he smirked.

"Lord, please take care!"

Lu Xuanzhi and Huang Long paid their respects while Meng Lian had some thoughts to herself as she chuckled inside. 'The faster you climb, the harder you'll fall. We must quickly leave this place and leave you for you will be the source of trouble. It is no laughing matter if we get involved in the True Divine's killing

rampage.'

# Chapter 380: The Fight

---

"Sigh..."

It seemed as though Fang Yuan had already detected Meng Lian's evil thoughts.

"Lord, why are you sighing?"

Lu Xuanzhi asked curiously.

Out of the 9 Extremes Mountain, they did not have any more official relationship. Although Lu Xuanzhi still respected Fang Yuan, he sounded more casual now.

"I feel that with the mountains and the rivers, this place is the best prosperous land anyone can ask for..."

Fang Yuan sighed once more. "It is worthy to be of someone's place of burial!"

"What do you mean?"

Meng Lian was on high alert as she sprinted away, thinking that Fang Yuan would strike her.

"That's right. This place is indeed perfect to be your place of burial!"

But this time, it was a deep voice.

The dream masters were shocked.

With all of their spiritual wills, they would still be able to detect a 9th Meridian Wu Zong. The only person they would not be able to detect would be a True Divine, capable of concealing their spiritual auras!

"This is not good... Run!"

Huang Long's expression changed as he burrowed away in a streak of yellow light resembling a water dragon.

"Bang!"

After a few yards, the yellow water dragon came to a halt as though something was blocking it and blood spewed everywhere.

"Is this wind from the fist of a True Divine?!"

Lu Xuanzhi shuddered in fear as he gazed at Cang Xuansheng who seemed to have appeared from mid-air.

Cang Xuansheng was wearing green robes and had sharp facial features. He had a handsome look for a middle-aged man, but to the dream masters, he was the cruellest demon of all!

"Hehe!"

"Hehe!"

"Cang Xuansheng, your enemy is Baize Mountain. It is none of our business. Since you have already killed Huang Long, why are you still not taking your leave? Do you know that you are already wanted by the 5 Grand Organisations? Any powerful dream master might appear anytime to kill you!"

The dream masters were shivering in fear as Lu Xuanzhi clenched his teeth to exclaim.

Cang Xuansheng held his hands behind his back and examined the crowd. "Baize Mountain should be destroyed, but it is the same for all of you here! Are you Fang Yuan? The talent from the Realm Alliance?"

He ignored Lu Xuanzhi as though he was part of the background and instead, started to examine Fang Yuan.

"Great! Great! Great! You have strong energy from your blood and your martial arts is shocking. Your physical body is indeed hardy, and I believe you have already formed the 7th Meridian? You're indeed a talent. It's a pity..."

Cang Xuansheng was indeed a powerful True Divine martial artist for he could figure out Fang Yuan's cultivation level in one look. With that, he shook his head and sighed. "You have great

potential, but it's a pity that you have turned to the dark side!"

"Oh? May I know how I was being described in the information?"

Fang Yuan asked with curiosity.

"Fang Yuan, unknown heritage, 5th Leaf Cultivator in the Realm Alliance, under the age of 30, at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, has unparalleled potential..."

Cang Xuansheng recited a portion of the information. "Although you are a hero among your people, you are my enemy. I cannot let you walk out of here alive! Of course... before that..."

"Whoosh!"

As his shadow flickered, he floated swiftly towards Meng Lian. With the flick of his fingers, the protective fog around her was dispersed, revealing a pale Meng Lian. With his claws, he grappled on the piece of jade on her neck. "Too many tricks!"

"Cang Xuansheng, if you dare to kill my daughter, I will..."

The jade shook violently as a desperate voice was heard. In the jade, there was a faint glow and the illusionary figure of a person as well.

"Even if you send you magical clone here, what can you do?"

Cang Xuansheng laughed. Tightening his grip, the jade was reduced to powder and the mysterious and unwilling voice disappeared.

"Senior..... You..."

Meng Lian's expression changed once more and she could only force herself to say a few words.

"Bang!"

A bloodied hole appeared on her forehead as she fell gently to the ground.

"A pretty corpse but all this vengeance... After your death,

everything is fleeting!"

The True Divine sighed as he looked around. "Why are there so little smart people in this world?"

"Rumble!"

In the next moment, fear was written on every dream master's face. An expanding and hot sun started to emerge.

From Cang Xuansheng, the sun started to expand, spreading its glow and heat, enveloping all the dream masters within it.

In the next moment, Lu Xuanzhi's expression changed as he felt the dream elemental force in him came to a halt. The only thing he could see was a flash of sword radiance before him. Within seconds, his body was perfectly sliced into two.

"Go!"

Although his physical body was destroyed, his Yin Spirit was still intact. Possessing a piece of black talisman, he hastily attempted to escape into the air.

He was quick, but Cang Xuansheng was quicker!

After slicing through him, the sword radiance became strengthened. Curling backwards, the light turned into a glow resembling a furnace, trapping the black talisman inside.

"Ah!"

The sword radiance slowly shrank. A shriek was heard coming from it. This dream master from the Evil Divine Sect was completely wiped out of existence.

"Using a knife as a net? An interesting and powerful knife technique!"

Fang Yuan realised that every time the True Divine waved his hands, there would be a streak of sword radiance emerging out. Even if the dream masters were to sacrifice their physical bodies to allow their Yin Spirit to escape, they would still end up being

trapped in the sword radiance.

Needless to say, the strong blood energy of this True Divine was enveloping the entire place. It was specialised to counter illusions and spiritual spells and this person had a lot of experience in dealing with dream masters. With regards to martial arts, of course, the dream masters would still fall behind.

"You're smart..."

After a while, Cang Xuansheng stood still. "You don't have any tricks up your sleeves. However, it's a pity that you are a member of the Realm Alliance. I can offer you a better deal for you to kill yourself!"

"Kill myself?"

Fang Yuan bit his lip. "I'm afraid I cannot accede to your request!"

"Then you're just courting death!"

With sparks, the True Divine quickly made his way towards Fang Yuan and struck a palm out.

Although it seemed like a casual palm, it was extremely swift. Fang Yuan could not react in time as his subconscious martial arts defence was only beginning to form. The palm landed squarely on his chest and Fang Yuan flew out like a cannonball.

"Hmm?"

His strike was successful, but Cang Xuansheng felt that something was not right as he looked at his own palm.

"This is a powerful True Divine strike indeed!"

From the ashes, Fang Yuan's figure walked out. He dusted his chest. Now that his shirt was tattered, his golden metallic skin was revealed and there was the print of a palm on his chest, but he had sustained no injuries.

"The martial arts Divine Body? No! You have not reached the realm of True Divine. How can you cultivate such a strong physical



body? This is unbelievable!"

Cang Xuansheng's eyes glistened. He knew that he had underestimated this opponent.

"There are many more unbelievable things that you do not know of!"

Fang Yuan twisted his head, creating loud cracking noises from his joints. With that, his entire figure seemed to have grown taller. "I have started my path of cultivation as a martial artist. I can finally put what I have learnt all these years in today's fight!"

"Rumble!"

In the next moment, the Nine Transference Mystical Technique was activated and 8 spiritual meridians formed behind Fang Yuan's back, forming a blurred figure.

"How can an 8th Meridian Wu Zong have such power?"

Cang Xuansheng glared at Fang Yuan and walked forward, turning his palms into the shape of a knife. "The Overbearing Sun Knife! Seven Death Ultimate Strike!"

"Chi! Chi!"

The devastating sword radiance appeared once more like how a sun would rise over the horizon. Its flames started to cover Fang Yuan in the sun.

The sword energy started to strike across.

The earth shook and cracks started to form on the ground as though someone had run an iron plough through it.

"Bang! Bang!"

Fang Yuan's body was smashed into the ground, forming a huge crater. He flipped himself up and sighed. "My martial arts is still too weak compared to a True Divine..."

"This is impossible!"

Witnessing this scene, Cang Xuansheng's heart shook.

Although he was using his bare hands, he had trained his sword energy for many years and had formed it by absorbing energy from the sun. With it, he had killed many powerful people before and had overpowered many powerful weapons as well. However, he could do nothing to damage this hardy physical body in front of him.

"Considering your potential, if you take up the path of a martial artist, you will surely overtake me in terms of cultivation. However, as a dream master from the Realm Alliance, I cannot let you walk out of here alive!"

Cang Xuansheng gazed at Fang Yuan and took a deep breath as though he can come to a conclusion.

"Roar! Roar!"

His body started to expand and within moments, he had grown to a much large build.

Behind him, clouds gathered, forming an illusionary figure of a martial artist. It was a person with a tortoise's back holding a snake and seemed like a legendary ancient martial artist.

"The Xuan Wu Divine Body?"

Seeing this, a hint of excitement flashed across Fang Yuan's eyes. "Watch out for my eagle claw!"

He flew forward. A strong surge of energy flowed from his chest to his arms, from his arms to his claws. With that, he struck 13 claw consecutively and his powerful claws seemed to even rip the air apart.

"Bang! Bang!"

Deafening scratching sounds landed on Cang Xuansheng's body, but they did not seem to be able to harm him.

"My Xuan Wu Divine Body specialises in defence. You cannot do

anything to me..."

Cang Xuansheng's Xuan Wu Giant mumbled something before landed a punch on Fang Yuan's head.

"Bang!"

How intense would the punch of a True Divine be?

Where Fang Yuan stood, there was another huge crater. Cracks appeared and started to spread out from the crater.

"Great! Strike me again!"

Fang Yuan crawled on the ground and stood up. Shaking his head, he laughed hysterically and leapt forward once more.

"Hmm? This is the pure brute force of the physical body... How can a human's body be so strong?"

Cang Xuansheng began to suspect something. Without holding back, he landed another punch on Fang Yuan's chest, fusing the elements of tremor, shatter and tearing into his punch. At that moment, all of these exploded in Fang Yuan's body.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan's body reacted in the same way it did previously. Without stopping, Fang Yuan made his way towards Cang Xuansheng once more.

"You're a freak!"

Cang Xuansheng exclaimed. Although he was utterly shocked, he did not hesitate. Varying his punches, he landed multiple strikes on Fang Yuan's body.

There were continuous shocking explosions heard.

Under the attack of a True Divine, although Fang Yuan had a strong physical body, he could not retaliate. In an instant, he had become a sandbag as he was being punched continuously.

The Ultimate Witch Body was an impressive body to begin with. Immense strikes which would shatter the bones of normal humans

would only do so much as to scratch the surface of the Ultimate Witch Body. With the continuous strikes, Fang Yuan began to gain experience and now, he could slowly retaliate one strike in every ten strikes. His combat experience started to increase in real time.

"Alright... come again!"

Fang Yuan broke into laughter as he struck once more. Although his mouth was full of blood, he was enjoying himself.

The punch of a True Divine was like a smash from an iron hammer. With the strikes, Fang Yuan's martial arts elemental energy started to transform into gold!

# Chapter 381: True Divine

---

"Ka-baa-boom!"

The ground tremored and space shook.

In the centre of it was a total mayhem, two monsters could be seen brawling.

Fang Yuan and Cang Xuansheng both had shockingly strong defences and their attacks did not do much on each other. Thus, they only focused on attacking with their flurry of punches as though they were two not very skilled men with only brawns and no brain.

In actual fact, the unskilled appearances were just masking their intelligence. Each and every technique and attacks contained strength powerful enough to split a mountain. A normal human or even Wu Zongs at the 7th or 8th Meridian would become a pile of minced meat if they were hit.

"Bang!"

"Heavenly Eagle 13 Chain Strike!"

"Overbearing Sun Knife!"

After yet another round of injuries sustained on both of them, the two of them briskly moved apart and stood on their own.

Cang Xuansheng wiped off the blood on the corner of his mouth and looked at the more injured Fang Yuan and shook his head, "You lost! Although your body is strong, after all, you are not a True Divine. You are the one losing out fighting with me!"

"That's right!"

Opposite him, Fang Yuan's hair was dishevelled and his shirt was torn. There were even numerous wounds on his body.

Fang Yuan obviously knew the limits to his body.

Although he was already severely wounded, a manic expression appeared on his face as he retorted, "But I still have to thank you! If you did not fight, how would I have entered the 9th Meridian!"

Fang Yuan looked at his stats.

Beside the "Nine Transference Mystical Technique", the mist covering the brackets finally fully dispersed, the words "9th Meridian" could be clearly seen!

Behind Fang Yuan, a spiritual meridian was formed and quickly entered into his body.

With the support of this spiritual meridian, things were going well for Fang Yuan and some sort of change was occurring.

"9th Meridian Wu Zong?"

Cang Xuansheng frowned slightly. To him, even if Fang Yuan suddenly broke through, it was nothing to be afraid of.

However, the next moment, his eyeballs were popping as he stared.

He saw the blurry figure behind Fang Yuan condensed and fully seeped into his body.

Immediately, a savage and explosive aura could be felt from Fang Yuan's body. Not only that, the deep wounds on his body were miraculously being healed rapidly.

"Woong! Woong!"

Outside, astonishing amounts of heavenly elemental energy gathered and formed a gigantic vortex with five colours, red, yellow, green, white and blue. It was being continuously funnelled into Fang Yuan's body.

Fang Yuan's body was like a bottomless pit that kept sucking in the unlimited supply of elemental energy.

"This is... the phenomenon of a True Divine?"

Cang Xuansheng composed himself and muttered, "You actually broke through two stages at once! After forming the 9th Meridian, you broke through the bottleneck and forged your Divine Body directly!"

As Cang Xuansheng was a True Divine that successfully forged his Divine Body too, he of course knew how difficult such a bottleneck was and how much resources it required.

However, unknowingly, a feeling of danger emerged in his mind immediately.

His intuitions as a martial artist made Cang Xuansheng knew that Fang Yuan would be successful if he broke through this time.

"I cannot let him succeed!"

Cang Xuansheng hollered and a red coloured sun appeared in the skies. Streaks of golden coloured light fell from the skies and gathered on his hands, "Golden Sun Knife, kill!"

"Swoosh!"

A knife was formed and with a strike of the knife, the knife flared brightly as though it harnessed the flames of the entire world's suns!

Cang Xuansheng exhausted all his strength to launch that knife!

Once the Golden Sun Knife was launched, the surroundings dimmed at once as the blazing knife condensed and turned into a thin line of light that shot towards the eye of the vortex where Fang Yuan was.

"Too late!"

Fang Yuan snorted and took a deep breath akin to a vortex that sucked in all the five coloured elemental energy in the surroundings. The golden metal light glowed on his body and turned into a jade-like shine. A few kinds of glow sparkled simultaneously from his body before merging together, forming a

greenish purple colour.

"Tccc! Tccccc!"

He reached out his right hand and grabbed the knife's light with ease, the beam of light was like an earthworm that kept wriggling and giving out sparks. However, it was useless against Fang Yuan.

With slightly more strength, the knife's light was annihilated at once.

Even as the power of the sun exploded, it did not affect Fang Yuan's body at all.

"This martial art body of mine is built from the foundation of the Ultimate Witch Body and combined the powers of my Giant Eagle Metal Body Technique and Hundred Poison Golden Body! I call it Pangu Eagle Body!!!"

In front of Fang Yuan, his stats window shined brightly as it changed:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 100

Magic: 61

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), True Divine

Technique: \[Pangu Eagle Body (? ? ?)\], \[8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (10%)\]

Skill: \[Medicine (Level 3)\], \[Botany (Level 5)\], \[Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)\]"

"Strength!"

Fang Yuan clenched his fist and felt the surging elemental force in his body and his body's limitless strength. He had an enlightenment, "Powerful beings are called as such because either



one of their essence, spirit or magic stat had reached 100 or above. Perhaps it was unique for dream masters as they were skilled in powerful magical abilities..."

"Both my essence and spirit have reached 100 which means that I am a True Divine! For Prominent Divine dream master, their magic must be 100 or above!"

Of course, Fang Yuan's breakthrough was a double stats breakthrough. He was much more superior than Cang Xuansheng who only had a single stat breakthrough in spirit.

"Pangu Eagle Body?!"

Cang Xuansheng face turned extremely solemn as he looked at the muddled glow on Fang Yuan's body, "I have been devoted in martial arts and I know each and every martial arts technique in the world. Inside Da Qian's ranks of martial arts Divine Bodies, there isn't even such a kind of Divine Body! I can't believe you actually self-created such technique and broke through to True Divine! What a lunatic!"

Of course, if one became psychotic while cultivating and hence died, he would be like a lunatic.

But now, since Fang Yuan succeeded, he was a grandmaster that created his own path!

Winners were crowned while losers were vilified, it was that simple!

"Speaking of which... I can only breakthrough this time all thanks to your provocation!"

Fang Yuan felt all his injuries on his bodied had recovered and his power had surpassed his peak to reach a new height. He brandished his smile at Cang Xuansheng, revealing his sparkling white teeth, "In return, I will make you the first one to die from my newly acquired martial art prowess!"

"Shameless!"

Cang Xuansheng felt a dangerous omen but revealed a wry smile on his face.

To Cang Xuansheng, although he was inferior to Fang Yuan, it was not difficult for him to escape.

However, the next moment, Cang Xuansheng's expression totally changed.

This was because Fang Yuan was already throwing a punch in front of him.

"Bang!"

The True Divine body combined with Fang Yuan's originally strong body brought about breakthroughs in both his essence and spirit which was not as simple as one plus one.

"Boom!!!"

With just one punch, Cang Xuansheng's entire body was thrown back and sounds of bones cracking could be heard.

"Impossible... how could he be so brutally strong!" Cang Xuansheng thought.

Cang Xuansheng's mind was in disarray, only one thought kept appearing in his mind, "How could my Xuan Wu Divine Body be so weak..."

Such a powerful punch caused blood to well in his eyes which subsequently flowed down his cheeks.

If he could see from his eyes, he would have seen an extremely tall, well-built and muscular Pangu Giant appearing from the purple image behind Fang Yuan. The giant was at least ten times larger than Cang Xuansheng's Xuan Wu figure. As the giant looked from high above, it brought about the powers akin to heaven being formed and earth being created. Its might was overpowering.

In front of Fang Yuan, Cang Xuansheng's figure was no different from a toddler.

"Nevermind... anyway, I have already killed many talented dream masters, that's enough..."

Under immense pain, blood spewed out from Cang Xuansheng's mouth and nose. However, his lips curled into a sinister smile as he thought, "I have no regrets in life being able to witness such martial arts before I die! In this world, martial arts would bound to prosper and flourish!"

Moments later, he saw Fang Yuan's perfect Divine Body pounce towards him. He let out a blood-curdling shriek before he died...

"A True Divine has just been beaten to death by me?"

Fang Yuan kept his bloodied fists and breathed slowly to pacify his boiling blood and elemental force.

"I have finally entered the echelons of powerful beings! Though as the most inferior one, martial arts powerful being..."

True Divine martial artist, True Elemental spiritual knights and dream masters above the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine were the overlords of Da Qian Empire as they were extremely powerful.

At this point in time, Fang Yuan was not even 30 years old and he had already stepped into this overlord tier!

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh and waved his hands. The soils on two sides moved together and formed the shape of a tomb.

"Although you view me as your enemy, you are still a True Divine. I shall erect a tomb for you!"

Fang Yuan silently pondered before he turned around and left.

Once Fang Yuan's cultivation passed this limit, there were many things he could do.

The core of Sage Changli's inheritance could be analysed.

He could start seeking revenge for his master, Master Heartless.

Furthermore, he could protect himself from being others' cat's

paw in the imminent war!

"Of course... what I need to do now is to take a good rest..."

Fang Yuan laughed unamusedly before he disappeared.

It was total silence in what was left of the battleground.

Moments later, two persons appeared. It was a scholar and an attractive lady.

"Meng Lian's spiritual aura was around this area!"

The middle-aged scholar's facial expression was very awful. He quickly scanned the surroundings and found the battleground where Cang Xuansheng fought in and also his daughter's corpse.

"D\*mn it... Cang Xuansheng, I will kill you!"

As he saw the bloody hole on Meng Lian's forehead, the middle-aged man's blood boiled.

"Sigh... I guess all these dream masters have died!"

The accompanying lady was 30 something years old, which was the age where charisma of youth and maturity merged. As her beautiful eyes turned, she understood the big picture, "That Cang Xuansheng's target must have been Realm Alliance's Fang Yuan. I heard this guy is very talented and he even broke through numerous tiers of the Illusionary Divine stage in a row! He is really different from the rest!"

"Huh! No matter how talented a genius is, after such a genius dies, there's nothing worthy left..."

The middle-aged scholar snorted and his expression changed, "But, I heard he is not so simple, even if he is against Cang Xuansheng, he should still be able to sort of handle him... He should be around here, let's find him..."

Soon enough, as they followed the traces left behind by the battle, they saw the numerous large holes in the ground and the tomb.

"Cang Xuansheng... died?"

As the middle-aged men stared intently at the tombstone, he felt it was unbelievable.

"How could it be possible? Who could kill him?"

"I saw the battle, it should be two True Divine martial artist brawling and not any of our people..."

A grim look appeared on the lady's face as she continued, "I am afraid it's that Realm Alliance's Fang Yuan!"

"He... can kill a True Divine?"

The middle-aged scholar repeated himself, "Doesn't that mean, he is also a..."

"True Divine martial artist!!!"

The lady heaved a long sigh and her gaze turned gloomy.

# Chapter 382: The Ultimate Plan

---

In the Dream Realm, Green Bronze Hall.

"What? Fang Yuan has become a True Divine?"

Elder Smelter held a message talisman in his hands as a look of shock filled his face. "Although I already know that this will happen, I never thought that it would be this quick and even kill Cang Xuansheng!"

Cang Xuansheng was famous in Da Qian for being a True Divine martial artist of the Golden Peak Sect.

Now that he was killed by a newly advanced True Divine martial artist, Fang Yuan's name would spread far and wide.

"Green Wood and the other elders must be so anxious now, hehe..."

Elder Smelter stroked his chin. He felt a little proud but speechless at the same time. "Who would've thought that the talented dream master of the Realm Alliance would have the cultivation of his martial arts stronger than his cultivation as a dream master..."

"Elder, Feng Xinzi requests to see you!"

A dream master arrived at the door of the hall; it was Feng Xinzi.

"Come in!"

Elder Smelter waved his hands. With a composed look, he opened the doors to the Green Bronze Hall.

"Greetings, Elder!"

Feng Xinzi walked in and took a bow respectfully. It was only recently when he became much more respectful and cowardly in front of Elder Smelter. Could it be out of fear?

"Hmmm, do you know that Fang Yuan has already formed the

Divine Body and is now a True Divine, sitting among us powerful beings?"

Seeing Feng Xinzi, Elder Smelter scoffed.

No matter how respectful Feng Xinzi was, compared to the combat power a True Divine would bring, everyone knew the obvious choice.

"What?"

This news was shocking and Feng Xinzi was stunned. "How is this possible?"

"This news has been verified by two elders of the Divine Lotus Cult and is proven to be true... it's a pity that you were once close with Fang Yuan but now, both of you have fallen out..."

Elder Smelter shook his head.

"Elder!"

Hearing the news, it was as though Elder Smelter had poured a bucket of cold water over him. He was shuddering in fear and suddenly he looked up towards Elder Smelter. "Elder... give me a chance! Give me another chance!"

"You deserve this!"

Elder Smelter shook his head. "The Elders have discussed this. We will demote your level of rights to become a 3rd Leaf Cultivator and will banish you to the Chilly Cave to serve for 50 years!"

"Elder!"

Feng Xingzi was startled. "I am loyal to you and the alliance. You cannot do this to me!"

"You're crazy!"

Elder Smelter appeared serious and gave off a murderous vibe.

He knew that Feng Xinzi had secretly tried to deal with Fang Yuan himself. However, since he was doing it secretly, as long as

he was not exposed, Elder Smelter would leave him to be.

However, Fang Yuan had now become a True Divine! Furthermore, this was a period of tension and only those with the ability to fight would be favoured. Although Feng Xinzi could still leverage on his past relationship with Fang Yuan, Elder Smelter doubted that it would be of much use.

'This is a pity... If only Feng Xinzi could hold his jealousy back and establish good relations with Fang Yuan, then this wouldn't have happened! Furthermore, he could potentially get assistance from Fang Yuan to improve his own cultivation. Now that things are at this stage, what else can he do?'

"Take your leave!"

Looking at the cowardly Feng Xinzi, Elder Smelter waved his hands with an expressionless look.

Feng Xinzi was in a daze. As he walked out of the Green Bronze Hall, he disappeared.

"Where are the children?"

Elder Smelter passed down his order.

"Master!"

A Fiery Dragon Child came out and paid his respects.

"Bring a gift with you under my name and proceed to the Golden Sun Prosperous Land and congratulate him!"

No matter what, Fang Yuan was still part of his faction. Now that they had gained a True Divine, their faction would be strengthened and therefore, it was worth it to establish good ties with Fang Yuan.

The first step would be to banish Feng Xinzi, and the second would be to congratulate Fang Yuan.

"Yes, Master!"



The Fiery Dragon Child took his leave and disappeared.

...

Within the Golden Sun Prosperous Land.

Seeing that Fang Yuan had returned safely, Meng Tian and Meng Guang were elated.

After all, Fang Yuan had treated them well and had regularly sent spiritual rice back to the prosperous land. He had even guided them on their martial arts. It was rare for such a good superior like Fang Yuan to come by.

The Golden Sun Prosperous Land was an insignificant piece of spiritual land and did not attract the attention of the Imperial Court. Therefore, amidst the chaos, it remained relatively peaceful.

Furthermore, as Fang Yuan entered the array, he had a shocking discovery.

The 6 hectares of Yellow Grain Rice had matured once more and was ready to harvest.

Presently, Fang Yuan's mindset was now different.

After attaining the realm of True Divine, he was now considered a powerful being in Da Qian. Therefore, he would be able to keep the secret of his Yellow Grain Rice safe.

With that, he immediately ordered for the array to be deactivated and instructed Meng Tian to start the harvest process.

This well-built man stared at the 6 hectares of Yellow Grain Rice in disbelief and Fang Yuan smiled, thinking about their foolish looks.

If these two Wu Zongs were to realise that he had formed the Divine Body, who knows what expression they would reveal.

"The True Divine, especially my Pangu Eagle Body, makes me one of the most powerful people in Da Qian Empire. I will now be able

to conceal myself from the predictions of others and many more!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.

His master's enemy was powerful. If he were to attract too much attention and be predicted by a dream future master, the enemy might make his way here to kill Fang Yuan.

Previously, he did not even dare to think about avenging his master.

However, after becoming a True Divine, he could finally think about doing it.

"Becoming a powerful being would mean that even a dream future master in the 9th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage would only obtain blurred predictions about me... Needless to say, I have yet to even encounter a dream future master in the 9th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Furthermore, I have not heard any dream future master breakthrough to become a Sage..."

Fang Yuan crossed his legs. A glow appeared on his hand as a water dragon pearl appeared.

The pearl was translucent and there was a dim mysterious glow in it. However, the fog around the glow was now much lesser than before.

This was Sage Changli's inheritance. Previously, his cultivation was too low and he was restricted to only the information outside.

"Now, based on my identity as a True Divine, I should be able to break through the restrictions!"

Fang Yuan turned serious and a purple hue flashed across his face.

"Roar! Roar!"

Behind him, the illusionary figure of a giant appeared. Its muscles were defined and it had the print of an eagle on its skin. The energy from the giant felt as though it was able to split the

heavens.

A green fog appeared and gathered together, forming the shape of an axe. The giant lifted the axe and struck towards the water dragon pearl.

"Kacha!"

After the sound of shattering glass was heard, the dim glow in the pearl exploded and an information overflowed in the form of golden runes.

"This is the time!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened. A shockingly powerful spiritual will formed a bridge, guiding the golden runes across.

"Roar! Roar!"

In the water dragon pearl, a small golden-green water dragon appeared and seemed like it was helping out with the process as well.

Finally, with pressure from both sides, the numerous golden runes which seemed uncooperative at first started to form a small golden river, flowing towards Fang Yuan's forehead.

"Ahhhh!"

Fang Yuan shrieked as he felt his head trembling.

May pieces of information flowed into Fang Yuan's mind. Every piece of information had power on its own. If not for the fact that Fang Yuan had already formed the Divine Body, his overflowed brain might just turn crazy.

"Da Qian... The natural source of dream masters.... The 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array... the system of the invisible net..."

The transference of information was extremely slow and only completed after half a day.

In a daze, Fang Yuan went straight into meditation. After 3 days and 3 nights, he finally sorted out all the new information and prioritized the ones he was interested in.

"Now I know that the array the Realm Alliance has cast is the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array. It is able to last for eternity and can contain immense power! Its most basic purpose is to sacrifice, instead of dealing with the Imperial Court of Da Qian! It will firstly recreate the entire consciousness of the Da Qian World before taking in energy to create the strongest force in the world, allowing the dream master's source world to enter!"

Fang Yuan appeared solemn and mumbled to himself. "Such effort! So much effort indeed!"

With that, Fang Yuan shuddered in fear as though the heavens had taken notice of him.

"Even though we are the children of this world, if we do this to our own world, we will still be hated upon and killed... of course, due to the fact that the higher beings are natives protected by their own spiritual auras, they are still not being noticed at the moment. However, the heavens of Da Qian will ultimately support the Imperial Court of Da Qian!"

Fang Yuan seemed to have understood a lot more.

It was no wonder that even though the dream masters of the 5 Grand Organisations had formed an alliance, they were still unable to defeat the Imperial Court.

The Imperial Court and Hidden Dragon Guards were merely representatives. The real enemy of the dream masters was the world itself! The world of Da Qian!

"This is even scarier than the Ancient Realm. This is the strongest world I've seen so far!"

Fang Yuan began to mumble to himself. "If not for the fact that we are all natives of this realm, we would have been struck by

lightning long ago and even the Sage's Hollow would be destroyed!"

"Even if we do not take any action now, once our plan begins, it will be our ultimatum against the world. We will surely lose!"

"Dream masters are indeed crazy people!"

Although they were all dream-traversers, Fang Yuan still had affection for this world in which he lived and matured in.

However, the leader of the 5 Grand Organisations, the Sage, was intending to live on forever by destroying the entire world!

His actions were heartless and Fang Yuan knew that he could never be like him.

"The next part is the crucial part!"

He rubbed his chin and revealed a sneaky smile. "Do I really want to join the dream masters and go crazy? Or should I help the world? I have a premonition that if I go against the dream masters now, I will be able to gain the protection of the world and might even produce some energy souls!"

Putting this issue aside, Fang Yuan walked out of the meditation room.

"Lord!"

Meng Tian and Meng Guang were waiting outside for a long time. "There are many messengers outside... they claim that they are here to congratulate you in attaining True Divine!"

Both of them swallowed their salivation and were still in disbelief.

After all, they were talking about becoming a True Divine!

It was one of the peak cultivation levels of Da Qian. How could their own guardian so easily achieve it?

Both of them thought that Fang Yuan was only an ordinary

middle-tiered dream master.

"Messengers?"

Conducting a sweep with his spiritual will, Fang Yuan detected a few other spiritual auras in the vicinity of the 99 Golden Suns Gigantic Array. These people were indeed instructed by a powerful being, but the higher being was not here. Instead, they were only a bunch of servants.

After all, in the ongoing war, who would have so much free time to personally pay a visit? Furthermore, it was a good deal for Fang Yuan to have such treatment considering that he had yet to advanced to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

# Chapter 383: The Past

---

After a few days.

The messengers who had come to congratulate Fang Yuan took their leave. Only a few elders of the Realm Alliance stayed behind.

In the main hall, there was a huge round table. Children of different spiritual auras were seated around the table.

"Alright! Fang Yuan, let me introduce them to you. These are the 7 Elders of the Realm Alliance. I'm sure you've met Xi Chen and Green Wood. Next up, we have Black Water, Thick Earth, Sharp Gold and Extreme Darkness!"

Elder Smelter's Fiery Child started to introduce all of them. Although he had an aged voice, he sounded proud.

"I am junior Fang Yuan. Please accept my greetings, Elders!"

A hint of gold flashed across Fang Yuan's eyes.

All these children had different spiritual auras as though they were wearing different masks. For instance, on Fiery Dragon Child, there was the illusionary image of Elder Smelter's face on it.

Knowing that all 7 elders had sent part of their soul within these messengers, Fang Yuan paid his respects.

He had seen Xi Chen before. Although he had only seen him in the form of the King Xia in the Ancient Realm, his real appearance was rather similar. Seeing Xi Chen looking at him, he returned a friendly smile.

On the other hand, Elder Green Wood's expression was a little unnatural.

Fang Yuan could only guess that this was because Green Wood's opposing faction now had the addition of a True Divine.

The other elders had their own special abilities and their spiritual auras were all extremely powerful. This was especially so for Elder

Extreme Darkness. As the only female, she covered herself with a layer of black fog and made Fang Yuan feel the most threatened out of all the other elders. She also struck fear in the other elders and sat a distance away from everyone else.

"Mmm, you're not bad! No one would think that you can form the Divine Body so quickly. After discussion among the elders, we have decided to increase your level of rights to that of a 7th Leaf Cultivator. You are now the law enforcer of the alliance!"

Elder Xi Chen nodded his head and spoke in a gentle voice.

However, with Fang Yuan's shockingly powerful spiritual will and his Fiery Golden Eyes, he could observe Xi Chen's weakness straight away. It was the same for Elder Green Wood.

They were severely injured from the previous encounter in the Ancient World as they could not escape in time.

"... Haha, that's right! Fang Yuan, you need to put in even more effort now! It's a pity that you have achieved a breakthrough in martial arts. Therefore, we are unable to promote you to the position of an elder. However, I believe that is a small issue. Considering your potential, I'm sure our alliance will soon gain a new elder!"

Elder Green Wood initially appeared depressed but now, he had a cheerful smile.

With this, Elder Smelter appeared a little embarrassed.

Fang Yuan observed them and appeared fearful. "I have only just achieved a breakthrough and have already used up most of my energy. How would I be able to think of another breakthrough? On a separate note, is the alliance leader here? Since I've joined the Realm Alliance, I believe I should pay my greetings to him."

Fang Yuan could detect that each of these 7 Illusionary Divine elders was competing with each other in terms of spiritual aura.

Elder Extreme Darkness was the strongest among all. Fang Yuan



made a guess that she had the cultivation level of a 9th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. A dark energy continuously spiralled around her and Fang Yuan felt as though he was staring into a cold night and a bright moon as soon as he noticed her.

Next up, it was Xi Chen. This elder seemed to have the cultivation level of an 8th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. Being the direct disciple of a Sage, he was special.

The other elders were all around the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and were all comparable to Smelter and Green Wood. However, their internal conflict had left Fang Yuan speechless.

"Alliance leader has important matters to see to. However, as the newest potential of the alliance, he will surely be glad to see you!"

It is only normal for a new up and coming member to pay respects to the alliance leader.

Xi Chen was stunned for a while before answering Fang Yuan.

'It seems like the plan against Da Qian has reached a crucial point where they now require a dream master in the Prominent Divine stage?'

Fang Yuan mulled for a while as he extracted information from Xi Chen's words.

"Alright, since you are now the law enforcer of the alliance, you need to be given responsibilities. Since you like the Golden Sun Prosperous Land, we have decided to give all of its rights to you. We shall also reduce the time period for you to not take up any missions to half a year. What do you think?"

The few elders exchanged glances as Extreme Darkness said her piece.

Her distinct female voice was mysterious and sinister, as though it could freeze one's soul.

"Since this is the request of the elders, I can only accept it."

Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

He was already prepared that something like that would happen. With the war, all of the elders would also be busy. How would they allow him to get away scot-free without helping out?

By reducing the time period to half a year, it was the greatest compromise the alliance could come to.

If not for the fact that he had become a True Divine and was now renowned for killing Cang Xuansheng, it was still a question if he would even be offered such a deal.

'Half a year... It seems like the war is about to break out soon... No, it has already begun. Half a year later will be the final battle!'

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as though he had understood something.

"That's great!"

The few elders exchanged glances once more. After settling everything, they took their leave from the children.

"Greetings, Lord!"

The children were all confused. After paying their respects to Fang Yuan, they took their leave as well.

"This type of magical transference technique... Firstly, they would need something to possess, for instance, these children which they would surely have done something to. Secondly, they cannot transfer too much ability to these children.... Previously, although those elders had powerful spiritual auras, they would be at most dream masters in the 6th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. I will be able to destroy all of them!"

Fang Yuan started to plan ahead. "Alright... With this half a year, I shall return to master's hometown to pay a visit. I wonder how his old friends are..."

...

Leaf Region, Cloud Jade Mountain.

The region was a small one and there were few people living here. However, the spiritual tea produced from Cloud Jade Mountain was famous and they were even patronised by the royal family of Da Qian. Therefore, they could survive on trading tea leaves and could build a small town surrounding Cloud Jade Mountain.

Many cultivators had also gathered here to settle down and live a peaceful life.

On the streets, a bull carriage was on the move. Fang Yuan wore a set of comfortable robes and a bamboo hat on his head. He laid back, appearing relaxed and lazy.

He had already obtained the full inheritance from his Master, Master Wenxin. Other than the secret 8 Gates Sword Array of a dream soldier master, there was a simple description of his hometown in the inheritance.

'My nickname is 'Heartless' and I am from Cloud Jade Mountain, Leaf Region in Da Qian Empire. I am from the Ye Family and have cultivated in swordplay from young. The elders have given me the name of 'Li'... I have achieved a breakthrough in Wu Zong at the age of 15 and have made a small name for myself. As I roamed across regions, I stumbled across the inheritance of a dream master at the age of 18. From then, I had officially become a dream master and was recruited into the Imperial Court as a Hidden Dragon Guard.'

Master Heartless was a Hidden Dragon Guard, a law enforcer of the Da Qian Imperial Court!

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not want to follow his master's steps with regards to this. Furthermore, he was only forced to find a backing only because he had offended the Divine Lotus Cult and from there resolve the conflict through the Realm Alliance.

If Fang Yuan were to join the Imperial Court, he would find himself in more trouble as the Imperial Court was all the while against the Divine Lotus Cult.

"As a Hidden Dragon Guard, Master has the resources from the Imperial Court to cultivate himself. He was extremely powerful and under his 8 Gates Sword Array, he had killed countless people and from then created animosity with the two evil sects... After forming the entire 8 Gates Sword Array, he was only inferior to dream masters in the Prominent Divine stage. He had even killed a few direct disciples of Sages and was heartless. From then on, he was nicknamed 'Heartless'..."

Fang Yuan sighed as he recalled the information which he had once read from the inheritance:

"Even with the protection of the Imperial Court, I have made too many enemies. Together with some crazy dream masters, they have caused the Misfortune of Cloud Jade Mountain. They had killed my master's disciples in one night and even severely injured my masters' physical body. Fortunately, Master managed to escape but his cultivation was greatly affected. With that, the Imperial Court started to give him a cold treatment... Because of this, Master has given up hope on the Hidden Dragon Guards. After creating chaos for them, he left and arrived at the mainland where he adopted me..."

Leaning on the carriage, Fang Yun was in a daze as he recalled all that had happened in the mainland.

Because of this, if Fang Yuan were to reveal the 8 Gates Sword Array, he would make the entire world turn against him!

"The dream master which had killed Master's disciples was the sect head of Source Seeking Sect. He was the renowned Demon Killing Divine Pen, Li Qingmian. Li Qingmian was a dream master in the Prominent Divine stage! He had the power to create things at will! With a pen, he can create the world. With a flower, he can

create heaven!"

This opponent was still too strong, even though Fang Yuan had already become a True Divine.

"Of course, I cannot do anything to Source Seeking Sect. However, during the impending war between the 5 Grand Organisations and Da Qian Imperial Court, I might be able to take his opportunity..."

Fang Yuan sighed. "As of now, I need to hide and visit the few places that Master has mentioned..."

To hide and strike when the opportunity arose was a theory which all dream masters understood.

The family members of the Ye Family which Master Heartless had come from had already escaped. They had used secret techniques to prevent predictions and even changed their names just to avoid trouble.

From then till now, there should still be a few survivors carrying the blood of the Ye Family.

As the bull carriage moved forward, Fang Yuan arrived at a large city in no time.

This was Cloud Jade City, where the Ye Family once lived.

Fang Yuan dressed up as a businessman. Moving his muscles about, he altered his appearance and took up the look of a spiritual tea trader who had arrived from other regions. After walking around the streets aimlessly, he arrived at the East side of the city.

This area was largely different from the rest. It had been geographically altered before and had a few connected lakes. There were many types of vegetation being planted here as well. Looking at the pleasing sight of greenery and the lack of people, this sight was something the other areas of the city could not offer.

"This place... It should be where the Ye Family's mansion once

stood....."

Looking at the crystal-clear lake, Fang Yuan was overwhelmed with emotions.

Realising that there was a small tea shop nearby, he quickly went there and ordered a pot of tea.

Although it was not spiritual tea, the fact that they were close to Cloud Jade Mountain explained the quality and fragrance of the tea.

"This is good tea!"

Fang Yuan acted surprised and glistened his eyes.

"Haha... Although my tea cannot be compared with spiritual tea, it is one of the best among the normal teas. This skill of mine was obtained years ago when I served in a tea shop of the Ye Family. Among all the tea masters and chefs, I was among one of the best..."

The shop owner had a head full of white hair. He gazed afar as though he was reminiscing. "Unfortunately... The Ye Family was destroyed in one night and the tea forest was burnt down. Even half of Cloud Jade City was destroyed. That was one of the worst nights..."

Fang Yuan silently listened as he drank his tea with a calm look.

After a while, he placed a silver coin on the table and left.

# Chapter 384: Siblings

---

30 miles to the west of Jade Cloud Mountain stood a huge lake with ends stretching beyond the horizon. Reflecting the sunset on the surface of the lake, it was a majestic sight to behold. It was almost 200 squared miles in area and was named Leaf Lake.

Although it was a huge lake, there were not many spiritual objects. It was an area lacking in resources. Because there were only a few cultivators here, the few not-so-well-to-do martial artists here began to occupy plots of land and the strongest of them was only a Wu Zong in the Meridian Opening Realm.

"Master's last descendant must have lived here, right? Master had once used a secret technique and even changed his bloodline. Therefore, even the predictions of dream masters or the curses on his bloodline will not affect anything here!"

Fang Yuan changed his ride to a horse and wore green martial artist robes. He hung a long knife around his waist and adopted the most common of appearances of lone cultivators.

"I previously did not dare to come here due to my background and I feared that the crazy dream masters from Source Seeking Sect would trace me all the way here. But now, I have reached the peak of martial artists and attained True Divine. Now that I can cover up my traces and become undetectable, I can finally come here without any worries.

In the eyes of a high-tiered dream future master, the river of life and fate could be sorted out like how a comb would be able to straighten hair.

Once one becomes a powerful being, one would become like a black hole, absorbing the strings of life and fate. Therefore, one would be able to avoid being predicted.

"It has only been 10 over years. There shouldn't be many

changes!"

Fang Yuan cracked his horsewhip. As his horse neighed loudly, it started to gallop faster.

Four Elements City.

This city was much smaller than Cloud Jade City. The walls were short and parts of it were broken. The armour of the guards were old and tattered, but everything from the city gave off a murderous and evil vibe.

Because of the need to survive, they were forced to their limits to work with whatever resources they had, which was why they were living their lives like scavenging wolves.

Harsh environments would nurture strong people.

"Hold up, the entry fee is one tael of silver!"

Fang Yuan was being halted as soon as he arrived at the city gates.

The greedy look of the officer in charge scanned around from his clothing, horse, a bag of valuables and finally the long knife on his waist. Signalling his intention, the guard by the door quickly stood before Fang Yuan and shouted.

"Here it is!"

Fang Yuan smirked and tossed a piece of silver.

"Get out of my way!"

The officer nodded his head and ordered for the path to be cleared.

It was not that he could not ask for more money. The officer knew from experience that these types of lone cultivators with weapons were not to be trifled with.

Since there were so many others which he could pick on, why would he risk himself to anger this person and put his own life in



danger?

In the city, there were very few people. The whole atmosphere felt as though the entire place was in chaos.

"Oh, that's right, the chaos in this empire is already beginning to pick up..."

Fang Yuan suddenly realised that after living in the prosperous land and 9 Extremes Mountain for long, he had forgotten how it felt like to roam about like a nomad.

After the alliance of the 5 Grand Organisations, the world of cultivators fell into a turmoil. The 99 regions in Da Qian were not spared either and cities with non-cultivators were also facing tumultuous times.

15 years ago, Wu Yue of Yong Region had led 3,000 armoured soldiers to revolt. They had attacked city after city and as of now, he already had control over 2 regions and was known as King Yong!

In the same year, there were rebels from the South as well. They had gathered 20,000 sailors which controlled ships, killing the soldiers from Da Qian. The leader was Zhang Jin. He was known as 'The Heavenly General', with 18 cities and the rivers in the South under his control, restricting traffic and trade through these rivers.

Most importantly, near the Jade Capital, there was a rebellion as well and the fight was even brought to the centre of Middle Region, affecting the Jade Capital!

These 3 were the most powerful rebels of the empire. There were 10 other smaller rebellion groups inciting rebellions in various regions. Although their influence was limited, they were still able to create trouble and make it hard for the villagers to live peacefully.

"To think about it... the successful rebellion groups are all

supported by dream masters..."

Finding himself a restaurant, Fang Yuan settled down, ordered a plate of beef and another plate of vegetables and two vats of wine before enjoying his meal.

"The chaos which is happening everywhere is within the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array. Da Qian is unable to keep the earth dragon under control, resulting in the dispersing of the breath of the earth... The instability of the dragon meridian will lead to further complications, including the uprising of dragons and snakes."

Although this world was not particular about Fengshui, Fang Yuan could still use the explanation from the Karma World and the pieces of the puzzle would still fall into place. This showed that even though worlds and realms differ, they were ultimately the same.

The location of the restaurant was extremely central and it was the best place to obtain information.

Their culinary skills were commendable as well. The beef was marinated and was charred on the surface. However, the fibres of the meat were chewy and the dish was fragrant. After eating a few pieces of meat, Fang Yuan placed his chopsticks down and sipped on his wine as he gathered his information.

Considering his powerful spiritual will, nothing in the restaurant could hide from him.

"This world is already in chaos. Just yesterday, a relative of mine escaped from Liyang. He claimed that there were already soldiers there, and they belonged to The Heavenly General..."

"Sigh. The battle at Lan River resulted in the death of all the Naval Officers from the Imperial Court. No one else from the South can block the army of The Heavenly General... I'm afraid that Da Qian Empire is doomed!"

"Who cares what would happen to Da Qian. Even if the king were to change, as long as we villagers listen to them and pay taxes, the new king would not force us to death. Why bother ourselves with such troubles? Let's drink!"

...

Most of the people in the restaurant were discussing the current affairs and were speaking softly. After a few sentences, they would stop talking and start drinking, which disappointed Fang Yuan.

At this point in time, two cultivators in the disguise of martial artists walked in, arousing Fang Yuan's interest.

It was a pair of young men. They had long swords with them and were decent looking. They gave off the vibe of young heroes as they had requested for a private table and ordered plenty of food and wine.

"Brother, the fight between the head of Sha Sect and master of Thunderclap Palm, Elder Han, is going to be interesting!"

The younger of the both of them wore green robes and seemed excited. "Years ago, Elder Han had brought his entire family to Four Elements City and ruled the city with his Giant Thunderclap Palm before becoming established. In these 10 years, Elder is still fit as a fiddle and is not any weaker than he was years ago! However, the Sha Sect seemed fierce and determined. They are also an experienced sect. Now that the sect head of Sha Sect is eyeing on the assets of Han Family, a fight is inevitable!"

"Brother, that is logical!"

The elder brother sounded more matured and seemed around 15 years old. He was wearing blue. As he held his cup of wine, he smiled unnaturally. "Master has instructed us to descend the mountain and train but did not ask us to get involved in all these. Know what we are supposed to do, and remember it! Throughout the journey, you have caused many problems for me already. If you

carry on, I will be sure to tell master about it."

Hearing his tone, it was as though he was already aware of his brother's antics and was giving out a warning.

"Ah, brother, forgive me! I will never do it again!"

The young man in green seemed to have come to his senses as though he was extremely fearful of his master.

"Alright, after this meal, let's look for the Han Family and watch the show!"

The man in blue quipped. "The sect head of Sha Sect, Sha Lifei and Elder Han of the Han Family are experienced Wu Zongs. Although they have not reached the Meridian Opening Stage, they have a wealth of experience and this fight will be interesting..."

"But both of them are not your match!"

The young man in green laughed.

"That's hard to say. After all, since we are at the same cultivation level, our techniques, secret moves and combat experience will all come into play..."

The young man in blue smiled and sounded confident. "However, if it was one-on-one, I am still rather confident."

"Hmph, you're too confident!"

Upon hearing the man in blue, a pair of siblings sitting at another table were enraged. The elder brother immediately slapped the table. "What are you saying? You're young and you don't know anything. How will you know the power of my family's Thunderclap Palm?"

"You're from the Han Family?"

The man in green robes examined them before revealing a sly look. "Brother, I did not cause this."

"Yes, we are!"

The man in blue rolled his eyes. Never would he expect to offend the Han Family with a single sentence.

However, the Han Family had already lived here for 10 over years and their influence had already spread far and wide. Therefore, it was only normal to bump into the people of Han Family.

"Hmph! I am Han Jingfei of the Han Family. Apologise, or..."

This young man from the Han Family stretched out his right hand and smacked the table. As he mustered his strength, the perfectly sturdy table immediately broke into half, demonstrating his strength. From the looks of it, Fang Yuan predicted that he was in the realm of the 4 Heavenly Gates and was an ordinary martial artist.

After all, Fang Yuan was at a stage where he had already killed countless Wu Zongs. Those under the realm of elemental force was nothing to him!

However...

Looking at the siblings of the Han Family, Fang Yuan then proceeded to examine the two young men. One of them was a Wu Zong and the other one was at the peak of the 12th Gate. Fang Yuan was speechless. 'The people of Master's race seem to be ignorant and too full of themselves!'

"Brother!"

A young lady tugged at Han Jingfei's sleeves. "Let's go home, otherwise Father is going to be angry."

"Ling'er, wait here. I have to teach these two fools a lesson!"

Han Jingfei exclaimed.

The shopkeeper of the restaurant could recognise Han Jingfei and knew him as the one who would always cause trouble. However, he stood by the side and smiled, with no intention of stopping the fight.

"Aiya... I'm really afraid!"

The young man in green picked up a piece of wood. As he tightened his grip, wood shavings began to slip through his fingers.

"Eh?"

Han Jingfei was stunned.

Although he was reckless, he knew a powerful martial artist when he saw one. With this simple demonstration, he already knew that his opponent was much stronger than him and therefore, he could only feel helpless.

'These two young men are around the same age as me, so who would think that their cultivation would be so much higher than mine? If the younger brother is already so powerful, is his elder brother a Wu Zong?'

Sweat started to trickle from Han Jingfei's forehead. He was unwilling to concede. With a flushed face, the situation came to a stalemate.

"Brother!"

Han Ling'er's face turned pale as she pleaded her brother to look at his surroundings.

Resembling a helpless rabbit, the young man in green robes was elated. "Forget it... I shall not pursue the fact that you have shown us disrespect. As long as you get your sister to serve us three cups of wine as an apology, we can forget everything that has happened. How's that?"

"Mmm!"

Han Jingfei remained silent. The man in blue lowered his head and felt that his younger brother had finally matured.

# Chapter 385: Assistance

---

"You scoundrel!"

Han Jingfei was enraged as they provoked his younger sister. He smacked out his palm which was burning red.

This was Han Family's "Giant Thunderclap Palm" which was a powerful martial arts technique. There would be no problem for one who possessed such a technique to cultivate into a Wu Zong and there was even a possibility for him to reach the Meridian Opening Realm.

Of course, although Han Jingfei was impetuous, he was not an idiot. While he hollered, he had already secretly hinted his servants outside to return home quickly to ask for help before he fought against the two brothers.

"Thunderclap contains the strength of both thunder and fire! Your Thunderclap Palm only has fire strength while its thunder strength is not even formed and you dare to embarrass yourself with such a half-baked skill?"

The youth in green shirt smirked and extended his right hand too. "Look at the prowess of my Mystic Jade Technique!"

As he extended his arms, his skin was changing along and turned into crystal clear jade-like skin, as though it was beautifully carved from jade. The green shirt youth was intentionally showing off as he channelled 90% of his strength to display his technique. He wanted Han Jingfei to suffer under him.

As Fang Yuan watched the scene unfold, his eyebrows frowned slightly.

The green shirt youth was vicious. If no one stopped him, Han Jingfei would be severely injured.

"Bang!"

The two palms clashed and their energy could be felt.

A choking noise could be heard as one of them was thrown back and smashed into the wall. Lots of wine and dishes spilt on his body; he was ravaged and kept shrieking in pain.

"Eh?"

The pupil of the youth in blue shirt shrunk as he smashed the wine cup in his hands, "Junior?"

He ran forward to the green shirt youth's side and saw his brother crying in pain while holding his right hand. Part of his arm's bone was jutting out and exposed as blood flowed down continuously. It was as though his arm was run over by some sort of beast.

"Senior..."

Tears dripped from the green shirt youth's eyes as he whined, "His....his palm strength is so weird! You have to seek revenge for me!"

"Rest assured!"

The blue shirt youth's hands grabbed on to his junior's arm bone with lightning fast speed and pushed it back. Under the crisp sound of bones being aligned, the green shirt youth's eyes turned white as he fainted.

The blue shirt youth's hands did not stop moving as he dexterously applied spiritual medicine on his wound and bandaged it. From how fast his fingers moved, it was evident that he was very experienced in doing it.

Moments later, the blue shirt youth stood up and looked at Han Jingfei. He had a serious expression never seen before on his face as he said, "I, Lan Feihong from Mystic Jade Sect, pay my respects to Brother Han. My junior was impudent in his words and was a little disrespectful, but why did you have to be so heavy-handed?"



The blue shirt youth now viewed Han Jingfei as some sort of hidden young skilled martial artist. Inside his heart, it was burning with anger.

Furthermore, even he himself could not realise that Han Jingfei was so skilled in martial arts, which meant that Han Jingfei was much more powerful than he imagined.

"I..."

Han Jingfei was still stunned as he stood still at his spot, "I don't know anything..."

"Wait a minute, the two of them might not be as powerful as I thought. It might just be some sort of trickery when they crushed the wood into powder..."

As these thoughts flashed through his mind, Han Jingfei became braver and shouted at the two of them, "Humph! You two useless thugs dare to come to Four Elements City and brag shamelessly but did not even bother to check whose territory is this! I am just teaching you a lesson!"

"Ok!"

Lan Feihong heaved a long breath and his eyes glistened, "Can Brothen Han teach my humble self a few techniques?"

"Humph! How dare you quacks try to be cocky..."

Han Jingfei was sniggering, but suddenly, his eyes turned round and mouth turned agape like a toad.

This was because, in front of him, Lan Feihong was secretly channelling his technique. Around Lan Feihong's body, a green light was sparkling and turned into the shape of a jade rod which he held tightly in his hand.

At the same time, he was continuously exuding a fearsome might that seemed to be linked to the heavens and earth.

"Projecting elemental energy? Giving elemental energy from the

outside of one's body? He is a ... Wu Zong..."

Han Ling'er who was at the side covered her mouth in shock.

She had only seen before such a projection and fearsome might from her grandfather's body, who was a Wu Zong.

"It... it is fake.....but no quack would be able to imitate a Wu Zong! Could what he said be true..."

Han Jingfei mouth's felt intensely bitter as though he just drank the most concentrated bitter wine and almost could not speak.

Han Jingfei had only just broken through the 4 Heavenly Gates and cultivated his Yin and Yang. He did not even reach the stage of an Earth Gate martial artist nor cultivated his miniature elemental force yet and would, therefore, be a piece of cake for a Wu Zong!

"Please engage!"

Opposite him, Lan Feihong did not seem to believe Han Jingfei was just a weak martial artist and viewed him as someone who was playing dumb to gain an advantage.

Han Jingfei's gaze intensified as he thought, "Till now, I can't even detect anything abnormal from him, his hidden martial arts techniques must be extremely powerful! I cannot be careless!"

With such a thought, Lan Jingfei moved his hands mightily as he revealed his esteemed technique, "Cloud Rod 8 Strike!"

Immediately, Han Jingfei saw the Wu Zong charge towards him with both his hands transforming elemental force into jade rods. The shadow of the two rods reflected their unlimited power.

Furthermore, a powerful thought had already viciously invaded his mind as he could not move and remained still like a small rabbit that met a ferocious tiger.

"Brother!"

Under the shadow of the rods, only a girl's screams of terror could be heard.

"Boom!"

Suddenly, a loud boom erupted and the elemental energy projection dispersed at once. Han Jingfei stood still at the same spot and stared at his own finger in astonishment.

Opposite him, Lan Feihong looked at the bloody hole in his chest and could not believe what just happened.

Moments before, the Han Jingfei who had no ability to retaliate suddenly raised his hands and shot out a sword essence that annihilated the rods' shadow and left a gaping hole on Lan Feihong's chest.

"What a powerful sword essence! I concede defeat!"

Lan Feihong let out a wailing laughter before a hateful look appeared on his face, "Just that the way you do things... is too unscrupulous..."

"What... what did I do? How come I don't know what's happening..."

Han Jingfei was on the verge of tears.

He was frightened by how he raised his hands and released the sword essence just now.

"Hmph! My skills are inferior to yours! What else is there to say?"

Lan Feihong looked below and saw numerous people had already arrived outside. Leading that group was a tall and well-built elder with a long beard and mighty look.

"Who dares to harm my grandson?"

"Humph!"

Lan Feihong clenched his teeth and carried his green shirt junior in one hand while breaking through a window with the other. He leapt out of the restaurant and fled far away like a bird.

"Impressive Lightness Skill! A Wu Zong indeed!"

Han Family's Elder then went up the restaurant and lightly patted Han Jingfei's face, "Grandson... it's fine now, with grandpa here, no one dares to harm you!"

"Grandpa!"

Han Ling'er tugged Grandpa Han's sleeve and said, "Others didn't bully us, it was big brother who was bullying others!"

"Eh?"

Grandpa Han's eyes widened at once, "Although that guy is young, he is no doubt a Wu Zong! You all were bullying him?"

"Grandpa... I was!"

Han Jingfei squeezed out an expression even uglier than a crying expression as he said, "They claimed to be from Mystic Jade Sect and were beaten by me! I... I brought trouble to Han Family!"

"Mystic Jade Sect? One of the three big sects in Leaf Lake? The Mystic Jade Sect with a Wu Zong in the Meridian Opening Realm as their head?"

Grandpa Han almost choked to death as he heard what his grandson said. He immediately opened his eyes wide and scanned the surroundings.

As Grandpa Han was older and wiser, he had much more worldly experiences than his grandson. He knew that even if ten Han Jingfei fought against one Wu Zong, the Wu Zong would still defeat them with ease unless someone was secretly providing assistance.

The restaurant was in a total wreck and many of the customers had already run off as they feared trouble. Only the shopkeeper and a waiter were hiding in a corner.

Nevertheless, there was still a table that remained unscathed. The customer on it was even happily enjoying his wine which was very odd looking compared to the surroundings.

"Greetings, friend!"

Grandpa Han went forward and greeted this young man while sizing up him with his eyes.

The man was very young and appeared to be 20 years old only. However, he had sword-like brows, star-like eyes and appeared solemn and out of the ordinary. He was dressed like a normal martial artist. He slightly lifted his head to reveal a bright smile as he greeted, "Since you have come, why not have a drink, Elder!"

"That sounds good!"

As Grandpa Han tried to probe, he could not figure out what this young man's cultivation was and felt uneasy. Nevertheless, he still amiably sat down and lifted his wine cup, "I, Han Xiaotian, toast you! Can I ask what is your name?"

"Fate caused us to meet, why bother to ask if we met before..."

Fang Yuan smiled, "My nickname is Crazy Knife. Pardon me for teaching those two young ones a lesson for being arrogant!"

"Indeed!"

Han Xiaotian had a look of realisation on his face.

Han Jingfei and Han Ling'er who stood beside Han Xiaotian finally realised their benefactor was right there. Their curious eyes kept looking at Fang Yuan as they sized him up.

It was especially so for Han Ling'er as her face turned slightly red.

"Wow! Looks like there's some advantage to having a beautiful face!" Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Fang Yuan was speechless at such a scene as he caressed his cheeks.

As Fang Yuan changed his appearance, he slightly improved his looks to fit the beauty standards. His current face was already much better than his previous one and he could be deemed as a

pretty boy.

"Furthermore, this pair of brother and sister look like nice people and I guess fate brought us together which is why I decided to help them against such bullies!"

"Thank you very much..."

Han Xiaotian was very much speechless.

This was originally a small issue as his grandson would have just learned his lesson after being defeated. However, with Fang Yuan's so-called assistance, they had now offended Mystic Jade Sect! It was truly unlucky for the Han Family.

"Helping them my a\*s!" Han Xiaotian thought.

Inside Han Xiaotian's heart, he was definitely very frustrated and vexed.

Nonetheless, since they had already offended Mystic Jade Sect, they could not bear to offend another person. Han Xiaotian still forced a smile and appeared cheery.

"Great, since this trouble was caused by me, I will settle it!"

Fang Yuan had already completed more than half of his goal and he immediately heroically continued, "I just finished cultivating in the mountains and I'm looking forward to testing my skills! If Mystic Jade Sect comes after you all again, I will settle them myself!"

"I was waiting for you to say this!" Han Xiaotian thought.

Han Xiaotian's eyes sparkled as he could not contain his smile and thanked Fang Yuan profusely. He even warmly invited Fang Yuan to stay with Han Family.

"How... how could I trouble you!"

Fang Yuan acted like he was rejecting the offer which made Han Xiaotian anxiously use up all his pleasantries to make Fang Yuan accept the invite.

# Chapter 386: Killing Chickens

---

Although Han Family had moved into Four Elements City for less than 30 years, with Han Xiaotian as an elder that led the family, their family thrived well. Their mansion was sprawling and opulent, which evoked a wealthy feeling.

"Morning, Mr Crazy Knife!"

Early in the morning, Fang Yuan just woke up and was extravagantly served by eight young maids. As he walked to the courtyard, he saw Han Jingfei and his sister waiting over there. There were a few drops of sweat on their body which meant they had been waiting for quite some time.

Han Jingfei felt the most uneasy inside him.

At the banquet last night, Fang Yuan saw him in a totally different light and praised him as being "sturdy and well built while also talented and intelligent", which meant that he was suitable to train in Crazy Knife's martial arts.

When Han Xiaotian heard it, he was absolutely speechless as he was very clear what kind of person his grandson was.

But at that time, due to a certain purpose, he still let Han Jingfei and his sister get closer to Fang Yuan.

"In actual facts... this Han Xiaotian is a nephew of Master. Thus, I would be two generations above this pair of siblings... but for no reason, my seniority was dropped by two levels! That's so sad!" Fang Yuan thought.

After Fang Yuan made his observations yesterday, he had already largely confirmed that this Han Family was one branch of his Master's family.

They had even changed their surnames, it was evident that they were hiding from troubles.

"Hmm, since both of you can come, that's great!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and acted like some sort of hero, "Although both your builds are rather average, both of you are still suitable to learn my line of martial arts and secret techniques! If the two of you train well, you all might be accomplished next time."

"Ah... please teach us, teacher!"

Han Jingfei was a ditz, he was very excited the moment he heard what Fang Yuan said. After Han Ling'er tugged his sleeves, he then realised something and laughed dumbly while scratching his head, "Of course, I still have to seek approval from grandpa!"

"Humph! This line of martial arts of mine only has one disciple per generation and there are also special rules to be adhered to!"

Fang Yuan looked at Han Ling'er and smiled sinisterly.

"What rules?"

Han Jingfei asked curiously before he suddenly remembered this Crazy Knife was a loner and that he might even be someone from an evil sect, which explained why he was so extreme in dealing with things. Hence, Han Jingfei was secretly afraid.

"This line of martial arts can only be passed down to one person per generation..."

Fang Yuan shook his head and continued, "Before this, I already have one disciple under me. If you want to learn, I have to go back and kill that disciple first before I can accept you as my disciple!"

"Hehe... you must be joking..."

Fear struck in Han Jingfei's heart as he secretly confirmed Fang Yuan must be a skilled martial artist from an evil sect inside his mind. Now, he could only smile awkwardly to hide his thoughts.

"But one or two techniques should be no problem! Catch it..."



Fang Yuan loosened the long knife on his waist and threw it forward.

"Bang!"

The knife was brought randomly from the street side and its blade was extremely mediocre. However, it was now different after Fang Yuan trained with it once and secretly planted his Mind Imprint on it.

Han Jingfei was almost breathless just from holding the handle of the knife.

A tinge of blood appeared in his eyes as though he saw the scenes of early civilisation, where hundreds of tribes fought against each other on the vast lands. There was a barbarian wielding a long knife slicing through everything while battling against all sorts of wild beasts.

"This sword is called Demon Knife and its technique is called Demon Knife Technique. This knife can kill deities and snatch their souls, each slice of this knife is heartless..."

As Fang Yuan's deep and serene voice be heard, Han Jingfei snapped out of his trance and his forehead was drenched with sweat.

"You must remember, the essence of this knife technique is, 'humans must resist the knife' and it is not 'the knife must resist humans'! If your mind is not strong enough, you might be led astray and never recover from the tribulations!"

In actual facts, the 12 Demon Knife Styles were just an improvisation made by Fang Yuan from one of the techniques in the witches' inheritance combined with modern martial arts.

Although the knife technique was only slightly above average, it was vicious, strong and was forged through numerous experiences. Accompanied by the hint of barbarism on the knife, the might of the person who wields it would increase tremendously and there

would be hope for him to become a Wu Zong one day!

Hence, seeing how useless Han Jingfei was, Fang Yuan thought he had to harden him through some training for him to become accomplished.

"Big brother... this demon knife is so dangerous, let's not learn it?"

Han Ling'er tugged Han Jingfei's arms and was so scared she almost cried out.

"Not learn it? No way!"

Han Jingfei clenched his teeth. He missed that feeling of world domination he felt when he was in his short moment of trance just now, which made him determined to learn it.

Furthermore, Han Jingfei knew that with his own innate talents, there was only a 50% chance of him becoming a Wu Zong in his entire lifetime.

However, if he had that knife, he could win against all martial artists who passed the 4 Heavenly Gates and his chances of becoming a Wu Zong would multiply like crazy!

There was nothing else to be said and the choice of obvious.

"Hmm, not bad, each slice of the knife does not come with regret! Every time you draw your knife, you must draw blood! You must, must remember this!"

Inside the garden, Fang Yuan sat inside the pavilion as he watched Han Jingfei obsessively and repeatedly practised his knife techniques.

Opposite Fang Yuan, Han Ling'er was very concerned but forced herself to remain composed as she brewed tea for Fang Yuan.

She was skilled and dainty in preparing the tea and watching her brew tea was like watching a butterfly fluttering beautifully. It also made Fang Yuan smelt a familiar scent.

"Great tea!"

As Fang Yuan drank the tea, its taste lingered in his mind. Fang Yuan was slightly dazed by the tea.

The tea and her skills were passed down within a family, which made Fang Yuan noticed the slight similarities between it and meditative tea ceremony.

After a long pause, Fang Yuan finally slowly said, "Your basics are passable, you don't have to learn any martial arts. I have some medical skills and a mind-cleansing formula which I can teach you. If you master it, even if your brother goes crazy and even demonic next time, you will still be able to save him from it. Are you willing to learn?"

Actually, the Demon Knife Fang Yuan gave only appeared scary. It was at most better at killing and with Han Jingfei's calibre, it would be extremely difficult for him to become demonic.

Nevertheless, Han Ling'er was still scared of it and immediately exclaimed, "I am willing!"

"Great, very good!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head, "But before that, you have to learn how to brew tea!"

"Brew tea?"

From her eyes, it could be told that the young girl was slightly perplexed.

"That's right..."

Fang Yuan felt extremely emotional inside his heart. Master Heartless accepted him as a disciple last time and now, he was teaching two descendants of the Ye Family. There was a subtle sense of the amazingness of fate in how this came about.

"Such a pity, after I saw the members of Han Family yesterday, many of them are not worthy to be cultivated. By helping too

many of them, it will only bring about more troubles. They would be better off living their lives peacefully as normal people..."

As Fang Yuan reminisced the scenes, his eyes glistened.

...

Many days later.

Somewhere in Four Elements City.

The head of Sha Sect, Sha Lifei was holding an iron ball on each hand as he stared at the elder who came to visit. With a solemn expression, he asked, "You are?"

"I am Cheng Miao!"

Cheng Miao was donned in a white robe and had a celestial appearance.

The moment Sha Lifei heard his name, he was immediately taken aback and paid his respects, "So it's Mystic Jade Sect's head who came to visit personally, my apologies for the discourtesy!"

"Eh, you want to go against Han Family?"

Cheng Miao eyed Sha Lifei and his powerful might as a Wu Zong at the Meridian Opening Realm could be felt like a giant rock that smashed down.

"That's right... I guess you are also preparing to deal with him?"

Sha Lifei was secretly pleased with such but did not reveal it on his face. As the overlord who was determined to crush Han Family, how would he not know about any big matters that happened in Four Elements City? Sha Lifei obviously knew about the matter where Mystic Jade Sect's people were defeated by Han Family's people.

"Very good, let's begin earlier! You will visit them personally tomorrow and I want to see who was the one who dared to offend my Mystic Jade Sect?"

A furious expression flashed across Cheng Miao's face.

After all, Lan Feihong was his favourite disciple. Cheng Miao was enraged when he saw Lan Feihong returned with serious injuries with no clear reasons.

Sha Lifei was elated, with the lead of a Wu Zong at the Meridian Opening Realm, he was very confident and immediately reassured, "Please be assured, Sir! My people have already been spying on Han Family and we know that that person lives with Han Family. He had not gone out for many days which meant he must still be there!"

"Very good, I want to see who was the one who dared to offend us!"

Perhaps Cheng Miao stayed in this impoverished region for too long that he had already become too arrogant and conceited.

"Offend you? Who do you think you are?"

Suddenly, a youth's laughter could be heard from the door.

"Who's that?"

Sha Lifei and Cheng Miao were shocked. They immediately saw the shine of a knife slicing about as two disciples of Sha Sect shrieked in pain while the doors were smashed into pieces at once. The shadow of a man in black shirt wielding a knife slowly walked in.

"Eh? You are... Han Family's Han Jingfei?"

Sha Lifei's eyes twitched as he saw his two guards dying on the ground. "Why do you seem like a different person now?"

"Humph, the two of you are in cahoots to scheme against my family. Since you all have met me now, I will give you a taste of my strength!"

Han Jingfei brandished his knife and his menace was dominating.

However, inside his heart, he wanted to cry but could not, "Teacher Crazy Knife... don't play anymore!"

"Don't worry, just let go and do it! Think about it, even though your cultivation has not reached the realms of elemental force, you are about to kill two Wu Zongs today! Also, one of them is at the Meridian Opening Realm, your name would spread far and wide!" A soft voice rang inside his heart.

"I don't want this kind of fame at all!" Han Jingfei whined inside his heart.

"Eh, young man, you are so good in martial arts at such a young age, very good! I am looking highly of you, ok...."

Under Fang Yuan's taunt, Han Jingfei could not help but charge forward with his Demon Knife Technique which totally enveloped Sha Lifei and Cheng Miao.

"No way, there's something weird about this guy!"

Cheng Miao stepped back a few steps. As he felt the viciousness of the Demon Knife, his expression turned awry.

"I don't care if there's something weird, the two of us are both Wu Zongs, he would be a piece of cake!"

Sha Lifei roared and whipped out a long whip with spikes from his waist that moved like a python, "Boundless Yellow Sands!"

"Heaven and Earth Jade Quake!"

Cheng Miao nodded his head and clasped both his hands. He projected elemental energy and his hands turned into a squarish piece of white jade seal that smashed towards Han Jingfei.

"Two Wu Zongs fighting against me, I'm so dead! Save me, teacher!" Han Jingfei was scared soulless and screamed inside his heart.

"Hmm, look carefully!" Fang Yuan's thoughts replied and Han Jingfei immediately moved and struck out his long knife. The

knife's light split and immediately formed a purgatory that welcomed the two Wu Zongs.

"Huu! Huuuu!"

Large amounts of elemental energy from the heavens and earth gathered and turned into a black shadow of a ghost that roared on the knife's body.

With one slice, the evil ghost descended and sought for blood!

"Elemental force? Aren't you..."

Under the light of the knife, Cheng Miao's horrified voice could be heard. Two streams of blood erupted at once.

"Boom! Boom!"

Two corpses smashed on to the floor. Han Jingfei stared at the long sword on his hand and still could not believe what just happened, "Two Wu Zongs just died like that? Why was it easier than killing two chicken?"

# Chapter 387: The End

---

"Is this person... really, Sha Lifei?"

Han Jingfei looked at the person he just killed in disbelief.

The person who had troubled his family for so many days had just been killed by himself!

He was a Wu Zong!

"Not just him... Cheng Miao is dead as well. He is the sect head of Mystic Jade Sect and he's also a Wu Zong in the Meridian Opening Realm... As soon as news of his death spreads, the entire Mystic Jade Sect will be likely to crumble..."

Fang Yuan walked out casually and commented. "As for the few loyal ones remaining, you should be able to deal with them as long as you put in the effort to practice the knife technique that I have taught you. Let this be a pressure to motivate you..."

"Thank you, Mr!"

Among all the corpses, Han Jingfei seemed to have matured.

He forced himself to forget how helpless he felt under Fang Yuan's control as he respectfully bowed to Fang Yuan. "If not for your help, the Han Family might be troubled!"

"Hmmm, let's return!"

Fang Yuan shook his head.

To speak the truth, in this short period of time, it was not enough for him to pass down his techniques to this disciple.

However, Fang Yuan was a dream master and therefore had his own means to transfer his techniques to these pair of siblings for them to master their respective techniques quickly.

Without another word, they quickly left the headquarters of Sha Sect and returned to the Han Family.



"Grandfather!"

Seeing Han Xiaotian waiting in the main hall, Han Jingfei quickly knelt down and paid his respects. "Mr Crazy Knife and I have gone forth to kill both sect heads of Sha Sect and Mystic Jade Sect!"

"Is that so?"

Han Xiaotian turned pale and had a look of suspicion on his face. However, he forcefully smiled and invited Fang Yuan in. "Thank you for your assistance. Please enter the hall to enjoy the banquet."

"Alright..."

Fang Yuan took a quick glance at the old man before walking in.

"Jingfei... Bring your sister along to the back hall to help out!"

Seeing how Han Jingfei was following Fang Yuan, Han Xiaotian shouted at him with a fierce tone.

"Yes!"

Han Jingfei turned pale as though he had detected that something was out of place. With that, he rushed to the backyard.

...

"Come, Mr Crazy Knife, let me toast you!"

In the main hall, a sumptuous meal was prepared. The meat was spiritual meat and the fruits were spiritual fruits. There were spiritual wine and spiritual tea as well. It was a meal which would take up the resources of over 100 families and they were all that the Han Family could fork out after much effort.

"Thank you, thank you..."

Fang Yuan did not hesitate as he downed a cup of wine.

The wine was smooth and fragrant.

"This is the meat of the Shaluo Beast. It is rare in this area, so you should enjoy more of it!"

"I, Elder Han, toast you, Mr Crazy Knife!"

"Please, have some spiritual fruit!"

...

Seated around the table were all elders. Han Xiaotian introduced them one by one and there were a total of 4 of them.

Now then all of them were drinking and feasting, everyone appeared flushed.

Fang Yuan acted as though he was unaware of it continued feasting.

"Mr Crazy Knife, your tolerance for alcohol is indeed good!"

After a few rounds of wine and feasting, Han Xiaotian's expression turned cold. "However... I am unsure if I should ask you about something."

"Shoot it. There's nothing for me to hide!"

Fang Yuan held his wine cup and smiled.

"According to my useless grandson, you have used the techniques of a dream master to control him the other day in the restaurant, right?"

Han Xiaotian glared at Fang Yuan.

"That's right!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head.

"Great! Great! Great! You've finally found us!"

Han Xiaotian's legs turned to jelly and it was as though his energy had been sapped from him. With a look of hatred, he glared at Fang Yuan.

"Elder brother, let's fight it out with him. With uncle's layout in place, what do we have to fear?"

An elder with white hair spoke up with a fierce tone as though he

wanted a piece of Fang Yuan's flesh.

"Hmm... It seems like your layout is complete, right?"

Fang Yuan continued. "Next up, are you going to send 300 people with axes to fight me?"

"300 people with axes?"

Han Xiaotian shook his head. "I would think that 3 of them would be too much. You do know that there is no poison in this food and wine. However, together with the array in the hall, there will be an intoxicating spiritual aura formed. Even dream masters will feel decapitated and will be unable to move... This is personally put in place by our uncle, and is even capable of killing powerful beings so that we can deal with you d\*mned dream masters! Try using your dream elemental force now!"

"Brother, why bother speaking so much to him?"

An elder flushed with anger whipped out a black axe. "Let's chop him before anything else!"

Fang Yuan remained speechless. These people were extremely hospitable with guests but were also decisive in starting a fight.

Furthermore, what his master had recorded in his inheritance was true. Master Heartless had already offended all the dream masters in the area and he had no friends or allies. Therefore, as soon as his family encountered a dream master, they would logically assume that it was because of revenge.

"Whooo!"

Without hesitation, the elder swung the axe at Fang Yuan's head.

"Clang!"

A loud clang was heard. The terrifying reaction force broke the axe, swinging its parts far away. The elder flew backwards as well and collided with a pillar, causing the entire hall to shake.

"This is impossible!"

Han Xiaotian observed the dented axe and the immovable Fang Yuan who was unharmed. Breathless, he finally spoke. "True Divine...."

These two words were extremely powerful as the elders around revealed looks of helplessness.

"Who would know that you are not only a dream master but a True Divine...."

Han Xiaotian signalled to the rest of them. "To trouble you to take our lives is our honour..."

"Didn't all of you rush to establish good ties with me previously..."

Fang Yuan drank another mouthful of wine and remained speechless. "I have only admitted that I am a dream master. Why do all of you think that I am here to seek revenge?"

"Uncle has told us that he had offended too many dream masters in the past and have no friends... we have to kill any dream master that comes here!"

Han Xiaotian spoke with a calm voice.

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes as he felt that this was Master Heartless's true personality.

Could Master Heartless have experienced all these before turning to the benevolent Master Wenxin which Fang Yuan knew?

"Alright..."

Fang Yuan shook his hands and felt that if he were to continue his act, he would scare the hell out of these elders. That way, he would have taken revenge instead of repaying his gratitude for his master.

With that, he revealed the truth. "I believe that all of you have mistaken my identity. I am not seeking revenge, but I am the disciple of Master Ye Li..."

Upon hearing about his revelation, Han Xiaotian's eyes glistened before shaking his head. "This is impossible... my uncle has never taken in any disciples before!"

"He does not have to take in disciples while he was in Da Qian... Furthermore, why should I lie to you?"

Fang Yuan snickered. "If I were to fight all of you, I can wipe out everybody in an instant!"

"That's true..."

Seeing how Fang Yuan sat in his chair with a majestic vibe, he was in disbelief. "Cough... do you have any evidence?"

"Evidence? Does this count?"

With the wave of his hands, the 4 magical swords of Wind, Thunder, Water and Fire appeared, forming the 4 Emblems Sword Array and a miniature spiritual territory.

"The 4 Emblems Sword Array and a miniature spiritual territory. This is indeed uncle's 8 Gates Sword Array!"

Han Xiaotian started to tear and apologised. "Brother, please forgive us for our disrespect. How is uncle doing?"

The few elders sat around with embarrassed looks, especially the one who struck the axe at Fang Yuan. How he wished he could burrow underground to hide!

"Master has passed away..."

Fang Yuan sighed as he summarized all that had happened to Master Heartless.

"Sigh... we are unfilial to be unable to serve uncle. Thank you, brother, for doing it on our behalf!"

Han Xiaotian and the other elders appeared weary and paid their gratitude to Fang Yuan.

"Hmm. This time, I have returned to take a look to see how

Master's family is doing and offer some protection if necessary. Seeing how things are, it seems like everyone is doing fine... I don't have to worry about you all..."

Fang Yuan smiled. "Although I am now a powerful being, Master still has too many enemies. For safety reasons, I will continue to lay low..."

"We understand!"

Han Xiaotian and the other elders smiled. Suddenly, it was as though he had recalled something as he stood up. "We have the possession of one of Uncle's property. Please take a look!"

With that, he shifted the banquet table to one side, flipped a stone tile beneath and retrieved a leather pouch from under the tile.

"Eh?"

Fang Yuan was stunned.

From the beginning, his spiritual will had already swept across the entire place countless times, but he did not detect the stone tile.

It seemed as though this leather pouch had the unique ability to conceal itself from being detected by spiritual wills.

Han Xiaotian flipped the leather pouch around and took out a yellow piece of jade. With a smile, he explained. "This is left behind by Uncle. He had instructed us that if any of our descendants have the flair to be a dream master, he shall be bestowed this jade upon attaining the Illusionary Divine stage. However, we are all useless and our bloodline is weak. We don't even have a spiritual knight among us..."

"Hmmm!"

Fang Yuan retrieved the jade piece and was filled with curiosity. With his spiritual will, he seemed to have understood it. "This is

the inheritance for the 8 Gates Sword Array. If any of you were to become a dream master, the person will be able to follow the path to a dream soldier master... eh?"

Fang Yuan already had his own copy of this inheritance and therefore, it was nothing much to him.

However, at the back of the jade, Fang Yuan's spiritual will detected a large chunk of information after the description of the 8 Gates Sword Array. With that, he committed the information to memory.

"This object... still has some use. I shall record it down!"

He generously returned the jade to Han Xiantian. With another thought, he took out a piece of blood-red jade. "In this jade, there is a version of my martial arts known as the Qian Kun Giant Spiritual Technique. It has the potential to open 8 spiritual meridians and form the Giant Spiritual Divine Body and is one of the better techniques in Da Qian. Furthermore, the way I have obtained it is not through illegal means, so you will have no worries about accepting it!"

Since the demise of the Yang Family, the Qian Kun Giant Spiritual Technique had already spread far and wide and was even on sale in the Dream Realm. Therefore, it was nothing much.

"Thank you, Sir!"

Han Xiaotian was ecstatic. Although his Giant Thunderclap Palm was powerful, it did not have the potential to form the Divine Body. Now that he had this Giant Spiritual Technique, he had obtained the foundation required for the Han Family to rise once again.

"Mmm, since all of this is settled, I shall take my leave!"

Fang Yuan bowed and a layer of fog appeared around him. The people in the hall appeared dazed.

"I'm sorry. To play safe, I will have to change some of your

memories..."



# Chapter 388: Heavenly Array

---

After a few days, a shocking news came from Four Elements City.

The powerful and overbearing Sha Sect was wiped out from existence as the disciples of the sect fled. None of them had the courage to honour the agreement and fight.

Furthermore, even their powerful sect head, who was a Wu Zong, had disappeared. It was unknown how he had died, and the powerful and influential organisations in Four Elements City started to worry and show their support for Han Family to redeem themselves for their indecisiveness to pledge their loyalty.

However, this shocking news was nothing compared to the disbanding of the Mystic Jade Sect, which was one of the 3 powerful sects in Leaf Lake.

According to Mystic Jade Sect, a few days ago, a mysterious highly-skilled person had visited the sect. The elders of the Mystic Jade Sect, under the leadership of the sect head, we no match for the mysterious martial artist. Therefore, they were all forced to swear that they would disband the sect and would never use the name of Mystic Jade Sect ever again.

In truth, the Han Family knew that it was a cover-up by the sect after discovering that the sect head was killed.

Without a Wu Zong in the Meridian Opening Realm to lead them, considering the resources that Mystic Jade Sect owned, they would attract a lot of attention which would in turn cause trouble to all the disciples of the sect.

Elder Han was an experienced person. He knew that he should not ride on the situation to make things difficult for the Mystic Jade Sect. Instead, he had become even more low-profile as he started to let go of control in Four Elements City, beginning his plan to move into seclusion.

After all, trouble times ensued. If he were to attract too much attention, the family could get into trouble.

If he were to move the family into seclusion, even if the soldiers were to wreak havoc in the city, the Han Family would still stay safe and live on for generations. Of course, these were all ifs.

...

Just as the powers in Four Elements City were changing, Fang Yuan had already left Leaf Region.

As he journeyed, he started to investigate the jade which he had just obtained from his Master's family.

"Master has already taught me everything that he could. In this piece of jade left in his own family, he has not only recorded the 8 Gates Sword Array but also some secret information regarding the Imperial Court and the Hidden Dragon Guards as well... He thought that these pieces of information would be useless to me but useful to the family. However, he never thought that it would be extremely hard for dream masters to continue existing..."

Fang Yuan sighed. "However, after this, there might be some changes."

He taught Han Ling'er the Meditative Tea Ceremony and even left some Heart Questioning Tea for her.

Considering the amount of tea that he had given her, if the family was fortunate enough, one of them might walk on the path of becoming a dream master! Even if that was not possible, they might still become spiritual knights.

This was the opportunity for their family to rise once again.

To Fang Yuan, since the people of the Han Family were not the immediate family members of Master Heartless, they were already fortunate enough to have obtained these.

Moving on, Fang Yuan had to put down his worries and plan for

his own path.

"I have a few months remaining of the 6 months. In this period of time, I can increase my cultivation once more through dream-traversing..."

Although he had attained the True Divine to be qualified to fight in the war, Fang Yuan wanted to have more confidence to be able to go against a group of powerful beings including Sages so as to benefit from them.

Therefore, he was still lacking such an ability.

His path of martial arts had come to an end. After all, other than the few imperial advisors who were strengthened by the heavenly energy of Da Qian, there were no other newly promoted True Divines.

Fang Yuan knew that he was no match against all of them. Therefore, he had shifted his attention to other aspects of his cultivation.

With this, dream-traversing to increase his power as a dream master became a priority.

"The coordinates of those realms rich in source energy are with the highly-skilled people of the influential organisations. I have no way of getting it from them... the only exception is the Ancient Realm!"

Fang Yuan felt a tinge of regret.

He had tried before in his realm and was disappointed.

Although the realm did not discriminate against him, the entire realm seemed to have fallen into a mysterious turmoil, as though it was undergoing a certain change.

The feeling that time was not consistent in the Ancient Realm led Fang Yuan to suspect that if he were to enter it once more, it might be possible that a day in the Ancient Realm would result in a year

to pass in Da Qian! By then, he would have lost the opportunity to cultivate in both Da Qian and the Ancient Realm.

"However, as a 7th Leaf Cultivator, my level of rights is rather high. I should deserve some special treatment, right?"

With that, Fang Yuan had come to a conclusion. Within a few moments, he had entered the Dream Realm and sourced for a suitable realm from the Data Treasury of the Realm Alliance.

...

Middle Region, Yingchou City.

This city was the North entrance to Middle Region. Leveraging on the geographical features of the Yingchou valley, the 20,000 rebels of Shi Longtu were kept at bay outside of the region.

At this point in time, the entire city had become a fort, ready to engage in war. The city walls were glittering with spiritual light. The runes sparkled and spiritual cannons and spiritual bows were all ready to fire.

"Leader!"

Two leaders from the Hidden Dragon Guards sat in a building as their strong spiritual will covered the entire city continuously.

With that, a few Hidden Dragon Guards entered the building and paid their respects. "According to leader's tip-off, we have discovered the hiding spot of a group of rebels during today's patrol! They were from the Divine Lotus Cult and we have killed all of them."

"Mmmm..."

The powerful being who seemed as though he was in the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage nodded his head before looking around the room. These are only the small soldiers. What is most important in killing the rebels are your combat powers!"

"Hmph, Shi Longtu was favoured by the king and was once a

soldier under the king. Who would've thought that he would rebel!"

As soon as a Hidden Dragon Guard heard the leader, he gritted his teeth and remarked.

Shi Longtu was originally the region governor of Tall Region. He had a distinct look when he was younger and was famous in his village. As he matured, he was assisted by the local minister and was enlisted into the military. With his successes in war, he was favoured by the king and his career was smooth sailing.

As the next king, King Zhao Ming, took over, Shi Longtu was further promoted to the appointment of region governor. No one would think that this person would rebel against the Imperial Court.

"There was no other outcome... we have traced his family to 3 generations ago and understood more about the Shi Family... They were originally the spies of the Divine Lotus Cult. Shi Longtu was the incarnation of an elder from the Divine Lotus Cult. He had sealed his own memories and therefore, he was undetectable. It is only now that he is taking action..."

These spies could only do so much and therefore, there was not many of them. However, if any of them could climb up to a high appointment, they could cause destruction.

"Zhang Jin from the South and Wu Yue from Yong Region are nothing to be feared. However, Shi Longtu is indeed troubling. After all, his subordinates are all officers in the military!"

One of the leaders sighed.

Since the ancient times, the farmers would be at the frontline of a volunteer corps. However, they had insufficient food and weapons and were not sufficiently trained.

Facing such a volunteer corps, the government could use 1,000 soldiers to fight against 10,000 of them! Or even 100,000!

Only the armies with resources, military discipline and training would be able to pose a threat to the Imperial Court.

In the Da Qian Empire, such a difference in the quality of soldiers would be magnified.

How many normal civilians would have the chance to become Wu Zongs, spiritual knights or even dream masters?

Therefore, those in power would be much more powerful and those lowly civilians would have no hope if they rebel.

If there were natural disasters or threats from rebels, a district leader with a high level of cultivation would be able to gain positive control over the district regardless of the number of rebels from the volunteer corps.

Although there seemed to be a lot of rebellion going on in Da Qian, if the Hidden Dragon Guards were to strike, most of them would be wiped out and they could restore peace within a month!

Even if they were up against 20,00 soldiers who were properly trained, it would only take 2 Hidden Dragon Guards to clean up everyone.

Unfortunately, the rebels were also protected by dream masters. That would be the greatest cause for concern.

The leaders of both sides already had an unspoken agreement to not get involved in the conflict and would solely depend on their army to get their intended outcome.

Considering the current situation of Da Qian, this was their desperate attempt to keep the entire Empire under control.

"Within Yingchou City, we only have 50,000 soldiers. It should be no problem to guard the city for half a year!"

The other leader replied. "Head has already instructed that we would be given credit as long as we can defend this place for half a year!"

"After Yingchou city, it is a vast piece of grassy plains. If we fail to defend the city, the rebels will be able to smoothly make their way to the Jade Capital..."

The other leader started to shake his head. "Does Head intend to delay things for half a year to change the situation? Difficult! Difficult! Difficult, I say!!!"

"The 5 Grand Organisations have already cast the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array to disrupt the breath of the earth. The power of Da Qian will slowly be weakened. However, that is not how fate should be, and things might change!"

The two leaders exchanged glances and their eyes glistened.

...

Jade Capital City.

Within the city, powerful beings were in total control. The buildings were grand and the Dragon Meridian here was under control. It was the strongest looking city in the world.

"Cough cough...."

In a particular corner of the city, an old daoist was coughing, staining his handkerchief with blood. "The enemy has the support of many dream future masters and they have disrupted the fate of the world. I cannot do anything but push against fate, making it jumbled out. If I do so, we will not be able to predict anything, but our enemies will also be helpless..."

This war at such a scale had already begun long ago.

Both sides were disrupting each other's fate, resulting in the fate of the realm to be jumbled up. Even a powerful dream future master would not be able to obtain a definite prediction and would predict many outcomes wrongly.

Otherwise, the outcome of Fang Yuan obtaining Sage Changli's inheritance and even become a True Divine would have been

predicted countless times which would reveal Fang Yuan's true intentions.

"Very well, this is enough. Thank you for your efforts. Leave everything to me!"

Beside the old daoist, it was the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards speaking with a deep voice.

"Cough cough... I don't have long to live and I have no cure... Needless to say, you will feel less pressured with one new helper..."

Old Daoist Shang Hou smiled and examined his surroundings.

He was in something which resembled an altar. It was ancient looking and was constructed with colourful bricks. Standing at 30 yards tall, it was a grand structure and offerings were already prepared on the altar.

"Hmmm, alright then...."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards lit the offerings ablaze and threw a jade rock and a spiritual tortoise's shell into the flames as well. Green smoke started to fill the air, covering the skies.

"The earth dragon is only manipulated by the rebels because it lies underground... The 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array is completed. We cannot stop it from forming anymore. The only thing we can do is to build an equally strong array to go against it. The opponents are using an Earth Array, so we shall form a Heavenly Array!"

The will of heaven was invisible and intangible. Therefore the array created would have no tangible weakness.

Previously, it would be absurd for even the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards to cast a Heavenly Array.

Now, everything was different!

Shang Hou could sense that the will of the Da Qian world was supporting them!



That would form the foundation of the Heavenly Array!

# Chapter 389: New Realm

---

"Kaboom!"

There were originally no clouds in the vast skies, however, a piece of cloud appeared suddenly.

Immediately, a lightning bolt flashed across the skies.

Moments later in the direction of Middle Region, a fogbow appeared and shined brightly, as though it pierced through the skies. The dark cloud was dispersed at once to reveal the clear blue skies.

"Eh?"

Fang Yuan looked towards the sky and the corner of his mouth raised in amusement, "This feeling... this is a crazy idea mentioned in Sage Changli's inheritance, the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array? I can't believe the Da Qian royalties are so determined..."

The reason Fang Yuan was so certain it was them was because he was clear that for the array to be formed, the dream master's cultivation was merely one factor, the most important thing was still whether the heavenly fate favoured the one who cast it or not.

Obviously, the 5 Grand Organisation's dream masters would already count themselves lucky if they were not met with a heavenly punishment. Thus, it was not possible for them to be aided by fate!

Therefore, other than the Imperial Court, there would be no other possibilities!

"Once this array is formed, it will envelop the whole Da Qian World like the sky. Very scary..."

Fang Yuan frowned and his body felt slightly uncomfortable.

Under the skies, he felt uneasy as though he was spied.

"Only the eye of the array is cast as of now? Although the starting

is always tough, with Heaven's eye as the foundation, it will supplement and form the whole array. It should take at least half a year though..."

Fang Yuan ruminated, "The power of the array's current state is not even 30-40% of its fully developed state! But it is already so terrifying..."

Fang Yuan was very clear, once the entire 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array is formed, Da Qian would wield the power of the heavens and enact punishments for the heavens. They might even let the dream masters from the 5 Grand Organisation get struck by lightning every day.

"The 9 Sky 6 Earth arrays were originally essences obtained by Sage Changli. Now that this array is cast, looks like the Imperial Court isn't full of stupid people as they have already planned how to fight back!"

Truthfully, the 5 Grand Organisations' dream masters' plans did not bode well for Fang Yuan.

The source of dream masters was uncertain and many Prominent Divine powerful beings could not find it. Although Sage Changli had some clues, who could be sure that it would be successful?

Not only that, once a large portion of Da Qian World's natural source was sacrificed, the entire Da Qian World would experience a severe decline. Although it would not perish immediately, it would slowly wane and perish ultimately. Even if the entire process took millions of years, it would still be a sin against the world by these natives!

"Furthermore... even if the source of dream masters was found, does it really meant something was 'obtained'?"

Fang Yuan was very sceptical about such.

Fang Yuan felt it would be impossible for a world that continuously gave out radiation and granted powers to dream

masters, which also allowed them to actualise numerous things, would really be a perpetual motion machine that would never be depleted? And it would only benefit others and never itself?

"This is very illogical... but of course, dream masters firmly believe that is where paradise is! Where everything begins and ends! Where immortality is transcended?"

As such a worry began to show on Fang Yuan's face, he suddenly could not help but laugh, "What a pity, even if I am already a True Divine, I'm still a small fry in the eyes of other Prominent Divine dream masters. I can't influence the direction the dream masters and the world is heading towards..."

Realm Alliance Mountain, Dream Realm.

Fang Yuan appeared directly in a magnificent and grand hall which was not in any way inferior to where an elder stayed.

"This is one of the benefits of having my level of rights raised to 7th Leaf!"

Fang Yuan was not apprehensive at all as he went straight for the main stone chair and sat on it. As both his hands touched the stone armrests, his mind was connected to the realm alliance's rock tablet immediately, "Searching for... realms to dream-traverse!"

"Woosh!"

As the screen pulled down, information of more than ten realms appeared in front of his eyes.

The topmost realm was Ancient Realm which was marked in red texts, which meant that it was extremely dangerous.

"This realm's consciousness prevents dream masters from entering it, chances of successful dream-traverse is only 0.01%. The realm is undergoing tumultuous changes, its flow of time is extremely chaotic, exceptionally dangerous!"

Fang Yuan touched the option lightly and a large chunk of

message appeared, "Can't believe there are still discovery missions for this realm, they are even posted by The Ancient One? Hehe... indeed, a sage never gives up!"

"In this world, there were moral ones like the Sages and immoral ones like the bandits."

Unknowingly, Fang Yuan thought of this quote.

Fang Yuan knew the severity of the Ancient Realm but did not express it on his face. Even if he was in Dream Realm, it might not be the safest place.

"This world used to be amazing, but now, its flow of time is too strange! I give up on it!"

Fang Yuan shook his head and continued moving his fingers. He then saw more realms appearing on the screen.

"Icy Realm..."

"Flaming Lizard Realm..."

"Giant Wood Realm..."

"Tsk tsk... these realm's natural source are not very strong and what's left are scraps, just scraps..."

As Fang Yuan read many options, he kept shaking his head.

"Now, it's best if I find a realm with a strong natural source and a flow of time suitable for me... Sadly, only those powerful being elders would have the coordinates for these kinds of realms for themselves to slowly reap from it. It would be their private collection and they would never release it! Just like how I obtained the coordinates to Water Realm last time..."

As Fang Yuan pondered, he continued to search and sighed.

"Eh... I will pick this Western Fantasy Realm! Its heavenly energy is pretty strong and I will have ample time! Also, it looks quite interesting!"

Fang Yuan finally picked one with his finger.

"Ting!"

Suddenly, a new option appeared at the bottom of the screen.

"Eh? Is this the most newly added realm?"

Fang Yuan was intrigued at once. Not only was the realm's natural source very strong, it was also marked in red which meant there were significant dangers.

"No. Alpha 3 Realm: intense natural source, mainly inhabited by humans, rate of time flow — 3 days in Da Qian to 1 year in No. Alpha 3 Realm...' Wow, perfect!"

While glancing through, Fang Yuan's eyes lit up.

The realm was very interesting and was the most recent one that appeared, which meant that its level of exploitation was not very high yet. Hence, there were great benefits to be reaped.

"The first to explore this realm was Elder Extreme Darkness... this used to be Elder Extreme Darkness' private collection, but she has now made it available..."

As Fang Yuan read further, he was shocked to see such.

Although there were great rewards for submitting a realm's coordinates to the alliance, those powerful being elders would rarely do it unless there were special situations. It was either the realm was fully exploited, or the difficulty was too hard and they had no choice but to give up.

Elder Extreme Darkness' situation was more likely to be the latter case.

"No. Alpha 3 Realm has a powerful natural source which is only slightly below that of the Ancient Realm's. However, the realm's laws are harsh. Whatever sort of unworldly forces would be grievously restricted, even including martial artists' elemental energy. Dream masters who entered had their cultivation zeroed..."

There are some changes happening in the realm lately, only those above 4th Tier of Illusionary Divine are recommended to explore this realm."

This description made Fang Yuan realise how scary this realm was.

This realm was exceptionally belligerent towards unnatural forces.

Even dream masters who entered the realm could not maintain 1% of their cultivation.

Furthermore, although its heavenly energy is intense, elemental energy is extremely scarce inside this realm. Any path of cultivators would find it difficult to make accomplishments in this realm. Even if they were accomplished, they were still easily crushed another path of cultivators.

"This realm..."

Fang Yuan was curious about this realm but did not enter it immediately. Instead, he carefully chose to contact Elder Extreme Darkness, "Greetings Elder Extreme Darkness, did that No. Alpha 3 Realm use to be a private collection of yours?"

Through the meeting with the Realm Alliance's elders previously, Fang Yuan already had the contact information of the other six elders. It was very fast for him to message them directly with his inscription plate.

Also, with his status, Fang Yuan would receive their replies swiftly.

"It was!"

Almost instantaneously, Elder Extreme Darkness replied, "Fang Yuan, you are interested in that realm?"

"Of course, a realm that is not fully discovered meant that there are still lots of benefits to gain from it!"

Fang Yuan's eyes sparkled.

"From my experiences, I can give you some word of caution. That realm is run by 'steam technology', which is very hard to be influenced by foreign forces. Of course, there are some changes lately, the resurgence of a mysterious force piqued my curiosity but sadly, my body in the realm grew too slowly and was crushed by the realm's newly created mysterious entity..."

There was some coldness in Elder Extreme Darkness' voice which made Fang Yuan understood why she would list the realm up now.

After dying once during such a discovery with one's true aura, it would be detrimental to the dream master.

As the big war was imminent, Elder Extreme Darkness had no choice but to sell the realm to the Realm Alliance in exchange for large amounts of resources to recuperate.

Else, half a year later, if she was discovered with huge injuries on her body, she would definitely be targeted at and would most likely die.

"Thank you very much, Elder Extreme Darkness, but I would still like to try!"

Fang Yuan was secretly excited.

This was the first ever technological realm dream masters had found. It was understandable that they felt helpless against the laws of the realm.

But Fang Yuan was different!

With the memory of his previous realms, he might be smooth sailing in this realm. He would be more at ease compared to other dream masters and thus, there would be more space for him to showcase himself.

"Up to you..." Elder Darkness replied coldly and broke off the messaging decisively.



"This world it is then!"

Fang Yuan kept his inscription plate and clenched his fist tightly as he thought, "This is a realm that is built specially for me... also, no one has ever harvested from it before. Its natural source is so strong..."

"Just that, what in the world is that mysterious force that was just awakened?"

Although he had some queries, he did not hesitate to spend his contribution points in exchange for the realm's coordinates.

"This time, I will not do any missions. I will just freely discover it by myself!"

...

Da Qian World.

"Kaboom!"

In a cave somewhere in the wilderness.

Fang Yuan smashed large amounts of rocks with his fist and sealed off the entrance to the cave.

Immediately, a small array that concealed spiritual aura was cast.

"I tried my best to run for days and chose a place with a thin supply of elemental energy, I don't even know where I am now. Also, with the array concealing, the chances of my original body being discovered is very low..."

Fang Yuan then dug out lots of rare materials to cast an array.

"That realm is too far from Da Qian, even if I dream-traverse with Sage Changli's realm locating method, I still require external help!"

Moments later, within the array's formation, Fang Yuan sat cross-legged with both his eyes shut. With a flick of his finger, the array was activated.

As light spun, the space in front of him was warped and a black vortex emerged.

Some true aura flew out and entered the mysterious black vortex, before disappearing completely...

# Chapter 390: Restrictions

---

The feeling of dream-traversing was a mysterious one.

Fang Yuan had already dream-traversed to 3 other worlds and was considered rather experienced.

However, even the previous dream-traversing expedition to the Ancient Realm didn't feel as long as this time.

The transference of one's True Spirit should happen in a moment.

However, due to the fact that this new realm was too far away, the time taken to transfer his True Spirit felt extremely long.

His True Spirit floated in a dark space, unable to interact with the surroundings and even time seemed to have come to a stop. That feeling was a hundred times more torturous compared to being trapped in a small dark room and it was a feeling which could potentially turn someone crazy.

The long journey was also depleting the energy of Fang Yuan's True Spirit.

Just as his True Spirit was about to be completely depleted, Fang Yuan felt as though he was about to return without any rewards from this expedition.

"Rumble!"

The space around him shook and a streak of lightning tore the black space apart, allowing light to flood in.

"Whooo!"

Fang Yuan sweated profusely. He felt as though he was a drowning person who was just being rescued. Standing up, he took in a deep breath.

In the sky, the glaring sunlight caused heatwaves to be spread across the land.

Subconsciously, Fang Yuan stretched his right hand out to shield himself from the sunlight. With that, he took notice of his dirty and small hands. He was a skinny boy who seemed around 12 years old.

"Am I now a kid?"

Fang Yuan let out a bitter smile and observed the surroundings.

On a white birch tree, there were many chirps.

His small body was wearing a white shirt and a green pair of long pants. They were of good quality but were pale from being washed many times. There were holes in his shoes.

In his sight, he could see a cemented building. It was a short building and was at most two storeys high.

The field was surrounded with a cemented wall painted in red paint. There were taglines painted on the walls. On an antenna by the side of the field, there was a huge loudspeaker blasting loud music. Occasionally, there was the energetic voice of the broadcaster.

"Television, broadcast?"

Fang Yuan felt that everything was a little weird. "Didn't she say that it was steam technology?"

All of this gave him a weird sense of familiarity. It was as though the faded pictures of his past life had actualised into the world.

Racking his brains, he finally recalled some bits and pieces of memories.

Although he was only a kid, he had undergone education and Fang Yuan was able to deduce the details of the world from his incomplete memories.

This realm was spherical and was known as Planet Earth. In outer space, there was a sun, a moon, and other planets, forming a solar system. However, there was only one such planet in the

entire system that was suitable for humans to live on.

70% of the surface of this planet was covered in oceans and there were 3 main continents. Over a 100 countries were spread across these continents. There were more than 1,000 races of people and these races were constantly in conflict. In fact, a devastating world war had just ended.

With the advancement of technology came the improvements in the quality of life, but there were troubles as well.

After the world war, over 10 countries were wiped from the surface of Planet Earth. A few billion people were killed. However, at the same time, there were countries which benefited from the war and grew stronger.

For instance, in the country he was in - Chinese Country, the country had successfully taken the opportunity to unify a few countries in the vicinity, forming an alliance across an entire land mass across a continent. The country now had a coast which stretched over ten thousands of miles. Because the people of these unified countries were similar and once had strong ties, their cultures were smoothly integrated and their combined powers were rather substantial. After the war, the unified country became one of the superpowers with substantial influence in the world.

Mmmm, this realm only had 3 continents, split into the East Continent, Middle Continent and West Continent. The people of the West Continent had fairer skins, blond hairs and green eyes. The people of the East Continent were mixed, while the people of the Middle Continent were people with yellow skin.

Fang Yuan was now in an orphanage in Chinese Country.

After all, this was the year 999. It was only 5 years after World War 1. Therefore, many kids were orphaned and taken care of by the country. The boy which he was possessing was one of the unfortunate children.

"Fortunately... I am still known as Fang Yuan. I won't have to change my name that way!"

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath, closed his eyes and focused.

After a while, Fang Yuan revealed a desperate look. "It is indeed impossible! This realm is not hospitable to supernatural forces! The rules of reality are too harsh."

Just previously, he had tried to detect natural elemental energy. However, he had gotten nothing from it, as though this realm was a desert for natural energy.

Fang Yuan knew that the source of energy of this realm was bountiful and that this was not the end. The only explanation would be that his system was not compatible with this world.

"How hard would it be to cultivate in another technique? Let's forget that idea for now... In terms of martial arts, as soon as it involves elemental force, it will no longer work. I can only preserve the most basic martial arts to strengthen my physical body."

He shook his head and exclaimed. "Stats!"

With that, a screen appeared. Although it was hard to read the figures, Fang Yuan could still vaguely make out the words:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 0.5

Spirit: 0.1

Magic: 0.9

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: ???

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"Everything has been cleared indeed! This is even scarier than the Water Realm!"

Fang Yuan had a premonition that even though he had the special ability of fixed stats, it would still be extremely hard for him to restore his cultivation in this realm.

"However, it is surprising that my skills are still with me! Maybe... In such a long period of time, I will have to rely on my skills."

With the ability of fixed stats, Fang Yuan could be assured the fact that he would be able to reach the peak of his cultivation even after dream-traversing.

This was akin to a bottle. Regardless of which realm he was in, the bottle would always be the same volume and would not be reduced.

However, it was one thing to have his fixed stats remaining and another thing for his cultivation to be restored. Ultimately, he would still have to fill the bottle with liquid.

In the previous 3 realms, there was natural elemental energy for Fang Yuan to easily fulfil this.

However, in this realm, there was almost no elemental energy. There might be other forms of energy but they were not as easy to absorb. Therefore, it would be extremely hard to restore his cultivation and his peak condition.

"Since it is already so hard for me, wouldn't it be even harder for Extreme Darkness? No wonder she would give up on this realm... this difficulty level is almost like hell..."

Fang Yuan stood up, looked for a pond, examined his own reflection and laughed.

In the reflection, there was a 12-year-old boy with a messy hair and yellow skin. He was skinny and appeared malnourished.

Such a boy would lose his life if he were to merely fall sick!

"This is such a difficult start... The only thing good about this place is that the time flows faster here and I will have around 50 years to explore the realm..."

Fang Yuan rubbed his rumbling tummy as though he had recalled something. With that, he scooted off to the canteen.

This was his lunch break. If he did not get some food now, he would have to endure his hunger.

As he ran to the canteen, he noticed a row of young boys and girls seated on a bench. Big ceramic bowls were placed in front of them.

"Fang Yuan, why are you late?"

An old woman wearing a black-framed glasses appeared displeased.

It was evident that she was angry.

"I... I had a stomach ache!"

Fang Yuan made up an excuse.

"Report!"

At this point in time, a young girl with braids wearing a pink shirt raised her hand. With a clear voice, she shouted. "Reporting, teacher! I saw Fang Yuan lazing around at the field, taking a break from his voluntary work!"

"Mmm, Wei Xiaohong, good!"

The old lady gave off a sinister vibe. "Fang Yuan, after lunch, see me at my office. Reflect on your behaviour! Now, please get yourself seated."

"Yes!"

Fang Yuan tiredly made his way to his sit as he glared at the young girl. He hated those who would snitch on their friends.

"Hmph!"



The young girl seemed fearless as she glared back with pride and a look of justice on her face.

Fang Yuan was speechless and paid no attention to such a snitch.

More importantly, the chef of the canteen had arrived and served them bowls of porridge.

It was real porridge and the soup was clear to the point where Fang Yuan could see the bottom of the bowl.

Scratching his head, he seemed to have recalled something.

Since the independence of Chinese Country, there were many administrative issues to be sorted out. As a drought struck, resources were scarce and therefore tightly rationed among the people.

Even on the streets, a typical man would only be given a few scoops of rice per day. Therefore, as orphans, they would not expect much.

It was already fortunate enough if these orphans did not die of hunger.

"This cannot go on!"

Fang Yuan quickly slurped down his porridge, but his hunger was not satisfied. Instead, it only made him more hungry.

"This cannot go on. If I were to go hungry every day, what else can I do?"

Fang Yuan thought to himself.

"After lunch, all of you will have a one hour break. Afterwards, report to your respective classes!"

This orphanage was huge and there were more than a thousand orphans here. They were split according to their age and gender and had to go through a daily curriculum.

A female teacher with the vibe of a disciplinary mistress raised

her glasses. "Also... We have a physical test tomorrow. Everyone is to take part, and no one is to be absent! This is tasked by the province!"

Through her glasses, the teacher glared at the few troublemakers, giving her stern warning.

Fang Yuan was one of them.

"Why do we need to go through the physical test? Didn't we already did it this year?"

One of the orphans beside him quipped.

"Mmm, that's right!"

Guo Jianjun added.

Fang Yuan shook as though he had understood something. "That's right. We have already done it this year and it seems like the norm already... Could this be related to the mysterious force described by Elder Extreme Darkness?"

# Chapter 391: Physical Test

---

It was nightfall and the bunk was stuffy and hot.

Fang Yuan was sleeping in a double-decker bed. In a big room, 23 orphans were sleeping together. Snores and scratching sounds were normal and there was the occasional gritting of teeth. All of these led to Fang Yuan recalling what the female teacher had rambled on and on for the whole afternoon: Ideological Education.

"I can't sleep, I can't sleep..."

He crawled out of his bed and squinted his eyes.

In that instant, the dark room became instantly bright.

"It's great that I can still keep my Fiery Golden Eyes..."

This was a form of consolation for Fang Yuan. With more focus, Fang Yuan could observe the effects of an X-Ray as he scanned across the skeletons lying on the beds. It was a scary scene.

"Hmm, it seems like my skill is evolving. Are my Fiery Golden Eyes able to see through things now?"

In his field of vision, he could see that every child was full of life and energy, glowing like fireflies.

"Eh?"

At this point in time, from the window outside, there was a small glow which attracted Fang Yuan's attention.

"Is there someone?! It's so huge! Could it be the teacher doing her rounds?"

He climbed down his bed nimbly and at that moment, he could see a suspicious-looking skeleton flipping over the railing and wall outside. Looking at how experienced the skeleton was, this would mean that this was not its first time doing it.

"Eh? How can a child have a stronger life energy than an adult?"

Fang Yuan stuffed a pillow on his bed and covered it with a blanket. With a piece of metal wire, he poked the lock of the door.

"Kacha!"

With the help of his X-Ray Vision, the locked door gave way and Fang Yuan darted out.

The night breeze was cooling and Fang Yuan felt free.

"Ha..."

His eyes focused on the suspicious shadow as he followed behind it.

Outside the orphanage, there was a small river stream. The small figure held a bamboo stick in his hand, stood by the river and observed it.

Suddenly, as he released his hand, the bamboo pierced into the river and through a big green fish.

Fang Yuan was startled. Such speed and force were rare even among adults. Although the green fish was being pierced through, its scales were shimmering and its tail was still flicking around.

The figure exclaimed in excitement. As it was about to retrieve the fish, it heard a voice from behind. "Hey, Zhao Daniu, what are you doing?"

"Ah!"

The figure shuddered and turned around slowly. With that, he gazed into the shadows as Fang Yuan emerged. Shocked, the fish in his hands slipped and fell to the ground.

"I... I... It was not on purpose, and I am not here to steal anything..."

Zhao Daniu had big eyes and seemed like an honest bloke but now, he was panicking to the brink of crying.

'He is only a pure child and would never think of killing me just

because I found out what he was doing.....;'

Fang Yuan sighed before explaining himself. "I am not here for the fish, but for you. I've seen what you just did. Your strength is superb and your speed is remarkable! You don't seem like a normal person..."

"I... I am not a monster!"

Whatever Fang Yuan had just mentioned seemed to be his weakness. With that, Zhao Daniu shuddered and cried out.

"Hey, you're not a monster. You're a superhuman, a superhuman who would contribute to Chinese Country!"

Fang Yuan smiled. "Therefore... I want to give you up to the country!"

"Huh!?"

Zhao Daniu blinked furiously and gave a look of confusion.

Can they remain as friends? Their friendship was on the brink.

...

After a few minutes, in a bomb shelter.

This was originally built for the war but now, it was left alone. It was a mini base which Zhao Daniu had discovered for himself.

Fang Yuan lit a bonfire, descaled the fish, took out its organs and started smoking it over the fire.

Although he did not have salt and oil, the method of smoking was still able to remove the fishy smell from the fish. The fragrance of the smoked fish filled the air and made Zhao Daniu salivate.

"It's done! Let's share it!"

After roasting the fish, Fang Yuan split it into two pieces. He gave one to Zhao Daniu and started eating the other one.

Sigh... Without enough nutrients, his body would be extremely weak.

"Whooo... It's great! Delicious!"

Zhao Daniu did not care about the fact that the fish was still burning hot as he munched on it happily. "If I knew that roasted fish would be so nice, I wouldn't have eaten it raw last time..."

Fang Yuan was speechless. What kind of life did Zhao Daniu lead in the past?

Of course, after threatening to hand Zhao Daniu over to the country, Zhao Daniu had to come to an agreement with Fang Yuan and promise to share any fish with him in the future.

This secret had stayed long with Zhao Daniu and he felt relieved the moment he opened up to Fang Yuan.

"When I was 8, my appetite grew and I became stronger. My eyes have also evolved to be able to see many things..."

"Booohoooo... I am not a monster. I am only out here looking for food because there isn't enough food in the canteen..."

"All the kids don't want to play with me, and they even bullied me... I dare not retaliate... booohoooo..."

.....

"Alright, you are also a pitiful person!"

Looking at the sobbing Zhao Daniu, Fang Yuan was speechless.

However, he had no intentions of protecting him. "Come over and let me take a look!"

It was rare to see someone with powers. How could Fang Yuan let this chance slip by?

"Hmmm... Your body is normal and seems like everyone else's. Your muscles are slightly larger and you are much stronger than an adult. However, you don't seem to have any additional organs..."

With his skill in Medicine and his Fiery Golden Eyes, Fang Yuan

gave him a detailed checkup before remaining silent. "Other than the fact that your mindset is slightly more mature than that of the people in your age group and that you are stronger, you don't seem any more different than the others... It seems like the magnitude of your evolution is not big enough?"

The only explanation was that this was a special case in itself.

To Fang Yuan, it was simply because Zhao Daniu was too mature for his age which was why he was frightening himself.

"I can't even detect any problems with him. I'm afraid that we will not be able to see any results during tomorrow's physical test..."

After eating, he brought Zhao Daniu back to the orphanage. Fang Yuan laid on his bed and was deep in his thoughts. "Furthermore... I can't even detect any abnormalities. It seems like I need to learn the science of this realm... I'll have to show my knowledge off and learn as much as I can."

...

"Children, put in your best effort in this physical test and make our orphanage proud!"

On the second day, thousands of children gathered around the field. Everyone looked at the proud-looking principal trying his best to shout into the microphone. From this scene, Fang Yuan knew that he was oversimplifying things.

"... This physical test is in place to select the best few to join a special organization of the government. All of you must perform well. If you are selected, you will be able to eat buns, meat, noodles and barbequed pork every day!"

In front of them, the teacher-in-charge used a microphone as well.

"Rumble!"

Everyone was swallowing their saliva.

Barbequed pork was very tempting in such times of hunger. In fact, even the simplest buns were enough to tempt not only children but adults as well.

"Alright! The test is beginning soon. Everyone, please queue up according to your classes. Please come forward if I read out your name!"

"We will first measure your height and weight followed by your physical fitness!"

...

On the few, doctors draped in their cloaks surrounded a few trucks as they meticulously started setting up their medical equipment.

It was extremely organised which made Fang Yuan suspect something. "Could this be the military? ... Furthermore, in this era, everyone would be made to draw blood for blood testing. The price for one such equipment is already not cheap. It seems like the country is determined..."

Fang Yuan generously walked forward to allowed his blood to be drawn. During the eyesight test, Fang Yuan had effortlessly outperformed everybody to get a perfect score of 2.0, which would qualify him to be a pilot in the military.

"Alright, next up will be the physical fitness test!"

Of course, these doctors seemed to know that their test would not have any results and they seemed to have a final deciding factor.

"1-kilometre run, 100-metres sprint, high jump, weightlifting, push-ups, sit-ups... everyone needs to do it!"

"If your performance is good, you will be selected to join the Special Group and the Gifted Group. You will get better treatment there!"



"If anyone of you can enter these groups, you would have done the orphanage proud. Children, do your best!"

...

"Fang Yuan, we've got news!"

Beside him, the two children, Wang Aiguo and Guo Jianjun gave him a suspicious look and spoke in a serious tone. "Teacher has said... The country is choosing athletes. We can even join the Olympics in the future and do the country proud!"

"Yes!"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes and examined the children around him.

Under the temptation of material gains, honour and glory, although he knew that he was different from, how could he hide his desire for such gains?

He gazed over to look for Zhao Daniu, only to find him standing in front of a shot put with a look of unwillingness.

In a few moments, Zhao Daniu's expression changed. He mustered all his strength and threw it to around 400 metres?

'Alright... his acting skills resembles mine...'

Fang Yuan broke out in sweat.

"Whoosh!"

Suddenly, from the track, there were exclamations.

"11.7 seconds! 11.7 seconds!"

A doctor in a white cloak screamed. "Are you Liu Fei? Do it another time!"

On the track, a tanned and skinny boy ran like the wind and ran past the finish line for the second time.

"11.6 seconds!"

With this, there was a huge commotion among the doctors. All of them started to surround Liu Fei. "You're good... This is the standard of the national sprinters! He's only 13 and this is unbelievable!"

"Alright! Liu Fei, you're doing good!"

Zhang Haiman rubbed the child's head, her face flushed with excitement.

Fang Yuan had a feeling that Liu Fei was about to be brought somewhere else.

## Chapter 392: Three Years

---

"Fang Yuan is once again the top student. Let us congratulate him! Everyone, follow his as the role model and work hard!"

Teacher Zhang Haiman was full of emotions as she announced the results on stage. With that, she pinned a small red flower on Fang Yuan's chest.

In her eyes, Fang Yuan was a delinquent who had understood the teachings and finally found his way. Now, he was a model student who was obedient and hardworking. By achieving the position of top student every year, he was a role model for all of them to emulate.

Teacher Zhang Haiman was filled with a sense of accomplishment as she felt that she was successful in turning Fang Yuan into a changed boy.

Hmm, if Fang Yuan, who was once a troublemaker, was able to change for the better, everyone could do the same!

Teacher Zhang had a look of excitement on her face, and Fang Yuan's friends shudder as their hair stood on its ends.

"Pa! Pa!"

Amidst the applause, Fang Yuan took a deep bow and returned to his seat with a composed look.

Really! He was already a matured adult and yet he was here, bullying the children and students by becoming the top student. How different was this to snatching sweets from children? It was despicable!

The good thing was that in these few years, he had become increasingly thick-skinned and paid no attention to Wei Xiaohong's murderous look.

Mmm, it was important to mention the fact that the child who

had snitched on Fang Yuan three years ago used to be the top student.

It was unknown if she felt a tinge of regret for creating such a strong opponent for herself after that incident.

Three years had already passed since the physical test.

Fang Yuan and his friends had grown to become youths and they were now studying in junior high school.

Of course, the impressive 'Liu Fei' was being transferred to somewhere else the day after the physical test. He was being brought to the city, which was the dream of the many orphans in the orphanage. He was living the life that they could never imagine.

Fang Yuan had a new best brother, Zhao Daniu. Because he had an additional meal every night, his build became bigger. He grew taller and his chest became wider. Coupled with the fact that he was a good basketball player and had good results as well, he was the most attractive male in the school and had received many love letters from young girls.

The good thing was that Fang Yuan was resolute and therefore, he did not taint his reputation.

"Alright, students, let's open our history textbooks and revise our Modern History..."

As the school bell rang, the history teacher took out her pointer. "Fang Yuan, summarise about Modern History!"

"Yes!"

Fang Yuan stood up, cleared his thoughts and started to recall the history of this realm. "Historians agree that the exploration of the oceans is completed. We have 3 continents, and there is a consensus that Modern History begins from the moment the world map was charted out. That year is known as 1."

"In the next 1,000 years, countries started to develop their navies. Civilisation slowly wiped out ignorance and barbaric practices, pushing the world to greater heights! However, due to the inconvenience of ancient ships with sails and the slow rate of production, the progress of the world came to the lowest point. This was known as the dark ages and lasted for 750 years..."

"In the year 782, Professor Thomas Newcomen from the West Continent, Golden Eagle Federation discovered the power of the steam and coal. From there, he created the first ever steam-powered engine and used the force generated by steam to leapfrog on the world stage. The Industrial Revolution happened and in the span of a hundred years, civilisation had progressed more than the collective progress of the past one thousand years!"

"In the year 867, a citizen of the Golden Eagle Federation, Mr Wheatstone perfected the first steam-powered generator, welcoming a new age with the introduction of electricity. With the steam-powered engine and electricity, the industries of the world took off and the world had the power to change..."

At this point, Fang Yuan was a little shocked.

Although this realm had petroleum as well, they did not have as much. Instead, they had an abundance of coal. The efficiency from combusting this coal was much higher than the type that Fang Yuan had seen before. Together with technological advancements, the improved steam-powered generator was now comparable to an internal combustion engine, which allowed the steam-powered generator to remain relevant and coexist with the introduction of electricity.

The present day was the combination of the discoveries from the first and second Industrial Revolution.

"The Golden Eagle Federation started to colonise countries through their sturdy ships and strong cannons. They became the most advanced country in the world. With the uprising of their

economy and their banks, together with conflicts among the higher powers, finally..."

In the year 994, a world war broke out!"

"The leader of the Golden Eagle Federation was usurped and the federation now started to trade with the people of the Middle Continent and East Continent. They were the Golden Eagle Federation of West Continent, Chinese Country of Middle Continent and Blue Star Alliance of East Continent. Around these three big countries, there were many other smaller countries with their own resources and own technologies. Some of them were much poorer and less developed, and these are basically the countries on Planet Earth..."

"Very good!"

The teacher gave him an applause. "Fang Yuan is very familiar with Modern History. Students, take note of the important points for they will be tested in the upcoming test..."

As soon as the teacher finished her sentence, there were scribbling sounds everywhere.

Even the few troublemakers seemed serious.

"It's the promotional examinations!"

Fang Yuan sat down and remained speechless. "Who would know... even after dream-traversing, I still cannot escape this!"

...

It was nightfall.

Everyone around him had fallen asleep. Like an agile cat, Fang Yuan slipped out of the orphanage and arrived at the bomb shelter.

"Fang Yuan... I'm lucky today, I've caught a few fishes!"

Zhou Daniu sat next to the bonfire. He pierced a wooden branch through the fishes and roasted them over the fire.

In a short span of 3 years, this child had grown quite a lot. He was still an honest bloke. Along with him were bottles of salt and condiments and he would occasionally rub them on the fishes.

After the development of Chinese Country, the standard of living of the people had improved considerably and there was no more need to sneak out and catch fish to supplement their protein.

The roasting and catching of fishes now were more for entertainment, especially now that they had salt and other spices.

Zhao Daniu was still reminiscing for Fang Yuan's roasted fish. Unfortunately for him, Fang Yuan, being a lazy person, had not roasted another fish ever since he taught Zhao Daniu how to roast it.

"Mmmm, Daniu, your culinary skills are getting better and better. You can open a stall and sell roast fish for a living!"

Fang Yuan munched on the fish and smiled before whipping out a bottle of alcohol. "Don't say that I am lazy, for I am taking out my prized possession."

"Ahh... there's alcohol!"

Zhao Daniu's eyes glistened and he quickly scrambled to find cups.

Since they were still young, their tolerance for alcohol was not that high. After a few cups, Zhao Daniu's tanned face became flushed. "The promotional examinations are about to begin. Fang Yuan, your results are good and you will surely be sent overseas to further your studies. It won't be too good for me. I've heard that those who fail will have to make a living for themselves outside..."

This was normal, for the orphanage could not possibly take care of them for their whole life.

However, it was still shocking for them to leave this place, which they had already regarded as their home.

"What's so good about it?"

Fang Yuan sipped on his alcohol and smiled. "Do you need to worry about this? Just look for the teacher and tell her that you want to be like Liu Fei. Looking at your physical test, I'm sure you will have no problem in becoming an athlete... The previous time Liu Fei came back to visit us, he had a luxurious treatment and even had a personal car to send him here!"

2 years ago, Liu Fei returned to the orphanage to visit all of them. It was a big thing for the orphanage and it even made some young girls cry as they appealed for another new physical test to be conducted. However... they were disappointed.

Fang Yuan knew that Zhao Daniu had the potential.

After all, he had the strength of about 3 adults which could be trained further. It could be attributed to his natural talent.

"However... After 3 years of observation, the mysterious force in this world still confuses me..."

Fang Yuan shook his head in disappointment.

Since Fang Yuan had a matured mind and Zhao Daniu was a simple guy, it was only normal that Zhao Daniu treated Fang Yuan as his best friend. There was nothing he would not share with Fang Yuan.

With a look of uneasiness, Zhao Daniu spoke. "My father once told me that I cannot accept free things!"

"Wow! Who would've thought that you would stick by your principles so firmly..."

Fang Yuan felt interested. "Then why are you drinking the alcohol that I have offered?"

"It's different! I've traded it with fish!"

Zhao Daniu had his own logic and was extremely stubborn. Fang Yuan could only roll his eyes and could do nothing about it.



"What about you? What do you intend to do in the future?"

In Zhao Daniu's mind, Fang Yuan was a remarkable person. Although he could not explain why Fang Yuan was remarkable, he could just feel it that way.

"Mmm, I want to be a noble doctor and cure thousands of people of their illnesses!"

Fang Yuan clenched his fists and gave a look of nobility.

In reality, he only wanted to investigate the human body and understand the differences between the bodies of humans here and the bodies of humans in other realms before searching for a path to become superhuman.

For that, he had to study hard and dominate his junior high school. Ah... A highly-skilled person was destined to be lonely.

"Mmm, Fang Yuan, you can do it!"

Zhao Daniu nodded his head furiously.

"However, I prefer Traditional Chinese Medicine more. Now it's your time to contribute. Stretch out your hand for me!"

Fang Yuan smiled and took out a few silver needles.

"Can I pass?"

Zhao Daniu gave a look of uneasiness. He was afraid of nothing but Fang Yuan's attitude. Unwillingly, he stretched out his arm.

"Relax, I am very accurate in acupuncture!"

Fang Yuan heated the needles and smiled. "It will not be like the previous time where I almost paralysed you for half a day..."

'Who would believe you!'

With a single needle, Zhao Daniu's face became stale. His eyes turned white. Before he could express himself, he had lost all strength and fell to the ground.

# Chapter 393: Investigations

---

"The body composition of the humans in this world is indeed different from that of other worlds, albeit it being minute differences..."

As Fang Yuan executed his acupuncture, he mulled to himself.

Although he had lost all his cultivation, he still had his experiences from other worlds. Together with his skills in Medicine, he should be doing quite alright in this realm.

However, before he could do anything, he realised the hostility of this realm.

Although his acupuncture technique was good, the pressure points of the bodies here were already different, rendering his skills useless!

Therefore, in the past few years, he had sourced for bodies during his free time to practice. Finally, he had improved his skills and re-learnt the different locations of the pressure points of the humans in this realm and in the process, integrating into the realm.

Zhao Daniu, the guinea pig, was the unfortunate one. There were many instances where he was paralysed for almost half a day, causing him to fear needles the moment he sees them.

Of course, he did not sacrifice his body for nothing.

At least, with the help of Fang Yuan, he now knew how to control his strength and therefore, no one realised that he was a bit special.

"I am finally restoring my special traits! However, I have already looked after him for 3 years before finally getting a grasp of Medicine in this realm, sigh..... As a dream-traverser, I am really a failure..."

Fang Yuan secretly did something to make Zhao Daniu fall asleep.

With that, he closed his eyes and used the needles and his mind to finally detect traces of Zhao Daniu absorbing energy.

These traces were very small. Even with Fang Yuan's current spiritual will, he found it extremely hard to detect and he could only make use of his possessed body to try and sense it.

However, as long as there were traces, it would be akin to finding an oasis in the desert and it was still good news.

"Although this world is the desert of energy sources, there are these kinds of droplets... Although extremely rare, from how Zhao Daniu has matured, I can confirm its existence and the fact that it is slowly strengthening... Regardless, it is still very weak."

Without any other consideration, Fang Yuan named this source of energy 'Spiritual Droplets'!

This had to be the mysterious force that Elder Extreme Darkness was talking about.

However, based on what Fang Yuan had learnt, such spiritual droplets were limited.

The weapons of this realm were highly developed. Although Zhao Daniu had a strong body which was even further strengthened by Fang Yuan, against a machine gun, he would still die.

Even if one was highly skilled in martial arts, one would still fear a knife. After 10 years of training, one would still die under a single shot from a gun!

This was the reality of this realm!

"Notwithstanding others, if I were to don an armour on him and equip him with a weapon, after some training, it would be different... at least normal security guards will not be able to take

him down..."

Fang Yuan's hands were swift as the needles flew about. In a moment, Zhao Daniu's entire body was covered in needles.

If Zhao Daniu were to wake up now, he would realise that he had become a 'Needle Man' and would take it out on Fang Yuan - Not that he could win Fang Yuan in a fight, that was.

"I've finally succeeded after so long and have discovered a quicker way to absorb the spiritual droplets!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.

On Zhao Daniu's body, he had done all that he could. He had not only allowed Zhao Daniu to have full control of his strength, he had pushed him to the possibility of gaining full autonomy of his own body.

After many failures, it seemed like there was finally an outcome.

To speak the truth, although Fang Yuan had devised this acupuncture activating technique for a year, he was still not sure of its effectiveness.

Until now, that is. There was no more doubt.

"Hmmm... Without my help, Zhao Daniu's strength will be comparable to two adults. Although I've only increased his strength by another 0.5, it is still stronger than what he was. I wonder if I can execute this technique on other normal humans."

Fang Yuan kept his needles. He knew that Zhao Daniu would only wake up after another hour and therefore, brought himself out to take a shower under the moonlight.

"Home is where the heart is... Unfortunately, everything is mixed up now!"

He heaved a huge breath, crossed his legs and faced the sky.

Retrieving his own silver needles, he started to pierce at his own acupuncture points. With the guidance of external forces, he

started to force his body to react with the spiritual droplets in the air.

"It's a good thing that I have experience of cultivation from other realms. This means that I will at least be able to achieve an initial breakthrough!"

Fang Yuan was clear about one thing.

According to how Immortal Cultivators cultivate, Zhao Daniu had a favourable body to begin with as it could absorb spiritual droplets by itself. However, Fang Yuan was possessing a normal body and it would be difficult for him to achieve a breakthrough to begin absorbing the spiritual droplets.

However, with his strong mind, he gritted his teeth and pierced another needle in his Baihui Acupuncture Point.

Within seconds, blood started to gather at his forehead, forming a red hue there.

"Whoo... I feel like I'm burning all over!"

Fang Yuan used his skills in Medicine to allow his blood to gather. Focused, he forcefully increased his Essence and Spirit. If he were to fail, he would become crippled!

Under an intense pressure, every minute felt like an eternity. Finally, after a long time...

"Chila!"

Fang Yuan heard a crisp sound coming from his forehead.

A strong mind power made Fang Yuan feel as though a river with clear spring water was flowing through his forehead.

"Haha..."

Although the number of spiritual droplets was negligible, Fang Yuan still smiled. "Finally... It's done!"

With this step, Fang Yuan had officially entered the world of

cultivation for this realm. Although he was still far behind those with favourable bodies, he could slowly catch up through his cultivation in the future.

His journey of becoming supernormal began here!

...

"This is... energy sense!"

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath. As he focused on the inside of his body, he could feel a warm stream of energy flowing about.

This force, compared to the elemental force of Da Qian, was but a firefly's glow and was insignificant.

However, in this world where physics governed the rules of reality, it was already hard to cultivate this force.

"Since I've started on my journey of cultivation, there should be changes in my stats!"

Full of emotions, Fang Yuan gazed at his stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 0.8

Spirit: 0.2

Magic: 1.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 1 (1%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell - Using the Guiding Skill as a foundation, together with acupuncture and breathing techniques, you will be able to change your physical body and

increase the rate of absorption of spiritual droplets. Currently at Grade 1!"

It was a very normal and general explanation.

In fact, even the name 'spiritual droplet' was coined by Fang Yuan himself.

Basically, it meant that Fang Yuan would use some complicated means to cover up for his weaknesses by absorbing energy from the spiritual droplets. After a prolonged period, he might be able to cultivate something.

"At such a stage, Grade 1 is already considered complete. At most I would have restored more than half of my Medicine Skills, right?"

Fang Yuan thought to himself before he woke Zhao Daoniu up.

"Ah..."

He forcefully supported himself up and was drenched in sweat. "I had a nightmare, a nightmare that I was in the operating theatre and many needles were poking me!"

"That is your own hallucination! Imagination!"

Fang Yuan didn't even blink. "Also... Why are you still worried that others might discover your special ability? Didn't I go through this with you before? Even if you were to be taken away by the government, you will be fine. Look at Liu Fei. Look at how luxurious his life is!"

Taking the orphanage as an example, in a thousand people, only two of them had awakened their special abilities. It was a 1 in 500 chance! What did this mean?

This might even be an overestimation, and the real probability might be 1 in a 1,000 or even 1 in 10,000... Looking at the population of Chinese Country, the outcome would still be a scarily big number of mutants.

These mutants would form the foundation of the society. However, no one would risk trying to deal with them unless they feel that their power is under threat.

Therefore, Fang Yuan predicted that in the future, it would be likely that others would try to establish good ties with these mutants and forcefully deal with those who would cause trouble.

Although there would be an increasing amount of experimentation done on these people, it would not result in the loss of their personal freedom as would not be as direct as wheeling them into the operation theatre.

What special abilities would these people be displaying?

Would they run faster? Would they lift heavier? Although it would be hard to believe, how would normal people understand the concept of the limits of the human body? They would be convinced with any simple explanation that the scientists could cook up.

Looking at the trend of the world, Fang Yuan could generally guess what the people in power would be dealing with.

"In the new era, humans are evolving... It is such an ideal situation! As long as these mutants remain and the stage there are at in the present day and do not display any surprising traits... they would be able to integrate with the normal humans without being detected and from there, unleash the potential of the human body."

Zhao Daniu's reaction of shock was only an exception and could not be taken into account for Fang Yuan was partly responsible for him as well.

"But..."

At this point, Fang Yuan smiled. "Such a mutation... or should I say evolution... will it stop here?"

According to Fang Yuan's theory, although there was a scarcity of



spiritual droplets in this realm, there seemed to be a trend pointing towards the increase in the concentration of spiritual droplets.

...

In the mountains not far from Mountain Ocean City.

At the foot of the mountain within the depths of the forest, many buildings were concentrated in an area, forming a base.

In an office, A middle-aged man wearing white robes had the vibes of a military personnel. He was reading a report intently. "... In conclusion, I believe that these 'evolvers' will not have a substantial impact on the society. Therefore, our actions need not be too extreme and we should remain in observation as much as possible."

"The transformation of their genes is something very hard to predict... For instance, that witch-lady who is indestructible during the war..."

An old man raised his glasses.

The middle-aged investigator froze.

The records of that witch-lady were in the top-secret files of every country. Only the people of authority would have access to these files.

"This is the main point of our investigation... Furthermore, I cannot give assurance of the stability of these evolvers because according to a 3-year-long study on 100 of them, it seems like they are getting stronger and stronger..."

The middle-aged investigator turned solemn. "Therefore, I hope that this plan will be approved!"

He took a step forward and carefully placed a document on the desk.

Under the glare of the desk light, the huge words of were illuminated, making it feel mysterious.

# Chapter 394: The Gifted

---

After the promotional examinations, Fang Yuan's batch of students was allowed to do whatever they liked.

Those who always had good results were doing their own self-revision, striving towards their goal of a better life in the future.

As for the majority with average results, they were constantly worrying and trying their best to establish ties in the outside world so that they would be able to find a job and make a living for themselves.

Finally, those with consistently poor results had already given up on themselves and were ready to enter society in whatever state they were in as soon as the results were back.

Amidst all this chaos, Fang Yuan remained calm.

Other than training himself every day, he also read some history books.

At this point, he was reading a fantasy Wuxia novel about a protagonist fighting against ghosts and demons.

In the history of Chinese Country, there were accounts of Daoist Swordsmen and Mages. They were all-mighty and awe-inspiring.

However, they soon disappeared from the face of Planet Earth, which was known as 'The End'.

"Hmmm... It seems like there were traces of spiritual droplets since the early years. However, it seemed to have weakened and now, it is making comeback... Is this the fixed cycle in this realm?"

Fang Yuan knocked his own forehead with his palm. "Looking at how things are... It is rather obvious that every country has their own secret inheritances. From there, I would be able to find traces of these supernormal forces..."

Unfortunately, it would not be applicable to him.

The body which Fang Yuan was possessing was a normal person. Even if he were to find any secret manual for cultivation, it would still be unable to cultivate anything from it.

On the other hand, Zhao Daniu was a prime example of a person with the potential to perform cultivation. If he were to do it, he might even be able to cultivate a special skill.

"My Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell is exactly for times like this..."

Fang Yuan thought to himself silently. 'After achieving Grade 1, my physical body should be no different from that of the evolvers and I can be considered as a cultivator. I will then be able to benefit from the spiritual droplets and alter my spiritual body. After which, I should start searching for the secret techniques of cultivation in this realm and quickly improve myself...'

His Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell was a foundation to change his body's potential. Fang Yuan placed more emphasis on the techniques to harness the power of the spiritual droplets using the cultivation techniques of this realm.

Only with these two aspects would Fang Yuan be able to achieve something and increase his cultivation.

"Fang Yuan!"

At this point in time, Wei Xiaohong walked towards him.

"What's up?"

Fang Yuan casually pushed the history book aside and replied.

"Teacher Zhang is looking for you!"

Wei Xiaohong had an uneasy look. Suddenly, she spouted something. "I am preparing to be a specialist, after which I will be able to enter the workforce directly!"

"Oh!"

Fang Yuan casually replied as he gazed at this lady, who had a

complicated look on her face. "That's very good! Which kind of specialisation are you intending to go for?"

"Hmmm... Nursing!"

The young lady softly replied which made Fang Yuan feel that something was wrong.

Everyone knew that Fang Yuan wanted to be a doctor in the future. What would it mean for Wei Xiaohong to tell him all these?

Now that he paid more attention to her, Fang Yuan realised that Wei Xiaohong had already matured. She had a tanned skin, energetic look and was a beauty.

"What... what are you looking at?"

Wei Xiaohong was embarrassed to the point where she almost fainted.

"Nothing much, let's go!"

Fang Yuan stood up, approached her and whispered into her ear. "I'm sorry that I didn't say this earlier... I am more interested in Traditional Chinese Medicine!"

Wei Xiaohong was in a daze. Satisfied at his little joke, Fang Yuan made his way to the office.

"Good day, Teacher Zhang!"

Politely, he greeted Teacher Zhang before realising that there were a few other teachers in the office.

There was another teacher in a green shirt. He was middle-aged and wore glasses, making him seem gentle and elegant. Another two teachers stood by Teacher Zhang and appeared solemn and serious, making the entire atmosphere tensed.

"Ah, it's Fang Yuan. Come in!"

Seeing her model student, Teacher Zhang Haiman was all smiles. "Teacher He, he is Fang Yuan!"

At the same time, she introduced Fang Yuan to Teacher He. "This is Teacher He Tianming from the capital! He is a professor from the most prestigious school and is in charge of the selection throughout the country. He is spearheading a project to start a gifted class in a university!"

"Good day, Professor He!"

Fang Yuan politely greeted him and faced him squarely.

"Hmm... Your results are not bad. However, the students I need for my class are the smartest of the smartest. These students would advance 3 levels and would start on the university curriculum. The workload will be very heavy!"

Professor He raised his glasses. "Your results topped the entire Mountain Ocean City, but they are not enough!"

"If I were to enter university directly, there should be requirements for Senior High School. I shall start my self-study..."

Fang Yuan smiled.

"Oh?"

He Tianming's eyes glistened. "Which levels are you intending to self-study?"

"I have already completed the self-study for the next 3 levels. You can test me on anything within the syllabus. Furthermore, I have already begun in Calculus and other topics taught in university!"

Fang Yuan spoke calmly.

It was too slow to follow the flow and sometimes, risks would need to be taken.

Furthermore, why should he constantly remind others that he would want to become a doctor in the future? It was all in preparation for the future so that he would be able to join the government to conduct research on the human body!

It was too slow for him to conduct experiments on his own. How

could it compare to having the assistance of the entire country in conducting the experiments and research?

Since he had arrived at this realm filled with technology, it would only be wise for him to leverage on it as well as the support of the country.

It was a wise choice to enter the government.

"Self-study? The modules in university?"

Zhang Haiman was stunned but soon after, she smiled. "Although I know that you have the habit of picking up used books from the rubbish bin, I am still stunned that you are able to reach such a stage."

"We need to prove it. I will now prepare a test for you!"

He Tianming raised his glasses and smirked.

Those who knew him would know that this was his reaction whenever he was interested in something.

In a few moments, within the office, Fang Yuan scribbled writings as he rushed to revise. His ears twitched and the conversation from the other room was distinctly heard in his ears. With that, he revealed a sneaky smile.

Although the teachers were very far and they were separated by walls, Fang Yuan was still able to hear all of it.

...

"Director, what do you think?"

In an office with sealed windows, He Tianming held a few documents in his hands and frowned. "This Fang Yuan... He was once the troublemaker in the orphanage. Now, he has suddenly turned hardworking and consistently topped the class. This does not seem normal..."

"Through the few physical tests, we have found out that other than his brain which we cannot directly measure and test,

everything about him is normal!"

A cadre which was attached to the director flipped a few documents and retorted.

With the control the country had over its people, as soon as they took notice of Fang Yuan, the government was able to fish out all the documents and information regarding Fang Yuan's past.

"He might be simply a gifted child or an evolver with a highly developed brain. Why would all this matter? What we need is his contribution to the country! After all, he will still be raised through a university education and we will be able to know more about him in a few years time to come. If he is really gifted, then we can allow him to join the government. Otherwise, we can still let him become a normal technology developer to build the foundation for our country!"

Director Zhou made a decision.

"Hmmm, then let's make a decision after seeing his results for this test!"

With this sentence, He Tianming was filled with even more anticipation. "After going about through more than ten cities, the number of gifted people can be counted with my fingers. Hopefully, this one will not disappoint me..."

"Director Zhou, Professor He!"

A teacher knocked on the door. "Fang Yuan has already completed the test and wants to submit his script!"

"What?"

He Tianming shook his head. "How is this possible? I gave him two hours but only 10 minutes have passed!"

"Could he have failed to complete the test and leave a few questions blank?"

Director Zhou witnessed He Tianming while he was setting the

paper, and knew that even university students would not be able to answer some of the questions.

With that, He Tianming laughed. "In the previous few cities, the few gifted students who are boastful, aren't they all like that?"

"Let's take a look!"

He Tianming sighed as he entered the office.

"Good day, Professor He!"

Fang Yuan handed his script and his writing filled the entire paper. However, they were neat and tidy, and as He Tianming read through, he nodded his head.

Even if the answers were not correct, the tidiness of his handwriting and presentation had already left a good impression on He Tianming.

With that, he took the script and started marking. His expression started to change. "Your logic is clear and your methods are correct... full marks... Fang Yuan, did you do all these?"

"I believe this invigilator will be able to testify for me!"

Fang Yuan replied without any reservations.

With his colleague's affirmation, He Tianming's face was filled with happiness. "I'm sorry, what I meant was that you are only fifteen, right? Considering your age, this is unbelievable!"

"Most of them are content from the textbook. Only a few questions would require me to do some additional interpretation, but that is all!"

Fang Yuan placed his hands in his pocket. "How's that? Have I passed?"

"Of course... I believe that Xijing University will be very pleased to have you as their gifted student!"

He Tianming exchanged glances with Director Zhou and was



elated. "What about you? Do you have any requests? We can consider acceding to them..."

"I prefer to study Medicine, especially the combined theory of ancient and present-day study of the human body...."

Fang Yuan thought for a while. "Also, I would like to recommend a few of my friends for their preferred jobs!"

"Medicine?"

He Tianming took out a notebook and quickly recorded it down with his ballpoint pen. "Also, to help your friends get their jobs... that's fine, we can do all of that."

"If there's nothing else, when can I report to Xijing University?"

Fang Yuan came straight to the point.

"September of Year 02. That is when the new school term starts! Call us before you board the train. We will send someone to pick you up from the station. Don't worry about your accommodation and your necessities!"

Director Zhou finally spoke and sounded amicable.

Regardless, he admired Fang Yuan for the fact that he remembered about his friends.

Anyone would feel at ease when interacting with someone with a good personality.

"Alright, Fang Yuan, I'll see you at the university!"

He Tianming stood up, shook his hands with Fang Yuan and left the school.

"Alright!"

From behind, Teacher Zhang Haiman approached Fang Yuan with tears in her eyes. "It's Xijing University, the most prestigious university in Chinese Country. Fang Yuan, you are the pride of our orphanage! I have decided to start an assembly this afternoon and

you shall prepare a speech... and be a role model for your juniors!"

Fang Yuan remained speechless.

# Chapter 395: Antiques Deal

---

"Choo! Choo!"

Accompanied by the rhythmic noise of the steam engine and the billowing white smoke, the train slowly arrived at the capital's station.

Once the train doors opened, an ocean of green and grey swarmed out the train carriages. Large amounts of passengers dragged their luggage and carried their bags as they squeezed towards the exit.

Outside the train station, it was bustling with activity. There were numerous stalls selling snacks and maps and the hawkers were enthusiastic touting away at each passenger. All sorts of dialects could be heard and the area was filled with life.

Fang Yuan carried a haversack and still appeared like a child. As he saw the boisterous scene in front of him, he felt slightly lost as he felt he could not fit in.

Soon enough, he saw a guy in a large military coat and red scarf raising a piece of cardboard and walked towards him.

"Are you schoolmate Fang Yuan?"

The guy warmly introduced himself, "I am Sun Jian, Professor He's student!"

"Hello!"

Fang Yuan shook his hand. Immediately, Sun Jian's face turned slightly surprised, "You came over by yourself? Where's your luggage?"

"This is sufficient, let's go!" Fang Yuan replied while patting his backpack.

"Oh, great! There's also another schoolmate, he arrived earlier!"

Sun Jian was very friendly. He then brought Fang Yuan to a

green coloured jeep at the carpark.

"The capital is very big, there are many fun places to go! Once you all settle down, I will bring you all around!"

"Thank you!"

Fang Yuan sat at the back and saw another teenager seating beside him as expected.

The teenager's skin was abnormally pale, he was skinny and his face was ice cold, as though he did not want anyone to get close to him.

"Hello, I am Fang Yuan!"

Fang Yuan reached out his hand.

"Lin Xing!"

Lin Xing had his arms crossed and an "I don't want to talk" look on his face.

"Lin Xing has very good hands-on skills! The machines he upgraded even won the top prize in a national level award!" Sun Jian added cheerily.

"Well... geniuses are haughty I guess!" Fang Yuan thought to himself and rolled his eyes.

Fang Yuan then began looking at the buildings and scenery outside.

Although there were no modern skyscrapers, there was still a unique charm to the Chinese courtyard houses mixed with cement buildings.

One and a half hour later, the jeep drove into Xijing University, the number one institute in Chinese Country.

As it was the start of the new school year, many new students could be seen busily doing their stuff in the beautiful school campus.

"Here we are!"

The jeep parked below a dormitory. Once Fang Yuan and Lin Xing got out of the car, they were welcomed by He Tianming, "The dorm is already prepared and it is a double bedroom! As you all are still young, the school specially granted you all exemption from military training! I will be your class' form teacher."

"Greetings, Teacher He!"

Fang Yuan immediately greeted He Tianming after he got out of the car.

"It's great that both of you are here! There's no lesson these few days, you all can take this time to get used to the new environment!"

He Tianming handed them a stash of meal coupons and cash as he continued, "Both of you are independent since young, I hope you all will remain disciplined here! Don't let down the school's contribution to you all!"

"Yes!"

Fang Yuan solemnly promised, while Lin Xing nonchalantly agreed, which made He Tianming feel speechless. In Fang Yuan's eyes, Lin Xing was like a rebellious teenager.

"Also, technically, your Gifted Class will not be split into faculties during Year 1. You all will be taking culture classes together to build up your foundations! For Fang Yuan, I have already spoken to them and you will be allowed to listen in classes from the Biology Faculty and Medicine Faculty!"

"Thank you!"

If not for these conditions, Fang Yuan would not have come here.

From now, Fang Yuan would amass knowledge for two years and complete his own knowledge base before amazing others with his next move.

.....

First of all, they went to the canteen to have a meal together. As He Tianming had some urgent matter to attend to, he quickly left first.

Fang Yuan was taking big bites out his steamed buns and swallowed the whole bowl of pork vermicelli quickly. His massive appetite and kiddish appearance attracted the looks of many seniors.

Whereas Lin Xing had already hidden at a corner as though he felt ashamed to be associated with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan ate his last steamed bun, rubbed his stomach contentedly and looked towards Lin Xing, "Do you want to tour around outside?"

"No need!"

With a cold expression on his face, Lin Xing left immediately.

"Sigh... kids should be cheerful and smile more..."

Fang Yuan sighed begrudgingly like an old man which made Sun Jian laugh, "Fang Yuan, aren't you only just 15 too?"

As Sun Jian spoke, a tinge of pity could be seen in his eyes, "... Also, you were not well fed last time? Don't worry, many university students who just entered were like that too, you will get used to it!"

"I wasn't mistreated or abused last time..." Fang Yuan thought to himself as he secretly rolled his eyes.

Fang Yuan then immediately steered the conversation towards sightseeing.

"Haha... Fang Yuan, you are so energetic, where do you want to go?" Sun Jian was a bit surprised and asked.

"I heard there are three antique markets here! Let's not talk about the Glaze Factory market and Pan Family Gardens market first,

let's go take a look at Sambhogakaya Monastery first!"

Fang Yuan wiped his mouth.

"Oh, didn't think you would be interested in antiques! Are you interested in majoring archaeology too?" Sun Jian smiled.

"It's just that I heard it's bustling and since the jeep doesn't have to be returned so quickly, we can still utilise it... Sorry for the trouble, senior! I will treat you to mutton hotpot at night!"

"That's great!" Sun Jian merrily agreed.

Sambhogakaya Monastery was a renowned Zen Buddhist temple in the past. After Chinese Country was formed, the temple underwent restoration and was not only a famous cultural attraction now, there were also many stalls selling numerous stuff.

Although there were rare antiques, there were also many counterfeit goods. The environment was very good too.

As Fang Yuan arrived, he saw many grand trees providing shade and large groups of people walking along the corridors of the inner courtyards. There were also hundreds of small and large stalls that sold all sorts of rare or weird items. The accents from every part of the country could be heard too.

"We are just taking a look this time, right... eh? Fang Yuan, you are really interested in buying?"

Right after Sun Jian sighed, he saw Fang Yuan squatting at one of the stalls and was flipping through the stuff sold. Fang Yuan appeared very interested in the items.

"Eh... this looks interesting!"

Fang Yuan picked up a ceramic doll and a strange smile could be seen on his face.

The ceramic doll had a large head and round feet, which was similar to a roly-poly toy. It was painted with colourful oil paint and had a simple look. Sun Jian could easily tell it was definitely

not some sort of antique, but a toy used to cheat children.

However, as he saw Fang Yuan was so intrigued by it, he was momentarily speechless.

"My friend, your taste is so good, my ancestors have lived in the Imperial Palace in the past dynasties before... this..."

The stall owner was a smooth talker and immediately started to persuade Fang Yuan after he saw him came to his stall. He tried to convince Fang Yuan further, "This is an item played by those ministers in the past, it's exactly the same! It would be so joyous if you buy back a pair!"

"I will sell it to you for ten dollars!"

"Forget it!" Sun Jian could not stand it anymore, "If you go to West Industrial Zone, you can buy back a whole cart of it with ten dollars!"

"Haha!"

As the stall owner was met with someone who knew the real deals, he laughed and retorted, "It's not the same! Not the same! My goods are specially made from machines! Look at the paint, its added with many of that... chemical compounds!"

"What!"

Sun Jian could not contain his laughter after hearing such but felt sad after a while.

The notion that such machine-made products were better than handmade products and the idea that added chemical compounds meant that it was good was truly ridiculously stupid and laughable but also made Sun Jian felt at a loss.

Fang Yuan could not help but laugh too, "Nevermind, give me three! I will give you three dollars, how about that?"

Fang Yuan eyes sparkled and he quickly picked three of them.

Although the dolls were rather simple and crude, a mysterious



charm could be felt from the area between their eyebrows, which meant they were not possibly made from machine moulds but were definitely handmade.

"Three dollars is too low..."

The stall owner's expression changed slightly, "These are passed down from my ancestors..."

"Wait a minute, didn't you just say they were made from machines?"

Sun Jian pulled Fang Yuan and said, "Nevermind, let's go to other stalls!"

"Ah... wait!"

The stall owner immediately shouted, "Nevermind, I will take it as I'm blind today, three dollars will do!"

"Three dollars is still too pricey!"

Fang Yuan was still slightly undecided and he randomly picked up another ancient book from the stall, "I like to read, so if you add this on, I will buy for three dollars!"

"Deal!"

The stall owner quickly glanced at the book and saw the book was grey and drab and there were also many small holes on it. The book did not have an appealing appearance even compared to the other random miscellaneous items he was selling. Furthermore, even the cover of the book was stained with dirt and half of it could not be seen clearly already, thus the stall owner readily accepted the deal.

"Sigh... Fang Yuan, you are too wasteful."

As Fang Yuan spent his own money, Sun Jian could not say anything else and could only sigh.

"Money can't buy happiness! I will treat you to mutton, senior!"

Fang Yuan could not contain his smile as he looked at his ceramic dolls carefully.

With Fang Yuan's Fiery Golden Eyes, it was super easy for him to make a small fortune.

Although the dolls appeared normal on the surface, their insides contained many precious materials. He already saw a piece of agarwood and a few pieces of jewels inside the doll.

Fang Yuan should be able to fetch a decent price with the current market prices.

After all, Fang Yuan just started cultivating, he had to earn some extra income to supplement his consumption.

The ancient book in his pocket was an even more surprising gain.

"This ancient book has a secret layer in it... Furthermore, just from the words on the outside, hints of magic are hidden in it, it is not so simple... Just with that, I can confirm the majority of what's hidden inside must be something related to cultivating in the past. Looks like the stall owner did not lie, his ancestors must have mixed in the Imperial Palace before and got many good things out from it..."

Fang Yuan turned around and looked at the large building of Sambhogakaya Monastery and suddenly pondered, "Let's not talk about the rest... this place is a worthy investment! With my the power of my eyes, I will be really profitable next time! The resources I need for cultivation are settled..."

# Chapter 396: Fist Technique

---

"<Green Capsule Scripture>?"

After dinner and parting ways with Sun Jian, Fang Yuan returned to the university, found a quiet corner and started to examine his loots.

The ancient scriptures in his hands were torn and dirty, but he could vaguely tell where it came from.

"I've read about it in the history books before. This <Green Capsule Scripture> was recorded by a cultivator in the ancient times known as 'Yellowstone Duke'. In the scripture, he described the dao of Fengshui and Yin and Yang... Looking at this handwriting, it seems like it was written by a person skilled in calligraphy and this must be rather valuable..."

Without paying too much attention to the handwriting, Fang Yuan opened the scripture and flipped to a few pages which felt abnormal.

"Hehe..."

These pages were thin like a dragonfly's wings. They were smooth and words cluttered on the page, describing the scripture.

"Just the words alone, I can tell that every word is full of meaning and energy. By looking at it often, I will be able to cultivate my energy..."

Fang Yuan flipped open the abnormal pages and the words of <Green Capsule Scriptures Additional Recordings> filled his vision.

"Is this... a scripture on Medicine?"

Examining it, Fang Yuan was pleasantly surprised.

The <Green Capsule Scripture> was a recording of the dao of Fengshui and the dao of Yin and Yang and there were a few ancient cultivation techniques within it. This <Green Capsule Scriptures

Additional Recordings> was a developed version of the <Green Capsule Technique> penned down by a reverend doctor as he used it to cure patients and lengthen his lifespan!

"Or should I say that... this is a combination of Medicine and cultivation? This is rather suitable for me..."

The foundation of Fang Yuan's physical body was still on the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell. However, the Green Capsule Scripture Additional Recordings placed emphasis on the technique and the usage, which could complement his body.

"However, it is still a pity... Although I can now absorb spiritual droplets, my progress is still too slow and I can only awaken my energy sense. It is still too hard for me to perform acupuncture solely based on the energy of a body!"

Fang Yuan took a quick glance at his stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 0.8

Spirit: 0.3

Magic: 1.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 1 (13%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"I still have a lot to learn about the absorption and manipulation of spiritual droplets!"

Fang Yuan clenched his fists and sighed.

He had made progress in his 3 years of training and familiarisation. Considering his knowledge in warfighting, he

would still be able to defeat 2 Zhao Danius at the same time.

Unfortunately, that would only place him at the level of a special forces soldier in the military.

"Bang!"

Without consider, he smashed a ceramic doll, revealing the treasures hidden inside.

In the ceramic doll, there was a figurine of Aquilaria Maitreya. The materials used to make it were already valuable, and Fang Yuan could tell that the workmanship to craft the figurine was top-notch. Together, it made the figurine a real treasure and Fang Yuan could earn many times more than what he spent to buy the ceramic doll.

In the other two dolls, gold and jade were stuffed in them. There were also coins from other countries and it seemed that they were the backup of the government during the tumultuous times of developmental years of Chinese Country.

However, it was a pity that the inheritance did not pass on. The descendants of the founding fathers had long forgotten about all these fortunes, which in turn benefited Fang Yuan.

"I shall keep this Aquilaria Maitreya first... As for the foreign coins, I shall sell them directly in the black market and gather capital for my cultivation..."

Since the time where Fang Yuan had begun to absorb spiritual droplets, he realised that his appetite had grown.

The resources which He Tianming had given him was not enough, and it would not be nice to trouble him further.

"It is a rewarding day to be able to reap all these treasures! What else can I be unsatisfied about?"

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath. He kept his treasures in his bag and started his training.

A technique which resembled a Guiding Skill was slowly being executed.

At the same time, the weak energy sense in his body started to trigger, activating the few acupuncture points and meridians to increase the rate of absorption of spiritual droplets.

As he progressed, he could feel that his technique and his physical body was slowly being strengthened. All of these were satisfactory.

"Sha! Sha!"

After a long while, Fang Yuan finally opened his eyes and breathed out a heavy deep breath. His ears twitched. "Is there someone around?"

He raised his head and gazed at the sky. The bright moon had already risen up into the dark sky. "It is already so late. Why would anyone come here at this time? They are also not making out..."

The place which Fang Yuan had chosen was a secluded lakeside of the university, within a forest.

If it was a couple coming here at this timing, then it would be logical.

However, Fang Yuan could clearly detect that there was only one person.

"This person must be crazy!"

After coming to a conclusion, Fang Yuan grabbed his bag, hid behind a tree and appeared excited.

"Whooo! Whoo!"

A regulated breathing sound was heard as a university student ran across the forest. He seemed like he was in his twenties and was cleanly shaved. He did not seem to be afraid of the cold as he was running half-naked, revealing his muscles. He seemed like a leopard.

"The training in daytime is not enough..."

The young man mumbled to himself. As he readied himself, he started to practise his martial arts as though there was no one around.

"Whoo! Whoo!"

His feet were quick and in his punches, there were vague roars of beasts, which would surely startle anyone who would hear it.

"He is a normal person, but this is... martial arts?"

Fang Yuan knew that he was a normal person from a single look. However, his muscles were well-toned and it seemed like he had learnt martial arts since young and at this point in time, he seemed as though he was stuck at a certain stage.

In the dark forest, there were roars of tigers and lions, chirps of cranes and screams of monkeys. After a long while, there was a sigh.

"This is still not enough!"

"My Five Beasts Fist is still lacking something. I cannot focus the strength in my entire body together to achieve the 'Strength Opening' Realm... Grandfather told me that all the highly-skilled youths are in the university. Why haven't I met a single one of them?"

As the moonlight poured down, the young man gazed up with a look of determination. His facial features were distinct and his appearance made him seem like a person with animal instincts.

"I, Chen Bo, did not come to the university to study! From tomorrow onwards, I shall challenge the martial artists of the capital and make my family's Five Beasts Fist famous!"

'What age is this already? Why is his thinking still so archaic?'

Fang Yuan stood by the side and remained dumbfounded. 'This young man had read too much Wuxia novels and no one can save

him. However, this Five Beasts Fist is still rather interesting.'

With Fang Yuan's Fiery Golden Eyes, Fang Yuan could not only observe his martial arts technique, but also the flow of his strength in his body.

This young man was clueless. Now that he had performed his martial arts in front of Fang Yuan, he would have unknowingly taught Fang Yuan the entire Five Beasts Fist.

'Are the martial arts from these martial arts family still useful?'

Fang Yuan observed and could identify the foundation of the Five Beasts Fist. It was a technique focused on imitating five types of beasts found in the natural environment. It was a technique which would allow one to strengthen one's bones, harness blood energy and breakthrough one's physical limits.

'Of course, without the nourishment from spiritual droplets, he would only abuse his own blood energy and will still not be able to breakthrough for his whole life. Furthermore, after 40 years old, the condition of his body will start to deteriorate... No wonder these ancient martial arts are not being passed down. Looking at things, Chen Bo seems to have caught this prime time...'

Although the Strength Opening Realm was nothing in Fang Yuan's eyes, he could still predict the future path of this set of martial arts.

At the peak of cultivation for the Five Beasts Fist, one would have the potential to harness energy from the external surroundings and absorb spiritual droplets to start one's journey to become supernatural.

"Of course, anyone in the Strength Opening Realm would already be considered highly-skilled. The stage which I have predicted would require one to be the master of the arts and is extremely difficult! Difficult!! Difficult!!!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. "Even if one were to attain True



Strength and would be able to absorb spiritual droplets to begin the journey to become supernormal, they would only be at the initial stage of the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell. To put in bluntly, it is a low-levelled version of cultivation. Of course, I'll have to admit that it is still rather useful in strengthening one's physical body..."

Chen Bo was clueless that by simply performing his martial arts, he had exposed his heritage and that even the secret parts of the technique which his grandfather was unaware of were already being discovered.

'Hmm... It seems like I have fate with this capital, or it might be an accumulative 3 years of good karma that is expended in a single day...'

He had benefited from buying the ceramic dolls and scripture and now, he had the chance to witness an impressive martial arts technique. All of this made Fang Yuan felt satisfied.

'Since I've benefited from looking at your family's martial arts, I shall help you!'

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan folded his collar up, shielding half of his face. As his leg became slightly bent, he bolted out like a cannon.

"Who's that?"

As soon as Fang Yuan moved, Chen Bo could immediately detect it and was utterly shocked.

As a martial artist, his reaction was to counter-attack. His fists became claws as he struck towards the small black silhouette with a tiger's roar.

It was a cardinal sin among martial artists to peep at someone else practising their martial arts and was even considered reasonable to cripple the peeping tom.

However, the black figure didn't dodge but returned with a fist.

"Roar! Roar!"

In that instant, an explosion came from the small silhouette. As his fist flew in the air, roars of lions and tigers could be heard.

'Five Beasts Fist! The voices of the tendons and bones! The unified lion and tiger roar! Strength Opening! This is impossible!'

Chen Bo's eyes were wide open as he was stunned.

Such a scene would mean that this person would have already combined the strength of his entire body and releasing it out in a single punch. The power of the punch would increase by folds. Even before an elder of the martial arts world, such a punch would mean that the person was worthy enough to be regarded as highly-skilled.

"Bang!"

Without a doubt, Chen Bo flew backwards.

Although he was only a step away from the Strength Opening Realm, it was a huge step for him!

"Why do you know my family's secret martial arts technique, the Five Beasts Fist!"

Even though his body felt like shattering apart, he knew that he had to ask the question as he thought hard about who this person before him could be.

Unfortunately, the moonlight in the forest was too dim and the person had intentionally covered half of his face. With a hoarse voice, Fang Yuan spoke. "The Strength Opening Realm of the Five Beasts Fist would require one to tame the dragon of the spine and have delicate control over one's blood energy in the forehead. Be careful not to go on the wrong path... and focus on training your Crane Form!"

The voice echoed in the forest. In an instant, the silhouette disappeared.

Chen Bo was still in a trance as though streaks of lightning struck his head. "Crane Form? Dragon of the spine? Forehead?"

"Who is this person? Why is he so familiar with the Chen Family's Five Beasts Fist? Could he be an elder of the family?"

He laid on the floor in an ungraceful position for a long while before forcing himself up. He did not know whether to laugh or cry. "Grandfather is right. These highly-skilled people are everywhere!"

# Chapter 397: Opening a Shop

---

After military training, university education officially started.

Fang Yuan's life in Xijing University was very happening.

The faculties which Fang Yuan were in were not surprised at his arrival. They were at most curious about his age, but that was all.

Fang Yuan had long heard stories about encountering beautiful girls as well as people from wealthy families. However, he had seen none of these and was a little disappointed.

"To think about it... those of them here are the smartest in their cities and would compete with each other in their academics. Why would they think of other distractions... As for any events that they would organise, they would surely not look for me... I am too young..."

Fang Yuan felt a little depressed. With that, he paid attention during his lecture and took down notes... he would look for his class during their self-revision time.

Professor He was indeed influential enough to get a special classroom for the gifted class so that he could provide supplementary lessons for those who were weaker in their foundation.

Because Fang Yuan had been verified of his knowledge of the Senior High School syllabus, Fang Yuan was one of the rare ones who was not required to attend the supplementary lessons. As soon as he entered the classroom, he rolled his eyes.

'Hmph... this is how a class should look like... otherwise, it would be too boring...'

"Hey! Lin Xing!"

Fang Yuan went about his own business and sat across Lin Xing. Looking at a piece of electronic gadget he was fiddling about in his

hands, Fang Yuan quipped. "Do you find the history and geography they teach in Senior High School hard? Do you need my help?"

As soon as Fang Yuan mentioned this, Lin Xing's face became black.

Although he was capable in many aspects, he was the perfect example of someone with high IQ but low EQ. Therefore, he had difficulties in handling humanities subjects, not to mention pure literature.

"Haha..."

Seeing Lin Xing in this state, Fang Yuan's mood was lifted.

Looking at Professor He lecturing in front, Fang Yuan felt a little pity for him.

Sigh... gifted children, to put in bluntly, were problem kids. It was hard on him to be able to put all these problem kids together and have everything under control.

"Professor He!"

"Fang Yuan! What's the matter?"

He Tianming had a few more strands of white hair. However, as he looked towards Fang Yuan, he forced a smile out.

Compared to the other gifted children who were troublemakers, Fang Yuan gave him the least problems.

"I feel that the content I am learning now is still too general. I hope that I can enter more faculties... The best would be for me to enter the laboratory to start experimentations straight away!"

Fang Yuan laid out his request.

"Pfftt!"

He Tianming was drinking a cup of tea but almost spat it out. "The content taught in the university is too general? Are you looking at directly becoming a professor?"

"If that is possible..."

Fang Yuan nodded his head.

"... I cannot promise you anything now. It is unlikely that you will be allowed to observe other professor's experiments in the laboratories. However, I can allow you to join more faculties. I can even get you a special identity card which will allow you to borrow books and resources from the library. You will be unrestricted by the borrowing limit and the duration of borrow as well!"

After much thought, He Tianming replied Fang Yuan.

"This is great, thank you, teacher!"

Fang Yuan knew for himself that he still did not have the rights to become a laboratory assistant and that his deal was already rather good. With that, he took a bow.

"This child..."

As soon as he left, He Tianming stared at his cup of tea before wiping his fogged-up glasses with a handkerchief.

Among all the gifted children, Fang Yuan was the smartest and the one which he had to worry about the least.

Additionally, there were many physical tests as soon as all of them entered the university, but there were no special findings.

This was a normal accelerated development of his brain, which could be commonly seen in many scientists alike.

However, this student gave He Tianming a feeling of mystery...

...

After settling all of these, Fang Yuan was not interested in revising the Senior High School syllabus with these children and left the room.

The clear breeze brought a chilly vibe. There was a thin layer of fog and as the sun rose, there was a feeling of serenity.

At the lakeside of the university campus, there were many people training their physical fitness and taking a stroll. Majority of them were young students, but there were a few white-haired professors or even residents who lived nearby.

A few old men and women were practising martial arts in their white robes. They slowly lunged their swords in the air and were one with the movement of the sword, forming a beautiful scene like a painting.

'Unfortunately... how long can days like this last?'

Fang Yuan clenched his fist.

He could finally feel that his cultivation was accelerating.

"After a few hundred years of scarcity, are the spiritual droplets finally becoming increasingly concentrated?"

As he thought to himself, Fang Yuan found an empty spot and started to execute his Guiding Skill.

With the memories of the Five Beasts Fist from Chen Bo and the Green Capsule Scripture Additional Recording, Fang Yuan felt enlightened. His became more and more familiar with his Guiding Skill, and there was the occasional spreading of crane's wings and the posture of a lion.

'I might be able to alter this Guiding Skill and name it Five Beasts Guiding Skill... By practising it, I will be able to lengthen my lifespan and it is better than any other physical exercise...'

Fang Yuan focused on his dantian. As he completed the executing of his Guiding Skill, he realised that an old professor was staring at him for a long time.

"Student... your Guiding Skill is interesting!"

Seeing that Fang Yuan had glanced over, the old professor chuckled. "Could this be a set of martial arts passed down by your family?"

"Haha... Professor Tian, this is only a normal Guiding Skill which I have learnt from the history books. Now, I am only casually executing it..."

"Oh? You know me?"

Professor Tian was around 60 years old and his head was filled with white hair. He seemed energetic and lively. Now that he examined Fang Yuan, he felt that Fang Yuan was vaguely familiar.

"Mmm, I have attended some of your lectures on Traditional Chinese Medicine and have learnt a lot from you!"

Fang Yuan smiled.

"Oh, I see"!

Professor Tian nodded his head. "Nowadays, there are only a handful of students who are still interested in Traditional Chinese Medicine. Are you from He Tianming's gifted class? Although his intentions are good, how could he ever think of letting a group of kids study in a university? Sigh... This is a little too extreme..."

The study of Traditional Chinese Medicine tended to follow the natural flow of things. Therefore, Professor Tian was against what He Tianming had done.

However, Professor Tian had a different impression of Fang Yuan and felt as though they understood each other after the exchanges. "Fang Yuan, does your family specialise in Traditional Chinese Medicine?"

"Hehe... I am from Mountain Ocean City Orphanage. I've learnt all these from reading books and practising it myself!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose.

"Oh, I see... I'm sorry... It's a pity. Considering your abilities, you can be a researcher. However, on the path of Traditional Chinese Medicine, you would face difficulties for the first ten years, and is extremely hard to hone your skills..."



The study of Traditional Chinese Medicine was one which relied heavily on experience. Experienced doctors would always be more skilled than the inexperienced ones and there was no two way about it.

Professor Tian took a few steps forward and gave a look of pity. "It's a pity... I currently do not have any research topics in my hands. Otherwise, I would surely ask you to be my assistant."

In this age, it was already the norm for lecturers to conduct researches and hire assistants, paying them the salary of assistants.

Upon hearing this, Fang Yuan thought to himself, smiled and remained silent.

Seeing how humble Fang Yuan was, Professor Tian's eyes glistened. They spoke for a while more before parting ways. He had decided for himself that he would invest all he could in this child.

"I should leave!"

Fang Yuan walked around the perimeter of the lake. Unintentionally, he bumped into a teary-eyed Chen Bo.

Ever since Fang Yuan had advised him, Chen Bo's martial arts took a huge leap forward. In a few days time, he would surely be able to achieve a breakthrough in the Strength Opening Realm.

Of course, as a young man, he could not swallow his pride. Coupled with the fact that his family's secret martial arts were possibly leaked, Chen Bo was certain that the person who assaulted him was in the compound of the university and therefore, he remained here to look out for the person.

Even if Fang Yuan were to walk under his nose, this teary-eyed Chen Bo would not be able to tell that it was him. Chen Bo was only letting his efforts go to waste.

...

"Junior, this pavilion shall be yours in the future..."

In Sambhogakaya Monastery, Sun Jian and Fang Yuan walked into a shop and there was a hint of envy in Sun Jian's voice. "Now that Chinese Country is being developed and that the economy is booming, even if we just collect rent from this shop, we will be able to earn a lot..."

"It's a waste to just collect rent. How about we open a shop to try things out!"

Fang Yuan caressed the glass cabinets and smiled. "To speak the truth... Never would I have thought that that Suet Jade would be so valuable..."

Other than the Aquilaria Maitreya, Fang Yuan had sold all of the treasures he obtained from the ceramic dolls.

The silver coins and gold ingots were normal and Fang Yuan used them to tip waiters in restaurants. As for the Suet Jade, it was a crystal clear jade piece which fetched a high price since it was considered an antique.

In good times, the value of antiques would go up while in troubled times, people would prefer the stability of the value of gold. At this point in time, the price of antique skyrocketed and even though Fang Yuan had sold it in exchange for this shop, he still felt that there was more value to it.

Ultimately, it was just a simple trade and he would do whatever he wished.

After all, he still had an extremely valuable Aquilaria Maitreya with him.

"Open a shop? An antique shop? There's a lot that we don't know about!"

Sun Jian felt that he no longer understood this junior of his.

"I've attended a few lectures on antiques and believe that my

taste is good... Furthermore, we have the most valuable treasure of all, right?"

In any antique shops, there had to be at least one or two real antiques to attract people. To Fang Yuan, the Aquilaria Maitreya seemed like a suitable antique.

Furthermore, he felt that on this wooden-carved figurine, there was a mysterious spiritual aura. He could possibly use it as a bait to bait something bigger.

"Senior, I would like to hire one or two people to look after the shop. Do you have any idea how I can go about doing it?"

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan laughed.

"Oh, why not look of university students? In the city, there are still quite a number of students who would work part-time while studying to support themselves."

Sun Jian replied.

"Mmm, I will pay them 30 dollars per month, and they can rest on the weekends. On weekdays, they are only required to come for half a day... I will only need two people!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands like a rich boss.

"Hehe... Such a good deal! Even I feel tempted to help you. Don't worry, I will surely find you two honest helpers."

Sun Jian nodded his head. Even the salary of a highly-skilled manufacturing job could not compare to this. Therefore, he promptly accepted the job of looking for helpers for he could also benefit from it.

# Chapter 398: Laying Foundation

---

Seasons came and went by; it was now the Year 1003.

The chilly winter was not fully over yet. In the middle of the night, even the most hardworking student would not be able to withstand the coldness and would have climbed into their warm beds.

Fang Yuan had long convinced Professor He Tianming to allow him to move out of the dormitory.

Currently, he was at a random spot in a small forest as he prepared to check his progress this past year.

For Fang Yuan to change his normal body to one with the properties of spiritual droplets, in the words of Wuxia novels, it would be like a normal person giving birth to a "spiritual root" from nothing. It was extremely difficult.

Furthermore, the laws of this realm were too harsh. Although the concentration of spiritual droplets was recovering, it was still as rare as a spring in the desert. Even Fang Yuan had to spend a year plus to complete his foundation-laying process.

That was even after the increased concentration of spiritual droplets in the past one year. Else, Fang Yuan estimated it would have taken him at least three years instead to completely form his first grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell.

"Breathe..."

Accompanied by Fang Yuan's deep breaths, even the moonlight in the skies blurred slightly for a while as they were warped and sucked into Fang Yuan's dantian.

A clear stream moved around Fang Yuan's body and immediately, on his stats window, the 99.99% behind his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell increased by one point and was fully completed.

"Rumble!"

Instantaneously, Fang Yuan felt his body vibrate as a mysterious change occurred inside his body and a circulation was formed at once.

His blood flow became faster, his face turned red and large amounts of sweat were squeezed out from his pores along with a smelly impurity.

"I guess this... is the same as the ancient method of marrow cleansing as recorded in the Classic of Changes?"

Fang Yuan took out his shirt quickly and jumped into the small river without any fear of cold. He then washed away the filth on his body.

Moments later, he climbed up and wiped dry his body before looking at his stats:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 1.0

Spirit: 1.0

Magic: 1.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 1 (Completed))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"1st Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell completed — body transformation completed, transformed into Spiritual Droplets Affined Body! Energy sense increased!"

"Spiritual Droplets Affined Body, this actually means I'm an evolver now..."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes slightly. He no longer needed guiding needles to guide him, with just a thought, he could sense the spiritual droplets in the air. Unfortunately, there were way too little spiritual droplets, they were as rare as an oasis in the desert.

"At least I have managed to cultivate some spiritual energy which I could use. My medicine skills have recovered by more than half!"

Fang Yuan tilted his head and thought. He then suddenly waved his hand.

"Swoosh!"

Silver light shined, a row of silver needles flew out and struck the surface of the pine tree neatly and impressively.

Within a few yards, this hidden weapon technique that was impossible to guard against was even already better than firearms. Other skilled martial artists in this realm would all die to this technique.

At this stage, Fang Yuan had some ability to defend himself.

Fang Yuan could not help but gave a wry smile at such.

The reason why Fang Yuan initially moved out of the dormitory was because he felt he was tailed and spied on a few times. Thus, he could only bear patiently for a few months before the monitoring became less tight. But till now, the monitoring was not completely gone.

To put it nicely, it was a form of caring and prevention. After all, Fang Yuan was just a 16 years old teenager that had to be slightly looked after.

This was a necessary price he had to pay after being allowed to move out of the dormitory.

"Nevertheless... it's about time!"

Fang Yuan tried to figure out his body's transformation, "I have already accumulated sufficient knowledge! If I do or say something

unexpected, although it would be eye-catching, at least it would not shock the world nor arouse suspicions..."

"If I don't attract attention, how would I be favoured by the superiors? How would I be able to enter the core research laboratory?"

In this past one year, Fang Yuan managed to be on a few projects through Professor Tian's connections and earned some extra income through being their assistants. He even had the chance to use the laboratory equipment occasionally. However, he was still thousands of miles away from his aims.

Last time, Fang Yuan had to be more reserved and restrained, but now, since the first grade of his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell was completed, he had fewer scruples.

...

Sambhogakaya Monastery.

After a night of martial arts training, Fang Yuan mixed into the group of people who were doing morning exercises. He then bought a cup of soy milk and a few donkey sandwiches before going to his own shop.

"Morning, Little Boss!"

Fang Yuan's antique stall, named "Heart Questioning House", had already opened for business. One of the shop assistants was a 20 something years old student. When she saw Fang Yuan, she immediately greeted him brightly.

"Didn't I say before, call me Fang Yuan or boss..."

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes and went into the shop and was very satisfied as he saw how clean and spotless the shop was.

Sun Jian recommended Fang Yuan two stall assistants, Ding Qiuyu who worked the morning shift and Zhao Lihong who worked the afternoon shift. Both of them were students from the

nearby universities who wanted to earn some extra income. As they did shift work, they only worked for less than half a day which was not very tiring.

Ding Qiuyu was a northerner and had the bright and forthright attitude of a northern girl. As Fang Yuan was younger than her, she liked to tease him and Fang Yuan was used to it after a while.

"Why are you free to come to the shop today, Little Boss?"

Ding Qiuyu held the broom and asked while smiling.

She was curious about this young boss who was not only specially invited to enter Xijing University, he also opened a shop in the capital. Furthermore, she heard he used to be an orphan.

Just that point alone made her very respectfully of Fang Yuan, as the soft spots in her hearts felt moved.

"I was just having my morning exercises nearby, I brought you some donkey sandwich!"

Fang Yuan smiled and placed the sandwiches on the table, "Eat first and continue later!"

"I'll finish up before I eat, anyway it's nothing much!"

Ding Qiuyu was deft in her work and her mouth could not stop moving too, "Lately, there aren't many customers visiting. There were a few who wanted to buy the Aquilaria Maitreya though, but once they heard the price, they rolled their eyes and walked away. Boss, do you want to drop the price?"

She felt this Little Boss was not good at doing business.

Although the shop was opened, after one whole year of hard work, there was not much profit left after deducting the capital costs and labour costs. Fang Yuan might as well rent the shop out which he would earn similar amounts from the rent.

"No need, remain at that price! They'll buy if they want to buy!" Fang Yuan replied with a smile.



Fang Yuan drank the soy milk and felt the smooth and rich taste glide pass his throat.

Fang Yuan obviously knew the market value for the Aquilaria Maitreya, just based on its price as an antique, it was worth around 20,000 to 30,000 dollars. With how Fang Yuan priced it at 300,000, it was obvious he did not want to sell it.

Firstly, it was a display meant to attract customers.

Secondly, due to the spiritual aura on the Aquilaria Maitreya which even Fang Yuan could not understand, Fang Yuan was displaying it as a bait to catch those who could see it.

Of course, the stall assistants did not have to know about these reasons.

"Qiuyu, are you busy?"

At that moment, a youth walked into the stall and his eyes lit up the moment he saw Ding Qiuyu, "I'll help you!"

"It's ok, no need! My boss is here!"

Ding Qiuyu was a bit shy, which was rare for her, and she smiled while hitting the youth, "This is my friend from the same village, Chen Bo! Boss, it's your first time meeting him right?"

"I guess not."

Fang Yuan smiled and greeted, "I never expected... our school's boxing champion to come to my humble shop!"

This Chen Bo was the one with the Five Beasts Technique whom Fang Yuan spied on previously.

Fang Yuan observed the way he walked and could tell he had already reached the Strength Opening Realm and was one of the more highly skilled masters in the capital.

"Oh, both of you are from Xijing University, no wonder all of you know each other!" Ding Qiuyu realised.

"My junior!"

In front of the woman he loved, Chen Bo did not have any hint of fierceness left in him unlike when he was practising his martial arts. He smiled in a friendly and loving manner and said, "Qiuyu and I are good friends. I heard about you from her many times, thanks for taking care of her!"

"It's nothing!"

Fang Yuan smiled and then placed a few medicine bottles on the table, "Eh... some business matters. I made some Opening Point Incense, you can burn one every day to observe its effects and sell the rest."

"Opening Point Incense?"

Ding Qiuyu picked up one bottle, opened the lid and took a sniff, "The aroma... is so unique!"

"This incense is specially made by me, it can invigorate and keep the mind awake, and also balance your energy and blood flow! There's definitely a market for it!" Fang Yuan narrated.

In reality, for Fang Yuan to really earn money, it was sufficient for him to just tour around the Sambhogakaya Monastery every day.

This stall, the Aquilaria Maitreya, the Opening Point Incense and such were all baits.

Furthermore, being called a "boss" felt quite good to Fang Yuan, although the title of "self-employed person" still did not sound as nice.

"Ok, I should leave now..."

Chen Bo felt weird acting all friendly in front of the stall's boss and left first.

Shortly after that, Fang Yuan also left Heart Questioning House too and he went back to his house.

Fang Yuan was now residing in a small courtyard house which was not far from Xijing University. The house was large enough and had a small yard.

The moment he stepped into his front yard, he could smell a herbal aroma from the herbs he planted.

The ingredients of Opening Point Incense were all from here.

With the special ability of botany, these medicinal herbs had decent medicinal properties which were comparable to wild herbs grown deep within the forests and mountains. Furthermore, the formula was found in an ancient book, people who understood the goods would naturally be attracted.

"After preparing for one year, I should finally do something."

Fang Yuan packed his stuff and went to Xijing University to look for He Tianming.

"What? You are preparing to apply for graduation?"

He Tianming looked at Fang Yuan and his forehead frowned into numerous creases.

"Come, take a seat first!"

The request gave He Tianming a headache and he asked Fang Yuan to sit down first.

"How come you are thinking of graduating? I was preparing to send you straight for a direct master's degree!"

"I have already heard most of the graduate school's lessons and learnt most of it myself."

Fang Yuan placed his hands on his kneecaps and calmly replied.

"But a master's degree is different! Although an undergraduate degree can land you a job, the difference between an undergraduate degree and a graduate degree's treatment and future potential for progress is night and day..."

He Tianming tried to convince and persuade Fang Yuan but Fang Yuan would not budge at all. He Tianming had no choice and shook his head, "Fine... have you thought about your thesis?"

"Yes, I will be writing about Traditional Chinese Medicine and modern medicine!" Fang Yuan answered.

"Ok, I will give a call to arrange you to join this term's thesis defence!"

He Tianming nodded his head and sent Fang Yuan off. He then went back to the sofa and ruminated.

Half an hour later, He Tianming finally made up his mind and picked up his phone.

# Chapter 399: Stalking

---

"Let us celebrate for our national athlete, Liu Fei has clinched the gold medal once again and broke the world record at the same time..."

"Yesterday, the mayor visited our school and gave a speech to encourage all the students and teachers of the university..."

"Next up, let us enjoy the song <The Beautiful Oar>..."

...

The sweet voice of a lady blasted through the loudspeaker in the school campus.

Fang Yuan laid on the field and squinted his eyes.

"Hey... I've heard that you have applied to graduate!"

Turning his head around, he realised that Lin Xing was next to him with a look of unpleasantness.

"Yeah..."

After a period of interaction, Fang Yuan knew that Lin Xing was not a snobbish person but was merely less sociable.

"It's a pity..."

Lin Xing laid on the field as well and was in a daze.

"Don't think about it too much. Although you have never beaten me in school, you might just do so when we work outside..."

Fang Yuan chuckled.

To think about it, the students who were studying in Xijing University were unfortunate.

If you think that you were a smart person, the university was filled with gifted people! There were even smarter ones above the smartest! To those who were less confident, this would be a heavy blow.

"Go f\*ck yourself..."

Lin Xin rolled his eyes and left.

"Fang Yuan... why are you still here!"

Sun Jian rushed his way towards the field. "Quickly return to your shop. Someone is willing to buy your treasure!"

"Oh!"

Fang Yuan lazily stood up and stretched himself.

"How can you be so composed?"

Sun Jian was stunned. "This is a business of 300,000 dollars!"

"What else can I do?"

Fang Yuan replied in a calm voice. "You ran all the way here? You're too nervous. You should calm your nerves whenever something big happens."

"I... I tried to calm down, but it's 300,000! Just by thinking about it alone would give me the shudders..."

Sun Jian's voice shook as he spoke.

"Alright, I'll go now!"

Fang Yuan shook his head and arrived at Sambhogakaya Monastery with Sun Jian.

His originally empty Heart Questioning House was now surrounded by a group of people, clogging up the entrance to the shop. Most of them were crowding around to see what was inside.

"Come, move aside, the boss is here!"

Sun Jian cleared a path for Fang Yuan. Some of them recognised him as the boss and automatically gave way.

"Boss, you're back!"

Ding Qiuyu ran towards Fang Yuan. "A foreigner came in and was attracted to the Aquilaria Maitreya. He insisted on buying it!"

"I know, it's been hard on you!"

Fang Yuan entered the shop and noticed a blond-haired foreigner peering through a magnifying glass. He wore white gloves on his hands as he was examining the Aquilaria Maitreya with a serious look.

Behind him, there were two bodyguards in black western attire. There was another female translator as well.

Coincidentally, Chen Bo was also there. He now had the responsibility to ensure the security of the place as he glared at the bodyguards.

He had to be careful! If the wooden figure was broken or stolen, his girlfriend would not be able to pay for it. Therefore, he had to get himself involved.

In the Heart Questioning House, Fang Yuan prepared a wooden chair and sat on it. With that, Ding Qiuyu served him his tea.

The old foreigner noticed Fang Yuan and mumbled something to the translator.

"Mr Thomas asks, are you the owner of this shop? He wants to talk to the real owner of this wooden figurine."

The female translator translated it word for word, but her sentence structure was too rigid and she did not feel local.

'Overseas Chinese? Or another yellow-skinned race?'

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes and the surroundings became translucent and illusionary.

Everyone looked normal except for Chen Bo who had a mild glow in him, signifying that he had the cultivation at the Strength Opening Realm.

The body of the female translator was normal. However, she had black streaks around her body and her lively face started to appear pale and green. A black fog gathered around her forehead.

'From the angle of a cultivator, this lady is either living with an evil being or that she herself has cultivated in evil spells...'

The female translator lowered her head and mumbled a foreign language to her boss. With that, she smiled. "You are lucky. Mr Thomas said that he is willing to buy your Aquilaria Maitreya for 200,000 Chinese Dollars."

"Oh!"

Fang Yuan dug his ear with his fingers and gave a look of suspicion. "Why did I hear that his highest offer was around 50,000 Dollars from the forex?"

Forex meant that through the foreign exchange rate, Mr Thomas was willing to pay a price equivalent to 500,000 Chinese Dollars in his foreign currency.

Of course, the price of this Aquilaria Maitreya could potentially skyrocket in the black market.

"Cough..."

The female translator choked. "Do you know our language?"

"Mmm... I've learnt it through a few lectures!"

Fang Yuan gave a wide grin and revealed his white teeth, replying with a fluent Federation language.

Of course, the female translator wanted to kill him so badly at that moment.

"Gentleman, you surprise me! Could you have stayed at boarding school overseas before?"

Mr Thomas was shocked to be able to hear such fluent Federation language in Chinese Country and even suspected that Fang Yuan had grown up in his hometown.

"Nope, I have only learnt it from a lecturer who was from the Golden Eagle Federation..."



Fang Yuan waved his hands. "Mr Thomas, it is unfortunate that you have revealed to me your best offer. Therefore, my price will change to 50,000 from the forex. After all, your assistant had lowered your quote by 50%!"

Hearing this, the face of the female translator turned black and her fierce glare seemed as though it was able to set Fang Yuan in flames.

"Hehe... Ms Night is only joking with you! However, I will agree to the price of 50,000 from the forex!"

Thomas smiled and glared at his translator. With that, he ordered his bodyguards to bring a case forward. From the case, he took out wads of cash. He knew that he had to get his hands on the Aquilaria Maitreya. Glancing at the incense burner at the side, he spoke once more. "Chinese Country is an amazing country. Look at this incense... I have smelled a similar fragrance from a soul master in my country. This fragrance is able to calm one's mind."

"Is that so?"

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan's heart wavered. After talking to Thomas, he gifted him a bottle of Opening Point Incense.

"Haha... I will have to take my leave now!"

Looking at the increasingly crowded shop, Thomas stood up and gave an unusual smile. "Fang, you are a gifted child. May our paths cross again!"

"See you again!"

Fang Yuan sat in his chair while Thomas took his leave, walking with a cane. As he walked out, he was surrounded by other passionate stall owners who were looking to clear their stock.

It was impossible for Fang Yuan not to extort such a rich person!

As Ms Night took her leave, she glared fiercely at Fang Yuan.

"Let's close the shop!"

Looking at the passionate and greedy stall owners gathering around Thomas, Fang Yuan shook his head. "Chen Bo, stay behind with Sun Jian."

"Hehe..."

After closing the shop, Sun Jian stared at the stack of cash on the table before looking at Fang Yuan with a look of suspicion. "Junior, when did you pick up their language?"

"I learnt it after hearing it a few times. It's normal!"

Fang Yuan gave a look as though he was a genius kid and could do anything he wanted, which made Chen Bo depressed.

They were already the top students of the society to be able to enrol into Xijing University. However, they would still need at least a month or two to master a new language from scratch.

This kid in front of them managed the same feat after a few lessons and was even more fluent than the translator.

Although everyone knew that there were gifted people in the society who would make the others question their own existence, one would only feel fear when standing in front of an actual gifted child.

"Alright, let's split the profits. This should be considered doing justice for our country!"

Fang Yuan smiled and split the stack of cash into four piles, handing over a pile each to Ding Qiuyu, Chen Bo and Sun Jian. "Thank you for your help today. This is a small reward!"

"This..."

Each stack was at least a thousand dollars and Sun Jian could not believe his eyes.

"Little Boss... How can I take your money?"

Ding Qiuyu quickly replied.

"This is your performance bonus! Since this is your bonus, just take it!"

Fang Yuan forced the wad of cash into her hands. "The two of you as well, please don't be afraid to accept this money! I am a rich man now!"

"Yes... compared to you, we are still poor!"

Sun Jian was filled with regret.

If he knew that there was so much potential in selling antiques, he would have chosen to specialise in archaeology.

...

It was nightfall.

Like a nimble cat, Fang Yuan flipped over the walls and left the school compound, smiling cheekily to himself.

Fang Yuan had done something to the figure of Aquilaria Maitreya, making it traceable.

Otherwise, why would Fang Yuan stupidly place such a valuable treasure in the shop with a single shopkeeper to look after it?

"Are there still stalkers? Is my behaviour out of the norm?"

He flipped over another wall, crossed an alley and lifted a piece of roof tile. With that, he noticed a middle-aged person leaning on the window outside, observing Fang Yuan's door diligently.

However, he appeared tired and bored as he yawned continuously.

'After all, I am only a student and not an evil murder. I also did not reveal any special ability and it would, therefore, be a waste of resources if they were to send a soldier from the special forces to stalk me. Where did this person come from?'

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan flicked his finger and a puff of powder was scattered into the house.

The well-built man started to shut his heavy eyelids. Not long after, he started to lean against the wall and snored loudly.

All it took was just a little sleeping powder.

After settling the stalker, Fang Yuan arrived at his own shop. Twitching his nose, he could detect a clear fragrance.

"Little pals, it's up to you guys now!"

Fang Yuan opened a bamboo container, releasing a few bees.

These bees were larger-sized than normal bees and were a little confused at first. After a while, they became focused and flew in a pattern in mid-air. With that, they headed towards a certain direction.

"It's working!"

With an excited look, Fang Yuan quickly followed the bees.

# Chapter 400: Earthbinding Spirit

---

It was nightfall.

The huge city was silent except for a few lampposts giving off a warm orange glow.

In a guest room of a hotel, a window remained lit.

"Hmph... such detailed carvings... and such an invigorating fragrance..."

Thomas caressed the Aquilaria Maitreya in his hands and commented. "Chinese Country... such a magical place. I believe prophet will be extremely interested in this place..."

After admiring it for a long while, he finally kept the wooden figurine in his safe before taking out another ceramic bottle. "This incense as well... Night, do you have any explanation for what had happened today?"

"Very sorry, Mister, I was only thinking of securing the best price for you!"

Night took a deep bow and bent over 90 degrees.

"You do know... I hate it when my subordinates take their own initiatives. Make sure this is the last time it'll ever happen!"

Thomas rubbed his forehead. "Now... get out! I want to sleep!"

"Yes, Mister. Good night and sweet dreams!"

Night took another bow and took her leave.

Seeing her leaving the room, Thomas frowned. He initially requested a Chinese translator. What was the company thinking to send such a person? If not for her pretty face, he would have fired her on the spot.

"Stupid white person! How dare he order me around!"

After returning to her own room, Night's voice suddenly sounded

ferocious. Her forehead became black and there was a red glow in her eyes. "It's a magical equipment! That Aquilaria Maitreya must be a magical equipment! It is mine! Mine!"

As she exclaimed, her voice became hoarse as though she was an entirely different person. It was an eerie sight which would shock anyone who witnessed it.

"Hehe... and that despicable Chinese as well. How dare he offend me, a Yin Yang Master with noble blood! I will personally ensure his death!"

Night snickered eerily and retrieved a black leather box from the closet.

The leather box was locked. Unlocking it revealed many mysterious looking talismans and bottles, as well as a black-coloured notebook.

Night caressed her white fingers across the objects in the box and finally took a purple bottle with a long neck. Opening it released a stench of bloody smell with a blend of mysterious fragrance.

"Hehe..."

Night's original pale face was now flushed red with excitement. She took a purple brush, dipped the blood-red ink from the bottle and started to draw a pentagon-shaped array on the clipboard.

"Sh\*t... The disturbance in this world is too strong!"

As she drew, there were a few times where the pen came to a halt. With a depressed look, she had to take out her knife and slice a wound on her arm every time that happened, dripping fresh blood on the paper.

It was a weird thing for every time she dripped her fresh blood, her pen would move again and with much difficulty, she finally finished her final stroke.

"As Little Night of the Plains, I am calling for the spiritual body

which lies between hell and reality... Come out, my God!"

Little Night of the Plains placed her palms together and the light in her room dimmed.

On the ground, a Pentagon Array emitted a soft purple glow. On each of its five corners, there was a ball of white fire burning.

"Whooo! Whooo..."

A sinister wind blew across and there was a faint cry in the wind.

...

In Thomas's room.

As the night breeze blew, an agile black silhouette climbed to his window. Unknowingly, it managed to open the window.

Like a nimble black cat, the silhouette's glaring eyes started to examine the room. "How did grandmaster's treasure end up in the hands of a foreigner... It's a pity that I've led my life honourably but now, I have to resort to being a thief... Eh?"

With his senses, he managed to find the safe. Looking at the passcode lock, he was puzzled.

"Who's that?"

With a chilling vibe, the old daoist leapt away from the safe and froze. He could see the door to the bedroom slowly opening.

"Thomas... no, he's being possessed!"

Thomas was in a weird state as though he was half-awake and half-asleep. He had a scary expression and it was as though he was dream walking.

Walking towards the safe, Thomas was oblivious to the surroundings. He entered the passcode and with a 'kacha', the locked safe which troubled the daoist was unlocked.

A hint of fragrance filled the room as the Aquilaria Maitreya appeared. Wads of cash were stuffed around the figure in a neat

fashion.

"As a daoist, I am not after riches. I shall just take the magical equipment!"

The old daoist stretched out his hands and with that, the Aquilaria Maitreya landed in his palms.

"Aw! Aw!"

Seeing this, Thomas's eyes started to glow green. He leapt towards the old daoist as though he was a crazed corpse.

"Hmph! Such a small manipulative spell... how dare you show off in front of me!"

Without a second thought, the old daoist took out a yellow talisman and pasted it on Thomas's forehead.

"Bang!"

With a yellow glow, the foreigner stood there motionless as a grey fog was forced out of his head.

"Boss!"

All the commotion in the room finally attracted the attention of the bodyguards outside. After a few knocks, two big-sized bodyguards barged in. "Who the hell are you!"

"The older I get, the more unlucky I become! Run!"

The old daoist made his move.

Through the old daoist's spiritual eye, the grey fog started to come together, forming an illusionary shadow which leapt at him.

Such an Earthbinding Spirit would be filled with emotions and aggression to seek vengeance.

Now, it was being summoned out. Since it was within the vicinity of where Thomas died, it still had supernatural powers and was almost indestructible. Even if it was injured, it could recover quickly.



Alas, the old daoist was still too slow. As the Earthbinding Spirit leapt on him, he could feel a chill all over his body and could no longer move.

"How dare you attack boss! Call for backup!"

The two bodyguards leapt forward and used the most basic martial arts to pin the daoist on the ground. "Jobson, I've got him!"

'I've been fighting against these lowly-skilled people for over 30 years and yet, I am caught by one of them today!'

The old daoist was helpless as the other bodyguard shouted and went to look for the switch to on the lights.

The thought of being sent to jail as a thief and a trespasser made the daoist even consider the option of death.

"Chila!"

At this point in time, the lights flooded the room before blowing out, throwing the entire room into darkness.

"What's happening!"

"It's a power trip!"

"Oh, sh\*t!"

"Call the cops and look for torchlights!"

...

The entire hotel was in chaos. Very quickly, a few torchlights were shining, illuminating the room.

"Hmm? What's happening?"

In the other room, Little Night of the Plains shuddered. A hemp rope in her hands started to burn without reason, signalling that there was an incoming danger.

"Wuu! Wuuu!"

A white fox with bloodshot eyes appeared.

"Is someone intruding my array?"

Little Night squinted her eyes. "If it isn't that daoist, who else could it be?!"

"Whoosh!"

In the darkness, there were a few sliver flashes.

"Wuu! Wuuuuu!"

The white fox exclaimed and its spiritual body was shaken.

"Who are you exactly?"

Little Night quickly retreated. In the corner of her eye, she could see a black silhouette approaching. There were cracking noises coming from the silhouette's body and as it struck a fist towards Little Night, there was a frightening roar of a lion and a tiger.

"A highly-skilled martial artist?"

She nimbly dodged the fist and struck her leg covered in poison silently.

"Bang!"

Unfortunately for her, the black silhouette was prepared. With its left palm, it sliced downwards.

"Kacha!"

The distinct sound of bone fracture was heard and Little Night turned pale and fell to the ground. "Strength Opening?"

"Bang!"

With that, another fist slammed into her face and her nose started to bleed. She fainted in that instant.

"Buy one get one free! With an Aquilaria Maitreya, I have attracted a Yin Yang Master and another daoist. It's a good deal!"

Fang Yuan smiled and kept his silver needles. Rummaging through the leather box, he became irritated. "There is indeed

nothing good here. The only thing valuable might be the notebook which I can take some reference from!"

Without hesitation, he took the notebook and scrubbed the Pentagon Array with his shoe.

In the other room.

The Earthbinding Spirit started to lose its power and slowly disappeared.

The old daoist exclaimed and golden rays came out of his eyes. At that moment, the bodyguard felt that he was no longer pinning down a person, but a few bulls!

"Bang!"

With a humongous force, the bodyguard flew out. In a flash, the old daoist quickly escaped through the window and disappeared on the streets.

Of course, the chaos in the hotel was none of Fang Yuan's and his business.

"Alright... you've stalked me for quite a while. How about you show me who you are!"

The old daoist weaved in and out on the streets and finally entered a park before stopping by a brightly-lit lakeside.

"Who would've thought... that I would encounter another cultivator in the city. And that the cultivator had robbed a hotel! Hehe..."

Fang Yuan walked out of the shadows. His young looks shocked the daoist.

At this point in time, the daoist's appearance was also revealed under the moonlight.

He had handsome facial features, a tall nose and distinct eyebrows. With small lips and a black-framed glasses, he seemed scholarly.

No matter how Fang Yuan looked, the daoist could only remind him of the lecturer which taught political science in the university and looked nothing like a daoist.

"I am Guo Jing. Thank you for your assistance!"

Guo Jing gave an ancient greeting.

Of course, if not for his shattered glasses and his swollen nose, he would still resemble a highly-skilled cultivator.

"You're welcome! I am Fang Yuan..."

Fang Yuan waved his hands. "The Aquilaria Maitreya in your hands was bought from my shop..."

"What?"

As soon as he heard Fang Yuan, Guo Jing's mouth was gaping. With an embarrassing smile, he continued. "I see, I have been reckless. Sigh... Little Master, why did you sell this to the foreigner?"

Would Fang Yuan say that he had sold it to bait Guo Jing?

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes and sounded unjust. "I don't have enough money!!"

It was a strong reason and there was no reason why Guo Jing should doubt him, making Guo Jing speechless.

# Table of Contents

## [Carefree Path of Dreams](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: Two Swords](#)

[Chapter 302: Acquisition](#)

[Chapter 303: Evolution](#)

[Chapter 304: Right Timing](#)

[Chapter 305: The Return](#)

[Chapter 306: Rescue](#)

[Chapter 307: Entrust](#)

[Chapter 308: Tribulation](#)

[Chapter 309: Dragon God](#)

[Chapter 310: Three Years](#)

[Chapter 311: Green Fish](#)

[Chapter 312: Black Water Dragon](#)

[Chapter 313: Slaying the Dragon](#)

[Chapter 314: Surrounding the Capital](#)

[Chapter 315: King Sun](#)

[Chapter 316: Following the Trend](#)

[Chapter 317: Vicissitudes](#)

[Chapter 318: Fall Out](#)

[Chapter 319: Retribution](#)

[Chapter 320: The Escape](#)

[Chapter 321: The Beginning](#)

[Chapter 322: The Village](#)

[Chapter 323: Horned Wing Tribe](#)

[Chapter 324: Retaliate](#)

[Chapter 325: Ancestral God](#)

[Chapter 326: Evil Force](#)

[Chapter 327: Hidden Dragon](#)

[Chapter 328: Influence](#)

[Chapter 329: The He Family Caravan](#)

[Chapter 330: Compensation](#)

[Chapter 331: Guardian of the Prosperous Land](#)

[Chapter 332: Hindrance](#)

[Chapter 333: Taking Over](#)

[Chapter 334: The Deal](#)  
[Chapter 335: Yellow Grain Rice](#)  
[Chapter 336: Meaning in Cultivation](#)  
[Chapter 337: 9 Smelting Technique](#)  
[Chapter 338: Suppression](#)  
[Chapter 339: Breakthrough](#)  
[Chapter 340: Retaliation](#)  
[Chapter 341: Chaos](#)  
[Chapter 342: The Alliance](#)  
[Chapter 343: Search](#)  
[Chapter 344: A New Realm](#)  
[Chapter 345: History](#)  
[Chapter 346: Witchcraft](#)  
[Chapter 347: Tortoise Mountain](#)  
[Chapter 348: Conflict](#)  
[Chapter 349: Fiery Eyes](#)  
[Chapter 350: Earth](#)  
[Chapter 351: Waves of Destruction](#)  
[Chapter 352: Meeting the King](#)  
[Chapter 353: Essence of the Blood](#)  
[Chapter 354: Black Water](#)  
[Chapter 355: Jiuli Division](#)  
[Chapter 356: Hule Division](#)  
[Chapter 357: Preparing for War](#)  
[Chapter 358: Ambushing the Campsite](#)  
[Chapter 359: Swelling Earth](#)  
[Chapter 360: The Big War](#)  
[Chapter 361: Resurrection](#)  
[Chapter 362: Surreptitious](#)  
[Chapter 363: Heavenly Trend](#)  
[Chapter 364: Test](#)  
[Chapter 365: Fiery Golden Eyes](#)  
[Chapter 366: Aid](#)  
[Chapter 367: Node](#)  
[Chapter 368: Blood Mosquitoes](#)  
[Chapter 369: Corpse Refining Technique](#)  
[Chapter 370: Peace](#)  
[Chapter 371: Elemental Refining Fruit](#)  
[Chapter 372: The Might of the Body](#)

[Chapter 373: Killing Spree](#)  
[Chapter 374: Cleaning Up](#)  
[Chapter 375: An Agreement](#)  
[Chapter 376: Mystical Technique](#)  
[Chapter 377: 8 Dragons Bearer](#)  
[Chapter 378: Destroying the Sect](#)  
[Chapter 379: Misfortune](#)  
[Chapter 380: The Fight](#)  
[Chapter 381: True Divine](#)  
[Chapter 382: The Ultimate Plan](#)  
[Chapter 383: The Past](#)  
[Chapter 384: Siblings](#)  
[Chapter 385: Assistance](#)  
[Chapter 386: Killing Chickens](#)  
[Chapter 387: The End](#)  
[Chapter 388: Heavenly Array](#)  
[Chapter 389: New Realm](#)  
[Chapter 390: Restrictions](#)  
[Chapter 391: Physical Test](#)  
[Chapter 392: Three Years](#)  
[Chapter 393: Investigations](#)  
[Chapter 394: The Gifted](#)  
[Chapter 395: Antiques Deal](#)  
[Chapter 396: Fist Technique](#)  
[Chapter 397: Opening a Shop](#)  
[Chapter 398: Laying Foundation](#)  
[Chapter 399: Stalking](#)  
[Chapter 400: Earthbinding Spirit](#)